Note:

Our Pearson lived a few years in the Salisbury NC region.

Save if any of these papers were not yet extracted!

Get rid of duplicates + Condense

~~Savage~~

It will take a lot of time and I do not know if some of these people are our Griffiths or not. Some of them seem to be closely connected with Locks, both in NC + Jackson Co TN.

Our Iowa John Griffith was born in So. Carolina according to the census, but many people in those earlier days went back + forth between NC/SC border then later to Tennessee.

This is a hunting expedition

ALSO - Some Salisbury NC PEARIS Family data in this book + separate from Griffith data.

Major Equal Employment Opportunity Laws and Regulations

Laws and Regulations	Enforcement Agencies
Various state and city laws on different forms of discrimination	Various state and city agencies
Title VII of the Civil Rights Act of 1964. Bans discrimination by private employers, labor unions, employment agencies, state and municipal governments on the bases of race, sex, color, religion, and national origin.	Equal Employment Opportunity Commission
Executive Order 11246, as amended. Bans discrimination by government contractors and subcontractors on the bases of race, sex, color, religion, and national origin	Office of Federal Contract Compliance
Revised Order No. 4. Spells out what is required in a written affirmative action plan.	Office of Federal Contract Compliance
Revised Order No. 14. An internal order to OFCC compliance agencies establishing standardized procedures for evaluating utilization analyses, affirmative action plans and conducting reviews.	Office of Federal Contract Compliance
Equal Pay Act of 1963. Forbids pay differentials on the basis of sex.	Wage and Hour Division of the Department of Labor
Age Discrimination in Employment Act of 1967. Bans discrimination because of age against anyone who is at least 40 years old but less than 65.	Wage and Hour Division of the Department of Labor
Rehabilitation Act of 1973. Bans discrimination by government contractors and subcontractors against handicapped individuals and requires affirmative action to be taken.	U. S. Department of Labor

"Burke County North Carolina Land Records" (F-262 B96 18 at State Hx Soc Madison WI) Excerpts July 1994 -
Norma Zaniewski

(A)

Volume I

Library Book Page	Grant Book Entry #	Grant Book Page	Date of Entry	Entered by	description
7	73	24	30 Jan 1778	John Griffith	640 acres on Pedgin River joining above entry of Wm Sharpe + John Mc Nit Alexander
	74	25	"	John Mc Nit Alexander + William Sharpe _ 3 entries	① 400 acres on Richland Creek "including the ford where General Rutherford crossed going to the Nation".
	75	"	"		② 400 acres " " " large rich bottom.
	76	"	"		③ 400 acres on forks of Cain Creek where path crosses to Nole Chucky including Canby's camp
10	110	37	30 Mar 1778	John Griffith	300 acres North fork of Muddy Creek including the High Shoals branch for complement
49	1065	350	24 Nov 1778	John Allen 2 entries	① 200 acres west fork of Cain Creek including own improvements
	1066	"	"		② 100 acres on Sumersee Creek, a fork of Muddy Creek above + below road from Allens to John Griffess
	1070	351	"	Samuel Woods	320 acres lines of Andrew Woods, John Griffes + Wm. Morrison incl_own improvements both sides Muddy Creek...
	1071	352	"	John Griffith 3 entries	① 50 acres bounded by lines of Andrew Woods, Samuel Woods, Thomas Sharpe + William Morrison, including improvements Samuel Woods sold George Russell
	1072	353	"		② 300 acres joining John Sumner + Wm Morrison incl. improvements Griffith now lives on for complement
99/100	1073	354	"		③ 100 acres Sumers fork of Muddy Creek below John Allens entry, both sides - - -
127	1369	451	29 Dec 1778	William Morrison	640 acres on conditional line between him + John Summers to -- line betw. him + Thos. Patton both sides East fork Muddy Creek + all impr. Morrison bought from John Griffey bounding on land between him + Hugh Kilpatrick on a white oak below the school house for complement
	1371	452	"	John Summers	500 acres So side Muddy Creek beg. at Wm. Morrison's line -- between him + John Griffey - - -
	1375	453	"	Hugh Kilpatrick	300 acres E. fork of South Muddy Creek, upper line of Andrew Woods + lower line Wm. Morrison's entry that includes the place he bought from John Griffey bounded by - - - line white oak tree below the school house, incl. both sides fork + Geo Russell's impr.
140	1650 1651 1652	546/7	18 Dec 1778	Caleb Barr	300 100 } acres 100 on Muddy Creek. Last entry adjoins John Griffith

See Atlas upper part P.30.

upper R Atlas Pg 55 (McDowell 6) near Dysartville

See bottom left Atlas p. 33 + adjoining pages

(Note:
The book contained primarily 1778-9 entries. County est. 1777 so this would be when record-keeping + surveying "got going." Maybe previous entries recorded in Rowan or Tryon County. Rutherford C est. 1779 + Buncombe 1791.)

Burke County

A Brief History

DATE MICROFICHED
JUN 2 1 1991 19___
[illegible] G. S.
[illegible] CALL #
2443770s 6088163
H9063

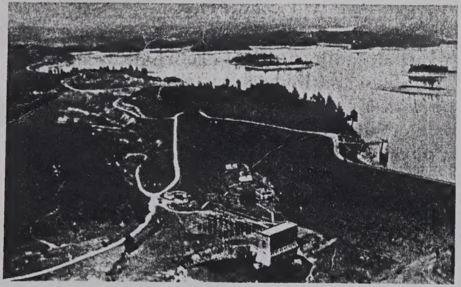
by Edward W. Phifer, Jr.

GENEALOGICAL DEPARTMENT
CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST OF
LATTER-DAY SAINTS

US/CAN
975.685
H2e

No Carolina

Raleigh
North Carolina Department of Cultural Resources
Division of Archives and History
1979



Lake James is situated in western Burke County and eastern McDowell County. In the foreground is Duke Power Company's Bridgewater Dam and hydroelectric power-generation station. The lake is also used extensively for recreational purposes. Duke Power Company photograph; reproduced by permission.

holly; yellow poplar; red maple; dogwood; black gum; persimmon; ash; and walnut. A portion of Pisgah National Forest (48,966 acres) is situated in western Burke County. The county is also rich in flora: over 700 of the 2,945 species of flowering plants found in North Carolina have been identified in Burke.

Burke County's Lakes

Lake James, named for industrialist James B. Duke, was created by impounding the waters of the Catawba and Linville rivers and Paddy Creek. Three dams were constructed to accomplish this purpose; they were begun in 1916 and completed in 1923. At full pond elevation Lake James has a surface area of 6,510 acres and a shoreline of 150 miles. Rhodhiss Lake, created by damming the Catawba at the eastern boundary of the county, is a small, relatively narrow body of water with a surface area at full pond of 3,515 acres and a 90-mile shoreline. It was created in 1925-1926. Both lakes are used to generate hydroelectric power. It has been estimated that Duke Power Company, present owner of the power plants at both lake sites, held title to 30,500 of Burke County's 323,840 acres in 1974—second only to the federal government, which then owned approximately 50,000 acres.

From "History of Burke County N.C."

(See p 14)

II. THE INDIANS AND THE PIONEERS IN PRE-BURKE COUNTY TERRITORY

The Indian Tribes

The Catawba and the Cherokee are the two principal Indian tribes associated with the early history of the Burke County area. They were traditional enemies and were in continuous conflict over land and hunting rights. A great battle is believed by some traditionalists to have been fought between the two tribes near the close of the seventeenth century, resulting in a stalemate and a peace conference that relegated present Burke County to a neutral buffer zone used primarily for hunting.

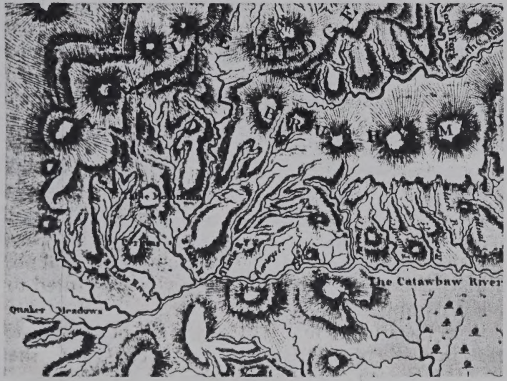
The Cherokee tribe controlled the entire mountainous area of western North Carolina, in which they had resided since prehistoric times. Their towns were spread along the river bottoms, and their dwellings—made of poles covered with bark—were placed among the fields that they farmed. Members of the tribe were generally hostile and aggressive toward the white settlers who encroached on territory that the Indians felt was in their domain. During the French and Indian War they tended to side with the French, and during the American Revolution with the British, creating on both occasions conditions that were perilous to the whites on the frontier. But for their sporadic raids and scalpings the Cherokee paid dearly. Gen. Griffith Rutherford's military incursion in 1776 (which destroyed thirty-six Cherokee towns and laid waste their lands), the Treaty of Long Island (in the Holston River) that followed, and subsequent treaties of 1785, 1791, and 1798 weakened and disillusioned the tribe.

The Catawba tribe, unlike the Cherokee who have been associated linguistically with the Iroquois, spoke a language that led early scholars to associate them with the Sioux. Recent studies suggest, however, that the Catawba were the descendants of prehistoric inhabitants of the area of present Burke County. They were sedentary agrarians, said to be trustworthy, courageous, and friendly. The Catawba were skilled at pottery making. They used bits of soapstone to temper the clay, a process peculiar to their people. This has led archaeologists to call pottery made by this method "Burke pottery." The Catawba attempted to cooperate with the colonists and sided with them during the French and Indian War and during the Revolution, but they fared no better, and perhaps worse, than the Cherokee. Diseases introduced by the whites—particularly smallpox and alcoholism—loss of territory, and constant warfare with the northern Indians reduced their total number to about 250 by 1784.

Early Explorations in the Burke County Area

Most of the earliest explorers of record followed the course of the famous Indian Trading Path, which passed southwestward out of central Virginia and veered into South Carolina when it reached the Yadkin River. The Spanish explorer Hernando De Soto (1496?-1542) is believed to have made contact with the Cherokee and Siouan Indians in 1540 and to have "visited the Saura Indians at their village near the Broad River in the foothills east of [present] Asheville." De Soto's course was probably south of Old Burke. In 1566 Juan Pardo, another Spanish expeditionary, followed much the same route through this area but probably did not explore Burke County. During the seventeenth century other explorers traversed the Indian Trading Path, but they likewise failed to penetrate the area encompassing present Burke.

The Collet Map of 1770 stands as the first reasonably accurate record of the permanent geographical features of Burke County. The map, prepared by Capt. John Abraham Collet, a native of Switzerland who served in the British army at Fort Johnston on the Cape Fear River, was based primarily on information gathered by William Churton of Edenton. Churton, who had served as surveyor of the Granville District, died in 1767, the year Collet arrived in America. Gov. William Tryon turned Churton's map materials over to Collet, who completed the work. "Quaker Meadows," "Table Mountain," and the major streams flowing into the north side of the Catawba River east of this area appear on the Collet Map, but the streams do not bear their modern names.



Portion of the Collet map of 1770, showing prominent early geographical features of Burke County.

The earliest explorer who traveled extensively through Burke County and kept a complete diary was Bishop August Gottlieb Spangenberg. In 1752, at the suggestion of Lord Granville, he embarked on an expedition through the Granville District, seeking a site for a permanent Moravian settlement. Spangenberg (1704-1792), a native of Germany, became associated with the *Unitas Fratrum* (the Moravian brotherhood) in 1733. On his exploratory expedition through western Carolina he was accompanied by three other Brethren, by Lord Granville's surveyor (William Churton), and by two hunters who served as chain bearers and guides.

Spangenberg's entourage, having departed from Edenton, reached the Catawba River on October 28, 1752, traveled up the Catawba and reached "the middle river of the three rivers flowing into the Catawba near Quaker Meadows, not far from Table Mountain" on November 19. The "middle river," later called Muddy Creek, was eventually named John's River (for John Perkins, one of the hunters in the group). At this place Spangenberg chose his fourth tract, consisting of 6,000 acres beginning 7 or 8 miles above the river's mouth, because "the land between here and the mouth of the river [was] already taken up." In Spangenberg's words, "We found everything needed for a settlement,—very fertile lowlands, the best we have seen in North Carolina. . . . The tract is well watered, with springs, little streams, and creeks, and the water is as beautiful and sweet as one could wish." By November 24 the party had pitched camp "in the forks of the third river [where Steel's Creek joins Upper Creek]. . . . Perhaps five miles from Table Mountain." This was their deepest penetration into Burke County. "The wolves here give us music every morning, from six corners at once, such music as I have never heard," noted the diarist. This "music" may have influenced the explorers to retrace their steps and move up the "middle river" to its headwaters near present Blowing Rock. From this point they were able to intersect the headwaters of the Yadkin River and follow it eastward to the tract on which they ultimately established a settlement (Wachovia).

While in the confines of present Burke County, Spangenberg made several pertinent observations. He noted that the land was "very rich, and has been much frequented by buffalo, whose tracks are everywhere. . . ." He noted, in fact, that no paths existed except those made by the buffalo. There were, however, many hunters "who work little, live like the Indians, shoot many deer, and sell their skins." Spangenberg also commented on the large number of Cherokee his party had encountered. "The woods here are full of Cherokees, and we see their signs wherever we go. They are out hunting." He noted that in the northeastern part of the county "there is not much hard wood, mostly pine. The forest could be much improved with care, for it has been ruined by the Indians, who are accustomed to set fire to large tracts to drive the deer to a given spot, and that keeps the young trees from growing." Spangenberg also wrote with feeling of the isolation, the solitude, the constant fear of mutilatio or depredation at the hands of the Indians, and the difficulty in maintaining oneself "alone in the forest." Yet he also made record of the rich lands, ample wood, gushing springs, falling waters, and the potential for "good mill sites. . . ." He made no mention, however, of any plantation or settlement in the area.

Attempts to Settle the Burke Frontier, 1749-1763

At mid-century, as Spangenberg recorded, the territory west of the Catawba River and above the Granville line was virtually uninhabited. Hunters, both Indian and white, wandered through the area, and an occasional fur trader made contact with them; but no concerted effort had been made to form settlements, build homes, bring in women and children, or clear and farm the land.

When Anson and Rowan counties were formed in rapid succession (in 1750 and 1753 respectively), Lord Granville's agents and surveyors moved in quickly with land-sales promotions of frontier tracts. Established planters and merchants to the east strongly supported frontier settlement, which they felt would screen them from attack by unfriendly Indians. In addition, reports concerning the availability of fertile, well-watered land appealed to the financially burdened settlers in the Northeast—particularly in Pennsylvania—where real estate prices had skyrocketed as a result of increased population density. Nevertheless, before the mid-1760s only the most intrepid and venturesome had attempted to acquire land and settle in the vast domain beyond the Catawba that was to become Old Burke. This fact was largely due to certain hindrances that existed or developed and which impeded the progress of settlement during this period. Not the least of these were the procedural difficulties and expenses involved in obtaining an unencumbered title to land.

A far greater depressant to settlement beyond the Catawba River arose in late 1753 with the outbreak of the French and Indian War. From 1754 to 1758 particularly heavy Indian attacks occurred in the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia—a popular route of migration into the Carolina backcountry—and some brutal incursions by the Cherokee occurred along the Catawba. A general alarm developed among the few settlers that had been aggressive enough to penetrate the wilderness west of the river, and a general withdrawal took place. Between 1756 and 1759 the number of persons subject to taxation in Rowan County diminished from over 1,500 to fewer than 800. Although local hostilities had subsided by 1761, prospective immigrants to Burke territory did not enter in any great number until after the signing of the Treaty of Paris by the British and French in 1763.

Settlement of the Area That Became Burke County, 1763-1777

John Carteret, the first earl Granville, died in 1763. His land office was promptly closed, never to reopen. The closure of the Granville land office, coupled with the continued existence of the Granville District under new ownership (the second earl Granville), created a situation that was inconsonant with a systematic and harmonious settlement of the county area. Disputes frequently developed over the exact location of the Granville line, and the governor, when in doubt, did not hesitate to issue patents for land that might eventually fall in the Granville District. Settlers, with good cause, refused to pay quitrents if both Granville and the crown laid claim to the same parcel. Inasmuch as Granville's office was closed and a clear title to land could not be obtained, a number of desirable immigrants gravitated toward other territory. Many others settled in future Burke County without making an entry or petitioning for a warrant, but responsible occupants entered their land with the state land office when it was opened on January 29, 1778. It was kept open until March 30, 1780. During this period 1,856 land entries were made in the territory encompassing Old Burke. Such entries had been stimulated when the state government was established and the hated quitrents abolished.

After 1763 the number of migrants to the Burke area increased rapidly until the onset of the Revolution in 1776. In 1771 it was estimated that over 2,000 "taxables" were residing in the territory that was to become Old Burke in 1777. During the Revolution little increase in population occurred; afterward, the opening up of new lands farther west resulted in an emigration from the county that was barely balanced off by the number of immigrants coming in. In 1790 the total number of taxables was approximately 2,100. There was, of course, a major population loss when the territory that is now Catawba County was transferred to Lincoln County in 1782 and 1784.

Ethnology of the Early Settlers

In examining the national origins of the early settlers west of the Catawba, one is tempted to oversimplify. Few if any of the settlers of this early period came from Europe or from the British Isles directly to the Burke area. Some moved west of the Catawba River from older North Carolina settlements to the east, others from the maturing frontiers of more northern colonies—particularly Virginia and Pennsylvania, but also from Delaware, Maryland, and New Jersey.

A few early settlers followed the wagon road from Charleston, South Carolina, into the Carolina backcountry, but by far the most heavily traveled route to the Burke frontier was the Great Wagon Road from Philadelphia. Many immigrants stopped along the way—sometimes for a winter or two, often for a generation.

Much has been written over the years to suggest that Burke County was settled almost entirely by the Scotch-Irish and the Germans. This generalization is a misconception that has been inadvertently nurtured, owing to the colorful and distinctive characteristics of these two ethnic groups.

German settlers are traditionally pictured as robust, law-abiding, industrious, and scrupulously honest. Their farming habits were a model for others. They were "good citizens" who participated actively in church, family, and communal affairs, rarely questioning the authority of the government in power, yet, due to their language barrier, taking little interest in politics or public life. Having migrated from the Rhine valley (the Rhenish Palatinate) to Pennsylvania, many settled in that commonwealth's Lancaster County; but secondary migrations took them into the Carolina backcountry via the Great Wagon Road.

The Scotch-Irish have been characterized by many writers and in much detail, but the delineations of R. D. W. Connor are difficult to improve upon:

> We know [he wrote] that the Scotch-Irishman was domestic in his habits and loved his home and family; but we know also that he was an unemotional being, seldom giving expression to his affections and accordingly presenting to the world the appearance of great reserve, coldness, and austerity. He was loyal to his own kith and kin, but stern and unrelenting with his enemies. He was deeply and earnestly religious, but the very depth and earnestness of his convictions tended to make him narrow-minded and bigotted. He was law abiding so long as the laws were to his liking, but when they ceased to be he disregarded them, quietly if possible, forcibly if necessary. Independent and self-reliant, he was somewhat opinionated and inclined to lord it over any who would submit to his aggressions. He was brave, and he loved the stir of battle.

The Scotch-Irish were not Irish at all, but were Lowland Scots who had settled in the Irish province of Ulster during the seventeenth century. There they built up a prosperous woolen industry that was severely crippled by the tariff and trade acts of the British Parliament in 1699 and afterward. Other disastrous actions and events such as civil restrictions resulting from their religion, land-rent increases, and, finally, crop failures accompanied by famines precipitated the migrations to North America. The Scotch-Irish landed in Philadelphia and settled in many of the same areas as had the Germans before migrating over the Great Wagon Road to the Virginia and Carolina backcountry. They played a dominant role in the development of Burke County.

Added together, the English and Welsh were probably the most numerous of the early settlers in Old Burke. They were derived largely from the tidewater population of eastern Virginia and first penetrated the piedmont region of that commonwealth. They later drifted down into the North Carolina Piedmont and then moved westward into the Burke County area. An occasional English or Welsh settler came from Maryland or from the coastal region of North or South Carolina. A few families of Irish, French Protestant (Huguenot), Swiss, or Dutch extraction were among the early settlers in the county.

Common English names among the early settlers in present Burke County were Anderson, Avery, Bailey, Berry, Bradshaw, Branch, Brittain, Byrd (Bird), Carswell (Criswell), Causby (Cosby), Chapman, Clark(e), Cooper, Denton, Fox, Franklin, Gibbs, Hall, Hensley, Henson, Hicks, Johnson, Lane, Oxford, Parks, Penley (Pendley), Perkins, Piercy, Pritchard, Roper, Simpson, Stillwell, Taylor, Webb, and White. Common Welsh names were Davis, Edwards, Harris, Jones, Morgan, Phillips, and Williams.

Scotch-Irish names of early settlers included Alexander, Erwin, Harbison, McDowell, McElrath, McEntire, McGalliard, McGimsey, McNeely, McTaggart, Moore, Morrison, Patton, Penland (Pentland), Scott, Tate, and Thompson.

Names of early German families included Anthony, Arney (Earney), Baker (Becker), Bollinger (Bullinger), Burns (Bernz), Forney, Hildebrand, Huffman (Hoffman), Miller (Mueller), Mull (Moll), Settlemyre (Settlemeiyer), Shuffler (Scheiffler), Shull (Scholl), Sigmon (Sigman, Siegmann), Stamey (Stemey), Warlick, and Whitener (Weidner).

Some Scottish family names were Abernathy, Baird, Fleming, and Rutherford. Dutch names included Beekman, Corpening, and Van Horn. Garrison (Gerritsen) was believed to be Swedish or Dutch, and Ballew (Ballou) was a French Huguenot name. Native Irish names were Connelly (O'Connelly); Hennessee (O'Hennessy); and Neill, Neal, Naile, and O'Neal—all derived from the native Irish name O'Neill.

General Characteristics of the Burke Pioneer

Those who resided in the territory beyond the Catawba River—the area that was in 1777 to become Old Burke County—were citizens of the frontier. They possessed the traits that major historians have so frequently attributed to this group—courage, resourcefulness, adaptability, a certain restlessness that has fathered the word "shiftlessness," and a craving for complete independence. The loneliness of the frontier molded them into individualists. In the main they were rough and uneducated and did not eschew violence; but they were filled with a spirit of adventure and a burning desire for economic betterment. Land, they felt, was the key to their future contentment. A good all-weather spring, a stream, a little streak of bottomland that could be cleared and cultivated, and sufficient woodland to supply fuel, shelter, and game seemed to satisfy their needs.

No creek, fork, or branch was too small for them to settle on. The tributaries of Silver Creek, Hunting Creek, Upper Creek, and Irish Creek were thickly populated with settlers. Steel's Creek, a branch of Upper Creek, was named for the pioneer Joseph Steel. Russell's Creek was probably named for Capt. John Russell who settled in that area, and Simpson's Creek for another pioneer, John Simpson.

These frontiersmen were not organizers. They were so distant from the seat of government at Salisbury that they lived in an almost completely unstructured society; nor did they concern themselves with institutions. The pioneer character originated in no particular national group; it was, rather, a product of the environmental struggle. With the formation of the county the frontier passed on, and alterations in the population mix began to occur.

III. COUNTY GOVERNMENT AND POLITICAL LEADERSHIP

The Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions

The court of pleas and quarter sessions was the accepted governing body in each North Carolina county when the state constitution of 1776 was ratified, and it continued to serve this function until 1868 when a new constitution was adopted. Frequently referred to as the "county court," it was composed of justices of the peace appointed for life by the governor, on the recommendation of the county's representatives in the General Assembly. The court's jurisdiction extended to all civil actions at common law and to nonfelonious crimes; the court also had exclusive jurisdiction over the crimes of slaves.

The nonjudicial functions of the county court were even more important. Initially, the court appointed all county officers except the clerk of superior court and the wardens (overseers) of the poor. These appointive powers were modified at later dates. The court also had administrative functions roughly analogous to those of the county commissioners of a later period. It was responsible for assessing and levying taxes; establishing and maintaining roads, bridges, and ferries; granting licenses to taverns; controlling prices charged for food; and the erection and regulation of mills.

The voters had no direct control over the court and thus no direct control over county government. Some studies suggest that the various county courts of pleas and quarter sessions were made up exclusively of prominent merchants, slaveholding planters, and professional men. In Burke County this was definitely not the case. In Burke the yeomanry were well represented on the local governing body, while the slaveholders were not markedly overrepresented—only the disenfranchised nonfreeholders were without a voice on the court. Although the Burke County Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions was not a democratic body duly elected by the people, the record suggests that it operated wisely, efficiently, and honestly.

Fiscal Affairs of the County, 1777-1868

Ninety-five percent of all county revenues were derived from levies on land and from poll taxes. In Burke County all land was taxed on the basis of acreage until 1808 when the ad valorem (according to assessed value) principle was applied to town property. In 1819 this method was applied to all real property in the county. After the colonial period the

Volume I

BURKE COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA INDEX TO LAND GRANTS ENTERED IN 1778

(Alphabetical) - only G line

The card index at the Land Grant Office, Department of Secretary of State, 116 West Jones Street gives the file number (corresponding to the platt number), grant and entry numbers, book and page numbers, acreage, date entered and issued, and a very brief description of the land.

A xerox copy of the platt may be obtained for a nominal fee showing a land diagram and full description, names of two chaincarriers and the surveyor. Generally there is a warrant preserved for the survey and this, too, describes the land.

The grant books, handwritten, also have the same complete land description but no other information. These must be photocopied and are more expensive.

In the following index of those entering land in 1778 it must be borne in mind that a number of years could have elapsed before the grant was actually issued. The name of the person will be listed only once in this index, although he may have had only one or many grants entered in 1778.

Michael Gabart, Jacob Gabriel, Samuel Garret, William Gaunt, Philip Gegar, John Gibbs, Aaron Gibson, William Gibson, Henry Gillespie, James Glasgow and Joseph McDowell, William Going, Jacob Gortner, Joseph Grayson, William Grey, Richard Green, Thomas Green, James Greenlee, Frederick Grider, Martin Grider, John Griffeth, Michael Grindstaff, Michael Grinestaff, Nicholas Grindstaff, Peter Gront, Wm. Gudger, ✓

(additional 1778) (Select)

#65, p. 22, 450 acres on Turkey Cove, beginning WILLIAM CATHEYS, up both sides of river for complement. 30 Jan. 1778. Warrant Ordered. (1)

#66, p. 22, 640 acres North Cove above PIPERS (Pepper) at red bank of the river, both sides for complement. 30 Jan. 1778. Caveated by JOHN MONTGOMERY. Deeded (?) in favour of MC GOMERY. (2)

#73, p. 24, JOHN GRIFFITH, 640 acres on Pedgin River joining above upper entry of WILLIAM SHARPE and JOHN MC NIT ALEXANDER. 30 Jan. 1778.

JOHN MC NIT ALEXANDER and WILLIAM SHARPE, three entries: and many more.

#84, p. 28, JOHN MC NIT ALEXANDER and WILLIAM SHARPE, 300 acres on Linvills River, Linvills Cove, opposite head of three mile creek, some old Camps, walnut bottom, Crab Orchard and old fields. 27 Feb. 1778.

Vol III

July, 1794, p. 216: George Penland to John Erwin, 200 a., Mar. 5, 1794, pr: John Parks.

John Griffeth to Stephen Fuller, 300 a., Dec. 2, 1786, pr: Anthony Dukey.

Jan 1796

Petition by inhabitants of Gunpowder and horseford of Catawba R., jury to review part of road from Love Lady Rd. to Iredell Court-House from Gun Powder Cr. to Silver Cr. and to appoint Joshua Perkins, Sr., Joshua Perkins, Jr., Henry Horse (Haas), John Spence, John Griffeth, Jacob Derreberry, John Martain, Michael Heart, Joseph Heart, John White, Wm. Spencer, Wm. Thornton, and to appoint Clisby Cobb and Andrew Bard (Baird) as overseers from Gun Powder Cr. to Love Lady Rd. Sigs. of: Henry Stoner, John Shell, Wm.Pain, John Bradburn, Isaac Martain, Clisby Cobb, Andrew Beard.

Pre 1800 Capt Neeland's Polls (acreage & polls included)

250, 1; Wm. Cortney, 0, 1; Joseph Griffith, 0, 1; Abraham Gosset, 0, 1; Wm. Sammons, 0, 1; Charles Shell, 0, 1; Isaac Stoner, 100, 1; Henry Stoner, 100, 1; John Griffith, 300, 1; Andrew Baird, 650, 7; Partnership Lands, 32844: Jacob Suttlemire, 1300, 0; Wm. Little, 0, 1; John Martin, 250, 1; Benjamin Pugh, 0, 1; James Frankum, 0, 1; Jacob Martin, 300, 1; James Moore, 470, 2; Joseph Carnes, 0, 1; Wm. Martin, Sr., 300, 1; Wm. Martin, Jr., 200, 1; Jessey Martin, Isaac Griffith, ✓

✓ July, 1799: John Moore, Cap., John Church, John Martin, Jr., John Griffith, Andrew Beard, Cap., John Spencer, Jr., Jacob Derry Berry , Thos. Payne, Jr., Hennery Stoner, Sr., Jacob Tips, Robert Fleming, Daneal Polk

In the early days Burke Co. was immense, covering many future counties. There are only scraps of info about this ✓ John Griffith that at length I pinpointed his residence in present Iredell County!
It is obvious that he was not connected to our James Griffith family, who seem to have been on their way from So. Carolina to Kentucky when Capt. William Neill counted them in the 1787 Burke Co. Census.

To learn what was really going on, it was necessary to determine whom Capt Neill was, where he lived & where the others on the census lived, and to learn how long James was there. In the process I found that others on the list went to Kentucky about the same time, the most interesting being Catherine Pepper & family.

Militia Returns include:

William Neil and eldest son James of Burke Co. sold to Alexander Brevard whole amount of account due Lt. William Neil for service in Ninth N. C. Reg., wit: David Falls. Oct. 20, 1784. (Brevard Papers, I, 1787-1812, p. 27)

age & cost of ~~[illegible]~~ like were exactly given.
Many citizens, including Robert Pepper were accused of being tories, who were not, including Robert Pepper – unfairly charged, died of a heart attack.
Even Col McDowell, [illegible] had a long trial. Finally not convicted

Neighbor Wm Wofford near Iron works

✓ Capt. William Neill sworn. Stated Nicholas Trosper brought order that Col. McDowell had ordered Shadrack Inman, Seth Hyat and Thomas Young to serve a tour of duty at head of river and ordered him to deliver Hyatts gun to Trosper . . . Trosper said to give it to Hyatt to go on duty with.

"December 31, 1781 . . .Capt. Wm. Neill of Burke County and James Davidson complains to me on Col. Charles McDowell's conduct in Taking Bribes for Torys, in sending Torys as guards to the head of the river, in putting Capt. Neill under an arrest and not letting him know his charge, In Taking Torys on the last expedition contrary to orders, in Taking Tories as Substitutes to send to Gen. Green, upon the whole Countenancing Tories . . . to require of you to call a Court martial of all the field officers."

signed, Gen. Rutherford

Jones ~~Clay~~ Griffith & family temporary neighbor in Burke Co.

Estate:
Pepper, Robert, 1784 Adm. Bond: Catharine Pepper, Samuel Bright, Wm. Wofford.

#206, "WAIGHTSTILL and WILLIAM WAFFORD", 100 acres both sides North on fork of Catawba river between ROBERT PEPPER and WILLIAM MORROW. Entered 22 Sept. 1784.

#196, JOHN SMITH, 100 acres on first little broad river joining LANGFORDS upper line including Smiths field for Complement. Entered 2 Sept. 1784.

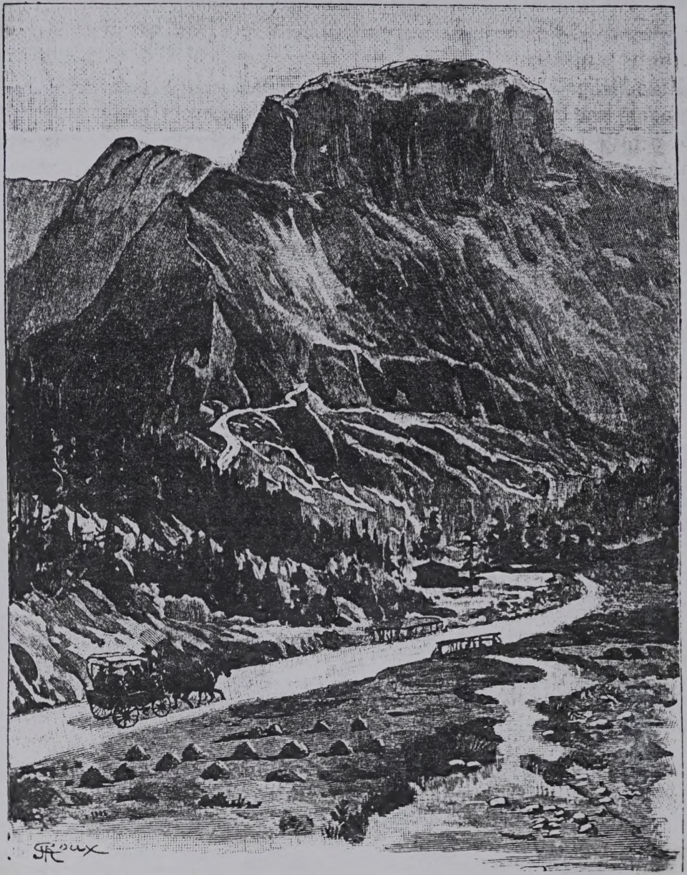
#92, THOMAS YOUNG and JOHN TATE, 50 acres in North Cove of Catawba River on East side of river on a Branch into river below PEPPERS improvement including ridge of Limestone land on west side of Linville Ridge. Entered 20 Aug. 1789.

#97, WILLIAM WOFFORD, 50 acres on Linvilles ridge including one of the head Springs of Paddys Creek and a large Bank of Iron Ore where stands a maple marked W dated 1783. 12 Aug. 1783. Warrant Issued.

#98, WAIGHTSTILL AVERY, 300 acres including forks of Flat Creek and east fork of Swaneno "and the first encampment GENL. RUTHERFORDS made on the western waters as the(y) marched against the Cherokees in 1766. 12 Aug. 1783. Warrant Issued. N. B. this entry ought to be No. 99."

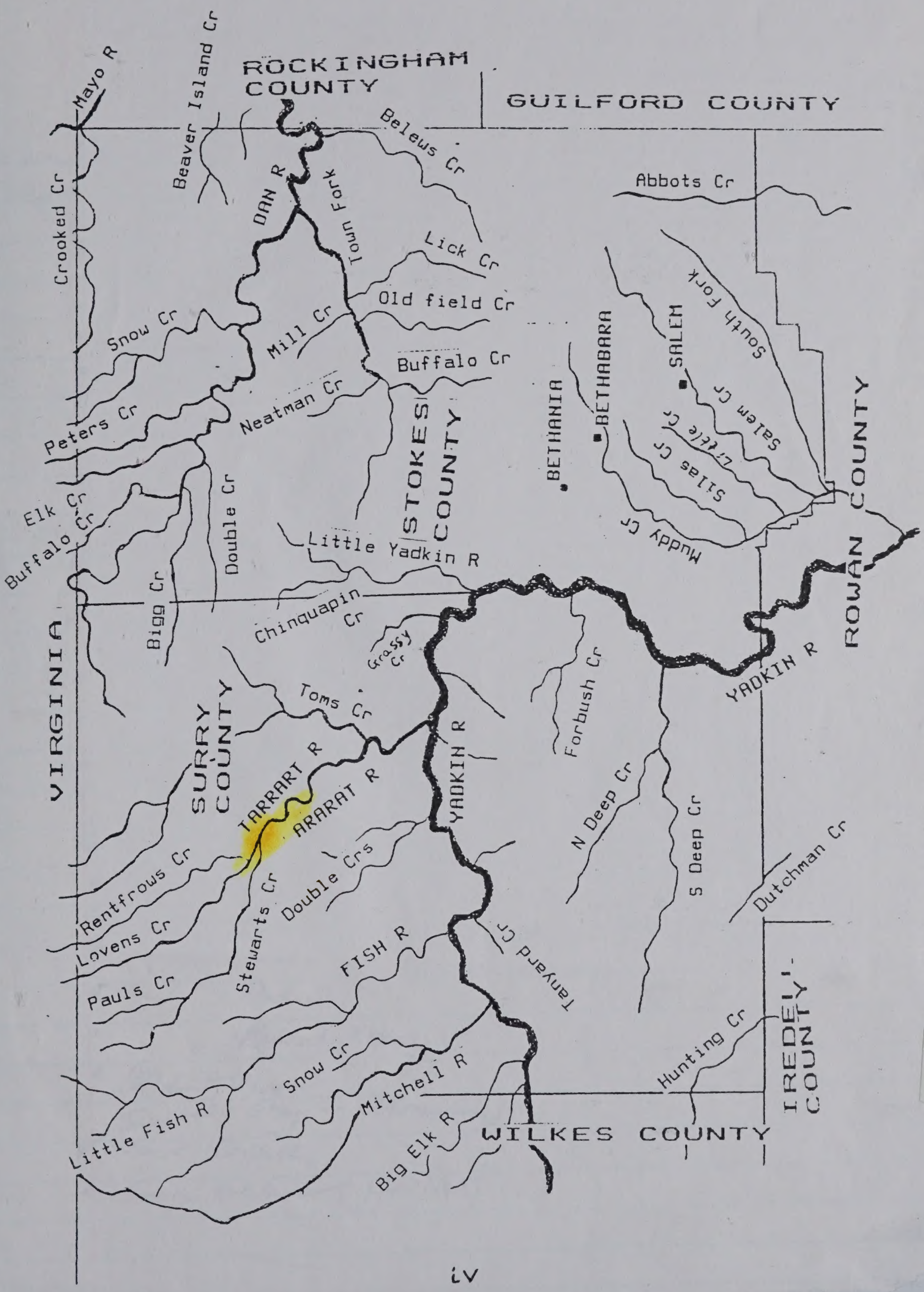
#99, WILLIAM WOFFORD, (Written over name of WAIGHTSTILL AVERY), 50 acres in the North Cove between RICHARD MORROW and ROBERT PEPPERS survey including both sides the fork for complement. 12 Aug. 1783. N. B. this entry ought to be No. 98.

MAITRE DU MONDE



"Great Eyrie," fictional mountain in Burke County. Copied from Jules Verne, MAITRE DU MONDE (Paris, ca. 1904), page 1. Drawing by George Roux.

ORIGINAL BOUNDS OF SURRY COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA



ROCKINGHAM COUNTY
GUILFORD COUNTY
Mayo R
Beaver Island Cr
Belews Cr
Crooked Cr
DAN R
Town Fork
Abbots Cr
Lick Cr
Old field Cr
Snow Cr
Mill Cr
Buffalo Cr
South Fork
SALEM
BETHABARA
BETHANIA
Salem Cr
Little Cr
Silas Cr
Muddy Cr
Peters Cr
Neatman Cr
STOKES COUNTY
Elk Cr
Buffalo Cr
Double Cr
Little Yadkin R
ROWAN COUNTY
Bigg Cr
Chinquapin Cr
VIRGINIA
Grassy Cr
YADKIN R
Toms Cr
Forbush Cr
SURRY COUNTY
ARRART R
ARARAT R
YADKIN R
N Deep Cr
S Deep Cr
Rentfrows Cr
Double Crs
Dutchman Cr
Lovens Cr
Stewarts Cr
Tanyard Cr
FISH R
Pauls Cr
IREDELL COUNTY
Snow Cr
Mitchell R
Hunting Cr
Little Fish R
Big Elk R
WILKES COUNTY

The Griffith Family lived at the junction of Stewart's Creek and Arrarat River.

A Short History Of Surry County

BY RUTH MINICK

Surry County in North Carolina began with a gift. And a gift it is to its people with its agreeable climate, its magnificient scenery of hills and hollows, and the majestic Blue Ridge with its foothills dominated by the incomparable Pilot Mountain. When in 1663 Charles II had regained the throne of England after the execution of his father, the king gave to eight of his friends, the Eight Lords Proprietors, the gift of land which we call Carolina. In 1729, the then king of England bought back all the shares of the proprietors except that of Lord Granville, who would not sell. Lord Granville's share, then inhabited by the Saura and later by the Cherokee Indians, covered our own county. The Granville heirs held on to their land until the new state of North Carolina took it from them in 1777.

Just how Surry County got its name is not clear. It might have been named for an Earl of Surrey in England, a sympathizer of the colonies on the colonial tax issue; but earliest accounts of the county attribute its name, Surry, to Lord Tryon, a colonial governor who had been born in the county of Surrey in England.

Surry did not attain its present boundaries until 1850 when Yadkin County was taken from it. In the beginning this area was part of Anson County, then of Rowan. When Surry County itself was created in 1770, it encompassed all of Forsyth, Stokes, Yadkin, and parts of Ashe, Alleghany, Wilkes, Alexander, and what have you--"South to Rowan, North to Virginia, East to God knows where, and West to the Judgment Day!"

Surry County went through three county seats before it settled down in 1850 to the present one of Dobson. First was Gideon Wright's farm down on the Yadkin in present day Forsyth, then at Old Richmond two miles northwest, then in 1789 on our own home grounds of Rockford.

Not much is known of Surry County in its early days. Its people, with a few exceptions, were small farmers of English, Scotch-Irish, and German descent, and left very few written records. First, we were a land of hunters. Then, as early as the 1740's, we have reason to believe, permanent settlers began to come in. By the 1750's there was a substantial settlement in our county, heaviest in the "Hollows"

During the Revolutionary War, Surry County people, being of a self-sufficient and independent nature (as they still are), were divided between the Tories and the Patriots. The Tories left their record in stories of lawlessness and harassment, the Patriots in deeds of bravery. (This record undoubtedly exists because the Patriots became the winning side.) But Surry had its share of real heroes, perhaps more than its share. The well known war heroes Ben Cleveland and Joseph Winston happened to be from what are now known as the counties of Wilkes and Stokes, respectively, but at that time they were from Surry. Jesse Franklin, Richard Taliaferro and Micajah Lewis, (all heroes of the Revolutionary War), were real Surry Countians. Franklin not only was a recognized hero of the Battle of King's Mountain and of Guilford Courthouse, but later he became the president pro-tem of the United States Senate and a governor of North Carolina--no little feat for a modest man from the frontier so lacking in pretense that he refused, to his dying day, to have his portrait painted. Moreover, Jesse's brother, Meshack, was not only a United States congressman, but a North Carolina member of the House of Commons who helped draft the state constitution. Lewis and Taliaferro died heroes' deaths in the War. And a company of home militia from around Mount Airy might have turned the tide for a decisive American victory at Guilford Courthouse had not the poor communication of the time made them a day late for the battle.

With independence, the Surry people turned their energies toward making a living. The countryside being hilly, there was little fertile land except along the narrow river bottoms. The streams were clear and sparkling but were unnavigable for large boats. These factors though did not deter these enterprising people from raising their grain crops of wheat, corn, oats, and rye and grinding them at the numerous grist mills which they had built along the streams. The abundant forests also fed sawmills, tanneries and forges. There were considerable amounts of iron ore in this region, with customers coming from as far away as Salem.

Not until the 1830's and '40's did the first

Burke Co NC Land Grants
(~~Church~~ Check Ky Mgz Rec) 929.3 K375
(Pepper, etc)

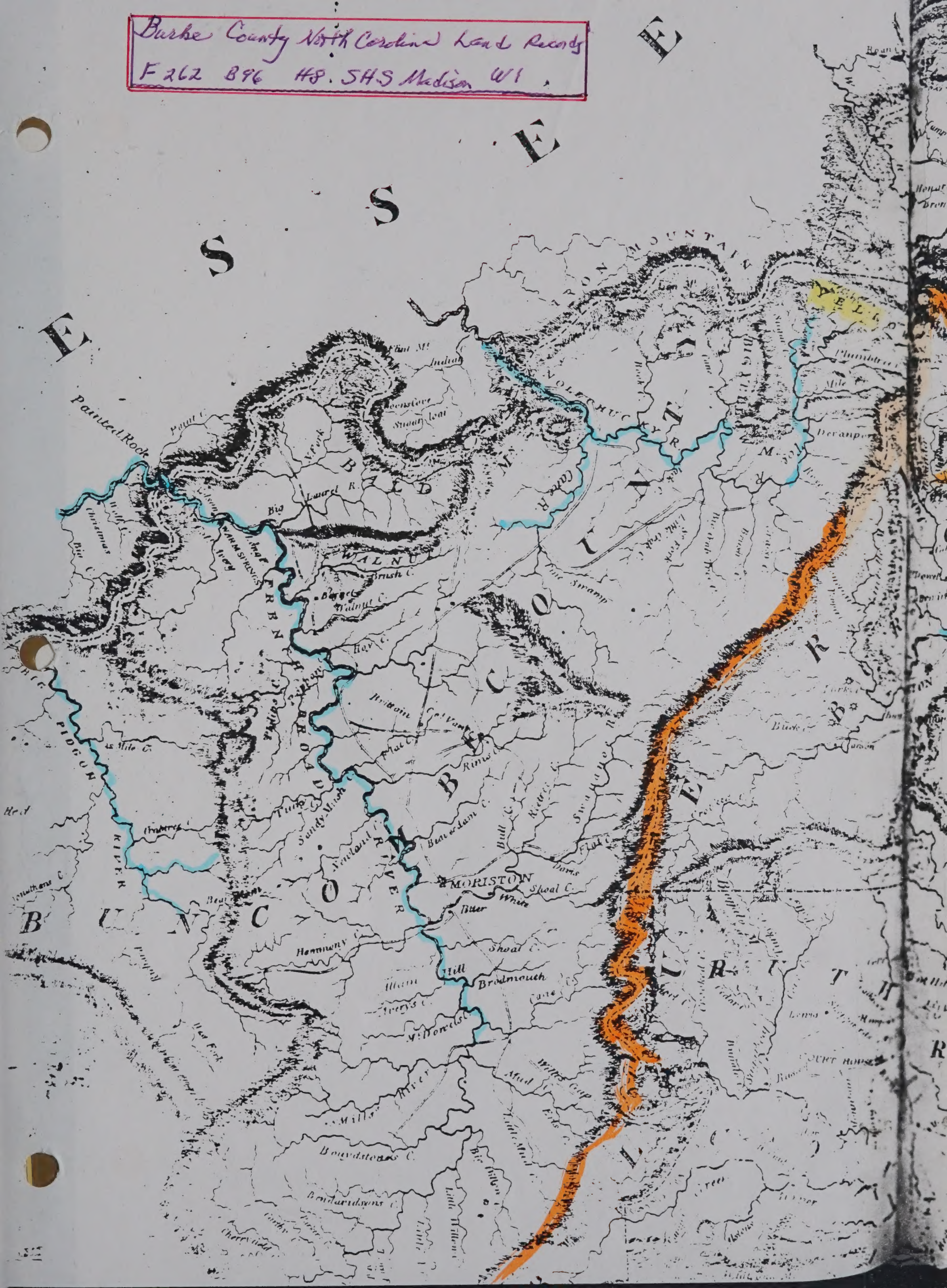
Wm. o Wofford
James o Ainsworth
o John Sisco Jr/Sr & Job
o John ~~Hart~~ Vann
Martha Oakley (Benjam, Christopher, Wm Okely)
– o Crowell
– o ~~(Dr) Rich~~ Richard Medlock
Wilson x3 (John Willson)
o Thomas Young
o William Phillips
o (Dalj)ale Mc ~~Nalls~~ McFalls & John
✓ Catharine Pepper
Fredrick Miller (Henry, Jacob, Nancy, Wm Jr/Sr)
o James Lee
o William Moodie
o James Bennett
o Hensley x4
Thomas Beckerstaff ( ) erstaff — (Samuel Biggerstaff)
o Billing
o (Whi) ~~Walker~~ Whitaker
o (Thos?) Bright
o Pickrel
o e ~~Reddock~~ Reddock
o (Rob)ert Turner
Sam)uel Gray — (Thomas Gray)
✓ Jones Griffith
o George Holbrook (Holbrook)

(Kentucky Gazette) R929.3 G796
Karen Mauer Green

o David McCraken
Thomas Baker — (Reason) Baker
✓ John Armstrong
Henry Gillespie — (David Gillespie)
o Richard Jacks
o Thomas Barnard?
(Mon)tgomery (James, Joseph, W.)
o (Bra) dshaw
( )ling
( )ory
~~o (W) right~~ ?
o Samuel Bright

Burke County North Carolina Land Records

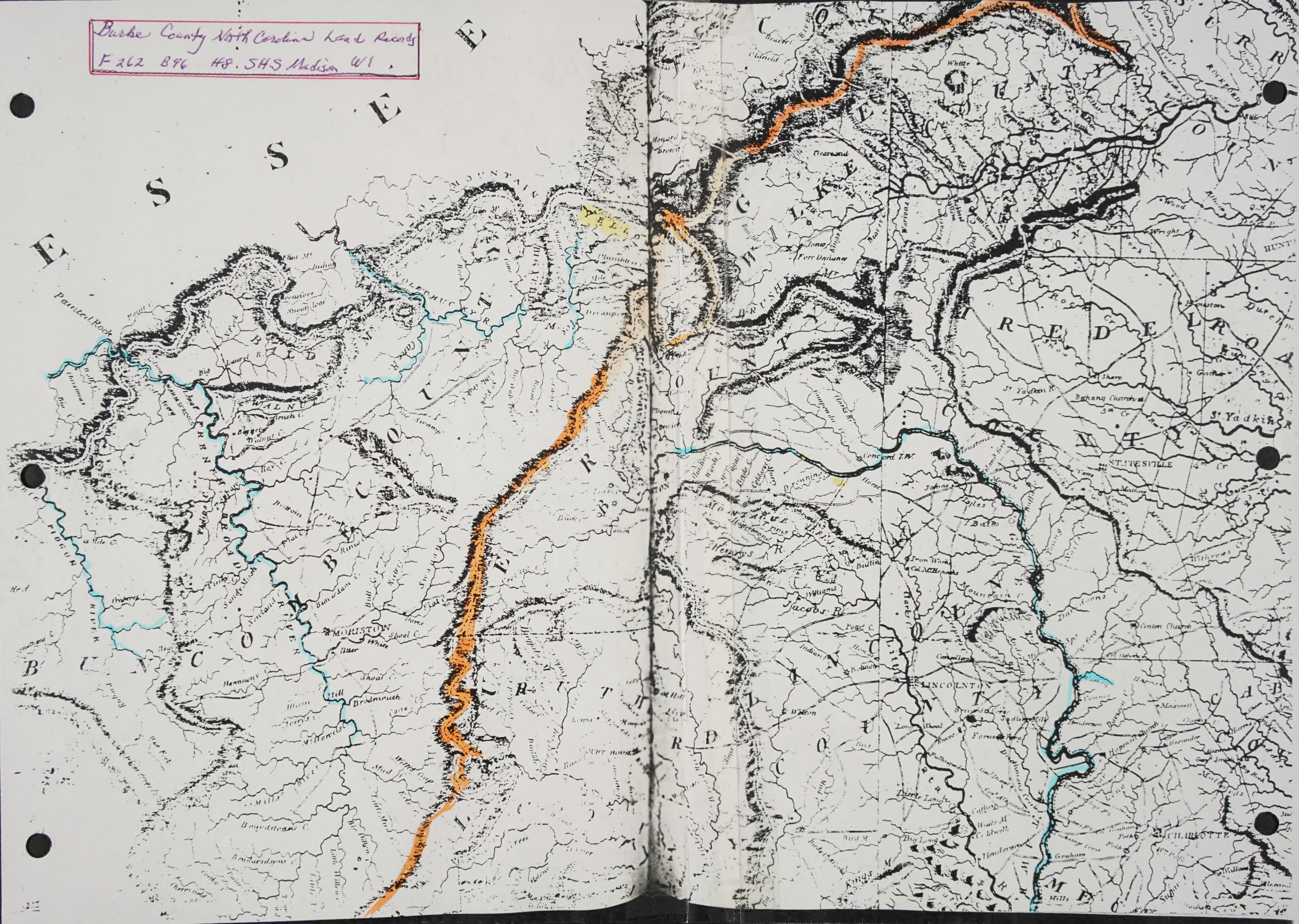
F 262 B96 H8. SHS Madison WI.

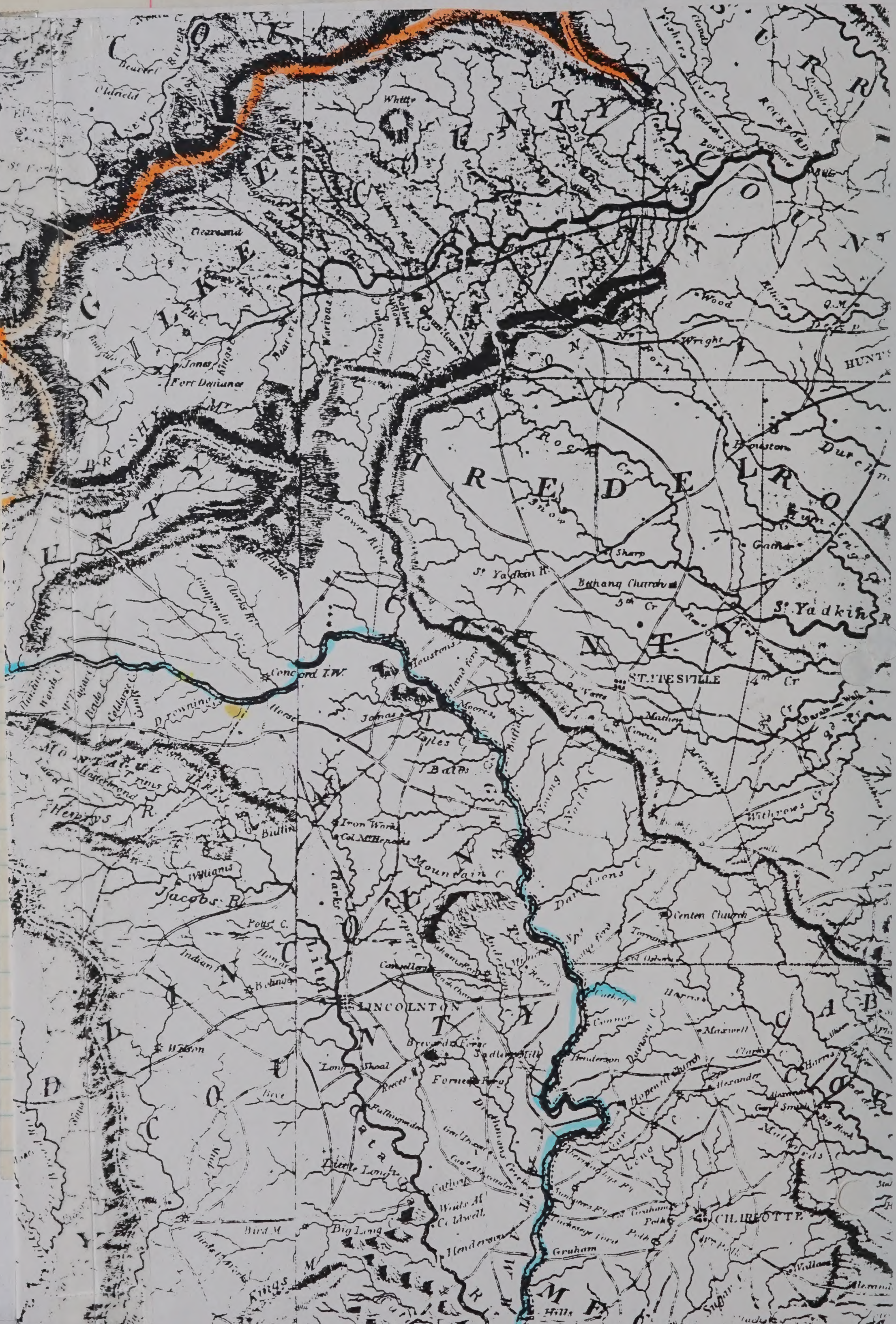

E S S E E
IRON MOUNTAIN
YELLOW
Flint Mt.
Indian
Painted Rock
Paint C.
BALD MTS
Big Laurel R.
WALNUT
Brush C.
Walnut C.
NOLECHUCKY R.
Cane R.
Toe R.
Pine Swamp
Ivy C.
WARM SPRINGS
FRENCH BROAD RIVER
PIGEON RIVER
Britain
Reems
Turkey C.
Sandy Mush
Newfound
Beaverdam C.
Bull C.
Swannanoa R.
Flat C.
MORISTON
Shoal C.
Hominy C.
Hill
Broadmouth
Cane C.
Avery's C.
McDowell's
Mills River
Mud C.
Wills Gap
Boydstons C.
Little Mud C.
Big Willow
Cherryfield
B U N C O M B E
B U N C O M B E C O U N T Y
B U R K E
Plumbtree
Davenport
Buck C.
Lewis
COURT HOUSE
Green

A Short History Of Surry County

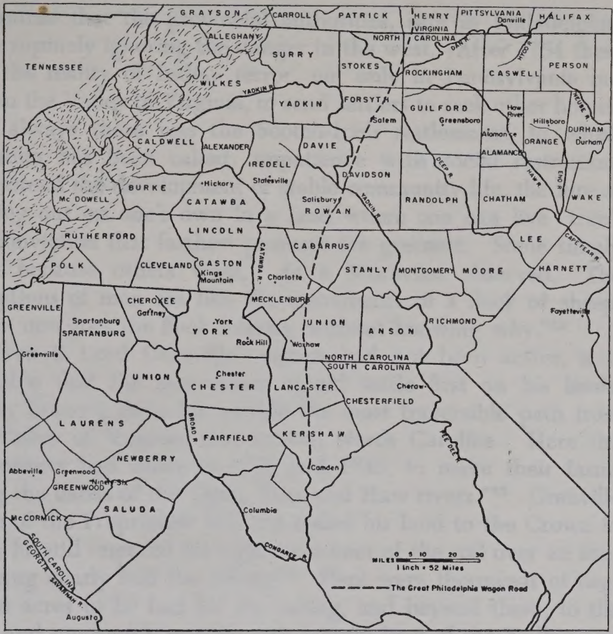
BY RUTH MINICK

Burke County North Carolina Land Records
F262 B96 H8. SHS Madison WI


TENNESSEE
BUNCOMBE
BURKE COUNTY
WILKES COUNTY
IREDELL COUNTY
LINCOLN COUNTY
RUTHERFORD COUNTY
SURRY COUNTY
ROWAN
CABARRUS
Iron Mountain
Painted Rock
Bald Mt
Nolechucky R
Brush Mts
Montague Hills
Pidgeon River
Broad River
Moriston
Lincolnton
Statesville
Charlotte
Concord T.W.
Fort Defiance
Sherrill's Ford
Court House
Yadkin R
Catawba R


WILKES COUNTY
SURRY
ROCKFORD
Fishers River
Big Elkin
Wood
Wright
HUNTS
Fort Defiance
Jones
BRUSHY MT.
IREDELL COUNTY
Rock Cr.
Snow
Sharp
St. Yadkin R.
Bethany Church
3d Cr.
St. Yadkin
Houston
Dutchmans
ROWAN
STATESVILLE
4th Cr.
Withrows Cr.
Concord T.W.
Lower Little
Houstons
Moores
James
Lyles C.
Baits
Drowning C.
Horse
MONTAGUE
Henrys R.
Iron Works
Mountain C.
Williams
Jacobs R.
Potts C.
Indian C.
Davidsons C.
Center Church
LINCOLN COUNTY
LINCOLNTON
Long Shoal
Sadlers Mill
Forney
Maxwell
Hopewell Church
Henderson
Alexander
Little Long
Coldwell
Big Long
Bird M.
Kings M.
Graham
Polk
CHARLOTTE
CAB
MEC
Hills
Sugar

This is mostly
Griffith search —
though I have not
been very successful
finding our clan
there, except for
Isaac Griffith Sr in
Burke Co. NC. +
family —
They *may* have
come there from
South Carolina,
where Samuel was
born?


GRAYSON
CARROLL
PATRICK
HENRY
PITTSYLVANIA
Danville
HALIFAX
VIRGINIA
NORTH CAROLINA
ALLEGHANY
SURRY
STOKES
ROCKINGHAM
CASWELL
PERSON
TENNESSEE
WILKES
YADKIN R.
YADKIN
FORSYTH
Salem
GUILFORD
Greensboro
Haw River
Hillsboro
DURHAM
Durham
Alamance
ORANGE
ALAMANCE
DAN R.
HYCO R.
NEUSE R.
CALDWELL
ALEXANDER
DAVIE
IREDELL
Statesville
DAVIDSON
•Hickory
BURKE
CATAWBA
Salisbury
ROWAN
RANDOLPH
CHATHAM
WAKE
Mc DOWELL
DEEP R.
HAW R.
ENO R.
LINCOLN
RUTHERFORD
LEE
CAPE FEAR R.
CABARRUS
POLK
CLEVELAND
GASTON
Kings Mountain
Charlotte
CATAWBA R.
STANLY
MONTGOMERY
MOORE
HARNETT
GREENVILLE
CHEROKEE
Gaffney
MECKLENBURG
Fayetteville
Spartanburg
SPARTANBURG
•York
YORK
UNION
RICHMOND
ANSON
Rock Hill
Waxhaw
Greenville
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
UNION
Chester
CHESTER
LANCASTER
Cheraw
CHESTERFIELD
LAURENS
BROAD R.
FAIRFIELD
KERSHAW
PEE DEE R.
NEWBERRY
Camden
Abbeville
Greenwood
GREENWOOD
Ninety Six
SALUDA
Columbia
McCORMICK
SOUTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
SAVANNAH R.
CONGAREE R.
Augusta
MILES 0 5 10 20 30
1 Inch = 52 Miles
The Great Philadelphia Wagon Road

The Carolina Piedmont

selves in sizable colonies from the coast to the region of Fayetteville.*

All of this influx in the twenty years after 1730, however, had come by sea, and either remained near the coast or was concentrated in the lower river valleys. Hardly any of the newcomers penetrated the actual Piedmont. If a diagonal line had been run in 1750 northeastward from (modern) Aiken, South Carolina, through Columbia and Fayetteville, to Wilson, North Carolina,

few of these ship-borne settlers would have been found west of it. The fall line was still the limit of civilization.

Yet while official attention was still centered on the east, a few hardy souls from the Valley of Virginia had found their way into the up-country of North Carolina. These families who came in between 1740 and 1750 were harbingers of what was to prove one of the mightiest migrations in colonial times. So great was the tide pouring in from the north that, by the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, the North Carolina back-country had at least sixty thousand settlers, while that of South Carolina had eighty-three thousand—almost four-fifths of the colony's white population.[31] Certainly some of this up-country folk in both colonies had moved in from the Tidewater counties; but the tremendous bulk of the people were "transfers" from Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia—a few Swiss and Welsh, large numbers of Germans, but more Scotch-Irish than all others put together.

Why did these thousands come south? Many of them, of course, were immigrants newly arrived in America from Ulster, following the usual course to Philadelphia and then through the Great Valley. Finding this more densely settled land too expensive, they had pushed on until they reached North Carolina. Other thousands, however, were making a second—or even a third or fourth—complete move. Their reasons were varied. A second generation of young Scotch-Irishmen was growing up, with the normal compulsion of young men to make their own way in the world. As Pennsylvania's population steadily increased, both from immigration and a high birth rate, the demand for land drove prices to a point beyond the ability of youths to pay; thus sons in a large family were impelled to move where land was still cheap and plentiful. Agents from Proprietors in the south had much to do with the removals. Just as spokesmen for Hite, Beverley, and Borden had advertised their grants in the 1730's and 1740's, attracting many settlers to Virginia, so now the agents of Lord Granville came to hymn the advantages of living in North Carolina.

Already, too, there were rumblings of Indian unrest at the mid-century, with threats of serious trouble to come; by 1753 the western frontiersmen in Pennsylvania were complaining in ex-

---

* It must not be supposed that these Scots had friendly contact or even sympathy with their fellow-Presbyterians when the Scotch-Irish shortly began to pour into the up-country west of them. At the Revolution, on the contrary, Scots and Scotch-Irish often were to be found fighting on opposite sides. The two peoples were now foreigners to each other, in language, dress, background, and experience. See below, ch. 16.

asperation that the provincial authorities, safe in Philadelphia, were supinely ignoring the danger in the west. After 1754 there was the reality of Indian terror, not only in Pennsylvania but also in the Valley of Virginia, to send settlers to seek other homes. And always there was the Scotch-Irish restlessness, to which attention has been called: impatience with social restrictions that attend the development of stable community life, the lure of striking out on one's own in a land where one can live "free," the conviction that farthest pastures are greenest. Some simply went because others went. As a Moravian observed, "The migrations of men are like the movements of a flock of sheep, where one goes the flock follows, without knowing why."[32]

Even if Lord Granville's agents had not been active, it is probable that the newcomers would settle first on his lands, simply because these lay astride the most traversible path from the Valley of Virginia into central North Carolina. Here the forerunners had come in 1740 and 1745, to make their farms along the banks of the Hyco, Eno, and Haw rivers.*[33] Granville alone of the Proprietors had not ceded his land to the Crown in 1729; he still reserved his rights as owner of the soil over an area covering nearly half the colony.[34] Here were thousands of neglected acres to be had for the taking, and beyond them, to the west and southwest, was the rich bottom land of the Yadkin and Catawba river region, leading onward to the border between the two Carolinas. This mesopotamia became the home of a great concentration of Scotch-Irish, and the highway leading to settlement in South Carolina's piedmont.†

Three North Carolina governors enthusiastically encouraged the immigration from the north—men who had a special interest in attracting settlers with a Scottish background to expand the population and economic development of the province. Gabriel Johnston, governor from 1734 to 1751, was a native of Dumfriesshire in Scotland; Matthew Rowan, president of the Council in 1753-54, was an Ulsterman; so also was Arthur Dobbs, governor from 1754 to 1765. Dobbs, born in Carrickfergus in Northern Ireland, had long been intensely interested in exploration and colonization. Coming to North Carolina, he associated himself with the Scots agent of Granville, Henry McCulloh; through his exertions, three colonies of Ulstermen came to North Carolina, in 1751, 1754, and 1755. By 1754 Dobbs had been made governor of the Province. The years from Johnston's appointment in 1734 to Dobbs's retirement in 1765 were precisely the period of the Province's enormous growth. Through these officials, "their relatives, friends, connections, and acquaintances in the north of Ireland and the south of Scotland, North Carolina was, perhaps, better known than in any other part of the old world."[35]

Details of the filling up of the countryside are illuminating. When Johnston took office the population of North Carolina was about fifty thousand; when he retired seventeen years later it was ninety thousand.[36] As he reported in 1751, "Inhabitants flock in here daily, mostly from Pennsylvania and other parts of America who are overstocked with people and some directly from Europe. They commonly seat themselves toward the West and have got near the mountains."[37] President Rowan wrote in 1753: "In the year 1746 I was up in the country that is now Anson, Orange, and Rowan counties. There were not then above one hundred fighting men; there is now at least three thousand, for the most part Irish Protestants and Germans, and daily increasing."[38] Counting one fighting man as representative of a family of five, the population in the western region had probably increased from five hundred to fifteen thousand within seven years.

Governor Dobbs wrote in 1755 of seventy-five families who had settled on land he owned in North Carolina: "They are a colony from Pennsylvania of what we call Scotch-Irish Presbyterians who with others in the neighboring Tracts had settled

---

* The first actual settlement of Scotch-Irish in North Carolina was not in the Piedmont, and arrived by sea rather than by way of Pennsylvania. On November 29, 1735, Governor Johnston informed his Council that Arthur Dobbs (later to become governor of the province), "and some other gentlemen of distinction in Ireland," and Mr. Henry McCulloh, a merchant of London (later agent for Lord Granville), had written him "respecting their intention of sending over to this province several poor Protestant families with design of raising flax and hemp." They asked for a grant of sixty thousand acres of land in New Hanover County. Their request was granted, and next year (1736) the settlers arrived at their land on the Black River (now Duplin County), where they organized themselves into two congregations, Goshen and the Grove. (*Colonial Records of N.C.*, IV, 72-73) It is not stated, however, what the size of this colony of "several" families was.

† The (modern) counties receiving the largest numbers of Scotch-Irish settlers were Orange, Alamance, Guilford, Caswell, Rowan, Iredell, Cabarrus, Mecklenburg, Lincoln, and Gaston.

together in order to have a teacher, i.e., a minister of their own opinion and choice."[39] He testified to the size of what we have called the "fourth wave" of immigration from Ulster, noting that as many as ten thousand people from the North of Ireland had landed at Philadelphia in a single year, many of whom, he said, were "obliged to remove to the southward for want of lands to take up" in Pennsylvania.

As in both Pennsylvania and Virginia, Germans were a considerable part of the newcomers. As usual, they tended to keep themselves separate from the Scotch-Irish. In the county of Orange, organized in 1752 because of the swelling population, the Scotch-Irish settled chiefly in the east, and the German Lutherans west of the Haw River.[40] A large concentration of German Moravians was to be found in the western reaches of the county (now Forsyth). When the United Brethren purchased here their great Wachovia tract in 1752, Bishop Spangenburg referred to it as "probably the best left" in the province.[41] Here their colony of Bethabara was formed in 1753. The bishop was wrong in his supposition about the best land left, however, for later Germans found much fertile territory around Salisbury in the Catawba Valley.

Although there were enough Germans to continue the Palatinate stream into the piedmont of South Carolina in the next decade, the flow of Germans into America began to diminish around mid-century, and soon had dwindled to a trickle. The Carolina piedmont as a whole was much more thoroughly Scotch-Irish than German.

The years immediately following 1754 saw a shift in the source of the Scotch-Irish immigration into North Carolina. It was in that year that the French and Indian wars began in earnest in Pennsylvania, and Indian depredations made it perilous for people to traverse that colony's Cumberland Valley on the way south. Governor Dobbs said that the Indians had put a "total stop" to the influx of Pennsylvanians. The Valley of Virginia was nearer, however, so that when Indians descended upon settlements there to burn, pillage, and murder, the exodus of Scotch-Irish thence was hastened. "In one week of October, 1756, three hundred persons went by Bedford Court House [in Virginia] on their way to Carolina, and five thousand more 'had crossed James River, only at one ferry, that at Goochland Court House.' "[42]

North Carolina likewise had its Indian troubles during the 1750's, though later than those in the north and never reaching the proportions they assumed in western Pennsylvania or even in Virginia. The principal tribes of the North Carolina piedmont at this time were the Cherokees and Catawbas.* Both had been friendly enough to the whites in the early days, the Catawbas remarkably so. Cherokee amity had recently been secured through the expert diplomacy of Governor Glen of South Carolina, in whose province were large areas of Cherokee lands. In 1754-55 Glen had persuaded these Indians to yield to the Crown an enormous tract of their territory for some $300 worth of presents.[43]

Cherokees returning from the fighting in Pennsylvania, and probably incited by the French, in 1756 created a series of incidents in upper Carolina. Mismanagement of the affair, rough retaliation, and hot tempers now resulted in what is generally known as the Cherokee Uprising. Depredations were committed upon outlying and scattered settlements; and while North Carolina settlers felt nothing like the panic of their kinsfolk in Pennsylvania and Virginia at the Indian "menace," many of them prudently moved eastward to safer homes. The number of taxables in Rowan County, in the center of the trouble, was reduced by half between 1756 and 1759; but in Orange County, to the northeast, settlements were exempt from Indian raids.[44] By 1761, after an impressive show of force by the authorities, the Cherokees retired to the west, having lost five thousand of their people, including half their warriors.[45] Thereafter the forward march of the pioneers was resumed.

* The Catawbas from the first arrival of the whites showed them unusual friendliness. Rights says: "They aided in the [1711] campaign against the Tuscaroras in the east and served as a barrier against tribes of the west. The flood of immigration that poured into the Piedmont area after 1700 was little opposed by the friendly Catawba." He also notes that they were hereditary enemies of the Cherokee. (*The American Indian in North Carolina,* p. 125) About 1738 a great epidemic of smallpox decimated Catawba villages and also caused havoc among the Cherokee. (Milling, *Red Carolinians,* p. 237) This may have deterred the latter from the risk of war and the loss of further warriors.

ginia] on their way to Carolina, and five thousand more had crossed James River, only at one ferry, that at Goochland Court House.'"

North Carolina likewise had its Indian troubles during the 1750's, though later than those in the north and never reaching the proportions they assumed in western Pennsylvania or even in Virginia. The principal tribes of the North Carolina piedmont at this time were the Cherokees and Catawbas.* Both had been friendly enough to the whites in the early days, the Catawbas remarkably so. Cherokee amity had recently been secured through the expert diplomacy of Governor Glen of South Carolina, in whose province were large areas of Cherokee lands. In 1754-55 Glen had persuaded these Indians to yield to the Crown an enormous tract of their territory for some £500 worth of presents.

Cherokees returning from the fighting in Pennsylvania, and probably incited by the French, in 1759 attacked a series of settlements in upper Carolina. Mismanagement of the affair, rough retaliation, and hot tempers now resulted in what is generally known as the Cherokee Uprising. Depredations were committed upon outlying and scattered settlements, and while North Carolina settlers felt nothing like the panic of their kinsfolk in Pennsylvania and Virginia at the Indian "menace," many of them prudently moved eastward to safer homes. The number of taxables in Rowan County, in the center of the trouble, was reduced by half between 1756 and 1759, but in Orange County to the northeast, settlements were exempt from Indian raids. By 1761, after an impressive show of force by the authorities, the Cherokees retired to the west, having lost five thousand of their people, including half their warriors. Thereafter the forward march of the pioneers was resumed.

---

* The Catawbas from the first arrival of the whites showed them friendliness. Hughes says: "They added to the [1711] campaign against the Tuscaroras in the east and served as a barrier against tribes of the west. The flood of immigration that poured into the Piedmont area after 1730 was not opposed by the friendly Catawbas." He also notes that they were hereditary enemies of the Cherokees. (The American Indian in South Carolina, p. 135). About 1738 a great epidemic of smallpox decimated Catawba villages and also caused havoc among the Cherokees. (Milling, Red Carolinians, p. 237). This may have deterred the latter from the radical war and the loss of further warriors.

together in order to have a teacher, i.e., a minister of their own opinion and choice." He testified to the size of what we have called the "fourth wave" of immigration from Ulster, noting that as many as ten thousand people from the North of Ireland had landed at Philadelphia in a single year, many of whom, he said, were "obliged to remove to the southward for want of lands to take up" in Pennsylvania.

As in both Pennsylvania and Virginia, Germans were a considerable part of the newcomers. As usual, they tended to keep themselves separate from the Scotch-Irish. In the county of Orange, organized in 1752 because of the swelling population, the Scotch-Irish settled chiefly in the east, and the German Lutherans west of the Haw River. A large concentration of German Moravians was to be found in the western reaches of the county (now Forsyth). When the United Brethren purchased here their great Wachovia tract in 1752, Bishop Spangenberg referred to it as "probably the best left" in the province. Here their colony of Bethabara was formed in 1753. The bishop was wrong in his supposition about the best land left, however, for later Germans found much fertile territory around Salisbury in the Catawba Valley.

Although there were enough Germans to continue the Palatinate strain into the piedmont of South Carolina in the next decade, the flow of Germans into America began to diminish around mid-century and soon had dwindled to a trickle. The Carolina piedmont as a whole was much more thoroughly Scotch-Irish than German.

The years immediately following 1754 saw a shift in the course of the Scotch-Irish immigration into North Carolina. It was in that year that the French and Indian wars began in earnest in Pennsylvania, and Indian depredations made it perilous for people to traverse that colony's Cumberland Valley on the way south. Governor Dobbs said that the Indians had put a "total stop" to the influx of Pennsylvanians. The Valley of Virginia was nearer, however, so that when Indians descended upon settlements there to burn, pillage, and murder, the exodus of Scotch-Irish thence was hastened. "In one week of October, 1756, three hundred persons went by Bedford Court House [in Vir-

As in Pennsylvania and Virginia, North Carolina officials were concerned to provide civil institutions for settlers in the west. In 1746 all the counties in the province were in Tidewater country, with Edgecombe, Craven, and Bladen extending as far west as North Carolina claimed territory—that is, through the whole reach of Tennessee to the Mississippi. In that year, however, Granville County was cut off from Edgecombe, to become the first county of the Piedmont. By 1752 it was considered expedient to organize Orange County, whose territory had for several years been attracting Scotch-Irish and German settlers. Within another decade this single frontier county had the largest number of taxables of any county within the province,[*] and by 1770 it was necessary to cut off the western section of Orange to form the new county of Guilford. In the southern part of the province, Anson County, extending westward along the South Carolina boundary line, beyond the Yadkin River, was organized in 1749. Like Orange, and even earlier, it had to be subdivided: in 1762 its western portion became Mecklenburg, one of the greatest centers of Scotch-Irish concentration.[†]

In the central section of the Piedmont frontier region, Rowan County, beyond the Yadkin, was created in order to meet the needs of settlers around Salisbury. Thus, because of a phenomenal growth of population, North Carolina had added five Piedmont counties within the twenty-one years between 1749 and 1770.

Inevitably, all this flow of people from the north soon traversed the Piedmont of North Carolina and swept into the province to the south. No natural barrier separates the two Carolinas, and it is probable that most of the land-hungry travelers were unaware that they had crossed a boundary line when they came into South Carolina's piedmont. The history of the filling up of the southern province's frontier lands is in many respects a duplication, a decade later, of the North Carolina story.

---

[*] "Its number of taxables increased from twenty to about four thousand during its first twenty years," says Lefler (*History of North Carolina*, I, 96). Orange County had been formed from parts of Granville, Johnston, and Bladen.

[†] Mecklenburg County, around Charlotte, was to make a name for itself in 1775 by its call for independence from Britain, and, during the Revolutionary War, by the sturdy fight of its Scotch-Irishmen against the redcoats.

As early as 1750 a few families who had come down from Pennsylvania and Virginia were located in the up-country one hundred miles from Charleston.[*] South Carolina might during the ensuing decade have had a large immigration from the north if the Cherokee Uprising had not broken out in 1756, with much of the actual fighting done in South Carolina. These years of strife with the Indians were nothing like so costly in lives as in Pennsylvania: only 150 or 200 white persons were killed. But it is estimated that by 1761 South Carolina had spent more than £100,000 to defeat and then to pacify the Cherokees.[46]

The effective settlement of the South Carolina piedmont, therefore, began only after 1761. Simms says that in 1756 there were only some twenty-five families in the whole up-country; ?? although three of these families had penetrated as far as the Savannah River near Abbeville.[47] After 1761 the inrush began, coming through central North Carolina, into the region between the Pee Dee (Yadkin) and Catawba rivers, with the Waxhaws making a kind of central distributing point. As in the north, the Scotch-Irish were greatly preponderant, with Germans now few in number. From the Waxhaws settlements spread through the (modern) counties of Lancaster, York, Chester, Fairfield, Union, Newberry, Abbeville, and Edgefield. "No colonial area," according to Bridenbaugh, "expanded with the rapidity of the back parts of Carolina after the defeat of the Cherokee in 1761."[†][48]

So many thousands of people headed in the same direction, all coming from the north, could not fail to make something more than a beaten path. Their common route, indeed, became one of the most impressive highways of colonial times, The Great

---

[*] "Colonel Clarke, with a party of Virginians, settled in that year on the Pacolet. Other parties subsequently joined him, dotting with civilization the forests along the Fair Forest and Tiger rivers. A few other parties, here and there, with these constituted the only white settlements of the back-country until 1755, the year when Braddock was defeated." (Simms, *History of South Carolina*, p. 120)

[†] Bridenbaugh, stressing the source of the immigration that filled the back-country, suggests that this region of the Carolinas might with propriety be called "Greater Pennsylvania." Writing of South Carolina, he says, "In the newly settled Rocky Mount district in 1767, a missionary found people already crowded together, 'thick as in England.' John Stuart wrote from Charles Town in 1769 that 'the Country near the line is very full of inhabitants, mostly Emigrants from the Northern colonies.'" (*Cities in Revolt*, p. 127)

Philadelphia Wagon Road, as it was called in the north, or "The Great Wagon Road from the Yadkin River through Virginia to Philadelphia distant 435 Miles," as Joshua Fry and Peter Jefferson meticulously labeled it on their "Map of the Most settled Parts of Virginia" (1775).

It began, naturally enough, at the colonial metropolis, Philadelphia, starting on the western bank of the Schuylkill. By the 1720's it reached out only to the settlements in Lancaster County, for there the Susquehanna made a natural end of the track. This section of the road was steadily widened and improved, for it was the most used, and it now passed through the thriving frontier market town of Lancaster. At the Susquehanna the main road went through York and Gettysburg, and so across the Monocacy River in Maryland to Williamsport on the Potomac; but a much-traveled northern branch of it led up from Lancaster to Harris's Ferry (Harrisburg), to traverse the Cumberland Valley and lead through Chambersburg to Williamsport. The ferry here crossed the Potomac into the Shenandoah Valley. By the middle of the eighteenth century a number of towns and villages had grown up along the road in the Valley of Virginia—Martinsburg, Winchester, Stephensburg, Strasburg, Woodstock, and Staunton.

At the James River, Looney's Ferry at modern Buchanan took passengers across for the short trip to the end of the Valley at the site of Roanoke. There the Road turned briefly eastward through the Staunton River gap of the Blue Ridge, crossed through hilly country over such minor streams as the Blackwater, Pigg, Irvine, and Dan, and entered North Carolina. In this province it traversed the Moravian settlement at Wachovia, on a branch of the Yadkin, and then followed the open country between the Yadkin and Catawba rivers. In 1760 it had reached Salisbury. When the South Carolina piedmont was thereafter opened up, the Road went on through the Catawba Valley to the settlements around Pine Tree (modern Camden), thence southwestward beyond the Congaree to Ninety-Six and Augusta. From Philadelphia to the original terminus, Wachovia, it was 435 miles; extended to its full length, to the Savannah River, it was almost 700.[49]

It is not surprising that the Scotch-Irish in the Carolinas formed neighborhoods. Governor Dobbs had noted in 1755 that these people, "whom we call Scotch-Irish Presbyterians," settled near each other "in order to have a teacher, i.e., a minister of their own opinion and choice."[50] Dobbs may not have been correct in assigning the reason for close settlement; there is, indeed, evidence to indicate that the founding of a church sometimes persuaded new families to settle in a particular neighborhood. Many historians, however, have been struck by the tendency of the people not to isolate themselves. "In the selection of a site for settlement," says Meriwether, "the back countryman was nearly always influenced by the distance from other settlers. He was rarely found more than ten miles from his fellows."[51]

The farms were of considerable size. In Orange County, North Carolina, more than three-quarters of the property holders owned between 100 and 500 acres of land; only some 5 per cent had farms smaller than 100 acres, and only 5 per cent had more than 1,000 acres.[52] In the Granville District of upper North Carolina, "the regular grant was 640 acres."[53] Holdings in South Carolina were generally smaller, partly because the Province had allowed a bounty of a hundred acres for every man, with fifty more for each woman and child.[54] The average here seems to have been around 175 acres.

Such figures make clear that in the Piedmont of both Carolinas the Scotch-Irish were farmers, not plantation owners. With their divergent origins, background, religion, and economic interests, the up-country people were regarded with ill-concealed distaste by most of the eastern planters, who still controlled affairs in both provinces. It was felt by South Carolina gentry of the coastal region, for example, that after their expense in quieting the Cherokees, they should not have to tax themselves to provide courts and other conveniences for these up-country "ruffians."[55] With such an attitude, the officials sent into the frontier country were often lax in performance of their duties or, much worse, unjust and exigent in their taxation, and even unfair in their exercise of "justice." In both North and South Carolina, consequently, there were "Regulation" movements

(noted in detail below, in chapter 16), which marked the growth of sectional feeling in the two provinces.

Despite this, the merchants of Charleston saw opportunities for business with these disdained people in the hinterland. Since the rivers that begin in central North Carolina flow southeastward to the coast of South Carolina, Charlestonians saw to it that a road was constructed to lead up to meet the extension of the Philadelphia Wagon Road. Merchants from Charleston, having already set up stores in outlying settlements of the low country, now began to provide markets for the corn and cattle of up-countrymen. "North Carolina butter made by the Scotch-Irish at Rock River sold in fifty- and one-hundred-pound kegs at Atkins and Weston's warehouse on the Cooper."[56]

Once more, in the settlement of the Carolinas, the restlessness of the Scotch-Irish may be observed. Nash tells in detail of a family which moved in 1751 from Berks County, Pennsylvania, to the region of the Eno River in North Carolina.[57] Their motives were loss of crops by an early frost, death of the oldest child, and glowing accounts sent back from the Eno by former neighbors. Another family, the Pettigrews of Abbeville, South Carolina, had made a twenty-eight-year pilgrimage from Ulster before their final settlement. Arriving at New Castle in 1740, the original American Pettigrew, well educated and a friend of Benjamin Franklin's, moved to a frontier tract of three hundred acres in Pennsylvania. Well established there, he sold his property when Indians began their depredations and went to the Valley of Virginia. "Uprooting his family again after three years, he settled in North Carolina, stopping there until rumors of Arcadia enticed him to the trail again in 1768. After four years on Long Cane Creek, in South Carolina, he moved again, but this time only a mile or so down the trail."[58] In another instance, "Andrew and John Pickens served as justices of the peace at the first court of Augusta County, Virginia, in 1745; six years later they had located at the Waxhaws below the South Carolina boundary; and in 1762 John and Andrew, Jr., received warrants to parcels of land in the Savannah Valley."[59] Such cases could be multiplied.

The descendants of these restless Scotch-Irish people crossed the Appalachians and led the way, not only into the frontier regions beyond the mountains, but thence eventually across the Mississippi even to the Pacific coast.

D. Indian Menace to Settlement

The Great Migration of the Scotch-Irish (and Germans) from its beginnings up to 1754 had been a steady and almost wholly peaceful advance through frontier regions, with only natural barriers to impede it. In 1754, however, that peace prevailing throughout all regions of settlement was rudely shattered. Indians now began violently to oppose the white people who had penetrated into their territories. The next ten years were marked by bloodshed, bitterness, constant anxiety, cruelty, and death to men, women, and children. Immigration from Ulster, as from Germany, almost ceased. Frontiersmen were fighting for their very existence in Pennsylvania and Virginia. It would be well over a century before Americans would cease to speak of the "Indian menace" on the frontier.

It may seem remarkable that, with constantly increasing numbers of intruders into Indian lands from 1717 to 1754 and with the importunate Scotch-Irish in the van, there had not already been Indian disturbances on a major scale. That these did not occur can be attributed principally to two fortunate circumstances, which a reflective Ulster Presbyterian might have regarded as predestined: the wise and pacific Indian policy of Pennsylvania and the absence of Indian settlement in the Shenandoah Valley.

Quakers in Pennsylvania from the very outset had determined to deal with the Indians as friends and equals. All land on which settlement was likely to occur was purchased from the tribes beforehand, and not for a pittance, but at a fair price. The government in Philadelphia built no forts, established no militia, trained no scouts and Indian fighters. This attitude of complete friendliness rested upon religious conviction and moral conscience; and, as often happened in Quaker experience, honesty and fair dealing proved practical, for it spared the colony ex-

5. Zadock Griffith, who moved to NC in 1799, does not on the surface appear to have been a relative. (see enclosure) His immigrant ancestor; William Griffith who settled in Ann Arundel Co MD, was brought to the Colonies in 1675. An old Bible stated that he was "kidnapped at age 12 and brought to America." So there is that old Griffith tradition at least two generations before Jonas. As you will notice, no Jonas is mentioned in the article though one possibility might be through William's son Charles, whose descendants are not given. The only thing that draws much attention to this branch is the kidnapped boy story.

6. Hardin Griffith had a wonderful imagination, or else his father, Samuel Teater Griffith, did. However, there has to be some truth in his story if we can only uncover it. I don't think he would deliberately lie to his son Guy, whom he obviously loved very dearly. Perhaps Jonas, himself, enjoyed a good yarn.
   A. Three brothers, including a boy, did not come directly to Rowan Co NC from Wales.
   B. If Jonas was kidnapped, it wasn't in or from Wales. Maybe he did rescue a kidnapped boy from the Indians, but it wasn't quite the way they told it. Probably Kentucky and the Ohio River had nothing to do with it. The Holston or New River are more likely, or some such place--Tennessee is OK, or SC or VA or NC mountains, as locale for the rescue.
   C. Jonas the boy did not hunt with Daniel Boone the man, though they may very well have hunted together. (1) They were about the same age. (2) Boone did not get to Kentucky that early. (3) I have searched many Boone biographies and none of them mention the separation story that Hardin claims they do.

   And yet--I have a hard time believing he would deliberately lie to his son. Another thing--WHERE DID HARDIN GRIFFITH GET HIS NAME? The enclose data shows several cases of Hardin/Griffith family intermarriages, including some who went to Tennessee.

* 7. Elender Griffith married Richard Locke in Madison Co. KY about the same time Samuel married Sarah Teater. The enclosed will information probably shows who Richard's father and grandfather were. Richard^3 Matthew^2 John^1 Locke?? Unless cousin, same name.

8. More search needs to be done in McCracken Co. KY, for it appears many North Carolinians and Tennesseeans moved to the "Jackson Purchase" including War Veterans. Also, Mary Ann Dial Griffith's sister, Susan Dye, married there in 1825 and I am convinced the Griffiths were there with her. Both couples moved to Perry Co. IL for a 2 or 3 year sojourn before the Dyes moved to the mining area in Taney Co. MO. We know John W. mined at and later moved his family to the mining area in SW Wisconsin.

9. Regarding #6 above, the legends preserved by the Texas branch of the Griffiths should not be dismissed lightly. The story has become distorted. Just because Jonas, himself, can be proven not to have done all of the things they claim, does not mean that some other possible ancestor or relative could not have done something similar. One of the older sons, or perhaps someone in GGGGG Grandma Griffith's family? Something went on there. We just have to be good detectives.

If John W. Griffith's father was really born in South Carolina, as that census said he was, and if the Griffiths who lived with or near the Grahams were ours, the following might show how they came to be there (on property owned by their relative, Richard Graham?). If Jonas was in South Carolina's York County most of his adult life, that might also explain why we cannot find him in any North Carolina record except the 1787 Burke Co. census.

At least this is something to think about:

NORTH CAROLINA LAND GRANTS IN SOUTH CAROLINA by Brent Holcomb
(WI SHS #F253 H62 (1980))

The author says "The border between No and So Carolina was a point of controversy for many years. Finally, in 1764 the border east of the Catawba River was surveyed, However, it was not until 1772 that it was surveyed west of that river. Before these surveys, over 1000 land grants were issued by NC in territory which is now South Carolina. These grants are in the present counties of Marlboro, Chesterfield, Lancaster, York, Chester, Union, Cherokee, Spartanburg, Greenville, Laurens and Newberry....The North Carolina counties from which these land grants were issued were Bladen, Anson, Mecklenburg, and Tryon...."

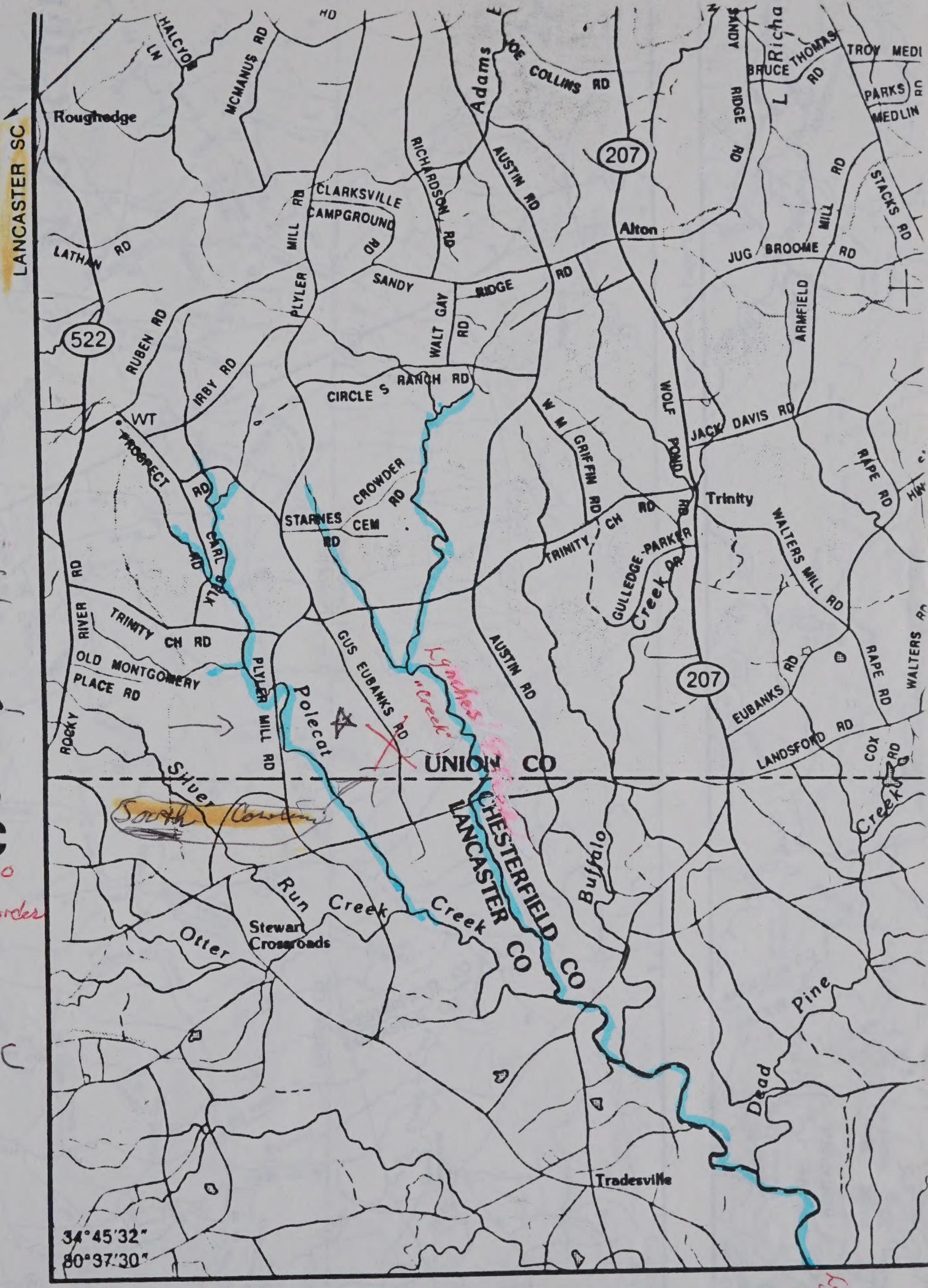
I did not find any Griffith grants in the book, but there were two for Richard Graham, who did have Griffiths in his household. There is also one for a Benjaben Harden, whoever he was. These three grants appear to be in present York County, South Carolina. They were all surveyed 16 & 17 May, 1754 by Matt Rowan who evidently believed that they were in Rowan County, established 1753:

GRAHAM, RICHARD File no. 1139 (1653); Gr. no. 1033; BK. 13, p 13 (15,14)
400 A on N side Broad River on Clarks Creek below Gayin Moors land.. formerly surveyed for James Moor...16 May 1754 Matt Rowan

GRAHAM, RICHARD File no. 1637 (1123); Gr. no. 1017; Bk 13, p 11 (15,11)
300 A on S side Cataba...mouth of Dutchmans Creek opposite to the Nation...17 May 1754 Matt Rowan

HARDEN, BENJABEN File no 1160; Gr no 1041; Bk. 15, p 15
396 A on So side Broad River on a fork of Bullocks Creek... May 17th 1754 Matt Rowan

If John W. Griffith's father was really born in South Carolina, as that census said he was,


LANCASTER SC
Roughedge
HALCYON LN
MCMANUS RD
Adams
JOE COLLINS RD
SANDY RIDGE RD
Richa
BRUCE THOMAS RD
TROY MEDI
PARKS
MEDLIN
207
RICHARDSON RD
AUSTIN RD
CLARKSVILLE CAMPGROUND RD
MILL RD
STACKS RD
MILL RD
Alton
LATHAN RD
SANDY RIDGE RD
JUG BROOME RD
PLYLER
WALT GAY RD
ARMFIELD
522
RUBEN RD
IRBY RD
CIRCLE S RANCH RD
WOLF POND RD
JACK DAVIS RD
WT PROSPECT RD
W M GRIFFIN RD
RAPE RD
CARL POLK RD
CROWDER RD
STARNES CEM RD
Trinity
TRINITY CH RD
GULLEDGE-PARKER RD
Creek DR
WALTERS MILL RD
RIVER RD
TRINITY CH RD
GUS EUBANKS RD
Lynches Creek
AUSTIN RD
OLD MONTGOMERY PLACE RD
PLYLER MILL RD
Polecat
207
EUBANKS RD
RAPE RD
WALTERS
ROCKY
LANDSFORD RD
COX RD
UNION CO
Silver
South Carolina
CHESTERFIELD CO
LANCASTER CO
Creek
Buffalo
Run Creek
Creek
Otter
Stewart Crossroads
Pine
Dead
Tradesville
34°45'32"
80°37'30"

NC

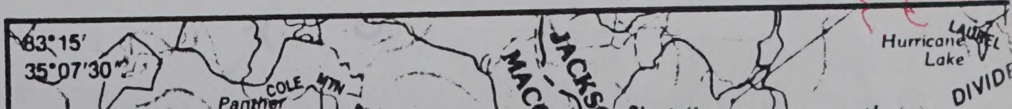
~~David Griffith~~

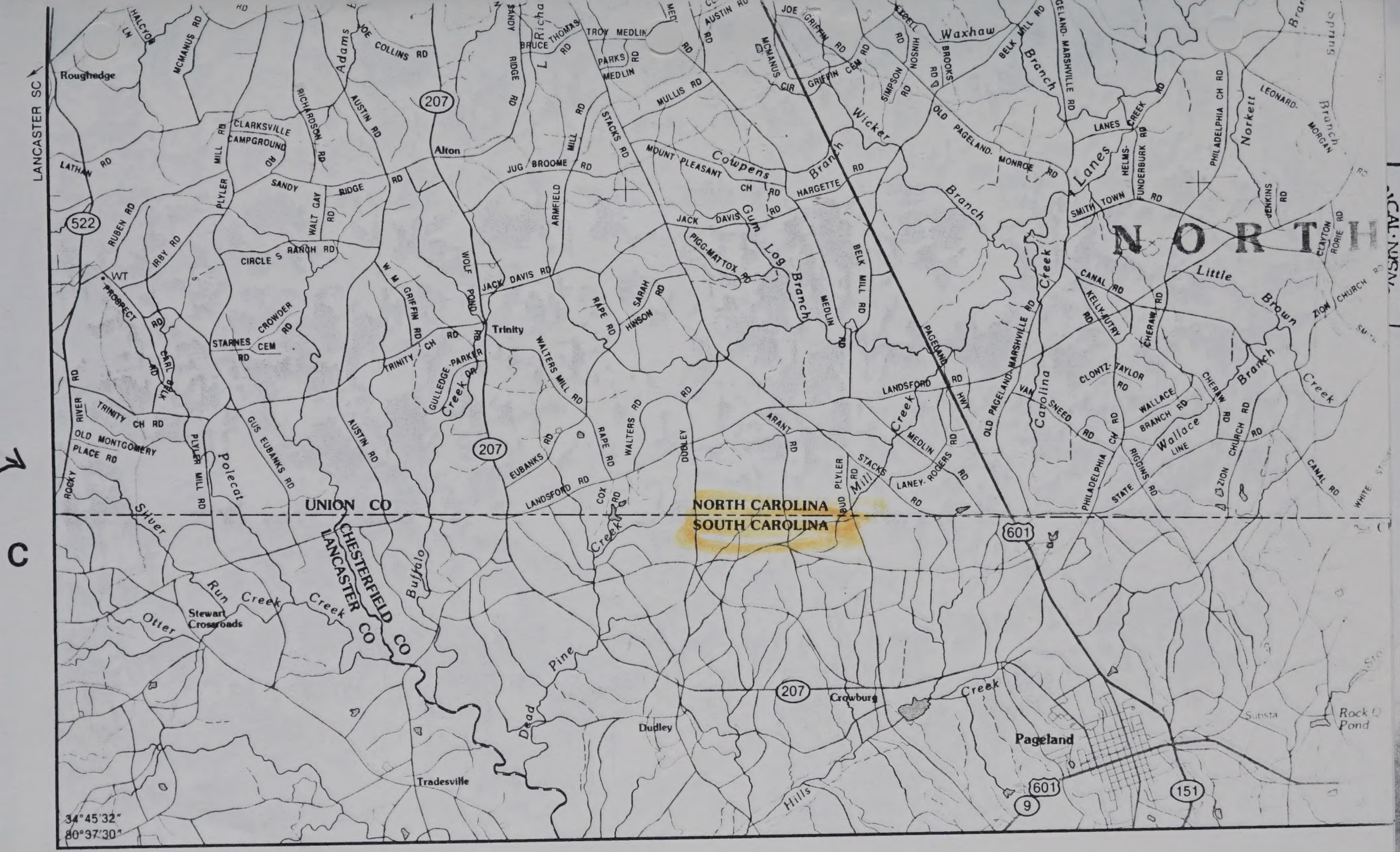
David Griffith Grant - 1770
on SC/NC border

C

SC

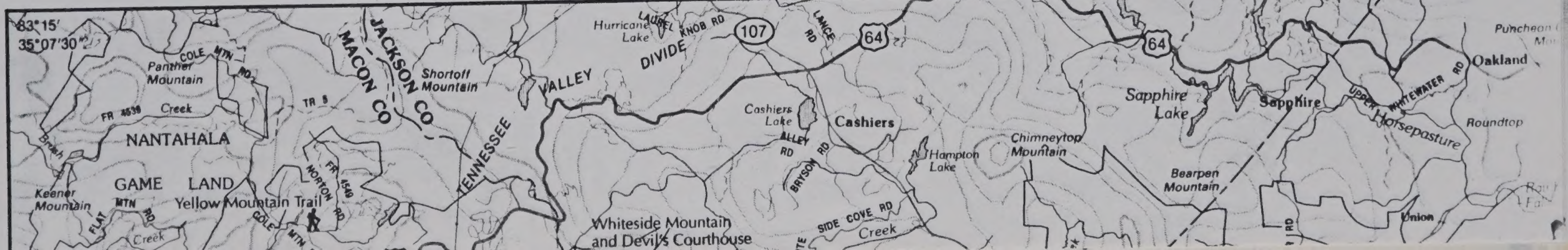
Lynches River


83°15'
35°07'30"
Panther
COLE MTN
JACKSON
MACON
Hurricane Lake
Lake
DIVIDE



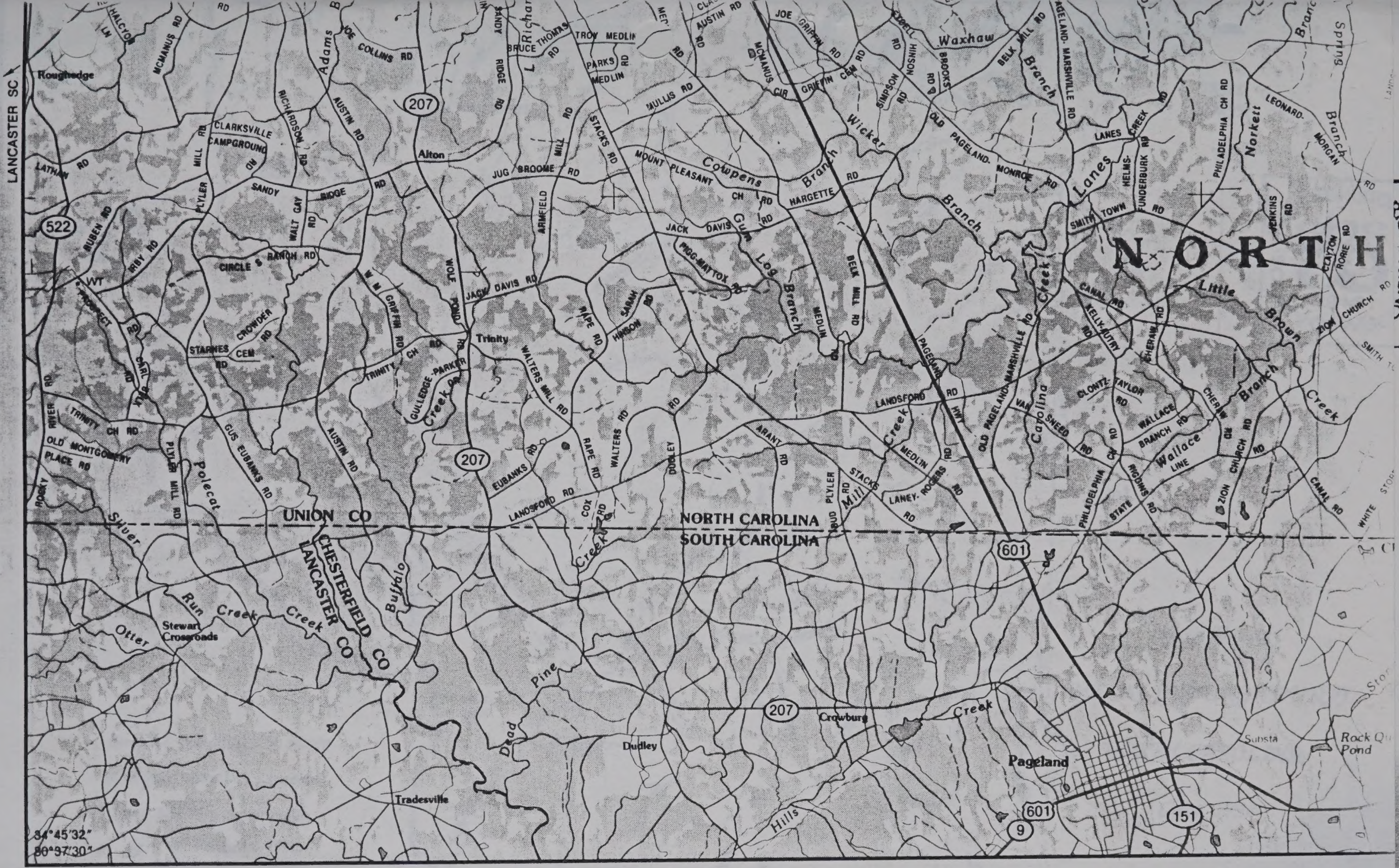
LANCASTER SC
Roughedge
522
Alton
Trinity
207
UNION CO
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
CHESTERFIELD CO
LANCASTER CO
NORTH
Waxhaw Branch
Cowpens Branch
Gum Log Branch
Stewart Crossroads
Dudley
Crowburg
Pageland
Tradesville
601
9
151
34°45'32"
80°37'30"
C

Continue on Page 52

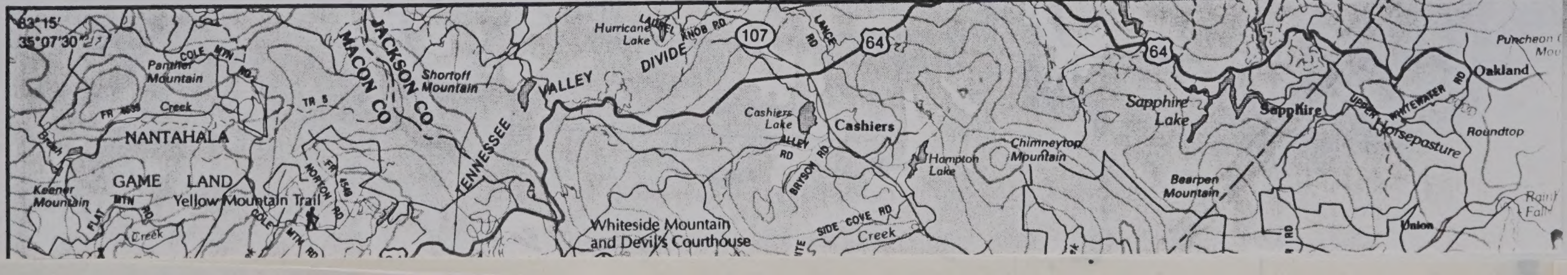


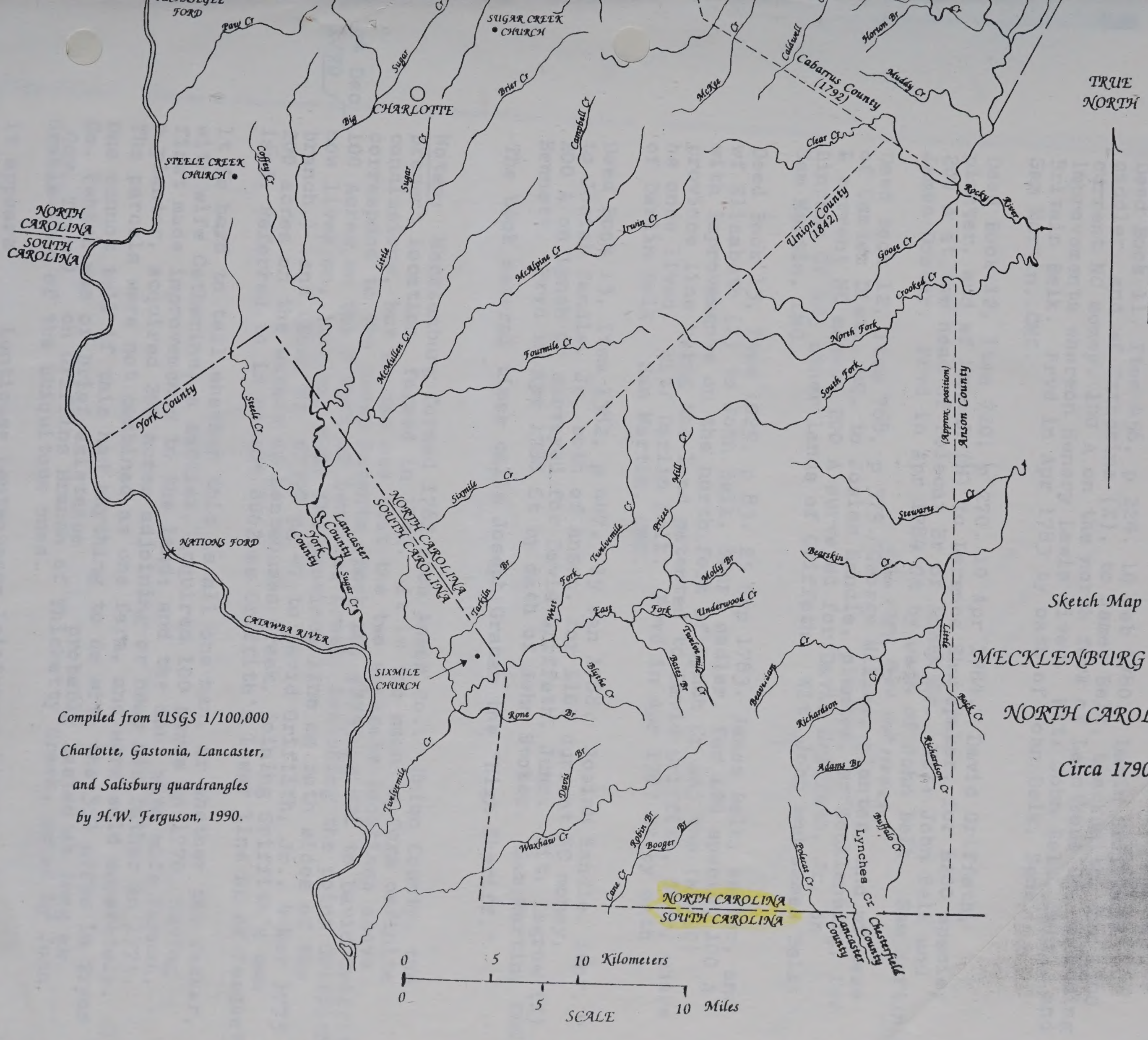
83°15'
35°07'30"
Panther Mountain
NANTAHALA
GAME LAND
Yellow Mountain Trail
Keener Mountain
MACON CO
JACKSON CO
Shortoff Mountain
TENNESSEE VALLEY DIVIDE
Hurricane Lake
107
64
Cashiers Lake
Cashiers
Hampton Lake
Chimneytop Mountain
Whiteside Mountain and Devil's Courthouse
Sapphire Lake
Sapphire
Bearpen Mountain
Horsepasture
Oakland
Roundtop
Union

C


LANCASTER SC
Roughedge
HALCROW
McMANUS RD
JOE COLLINS RD
Adams
AUSTIN RD
207
RICHARDSON RD
CLARKSVILLE CAMPGROUND RD
MILL RD
LATHAN RD
SANDY RIDGE RD
WALT GAY RD
PLYLER
Alton
BRUCE THOMAS RD
TROY MEDLIN
PARKS RD
MEDLIN
SANDY RIDGE RD
MILL RD
JUG BROOME RD
ARMFIELD
STACKS RD
MULLIS RD
AUSTIN RD
McMANUS CIR
JOE GRIFFIN RD
GRIFFIN CEM RD
MOUNT PLEASANT CH RD
Cowpens
Branch
HARGETTE RD
Wicker
SIMPSON RD
HINSON RD
BROOKS
OLD PAGELAND-MONROE RD
Waxhaw
BELK MILL RD
Branch
PAGELAND-MARSHVILLE RD
LANES CREEK RD
Lanes
HELMS-FUNDERBURK RD
SMITH TOWN RD
PHILADELPHIA CH RD
Norkett
LEONARD-MORGAN
Branch
Spring
PERKINS RD
CLAYTON RD
RORIE RD
522
RUBEN RD
IRBY RD
CIRCLE S RANCH RD
JACK DAVIS RD
PIGG-MATTOX RD
Gum Log Branch
BELK MILL RD
MEDLIN
Branch
WT
PROSPECT
RD
CARL
CROWDER
STARNES CEM RD
W M GRIFFIN RD
WOLF POND RD
JACK DAVIS RD
RAPE RD
SARAH
HINSON RD
Trinity
TRINITY CH RD
GULLEDGE-PARKER
Creek
WALTERS MILL RD
NORTH
CANAL RD
KELLY-AUTRY RD
CHERAW RD
Little Brown Branch
ZION CHURCH RD
SMITH
Creek
PAGELAND HWY
OLD PAGELAND-MARSHVILLE RD
Creek
Carolina
CLONTZ-TAYLOR RD
VAN SNEED RD
WALLACE BRANCH RD
Wallace
CHERAW RD
ZION CHURCH RD
LANDSFORD RD
ROCKY RIVER RD
TRINITY CH RD
OLD MONTGOMERY PLACE RD
PLYLER MILL RD
GUS EUBANKS RD
Polecat
AUSTIN RD
207
EUBANKS RD
RAPE RD
WALTERS RD
DUDLEY
ARANT RD
MEDLIN
LANEY-ROGERS RD
STACKS RD
Mill Creek
BUD PLYLER RD
PHILADELPHIA
STATE LINE
RIGGINS RD
CANAL RD
WHITE STORE
LANDSFORD RD
COX RD
UNION CO
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Silver
CHESTERFIELD CO
LANCASTER CO
Creek
Buffalo
601
Run Creek
Creek
Otter
Stewart Crossroads
Pine
Dead
207
Crowburg
Creek
Dudley
Pageland
Sunsta
Rock Quarry Pond
Tradesville
Hills
601
9
151
34°45'32"
80°37'30"

Continue on Page 52


83°15'
35°07'30"
COLE MTN RD
Panther Mountain
FR 4635
Creek
TR 5
NANTAHALA
GAME LAND
Keener Mountain
FLAT MTN RD
Creek
Yellow Mountain Trail
COLE MTN RD
NORTON RD
FR 4540
JACKSON CO
MACON CO
Shortoff Mountain
TENNESSEE VALLEY DIVIDE
Hurricane Lake
LAUREL KNOB RD
107
LANCE RD
64
Cashiers Lake
ALLEY RD
Cashiers
BRYSON RD
Whiteside Mountain and Devil's Courthouse
SIDE COVE RD
Creek
Hampton Lake
Chimneytop Mountain
64
Sapphire Lake
Sapphire
UPPER WHITEWATER RD
Horsepasture
Oakland
Puncheon
Roundtop
Bearpen Mountain
Union
Rainbow Falls


FORD
Paw Cr
SUGAR CREEK CHURCH
Sugar
CHARLOTTE
Big
Briar Cr
Campbell Cr
McKee
Caldwell
Cabarrus County (1792)
Horton Br
Muddy Cr
TRUE NORTH
STEELE CREEK CHURCH
Coffey Cr
Sugar
Sugar
Little
Clear Cr
Rocky River
Union County (1842)
Irwin Cr
McAlpine Cr
Goose Cr
Crooked Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
York County
Steele Cr
McMullen Cr
Fourmile Cr
North Fork
South Fork
(Approx. position)
Anson County
Sixmile Cr
Mill Cr
Prices
Twelvemile Cr
Stewarts Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Lancaster County
York County
Sugar Cr
NATIONS FORD
West Fork
Tarkiln Br
Molly Br
Bearskin Cr
East Fork
Underwood Cr
Twelvemile Cr
Bates Br
CATAWBA RIVER
SIXMILE CHURCH
Blythe Cr
Beaverdam Cr
Little
Rock Cr
Richardson
Rone Br
Twelvemile Cr
Davis Br
Richardson Cr
Adams Br
Waxhaw Cr
Robin Br
Booger Br
Cane Cr
Polecat Cr
Lynches Cr
Buffalo Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Lancaster County
Chesterfield County
0
5
10
Kilometers
0
5
10
Miles
SCALE

Sketch Map of

MECKLENBURG COUNTY,

NORTH CAROLINA

Circa 1790

Compiled from USGS 1/100,000
Charlotte, Gastonia, Lancaster,
and Salisbury quardrangles
by H.W. Ferguson, 1990.

THE STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WISCONSIN
shs
1846

GENEALOGICAL DEED ABSTRACTS, MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

Books 10 - 14 by Herman W. Furguson (1990) WI SHS F262 M4 F47

Deed Book 11, Item 456, p 224. 10 Feb 1780. David Griffith, saddler, and wf Catherine (X), to James Belk, blacksmith, for ₤100 current NC money, 100 A on the north fork of Leintrous Cr, including improvements whereon Henery Lewis lives. Wit: John Belk, Senr., and Britain Belk. Prvd in Apr 1783 by oath of John Belk, Senr. Sam Martin, CMC.

Deed Book 12, Item 720, p 270. 10 Apr 1784. David Griffeth, planter, and wf Hannah (H) to Larence Shanepaker, for ₤200 specie, 200 A at the head of Polecat Br of Lynch Cr. Wit: John Belk and James Doster. Prvd in Apr 1784 Ct by oath of John Belk. Sam Martin CMC.

Deed Book 12, Item 768, p 379. 6 Sep 1784, Prvd Oct 1784 Ct. George Miller, planter, and wf Lese of Camden Dist., SC, to Josias Randle, planter, of Mecklenburg, for ₤ current NC money, 200 A surveyed for David Griffeth, Jr, on Linches Cr adj other lands of Griffeth. Wit: John and James Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

Deed Book 13, Item 1029, p 83. 25 Sep 1783. James Belk, sadler, and wf Elizabeth (X) to John Belk, Senr, sadler, for ₤20 specie, 100 A with improvements on the north fork of Lynch Cr adj the (NC-SC) province line being the land patented to David Griffith, Senr, where he once lived. Wit: Darlin Belk. Prvd in Apr 1787 Ct by oath of Darlin Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

Deed Book 13, Item 1382, p 447. 19 Jan 1788. Josiah Randle, Senr, to Josiah Randle, Jr, both of Anson, for ₤100 current NC money, 200 A on Lynch Cr surveyed for David Griffeth, Junr. Wit: Legrow (X) Bennett. Prvd in Apr 1788 Ct by oath of John Stokes. Sam Martin, CMC.

The book several times calls Joseph Graham the "High Sheriff."

Notes: Mecklenburg formed 1762 from Anson Co.. Union County, the present location, formed in 1842. It is too soon to form definite conclusions, but we can see that the two separate locations above correspond to the Crown Patents (Book 20, #2755 pg 621 to David Griffith,
24 Dec 1770 100 Acres on the N fork of Lentious Creek, including the point Griffith now lives on, joining near the province line on both sides of the branch.) and (Book 25. #7397 pg 47 to David Griffith, Jr., 4 Mar 1775 200 acres on the waters of Lenteouses Creek, joining Griffith's own land. Referred to in patent 8062 as Griffith's lower line NE of Peedee?)

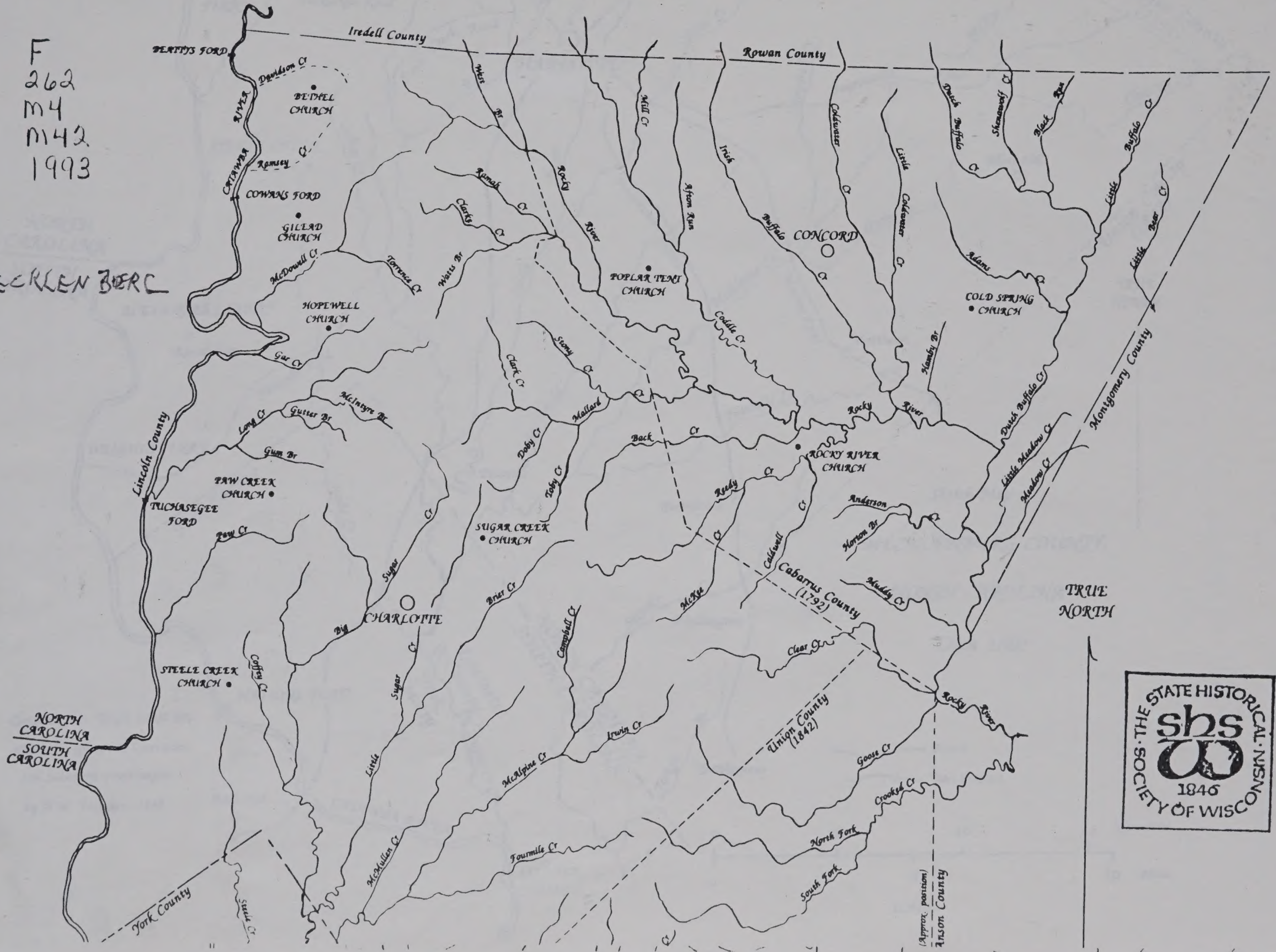
It is hard to tell whether this is all one man, or whether the father, with wife Catherine, a saddler, acquired 100 acres in 1770, having first made improvements to the land; and the son, with wife Hannah, a planter, acquired 200 acres adjoining or near his father in 1775. The parcels were not combined as one farm, and were sold separately. One cannot tell if this had anything to do with the 350 acres in Tryon Co. (which was of brief existence probably lasted as long as Gov. Tryon) on Griffins Branch of Thicketty Creek, owned by John Graham--one of the ubiquitous ones.

It appears Lentious= Lenteouses= Leintrous= Linches= Lynches, and that they mean the creek which widens further down to become the broad Lynches River, a major tributary of the PeeDee down in So. Carolina.

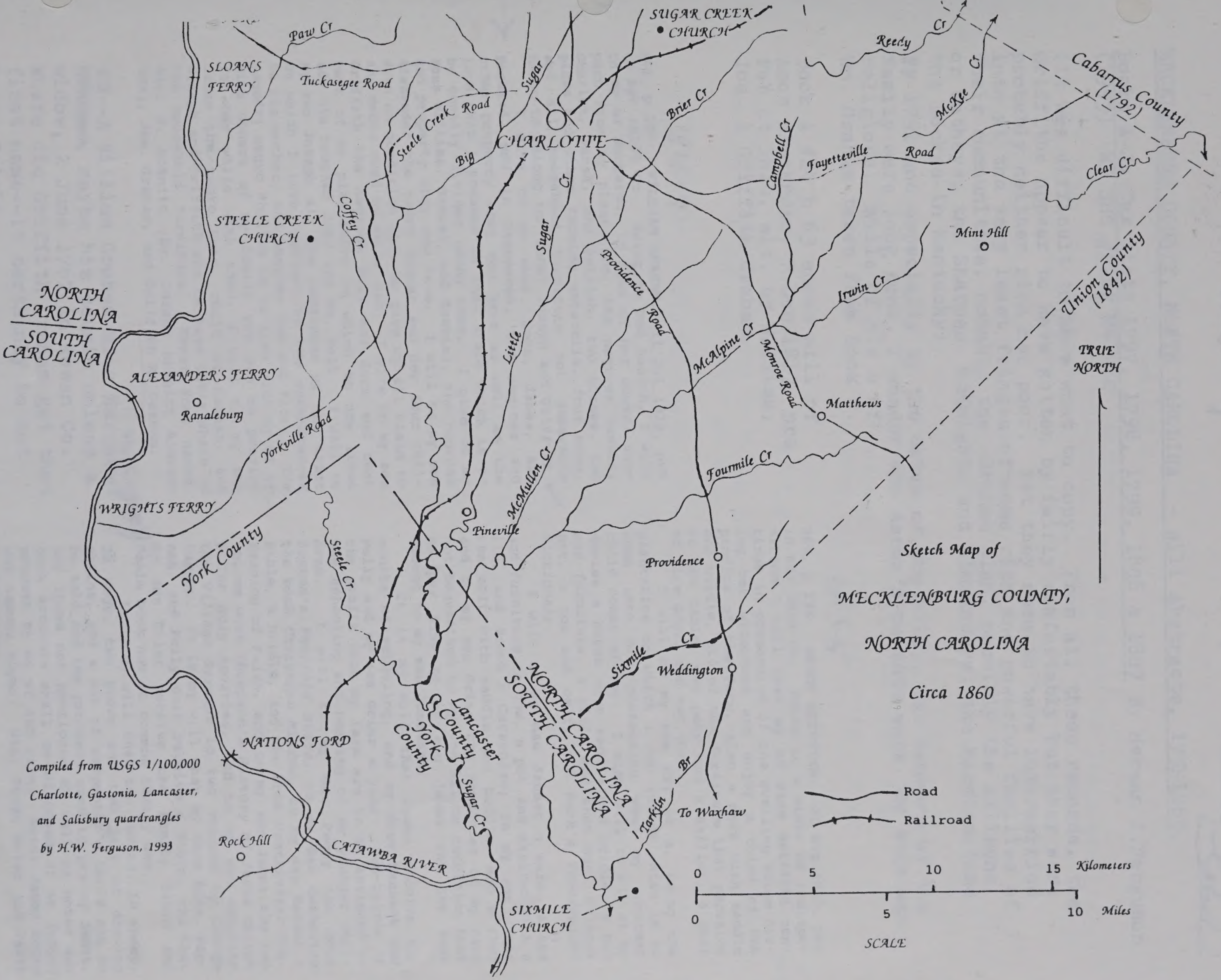
Mecklenburg Co NC

F
262
M4
M42
1993

MECKLENBERG


Iredell County
Rowan County
BEATTYS FORD
Davidson Cr
BETHEL CHURCH
CATAWBA RIVER
Ramsey Cr
COWANS FORD
GILEAD CHURCH
McDowell Cr
Torrence Cr
HOPEWELL CHURCH
Gar Cr
Long Cr
Gutter Br
McIntyre Br
Gum Br
Lincoln County
PAW CREEK CHURCH
TUCKASEGEE FORD
Paw Cr
Sugar Cr
Big
CHARLOTTE
STEELE CREEK CHURCH
Coffey Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
York County
Steele Cr
Little Sugar Cr
McMullen Cr
McAlpine Cr
Fourmile Cr
Irwin Cr
Campbell Cr
Briar Cr
SUGAR CREEK CHURCH
Toby Cr
Doby Cr
Clark Cr
Mallard Cr
Stony Cr
Watts Br
Clarks Cr
Ramah Cr
West Br
Rocky River
Mill Cr
Afton Run
POPLAR TENT CHURCH
Irish Buffalo Cr
CONCORD
Coddle Cr
Coldwater Cr
Little Coldwater Cr
Dutch Buffalo Cr
Sheneowolf Cr
Black Run
Little Buffalo Cr
Little Bear Cr
Adams Cr
COLD SPRING CHURCH
Hamby Br
Rocky River
Dutch Buffalo Cr
Back Cr
ROCKY RIVER CHURCH
Reedy Cr
Caldwell Cr
McKee Cr
Cabarrus County (1792)
Anderson Cr
Horton Br
Muddy Cr
Little Meadow Cr
Meadow Cr
Montgomery County
Clear Cr
Rocky River
Goose Cr
Crooked Cr
Union County (1842)
North Fork
South Fork
(Approx. position)
Anson County
TRUE NORTH

THE STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WISCONSIN
shs
1846



Sketch Map of

MECKLENBURG COUNTY,

NORTH CAROLINA

Circa 1860

Compiled from USGS 1/100,000
Charlotte, Gastonia, Lancaster,
and Salisbury quardrangles
by H.W. Ferguson, 1993

Paw Cr
SLOANS FERRY
Tuckasegee Road
Sugar
SUGAR CREEK CHURCH
Reedy Cr
McKee Cr
Cabarrus County (1792)
Steele Creek Road
Big
CHARLOTTE
Brier Cr
Campbell Cr
Fayetteville Road
Clear Cr
STEELE CREEK CHURCH
Coffey Cr
Sugar Cr
Little
Providence Road
Mint Hill
Union County (1842)
Irwin Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
McAlpine Cr
Monroe Road
TRUE NORTH
ALEXANDER'S FERRY
Ranaleburg
Yorkville Road
Matthews
McMullen Cr
Fourmile Cr
WRIGHTS FERRY
Pineville
Steele Cr
York County
Providence
Sixmile Cr
Weddington
Lancaster County
York County
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
NATIONS FORD
Sugar Cr
Tarkiln Br
To Waxhaw
Road
Railroad
Rock Hill
CATAWBA RIVER
SIXMILE CHURCH
0
5
10
15
Kilometers
0
5
10
Miles
SCALE

Mecklenburg is on SC Index, but this is a bit later

MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA - Will Abstracts, 1791-1868,

Books A-J; Tax lists 1797, 1798, 1799, 1806 & 1807 By Herman J.Ferguson (1993) WI SHS #F262 M4 M42

(It was difficult to know what to copy. From all these records, the Griffiths appear to have gotten by fairly comfortably but they were probably neither rich nor poor. Yet they seem to have intermarried into at the very least fringes of some rich and powerful families of their communities, notably the Graham clan, possibly the Allisons or Catheys, the Sharpes, McKnights and Alexanders, the Hardins,(and the Lockes-in Kentucky).

By 1791 and especially by the dates of the will,, our members of the family were long gone. I wonder who Aaron's parents were. He sure was religious. Wills of his & of Wm. Graham taken from Book C.

Book A #24 p 63 shows will of Amos Alexander, 7 Dec 1813, pro Feb Ct 1814, wit. by William, Jos. & Griffith Graham.

1818-9

261, p 109. **WILLIAM GRAHAM.** 11 Jul 1818, prb in Apr 1819? Ct. Being in bad health, I will to **my wf Margaret**, in lieu of her dower, support from my plantation, the negroes Samson, Charles, Sarah, and Delilah, two horses, two plows and other farming untensils, four cows, and all household furniture not generally known to belong to [sons] Joseph and Griffith.

I give to **my sons, John, James, and Richard**, now in Tennessee, the negroes and other property they now have as well as the land that I possess in that state which is to be equally divided among them. I give to **my sons William, Samuel, and Ezekiel**, the negroes and property they now have. I will to **my son Alexander** the negro Hannah and her four children on condition that he give up all claim to any debts owed by me to him. I give to **my son Griffith** the negroes Poll and Jack and that part of my plantation on which he now lives adj his brother John and Wm. Bell. I will to **my son Joseph** all the remainder of the tract on which I live, subject to the encumbrances to his mother, and negroes Sam and Flora. The [aged?] negro Phillis is to live with my wf or with others of my family who are to provide for her while with them. I will to my son James the negro Luce, child of Hannah, and Joseph and Griffith are to have their share of the household furniture. Exrs: None named. Wit: J. McKnitt [Dr. Joseph McKnitt Alexander], Jos. Graham, and Griffith R. Graham.

(nee Griffith?)

PS--A William Graham m. a Margaret ~~Graham~~, maybe his cousin unless a widow, 2 June 1767 in Rowan Co. Where did Griffith Graham get that first name--it certainly is not Scots-Irish!

1813-5

269, p 126. **AARON GRIFFITH.** 21 Sep 1813, prb in Nov 1815 Ct. Being in a state of indisposition I will that **my wf Jane Griffith** continue in possession of the dwelling house during her widowhood and enjoy a third of the profits of the farm, also a mare with saddle and bridle, all of the furniture that pertains to the table, two pots and a skillet, a pair of fire dogs, and two cows.

I will to **my son Eli** 50 A, being the plantation on which I now reside which is to come into his possession when my youngest child comes of age. I also will to Eli at my demise a horse with saddle and bridle, a bed and furniture, a rifle and shot bag, a large pot, a cow and calf, and *Burk's Theological Dictionary*.

I will to **my dau Jannet** a mare, a bed and furniture, a cow, a pot and skillet with a lid, and *Brown's Catechism*; to **my son James** the colt with saddle and bridle, and a cow; and to **my son Grier** the remainder of my farm not bequeathed to my son Eli on condition that he pay $150 to my son James and the same amount to **my son Jonathan**.

It is my will that James receive six months of schooling, and **my daus Hannanh and Polly and my son Grier** a year. Two-thirds of the profit from my farm are to be assigned to the schooling and rearing of my younger children. I will to **my dau Peggy** the book *Boston's Fourfold State*, to **my dau Catherine** the book *Christian Mirrow*, to **my dau Rachel** a Bible, a bridle, and the book *Westminster Confession of Faith*, and to my son James the two volume work *Thompson's History of Jesus Chirst & The Holy Apostles*, and to my son Jonathan the *Village Sermons* in two volumes by George Burger. It is my will that my daus **Anna, Hannah, and Polly** each receive a Bible, and that my son Grier receive the Family Bible and Psalm book now in common family use.

It is my will that two horses, 10 sheep, 20 hogs, two plows and two pair of drawing chains, and a set of carpenter's tools are to be sold and the proceeds used to pay my debts. Any items not mentioned as well as notes and book accounts shall be disposed of as judged prudent by my wf and exrs. Exrs: James Boyse and Samuel Boyer. Wit: Isaac Grier and Isaac L. Alexander.

Mecklenburg Co. NC Tax Lists

One cannot tell who the neighbors were because the lists are alphabetical. Most of the Griffiths, if there were many, must have left the area--only Aaron and David show up on the lists, as follows. Neither had any slaves, town lots, cotton gins, or stud horses.

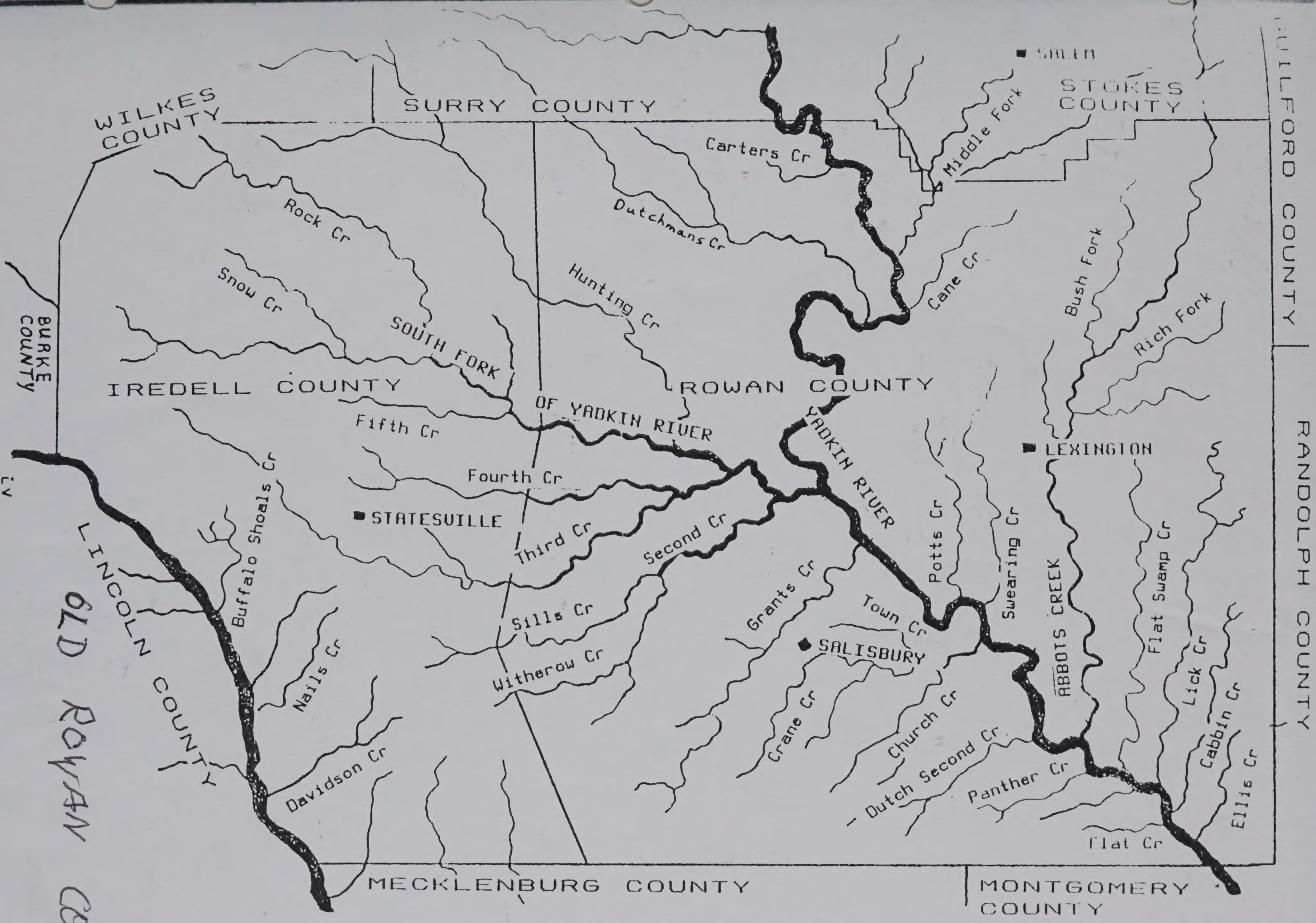
1797-	Capt. Polk's co.	Griffith, Aaron	- 80 acres,	one white poll
1798	"	Griffey, Aaron	"	"
1799-	Capt. Bowman's Co.	Griffith, Aaron	150 acres,	1 WP
		Graham, George	452 "	1 WP, 5 BP
1806-	Capt. Reid's Co.	Griffith, David	no land	1 WP
1807-	list of David Cowan, esq.	Griffith, Aaron	147 acres,	1 WP
		Graham, George, General	461 acres	2 WP, 2 PB, 45 cot gin saws
	Capt Jo.Haynes Co.	Griffith, David	no land,	1 WP

No later polls collected. Those found may be fragmentary. Perhaps US census could take over at this point.

By now Jonas Griffith, Senior, and probably most of his grown family, are in Tennessee, though some might be in Kentucky. York Co. SC formed 1785--the few of that county's records which Were found were too late to help. Lancaster formed 1798--I did not look for those yet. Both originally Camden Dist--might try that.

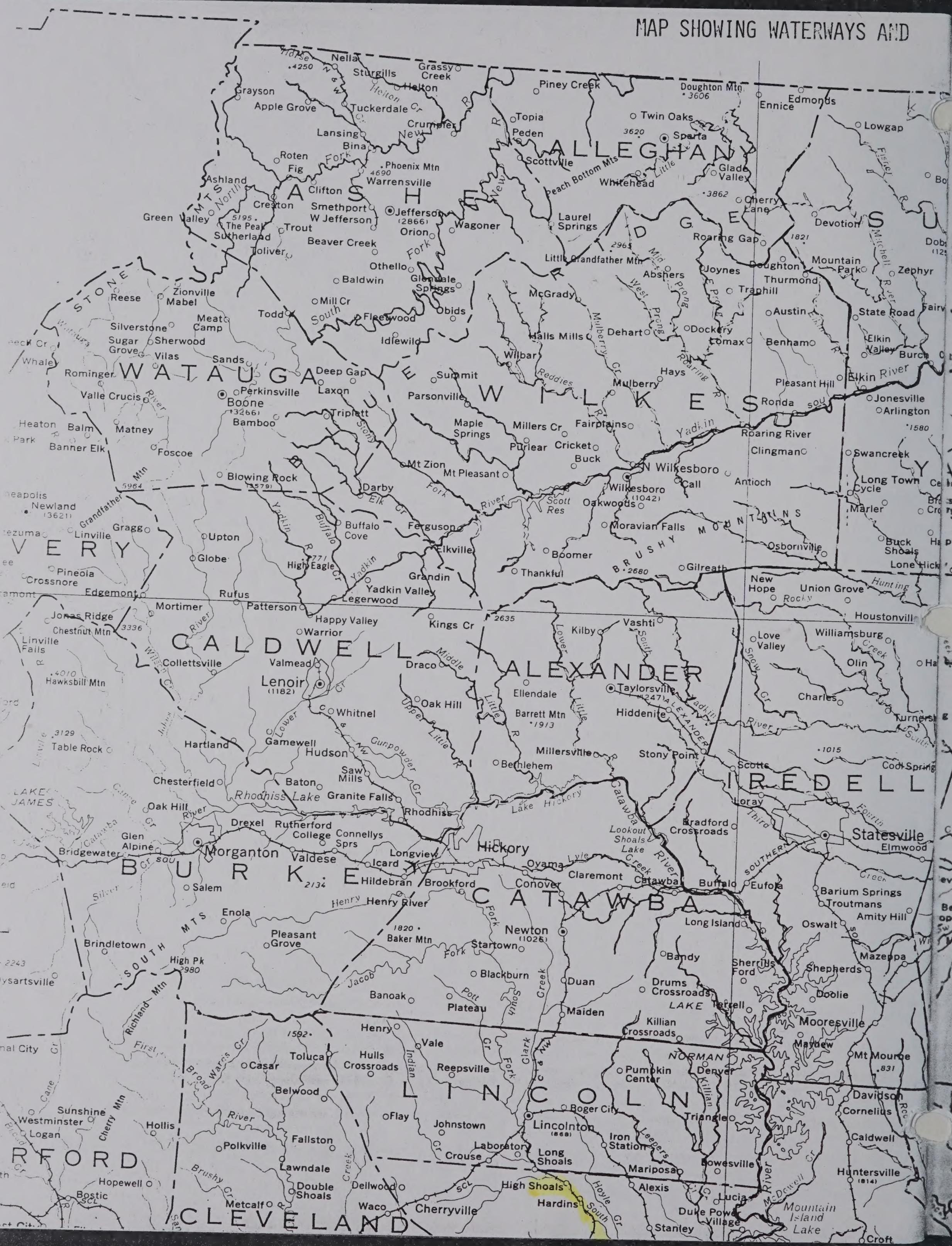
Reasons to search these might be to find clues to earlier ancestry, to find out where John's father (?Samuel) was born for sure, and hints as to the character or circumstances of the early Griffiths.

Aaron and the Davids do sound interesting. I do feel that it is possible the first David was Jonas' brother.


WILKES COUNTY
SURRY COUNTY
SALEM
STOKES COUNTY
GUILFORD COUNTY
BURKE COUNTY
IREDELL COUNTY
ROWAN COUNTY
RANDOLPH COUNTY
LINCOLN COUNTY
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
MONTGOMERY COUNTY
LEXINGTON
STATESVILLE
SALISBURY
Carters Cr
Middle Fork
Dutchmans Cr
Rock Cr
Snow Cr
Hunting Cr
Cane Cr
Bush Fork
Rich Fork
SOUTH FORK OF YADKIN RIVER
YADKIN RIVER
Fifth Cr
Fourth Cr
Third Cr
Second Cr
Buffalo Shoals Cr
Sills Cr
Witherow Cr
Grants Cr
Town Cr
Potts Cr
Swearing Cr
ABBOTS CREEK
Flat Swamp Cr
Lick Cr
Cabbin Cr
Ellis Cr
Nails Cr
Davidson Cr
Crane Cr
Church Cr
Dutch Second Cr
Panther Cr
Flat Cr

OLD ROWAN CO.

MAP SHOWING WATERWAYS AND


ASHE
ALLEGHANY
SURRY
WATAUGA
WILKES
BLUE RIDGE
STONE MTS
AVERY
CALDWELL
ALEXANDER
IREDELL
BURKE
CATAWBA
LINCOLN
CLEVELAND
RUTHERFORD
BRUSHY MOUNTAINS
SOUTH MTS
Horse Cr
4250
Nella
Sturgills
Grassy Creek
Helton
Helton Cr
Grayson
Apple Grove
Tuckerdale
Crumpler
New
Lansing
Bina
Fork
N Fork New R
Roten
Fig
Phoenix Mtn
4690
Warrensville
Ashland
MTS North
Clifton
Creston
Smethport
W Jefferson
Jefferson
(2866)
Orion
Green Valley
5195
The Peak
Trout
Sutherland
Toliver
Beaver Creek
Wagoner
Othello
Baldwin
Glendale Springs
Mill Cr
South
Fleetwood
Obids
Idlewild
Zionville
Mabel
Reese
Todd
Meat Camp
Silverstone
Sherwood
Sugar Grove
Vilas
Sands
Beech Cr
Whaley
Watauga
Rominger
Valle Crucis
River
Perkinsville
Boone
(3266)
Bamboo
Deep Gap
Laxon
Triplett
Stony
Heaton
Balm
Matney
Park
Banner Elk
Foscoe
Blowing Rock
(3579)
Mtn
5964
Grandfather
Newland
(3621)
Linville
Gragg
Upton
Globe
Pineola
Crossnore
Edgemont
Rufus
Patterson
Mortimer
Jonas Ridge
Chestnut Mtn
3336
Linville Falls
River
Collettsville
Wilson Cr
4010
Hawksbill Mtn
3129
Table Rock
Johns
Hartland
Chesterfield
Lake James
Oak Hill
Canoe Cr
Catawba
Glen Alpine
Bridgewater
Morganton
Drexel
Rutherford College
Valdese
Connellys Sprs
Silver Cr
Salem
Enola
Brindletown
High Pk
2980
Richland Mtn
2243
Lysartsville
Pleasant Grove
Henry River
Henry
First
Broad
Cane
Sunshine
Westminster
Logan
Cherry Mtn
Hollis
Polkville
Hopewell
Bostic
SCL
Metcalf
Brushy Cr
Piney Creek
Doughton Mtn
3606
Ennice
Edmonds
Lowgap
Topia
Peden
Twin Oaks
3620
Sparta
Scottville
Peach Bottom Mts
Whitehead
Little
Glade Valley
3862
Cherry Lane
Laurel Springs
2965
Little Grandfather Mtn
Roaring Gap
1821
Devotion
Mitchell River
Fisher R
Joynes
Doughton
Thurmond
Mountain Park
Zephyr
Abshers
Mid Prong
West Prong
E Prong
Traphill
Austin
State Road
Elkin Valley
Burch
Elkin River
McGrady
Halls Mills
Mulberry Cr
Dehart
Dockery
Lomax
Benham
Wilbar
Reddies
Roaring R
Mulberry
Hays
Pleasant Hill
Jonesville
Arlington
1580
Summit
Parsonville
Maple Springs
Millers Cr
Fairplains
Ronda
SOU
Yadkin
Roaring River
Clingman
Swancreek
Purlear
Cricket
Buck
N Wilkesboro
Wilkesboro
(1042)
Call
Antioch
Long Town
Cycle
Marler
Mt Zion
Mt Pleasant
Fork
Darby
Elk Cr
River
Scott Res
Oakwoods
Moravian Falls
Buck Shoals
Lone Hickory
Osbornville
Yadkin R
Buffalo Cr
Buffalo Cove
Ferguson
Elkville
Boomer
Thankful
2680
Gilreath
771
High Eagle
Yadkin
Grandin
Yadkin Valley
Legerwood
Happy Valley
Warrior
Kings Cr
2635
New Hope
Rocky
Union Grove
Hunting
Houstonville
Kilby
Vashti
Lower
South
Love Valley
Snow Cr
Williamsburg
Creek
Olin
Valmead
Lenoir
(1182)
Draco
Middle
Ellendale
Taylorsville
(1247)
ALEXANDER R R
Yadkin
Hiddenite
Charles
River
Turnersburg
South
Oak Hill
Upper Little R
Little R
Little
Barrett Mtn
1913
Whitnel
Lower Cr
Gamewell
Hudson
Gunpowder Cr
C & NW
Saw Mills
Baton
Rhodhiss Lake
Granite Falls
Rhodhiss
Millersville
Bethlehem
Stony Point
Scotts
1015
Cool Spring
Lake Hickory
Catawba
Loray
Third
Fourth
Creek
Statesville
Elmwood
Hickory
Longview
Icard
Hildebran
Brookford
Oyama
Lyle Creek
Claremont
Conover
Lookout Shoals Lake
River
Bradford Crossroads
Catawba
Buffalo
Eufola
SOUTHERN
Barium Springs
Troutmans
Amity Hill
2134
Fork
1820
Baker Mtn
Newton
(1026)
Long Island
Oswalt
Startown
Jacob
Blackburn
South Fork
Creek
Duan
Bandy
Sherrills Ford
Mazeppa
Shepherds
Drums Crossroads
LAKE
Terrell
Doolie
Banoak
Pott
Plateau
Maiden
Killian Crossroads
Mooresville
Mayhew
Henry
1592
Vale
Toluca
Casar
Hulls Crossroads
Indian
Reepsville
Clark
Gr Fork
C & NW
NORMAN
Pumpkin Center
Denver
Killian
Mt Mourne
831
Davidson
Cornelius
Belwood
Flay
Johnstown
Lincolnton
(868)
Boger City
Iron Station
Leepers
Triangle
Caldwell
Fallston
Creek
Laboratory
Long Shoals
Crouse
Mariposa
Bowesville
River
McDowell Cr
Huntersville
(814)
Lawndale
Double Shoals
Dellwood
SCL
High Shoals
Hardins
Hoyle Cr
South
Alexis
Lucia
Duke Power Village
Mountain Island Lake
Stanley
Waco
Cherryville
Croft

GEN. GRIFFITH RUTHERFORD

From Rowan Co. NC History

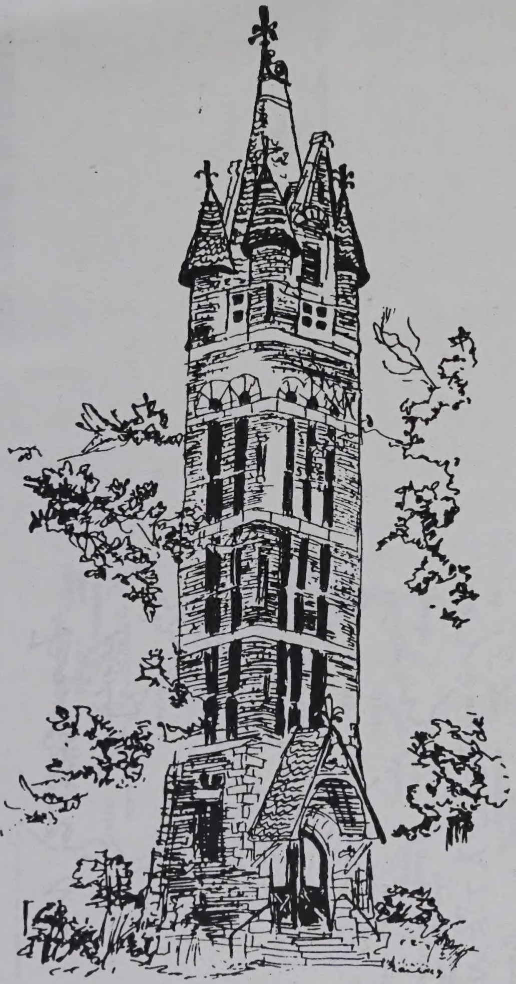
The Rutherfords are Scotch-Irish, and one of the families in the "Land of Bruce." The family is mentioned in the early annals of Scotland as friends of King Ruther, from whom they received the name, and large tracts of land. For centuries they have been classed among the most ancient and powerful families in Teviotdale, on the borders of England. They have intermarried with the royal families, and from inherited honors and from honors conferred have been prominent among the nobility. The mother of Sir Walter Scott was a Rutherford.

The Rev. Samuel Rutherford, the author of the Rutherford Letters, was one of the ablest leaders of Presbyterianism. He was sent as a delegate from Scotland to Westminster to defend that faith. This, together with his political opinions freely expressed, caused some of the family to be banished from Scotland, and to take refuge in Ireland, where John Rutherford was married to Miss Griffith, an exile from Wales. Their son Griffith came to America with his son—also called Griffith—and settled near Salisbury, Rowan County, N. C. This son—the subject of this sketch—married Elizabeth Graham, a sister of James Graham, who was also descended from a long line of noble Scotch ancestors. Both families lived in what was then called the Locke or Thyatira settlement. They had five sons and daughters. Their eldest son, Major James Rutherford, was killed in the battle of Eutaw. In 1770, the subject of this sketch was a captain of militia under Governor Tryon, but joined James Graham and others and formed the Regulators against Tryon the following year. He was appointed a member of the Committee of Safety, and was a juryman in the trial of Tories in 1775. He was a member of the Provincial Congress which met at Halifax, April 4, 1776. He and Matthew Locke represented Rowan County. He was also a member of the Provincial Congress of 1775. In April of 1776, he was appointed brigadier-general, and in the same month was a member of the Constitutional Convention. In September, he marched at the head of twenty-four hundred men into the Cherokee country, and killed a number of Indians, destroyed their crops, burned their habitations; and finally forced them to sue for peace and surrender a part of their lands. In this campaign, his loss was only three men killed. He returned to Salisbury, and disbanded his army at that place. He commanded a brigade at the battle of Sanders Creek, near Camden, where he was wounded and taken prisoner. He was first sent to Charleston, S. C., and later taken to St. Augustine, Fla., where he remained until exchanged, June 22, 1781. He again took the field, and was in command at Wilmington when the town was evacuated by the British at the close of the war.

During the continuance of the war, he was a State Senator from 1777 to 1780, and from 1782 to 1786. In the year 1786, he removed to Tennessee, and settled in Sumner County. In 1794, George Washington, our first President, appointed General Rutherford a member of the Territorial Legislature which met at Knoxville, Tenn. The *Knoxville Gazette,* of date 1794, contains account as follows, viz.: "On Monday last, the General Assembly of the Territory commenced their first session in this town. Gen. Griffith Rutherford, for distinguished services in the Legislature of North Carolina, is appointed president of the Legislative Council."

Rutherford County, N. C., was formed in 1779, and Rutherford County, Tenn., in 1803; both were named in honor of this distinguished Revolutionary soldier and statesman, Griffith Rutherford, who died in Sumner County, Tenn., in 1800, in old age and full of honors.

The following sketch of another distinguished member of the Provincial Congress, and soldier of the Revolution, was prepared for this article by one of his descendants, LEE S. OVERMAN, Esq.



he bell tower of the original First Presbyterian Church of Salisbury,
orth Carolina.

History
Of
ROWAN
COUNTY,
North
Carolina

RUMPLE

Bicentennial
Edition

R975.6
R937
1978

REGIONAL
PUBLISHING
COMPANY

A History Of
ROWAN COUNTY,
North Carolina

Containing Sketches of
Prominent Families and Distinguished Men

By
Rev. Jethro Rumple

Bicentennial Edition

GENEALOGICAL DEED ABSTRACTS, MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

Books 10 - 14 by Herman W. Furguson (1990) WI SHS F262 M4 F47

Deed Book 11, Item 456, p 224. 10 Feb 1780. David Griffith, saddler, and wf Catherine (X), to James Belk, blacksmith, for £100 current NC money, 100 A on the north fork of Leintrous Cr, including improvements whereon Henery Lewis lives. Wit: John Belk, Senr., and Britain Belk. Prvd in Apr 1783 by oath of John Belk, Senr. Sam Martin, CMC.

Deed Book 12, Item 720, p 270. 10 Apr 1784. David Griffeth, planter, and wf Hannah (H) to Larence Shanepaker, for £200 specie, 200 A at the head of Polecat Br of Lynch Cr. Wit: John Belk and James Doster. Prvd in Apr 1784 Ct by oath of John Belk. Sam Martin CM

Deed Book 12, Item 768, p 379. 6 Sep 1784, Prvd Oct 1784 Ct. George Miller, planter, and wf Lese of Camden Dist., SC, to Josias Randle, planter, of Mecklenburg, for £ current NC money, 200 A surveyed for David Griffeth, Jr, on Linches Cr adj other lands of Griffeth. Wit: John and James Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

Deed Book 13, Item 1029, p 83. 25 Sep 1783. James Belk, sadler, and wf Elizabeth (X) to John Belk, Senr, sadler, for £20 specie, 100 A with improvements on the north fork of Lynch Cr adj the (NC-SC) province line being the land patented to David Griffith, Senr, where he once lived. Wit: Darlin Belk. Prvd in Apr 1787 Ct by oath of Darlin Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

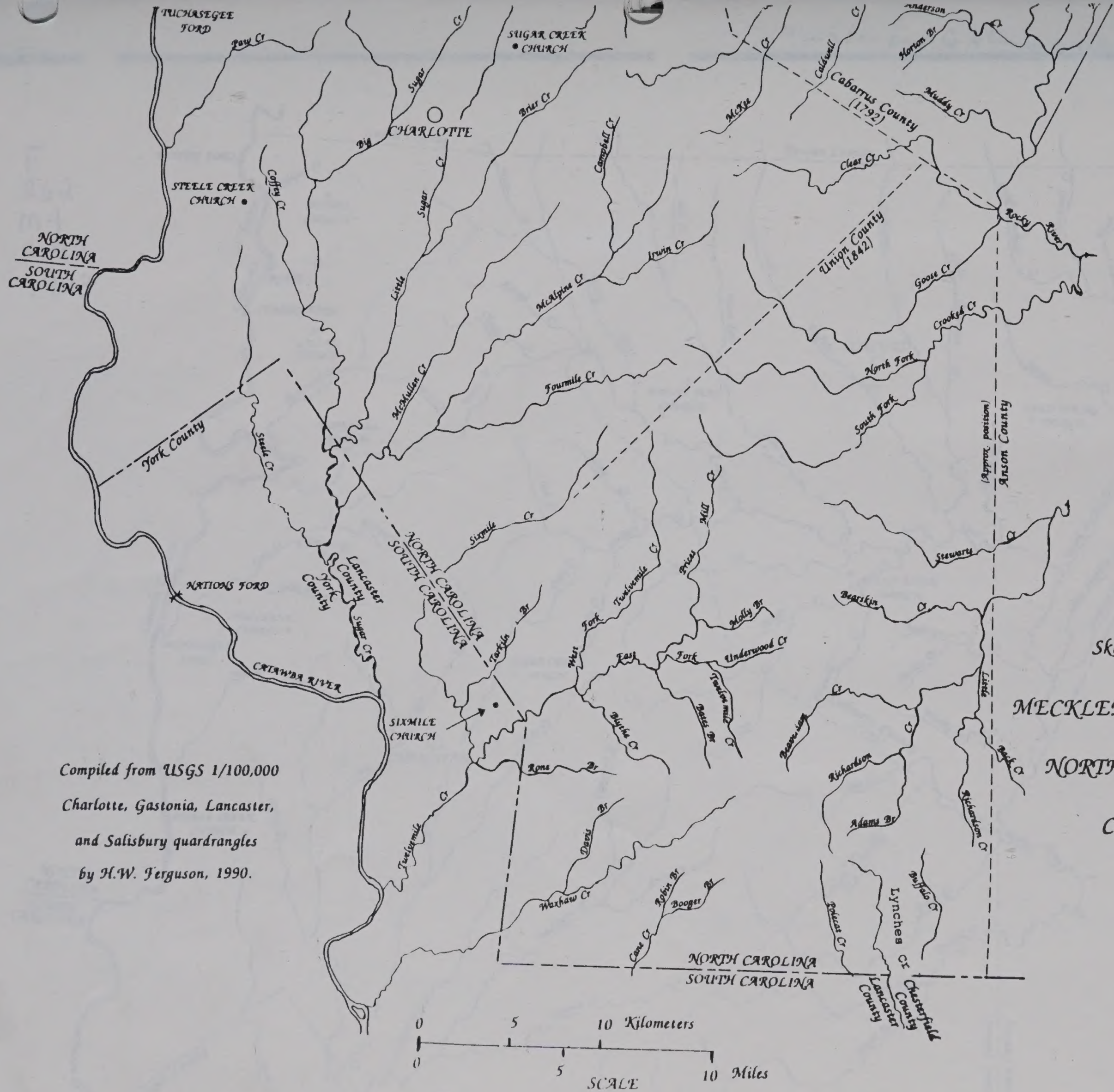
Deed Book 13, Item 1382, p 447. 19 Jan 1788. Josiah Randle, Senr, to Josiah Randle, Jr, both of Anson, for £100 current NC money, 200 A on Lynch Cr surveyed for David Griffeth, Junr. Wit: Legrow (X) Bennett. Prvd in Apr 1788 Ct by oath of John Stokes. Sam Martin, CMC.

The book several times calls Joseph Graham the "High Sheriff."

Notes: Mecklenburg formed 1762 from Anson Co.. Union County, the present location, formed in 1842. It is too soon to form definite conclusions, but we can see that the two separate locations above correspond to the Crown Patents (Book 20, #2755 pg 621 to David Griffit
24 Dec 1770 100 Acres on the N fork of Lentious Creek, including the point Griffith now lives on, joining near the province line on both sides of the branch.) and (Book 25. #7397 pg 47 to David Griffith, Jr., 4 Mar 1775 200 acres on the waters of Lenteouses Creek, joining Griffith's own land. Referred to in patent 8062 as Griffith's lower line NE of Peedee

It is hard to tell whether this is all one man, or whether the father, with wife Catherine, a saddler, acquired 100 acres in 1770, having first made improvements to the land; and the son, with wife Hannah, a planter, acquired 200 acres adjoining or near his father in 1775. The parcels were not combined as one farm, and were sold separately. One cannot tell if this had anything to do with the 350 acres in Tryon Co. (which was of brief existence probably lasted as long as Gov, Tryon) on Griffins Branch of Thicketty Creek, owned by John Graham--one of the ubiquitous ones.

It appears Lentious= Lenteouses= Leintrous= Linches= Lynches, and that they mean the creek which widens further down to become the broad Lynches River, a major tributary of the PeeDee down in So. Carolina.


TUCHASEGEE FORD
Paw Cr
SUGAR CREEK CHURCH
Sugar
CHARLOTTE
Big
Briar Cr
Campbell Cr
McKee
Caldwell
Cr
Anderson
Horton Br
Muddy Cr
Cabarrus County (1792)
Clear Cr
Rocky River
TRUE NORTH
STEELE CREEK CHURCH
Coffey Cr
Sugar Cr
Union County (1842)
Irwin Cr
Goose Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Little
McAlpine Cr
Crooked Cr
North Fork
McMullen Cr
Fourmile Cr
South Fork
York County
Steele Cr
(Approx. position)
Anson County
Mill Cr
Sixmile Cr
Stewarts Cr
Lancaster County
York County
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Twelvemile Cr
Prices
NATIONS FORD
Sugar Cr
Tarkiln Br
West Fork
Molly Br
Bearskin Cr
East Fork
Underwood Cr
CATAWBA RIVER
Cr
Little
Blythe Cr
Bates Br
Tarkiln mill Cr
Beaverdam
SIXMILE CHURCH
Rone Br
Richardson
Cr
Beck Cr
Twelvemile Cr
Richardson Cr
Davis Br
Adams Br
Buffalo Cr
Waxhaw Cr
Robin Br
Booger Br
Cane Cr
Polecat Cr
Lynches Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Lancaster County
Chesterfield County
0 5 10 Kilometers
0 5 10 Miles
SCALE

Compiled from USGS 1/100,000
Charlotte, Gastonia, Lancaster,
and Salisbury quardrangles
by H.W. Ferguson, 1990.

Sketch Map of

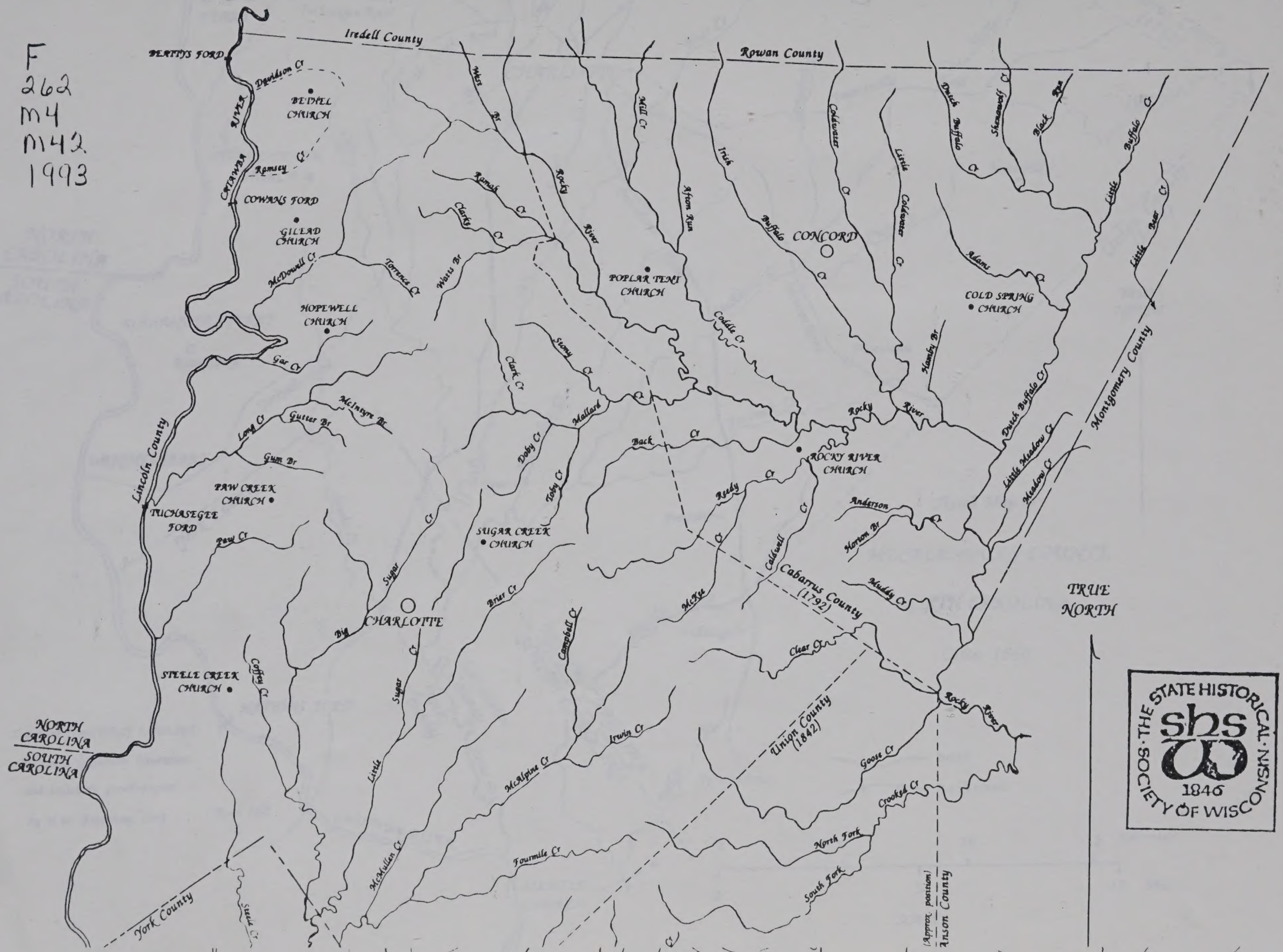
MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

Circa 1790

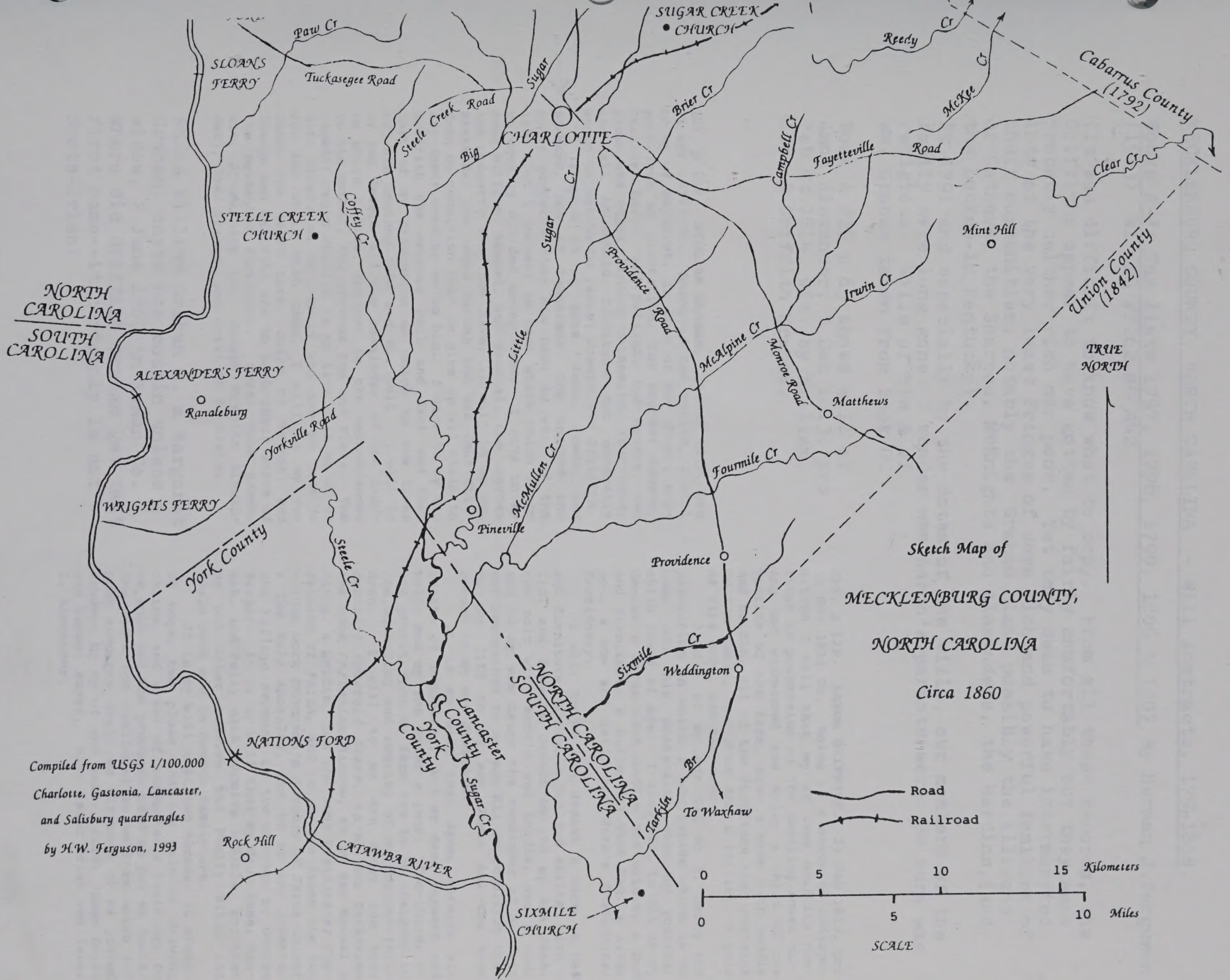
THE STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WISCONSIN
shs
1846

Mecklenburg Co NC

F
262
M4
M42
1993


Iredell County
Rowan County
BEATTYS FORD
Davidson Cr
BETHEL CHURCH
CATAWBA RIVER
Ramsey Cr
COWANS FORD
GILEAD CHURCH
McDowell Cr
Torrence Cr
HOPEWELL CHURCH
Gar Cr
Long Cr
Gutter Br
McIntyre Br
Gum Br
PAW CREEK CHURCH
Lincoln County
TUCHASEGEE FORD
Paw Cr
Sugar Cr
Big
CHARLOTTE
STEELE CREEK CHURCH
Coffey Cr
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
York County
Steele Cr
Little Sugar Cr
McMullen Cr
McAlpine Cr
Fourmile Cr
Irwin Cr
Campbell Cr
Briar Cr
SUGAR CREEK CHURCH
Toby Cr
Doby Cr
Clark Cr
Mallard
Stony Cr
Watts Br
Clarks Cr
Ramah Cr
West Br
Rocky River
Mill Cr
Afton Run
POPLAR TENT CHURCH
Irish Buffalo
CONCORD
Coddle Cr
Coldwater Cr
Little Coldwater Cr
Back Cr
Reedy Cr
ROCKY RIVER CHURCH
Caldwell Cr
McKee
Cabarrus County (1792)
Clear Cr
Union County (1842)
Goose Cr
Crooked Cr
North Fork
South Fork
(Approx. position)
Anson County
Rocky River
Muddy Cr
Horton Br
Anderson
Meadow Cr
Little Meadow Cr
Dutch Buffalo Cr
Hamby Br
COLD SPRING CHURCH
Adams Cr
Dutch Buffalo
Stone Cr
Black Run
Little Buffalo Cr
Little Bear Cr
Montgomery County
TRUE NORTH

THE STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WISCONSIN
shs
1846



Sketch Map of

MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

Circa 1860

Compiled from USGS 1/100,000 Charlotte, Gastonia, Lancaster, and Salisbury quardrangles by H.W. Ferguson, 1993

SUGAR CREEK CHURCH
Paw Cr
SLOANS FERRY
Tuckasegee Road
Sugar
Reedy Cr
McKee Cr
Cabarrus County (1792)
Steele Creek Road
Brier Cr
CHARLOTTE
Big
Campbell Cr
Fayetteville Road
Clear Cr
Coffey Cr
Sugar Cr
STEELE CREEK CHURCH
Mint Hill
Providence Road
Irwin Cr
Union County (1842)
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Little
McAlpine Cr
Monroe Road
TRUE NORTH
ALEXANDER'S FERRY
Ranaleburg
Matthews
Yorkville Road
Fourmile Cr
WRIGHTS FERRY
McMullen Cr
Pineville
York County
Steele Cr
Providence
Sixmile Cr
Weddington
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Lancaster County
York County
NATIONS FORD
Sugar Cr
Tarkiln Br
To Waxhaw
Road
Railroad
Rock Hill
CATAWBA RIVER
SIXMILE CHURCH
0 5 10 15 Kilometers
0 5 10 Miles
SCALE

MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA - Will Abstracts, 1791-1868,

Books A-J; Tax lists 1797, 1798, 1799, 1806 & 1807 By Herman J.Ferguson (1993) WI SHS #F262 M4 M42

(It was difficult to know what to copy. From all these records, the Griffiths appear to have gotten by fairly comfortably but they were probably neither rich nor poor. Yet they seem to have intermarried into at the very least fringes of some rich and powerful families of their communities, notably the Graham clan, possibly the Allisons or Catheys, the Sharpes, McKnights and Alexanders, the Hardins,(and the Lockes-in Kentucky).

By 1791 and especially by the dates of the will,, our members of the family were long gone. I wonder who Aaron's parents were. He sure was religious. Wills of his & of Wm. Graham taken from Book C.

Book A #24 p 63 shows will of Amos Alexander, 7 Dec 1813, pro Feb Ct 1814, wit. by William, Jos. & Griffith Graham.

261, p 109. **WILLIAM GRAHAN.** 11 Jul 1818, prb in Apr 1819? Ct. Being in bad health, I will to **my wf Margaret**, in lieu of her dower, support from my plantation, the negroes Samson, Charles, Sarah, and Delilah, two horses, two plows and other farming untensils, four cows, and all household furniture not generally known to belong to [sons] Joseph and Griffith.

I give to **my sons, John, James, and Richard**, now in Tennessee, the negroes and other property they now have as well as the land that I possess in that state which is to be equally divided among them. I give to **my sons William, Samuel, and Ezekiel**, the negroes and property they now have. I will to **my son Alexander** the negro Hannah and her four children on condition that he give up all claim to any debts owed by me to him. I give to **my son Griffith** the negroes Poll and Jack and that part of my plantation on which he now lives adj his brother John and Wm. Bell. I will to **my son Joseph** all the remainder of the tract on which I live, subject to the encumbrances to his mother, and negroes Sam and Flora. The [aged?] negro Phillis is to live with my wf or with others of my family who are to provide for her while with them. I will to my son James the negro Luce, child of Hannah, and Joseph and Griffith are to have their share of the household furniture. Exrs: None named. Wit: J. McKnitt [Dr. Joseph McKnitt Alexander], Jos. Graham, and Griffith R. Graham.

PS--A William Graham m. a Margaret Graham, maybe his cousin unless a widow, 2 June 1767 in Rowan Co. Where did Griffith Graham get that first name--it certainly is not Scots-Irish!

269, p 126. **AARON GRIFFITH.** 21 Sep 1813, prb in Nov 1815 Ct. Being in a state of indisposition I will that **my wf Jane Griffith** continue in possession of the dwelling house during her widowhood and enjoy a third of the profits of the farm, also a mare with saddle and bridle, all of the furniture that pertains to the table, two pots and a skillet, a pair of fire dogs, and two cows.

I will to **my son Eli** 50 A, being the plantation on which I now reside which is to come into his possession when my youngest child comes of age. I also will to Eli at my demise a horse with saddle and bridle, a bed and furniture, a rifle and shot bag, a large pot, a cow and calf, and *Burk's Theological Dictionary*.

I will to **my dau Jannet** a mare, a bed and furniture, a cow, a pot and skillet with a lid, and *Brown's Catechism*; to **my son James** the colt with saddle and bridle, and a cow; and to **my son Grier** the remainder of my farm not bequeathed to my son Eli on condition that he pay $150 to my son James and the same amount to **my son Jonathan.**

It is my will that James receive six months of schooling, and **my daus Hannanh and Polly and my son Grier** a year. Two-thirds of the profit from my farm are to be assigned to the schooling and rearing of my younger children. I will to **my dau Peggy** the book *Boston's Fourfold State*, to **my dau Catherine** the book *Christian Mirrow*, to **my dau Rachel** a Bible, a bridle, and the book *Westminster Confession of Faith*, and to my son James the two volume work *Thompson's History of Jesus Chirst & The Holy Apostles*, and to my son Jonathan the *Village Sermons* in two volumes by George Burger. It is my will that my daus **Anna, Hannah, and Polly** each receive a Bible, and that my son Grier receive the Family Bible and Psalm book now in common family use.

It is my will that two horses, 10 sheep, 20 hogs, two plows and two pair of drawing chains, and a set of carpenter's tools are to be sold and the proceeds used to pay my debts. Any items not mentioned as well as notes and book accounts shall be disposed of as judged prudent by my wf and exrs. Exrs: James Boyse and Samuel Boyer. Wit: Isaac Grier and Isaac L. Alexander.

Mecklenburg Co. NC Tax Lists

One cannot tell who the neighbors were because the lists are alphabetical. Most of the Griffiths, if there were many, must have left the area--only Aaron and David show up on the lists, as follows. Neither had any slaves, town lots, cotton gins, or stud horses.

1797-	Capt. Polk's co.	Griffith, Aaron	- 80 acres,	one white poll
1798	"	Griffey, Aaron	"	"
1799-	Capt. Bowman's Co.	Griffith, Aaron	150 acres,	1 WP
		Graham, George	452 "	1 WP, 5 BP
1806-	Capt. Reid's Co.	Griffith, David	no land	1 WP
1807-	list of David Cowan, esq.	Griffith, Aaron	147 acres,	1 WP
		Graham, George, General	461 acres	2 WP, 2 PB, 45 cot. gin saws
	Capt Jo.Haynes Co.	Griffith, David	no land,	1 WP

No later polls collected. Those found may be fragmentary. Perhaps US census could take over at this point.

By now Jonas Griffith, Senior, and probably most of his grown family, are in Tennessee, though some might be in Kentucky. York Co. SC formed 1785--the few of that county's records which Were found were too late to help. Lancaster formed 1798--I did not look for those yet. Both originally Camden Dist--might try that.

Reasons to search these might be to find clues to earlier ancestry, to find out where John's father (?Samuel) was born for sure, and hints as to the character or circumstances of the early Griffiths.

Aaron and the Davids do sound interesting. I do feel that it is possible the first David was Jonas' brother.

James Waughup

Alexr Carns

MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA
Minutes of the Court of Common Pleas and Quarter Sessions
1780-1800

Transcribed by Herman W. Ferguson

John Kirkpatrick

John Bell

Andrew Henderson

John Davis

Saml Polk

James Knox

FAMILY HISTORY LIBRARY
35 NORTH WEST TEMPLE
SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH 84150

US/Can
975.676
P2fh

One from **David Griffeth & Wife** to **Laurence Shinpaker,** for 200 A of Land Dated 10th Sepr. 1784, [proved] by **John Belk.**

One from **William Love & Wife** to **Emanuel Stephens,** for 78 Acres of Land Dated 15th Jany. 1784, Acknowledged.

One from **Susanna Daniel** to **Roger Johns,** for 140 Acres of Land Dated 9th Octr. 1783, [proved] by **Thomas Morrow.**

1784. April Session Deeds 472

1793. April Session. 98

[Road] Overseers: **John Kirkpatrick,** Overseer of the road from the middle of **James Orrs** meadow branch to the Middle of McAlpine Creek, & the under named persons is Appointed to work under him Viz: **John Walker, John Walker** [sic], **Nath. Roach, William Weatherspoon, Wm. Swann, John Swann, David Flaniken, John Osborne, James Buoys, Aaron Griffeth, John Smith, James McConnell, John King, William Black, John Black, James Osborne, James Orr** (jockey), **James Desmond, James Buoys, Junr., & Francis Irwin.** Issued

---

1796. January Session. 293

The Last Will & Testament of **Matthew Woods,** Decd., was proven in Open Court by **James Bradley,** a witness. **Joseph Kerr & James Henry,** Executors named in Said Will, come into Court & was duly Qualified as such [WB-F/231].

The Last Will & Testament of **Robert Hays,** Deceased, was proven in Open Court by **William Wilson,** Esquire, a Witness thereto. **Joseph Faris and Aaron Griffith,** Executors named in Said, Will came into Court & was Qualified as by law required [WB-D/57].

John Wilson Overseer of the road from Charlotte to the road that Crosses from **Ozwell Byrams** to **Upton Byrams,** and allowed the following hands Viz: **Geo. Davis, Matthew Byram, David Haynes, Geo. Baker, Jacob Rodden, Mose Beaty, Godfrey Williams, Doctr. Nathl. Alexander, Tipton Byram, Patrick Boyd, Thomas Boyd, Jacob Rodden, David Griffith, Jno. Stinson, Robt. Walker, Arthur Jamison, & Robert Jamison.** Issd.

[Court adjourned until tomorrow.]

1797. January Session.

An Inventory & amount of Sales of the estate of **Robert Hays,** Decd., by **Joseph Faris & Aaron Griffith,** Exrs., [amounted to] £208.4.0, [which] Valued for the use of the Widow & Children [amounts to] £10.6.0.

An Inventory & Amount of Sales of the Estate of **John Montgomery,** Decd., by the Exrs. Amts. to £35.1.7.

1796. January Session.

Wednesday - The Worshipful Court met According to adjournment. Present **Abraham Alexander, Hez. Alexander, Jno. McK. Alexander,** Esqrs.

Ordered that **John Belk,** Collector in **Capt. Belk's** Comany, formerly **Capt. Lewis's,** have Credit in the Settlement of his Collections of Public, County, & Poor Tax for the years 1780 & 81 Viz: For 1780 - **Mary Curry** £66.11.00, **Philip Walker** £73.9.8, **Thomas Presley** £78.15.4, **James Ross** £13.15.4, **William Sheppard** £122.8.0, [and] **Thos. Walker** £60.16.10. For 1781 - **James Ross** £49.10.0, **Philip Walker** £111.9.0, **Thomas Walker** £167.15.0, **Thomas Presley** £160.3.0, **Mary Curry** £132.0, **William Sheppard** £330.0, **John Sheppard** [Sr?] £330.0., **John Sheppard** [Jr.?] £330.0, **Jonathan Helms** 330.0, [&] **David Griffith** £121.14.0.

---

12. **George Baker** to **James Byram** for 66 Acres of Land dated the 25th day of April 1799, [proved] by **Aaron Griffith.**

13. **John Dunn** to **Joseph Thompson** for 185 Acres of Land dated the 26th day of November 1799, [proved] by **James Allen.**

14. **Sarah Philips** to **James White** for 50 Acres of Land dated the 28th day of October 1798, [proved] by **William Fisher.**

1800. **January Session.** 209

15. **Joseph Cook** to **Henry Sturgeon** for 69 Acres of Land dated the 1st day of November 1799, [proved] by **John Weeks.**

16. **Simon Duckworth** to **David Davis** for 100 Acres of Land dated the 6th day of April 1789, Acknowledged.

17. **James Conner** to **Samuel Long** for 225 Acres of Land dated the 8th day of August 1799, [proved] by **David Shields.**

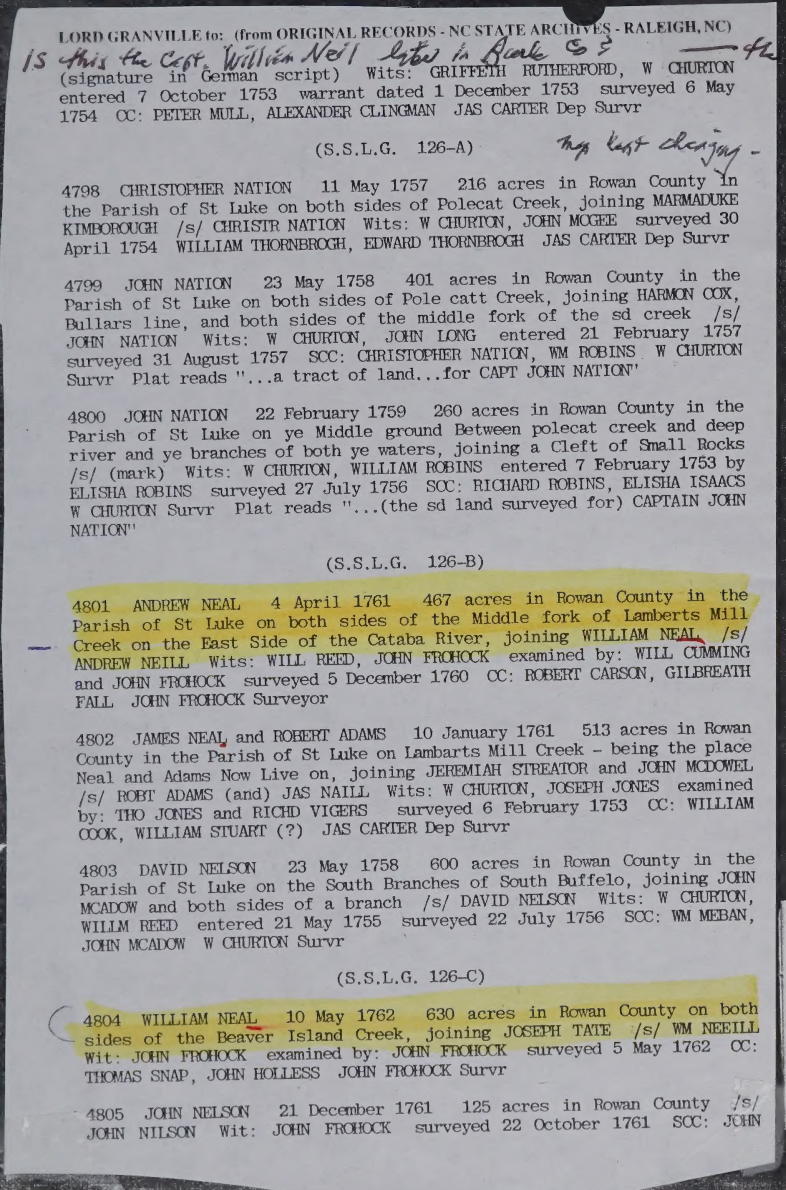
18. **Matthew Walker** to **Moses Walker** for 90 Acres of Land dated the 25th day of April 1799, [proved] by **Wm. McCall.**

19. **Matthew Walker** to **Moses Walker** for 75 Acres of Land dated the 25th day of April 1799, [proved] by **Wm. McCall.**

20. **Colo. Ezekiel Polk** to **John Jack** of Green County, State of Georgia, for 1,286 Acres of Land lying in the Middle District of the State of Tenesee on Richland Creek dated the 28th day of June 1791, Acknowledged by the Grantor.

21. **George Baker** to **James Byram** for 22 Acres of Land dated the 20th of April 1799, [proved] by **Aaron Griffith.**

Our Griffiths were mostly in
Tennessee by 1806 — but
Mecklenberg borders on Lancaster &
York Counties South Carolina, where
we to find a James Griffith the
right age to be ours who
MIGHT have been related.



LORD GRANVILLE to: (from ORIGINAL RECORDS - NC STATE ARCHIVES - RALEIGH, NC)

Is this the Capt. William Neil later in Burke Co? — the

(signature in German script) Wits: GRIFFETH RUTHERFORD, W CHURTON entered 7 October 1753 warrant dated 1 December 1753 surveyed 6 May 1754 CC: PETER MULL, ALEXANDER CLINGMAN JAS CARTER Dep Survr

(S.S.L.G. 126-A)

Maps kept changing -

4798 CHRISTOPHER NATION 11 May 1757 216 acres in Rowan County in the Parish of St Luke on both sides of Polecat Creek, joining MARMADUKE KIMBOROUGH /s/ CHRISTR NATION Wits: W CHURTON, JOHN MCGEE surveyed 30 April 1754 WILLIAM THORNBROGH, EDWARD THORNBROGH JAS CARTER Dep Survr

4799 JOHN NATION 23 May 1758 401 acres in Rowan County in the Parish of St Luke on both sides of Pole catt Creek, joining HARMON COX, Bullars line, and both sides of the middle fork of the sd creek /s/ JOHN NATION Wits: W CHURTON, JOHN LONG entered 21 February 1757 surveyed 31 August 1757 SCC: CHRISTOPHER NATION, WM ROBINS W CHURTON Survr Plat reads "...a tract of land...for CAPT JOHN NATION"

4800 JOHN NATION 22 February 1759 260 acres in Rowan County in the Parish of St Luke on ye Middle ground Between polecat creek and deep river and ye branches of both ye waters, joining a Cleft of Small Rocks /s/ (mark) Wits: W CHURTON, WILLIAM ROBINS entered 7 February 1753 by ELISHA ROBINS surveyed 27 July 1756 SCC: RICHARD ROBINS, ELISHA ISAACS W CHURTON Survr Plat reads "...(the sd land surveyed for) CAPTAIN JOHN NATION"

(S.S.L.G. 126-B)

4801 ANDREW NEAL 4 April 1761 467 acres in Rowan County in the Parish of St Luke on both sides of the Middle fork of Lamberts Mill Creek on the East Side of the Cataba River, joining WILLIAM NEAL /s/ ANDREW NEILL Wits: WILL REED, JOHN FROHOCK examined by: WILL CUMMING and JOHN FROHOCK surveyed 5 December 1760 CC: ROBERT CARSON, GILBREATH FALL JOHN FROHOCK Surveyor

4802 JAMES NEAL and ROBERT ADAMS 10 January 1761 513 acres in Rowan County in the Parish of St Luke on Lambarts Mill Creek - being the place Neal and Adams Now Live on, joining JEREMIAH STREATOR and JOHN MCDOWEL /s/ ROBT ADAMS (and) JAS NAILL Wits: W CHURTON, JOSEPH JONES examined by: THO JONES and RICHD VIGERS surveyed 6 February 1753 CC: WILLIAM COOK, WILLIAM STUART (?) JAS CARTER Dep Survr

4803 DAVID NELSON 23 May 1758 600 acres in Rowan County in the Parish of St Luke on the South Branches of South Buffelo, joining JOHN MCADOW and both sides of a branch /s/ DAVID NELSON Wits: W CHURTON, WILLM REED entered 21 May 1755 surveyed 22 July 1756 SCC: WM MEBAN, JOHN MCADOW W CHURTON Survr

(S.S.L.G. 126-C)

4804 WILLIAM NEAL 10 May 1762 630 acres in Rowan County on both sides of the Beaver Island Creek, joining JOSEPH TATE /s/ WM NEEILL Wit: JOHN FROHOCK examined by: JOHN FROHOCK surveyed 5 May 1762 CC: THOMAS SNAP, JOHN HOLLESS JOHN FROHOCK Survr

4805 JOHN NELSON 21 December 1761 125 acres in Rowan County /s/ JOHN NILSON Wit: JOHN FROHOCK surveyed 22 October 1761 SCC: JOHN

THE GRANVILLE DIST. of NC 1748-1763 — H

F
253
H628
1986
v.3

VOL.

THE GRANVILLE DISTRICT OF NORTH CAROLINA 1748 - 1763

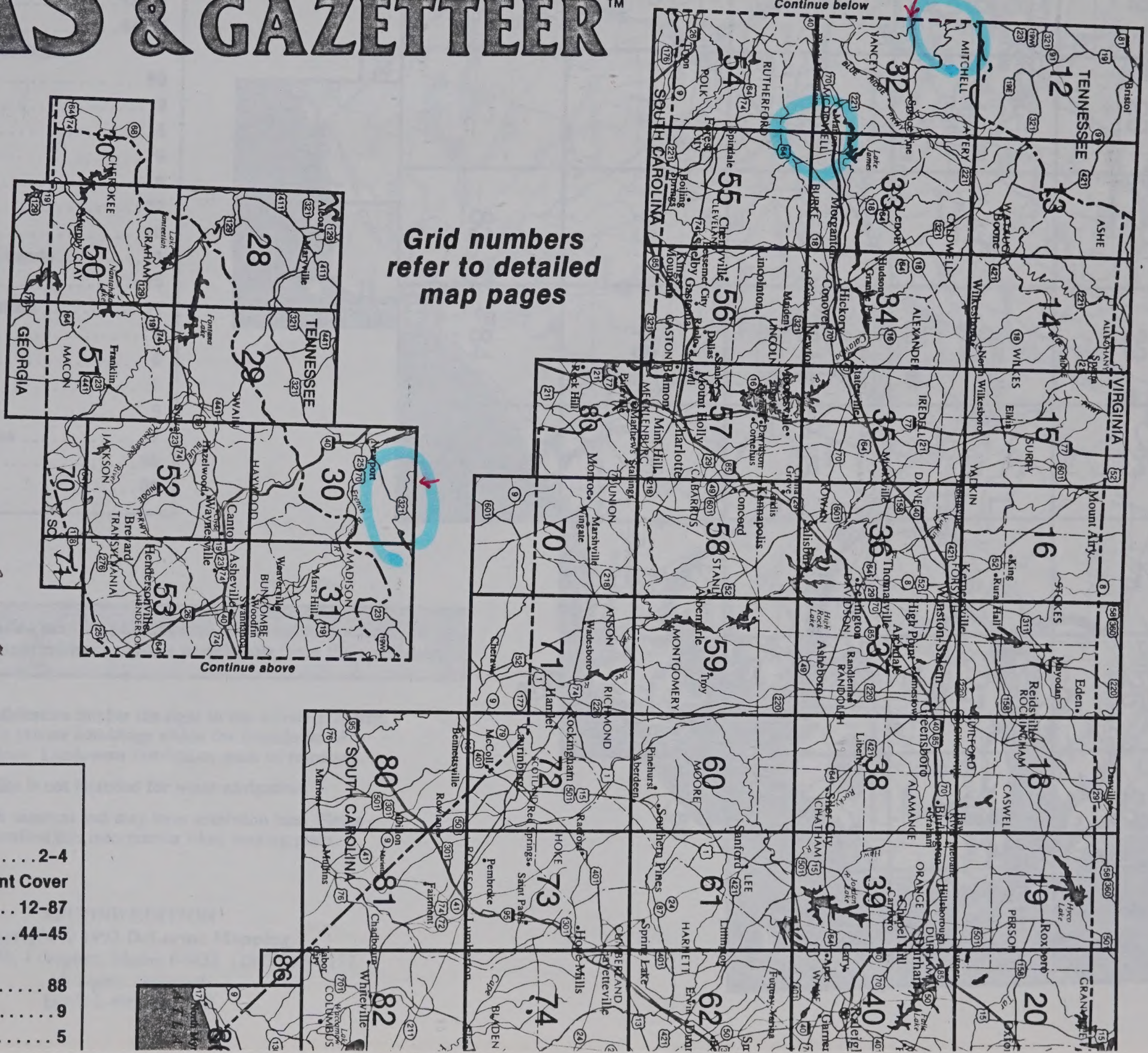
ABSTRACTS OF LAND GRANTS

VOLUME THREE

By

Margaret M. Hofmann

NORTH CAROLINA ATLAS & GAZETTEER™


Continue below
Continue above
TENNESSEE
VIRGINIA
GEORGIA
SOUTH CAROLINA
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
70
71
72
73
74
80
81
82
86
MITCHELL
YANCEY
AVERY
BURKE
CALDWELL
WATAUGA
ASHE
WILKES
ALEXANDER
IREDELL
RUTHERFORD
POLK
CLEVELAND
LINCOLN
GASTON
MECKLENBURG
CABARRUS
ROWAN
DAVIDSON
FORSYTH
GUILFORD
ALAMANCE
ORANGE
CHATHAM
RANDOLPH
MONTGOMERY
STANLY
UNION
ANSON
RICHMOND
MOORE
LEE
HARNETT
HOKE
SCOTLAND
ROBESON
COLUMBUS
BLADEN
CUMBERLAND
CHEROKEE
CLAY
GRAHAM
MACON
SWAIN
JACKSON
HAYWOOD
TRANSYLVANIA
HENDERSON
BUNCOMBE
MADISON
YADKIN
SURRY
STOKES
ROCKINGHAM
CASWELL
PERSON
Morganton
Hickory
Charlotte
Winston-Salem
Greensboro
Asheville
Durham
Raleigh
Chapel Hill
Burlington
High Point
Salisbury
Concord
Gastonia
Shelby
Lenoir
Boone
Statesville
Mooresville
Monroe
Albemarle
Asheboro
Sanford
Fayetteville
Lumberton
Laurinburg
Rockingham
Hamlet
Wadesboro
Southern Pines
Whiteville
Hendersonville
Brevard
Franklin
Murphy
Canton
Waynesville
Marshall
Mars Hill
Spruce Pine
Elkin
North Wilkesboro
Wilkesboro
Mount Airy
Reidsville
Eden
Roxboro
Lincolnton
Kannapolis
Thomasville
Lexington
Newton
Conover
Mount Holly
Burnsville
Bristol
Danville

Grid numbers refer to detailed map pages

N

0 — 1" — 30 miles
Scale of Miles

Comp blue circled area 1774 Burke Co land grants

Attached - #30, 31, 32, 33, 34
51, 52, 53, 54, 55
+ enlarged sections of pages
30, 32, between area 32-3 +
to area 54-5 Sent copies of circled grids
to Billie Aug 1994

Table of Contents

THE ATLAS

Index of Placenames 2–4
Legend . . . . Inside Front Cover
Maps 12–87
N.C. Highway Map 44–45

THE GAZETTEER

Bike Routes 88
Boat Launch Sites 9
Campgrounds 5

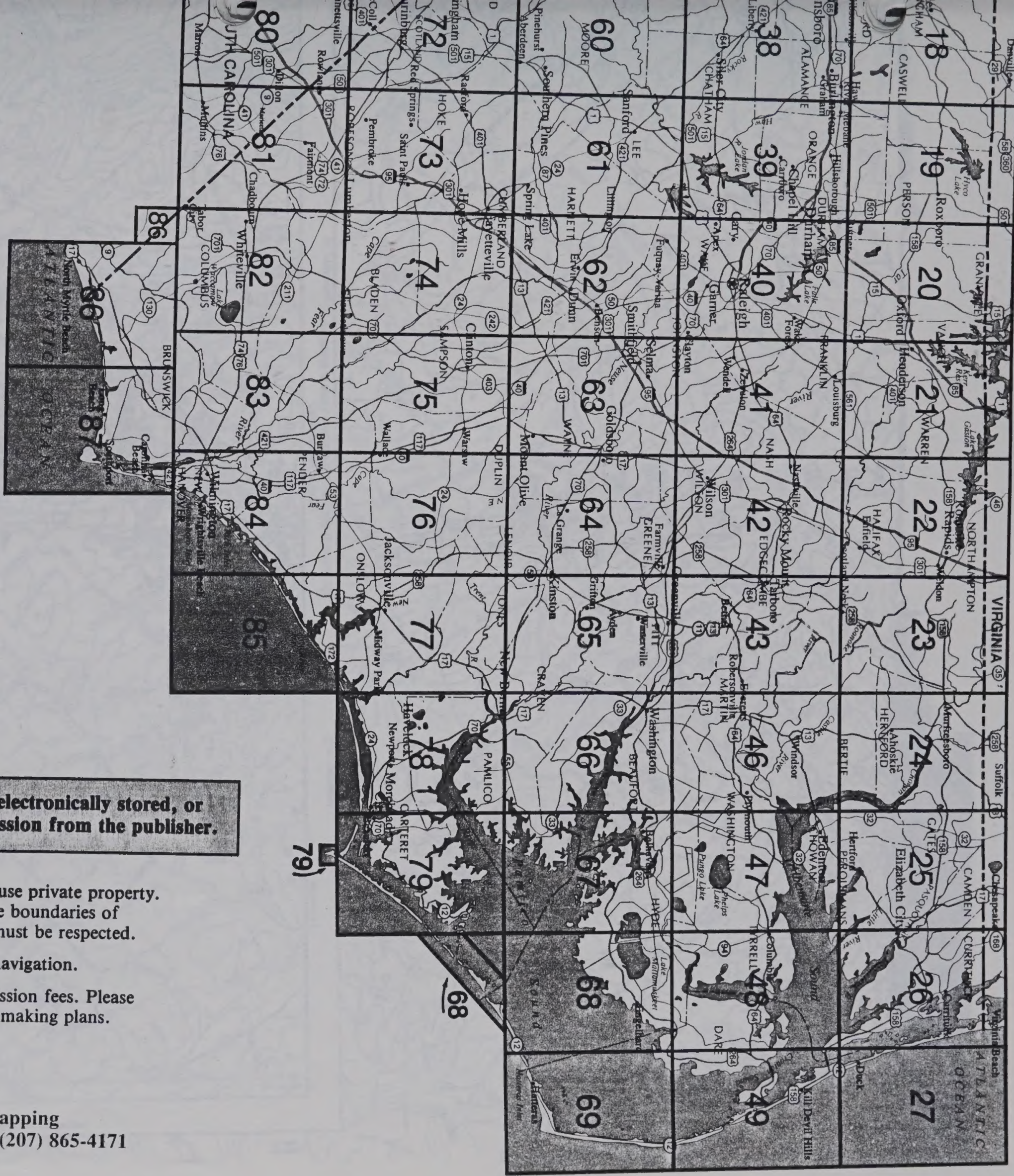
Table of Contents

THE ATLAS

Index of Placenames 2-4
Legend . . . . Inside Front Cover
Maps 12-87
N.C. Highway Map 44-45

THE GAZETTEER

Bike Routes 88
Boat Launch Sites 9
Campgrounds 5
Ferries 5
Freshwater Fishing 9
Hiking 12
Historic Sites 10
Hunting—State Game Lands 11
Lighthouses 13
Museums/Science Centers 11
Pier Fishing 9
Recreation Areas 6
River Trips 7
Trout Waters 8
Unique Natural Features 7
Welcome Centers 10
Wildlife 88


18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
38
39
40
41
42
43
46
47
48
49
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
VIRGINIA
SOUTH CAROLINA
ATLANTIC OCEAN
Raleigh
Durham
Chapel Hill
Fayetteville
Goldsboro
Wilson
Rocky Mount
Greenville
Kinston
Jacksonville
Wilmington
Washington
Elizabeth City
Kill Devil Hills
Hatteras

No portion of this Atlas may be photocopied, electronically stored, or reproduced in any manner without written permission from the publisher.

Nothing in this publication implies the right to use private property. There may be private inholdings within the boundaries of public reservations. Landowner restrictions must be respected.

This Atlas is not intended for water navigation.

Listings may be seasonal and may have admission fees. Please be sure to confirm this information when making plans.

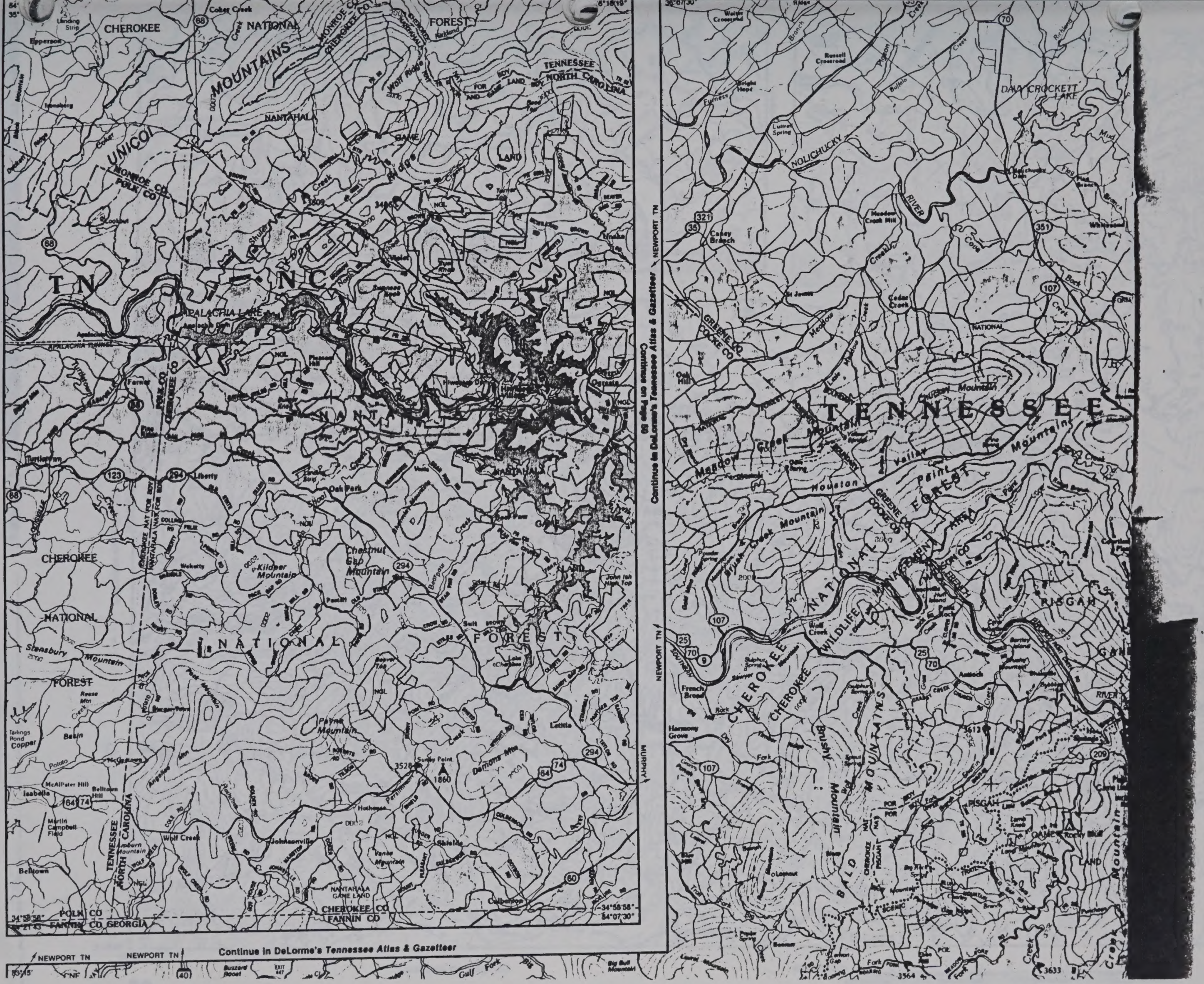
SECOND EDITION
Copyright © 1993 DeLorme Mapping
P.O. Box 298, Freeport, Maine 04032 (207) 865-4171
All rights reserved.
ISBN 0-89933-231-5

P30

A

B

Continue in DeLorme's Tennessee Atlas & Gazetteer



CHEROKEE
NATIONAL
FOREST
MOUNTAINS
MONROE CO
CHEROKEE CO
TENNESSEE
NORTH CAROLINA
UNICOI
MONROE CO
POLK CO
NANTAHALA
GAME
LAND
Wolf Ridge
TN
NC
APALACHIA LAKE
APALACHIA TUNNEL
POLK CO
CHEROKEE CO
Farner
Turtletown
Liberty
Oak Park
Chestnut Gap Mountain
Kilgore Mountain
CHEROKEE
NATIONAL
Stansbury Mountain
FOREST
Reese Mtn
Basin
Copper
Payne Mountain
Sunny Point
Demons Mtn
Isabella
Belltown
McAllister Hill
Martin Campbell Field
TENNESSEE
NORTH CAROLINA
Wolf Creek
Johnsonville
Hothouse
Shields
Vance Mountain
NANTAHALA GAME LAND
CHEROKEE CO
FANNIN CO
POLK CO
FANNIN CO GEORGIA
Culberson
Lettitia
Murphy
NEWPORT TN
Continue on Page 50
Walter Crossroad
Russell Crossroad
Bright Hope
Luttrell Spring
DAVY CROCKETT LAKE
NOLICHUCKY
RIVER
Caney Branch
Meadow Creek Mill
St James
Cedar Creek
GREENE CO
COCKE CO
Oak Hill
TENNESSEE
Meadow Creek Mountain
Houston Valley
Paint Mountain
CHEROKEE NATIONAL FOREST
WILDLIFE MANAGEMENT AREA
Brush Creek Mountain
French Broad
Harmony Grove
CHEROKEE
BALD MOUNTAINS
Brushy Mountain
PISGAH
GAME LAND
Antioch
Rocky Bluff
3612
3564
3633
NEWPORT TN
Big Bull Mountain
Buzzard Roost

Continue in DeLorme's Tennessee Atlas & Gazetteer

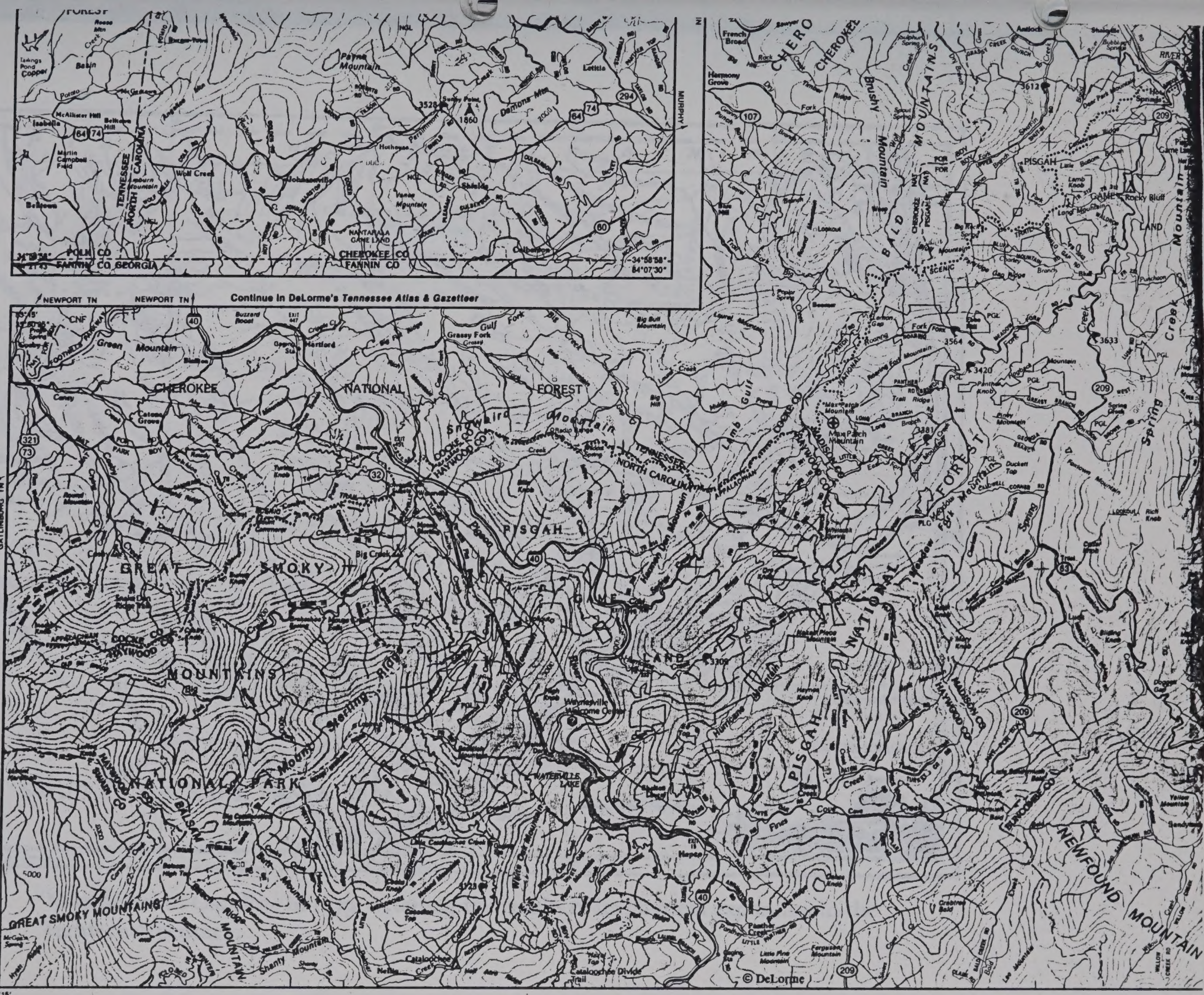
NEWPORT TN NEWPORT TN Continue in DeLorme's Tennessee Atlas & Gazetteer

Continue in DeLorme's *Tennessee Atlas & Gazetteer*

C

D

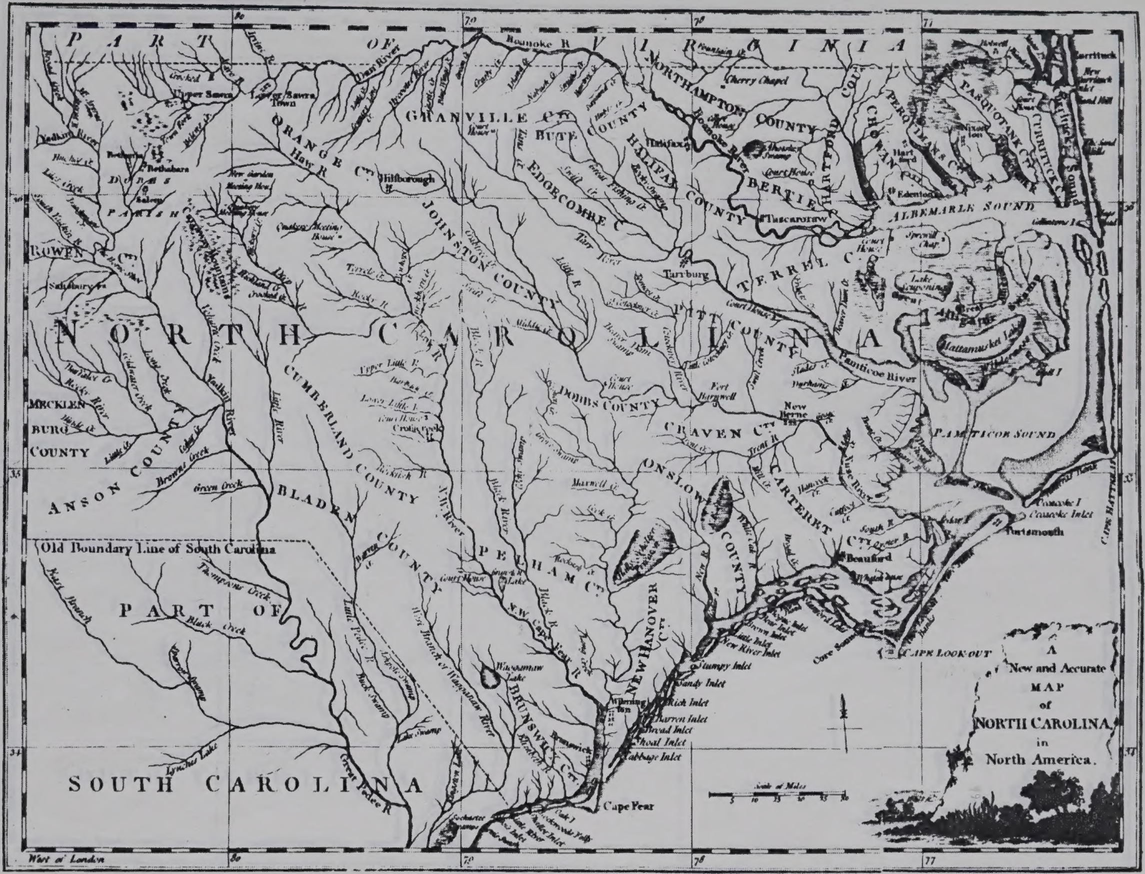
Continue on Page 29


NEWPORT TN
GATLINBURG TN
CHEROKEE
NATIONAL
FOREST
GREAT
SMOKY
MOUNTAINS
NATIONAL PARK
PISGAH
GAME
LAND
NATIONAL
FOREST
BALD MOUNTAINS
NEWFOUND MOUNTAIN
Snowbird Mountain
Mount Sterling Ridge
Max Patch Mountain
Waynesville Welcome Center
WATERVILLE LAKE
Cataloochee
Cataloochee Divide Trail
TENNESSEE
NORTH CAROLINA
COCKE CO
HAYWOOD CO
MADISON CO
BUNCOMBE CO
Spring Creek
Hepco
GREAT SMOKY MOUNTAINS
POLK CO
FANNIN CO GEORGIA
CHEROKEE CO
FANNIN CO
MURPHY
35°37'30"
83°15'
© DeLorme

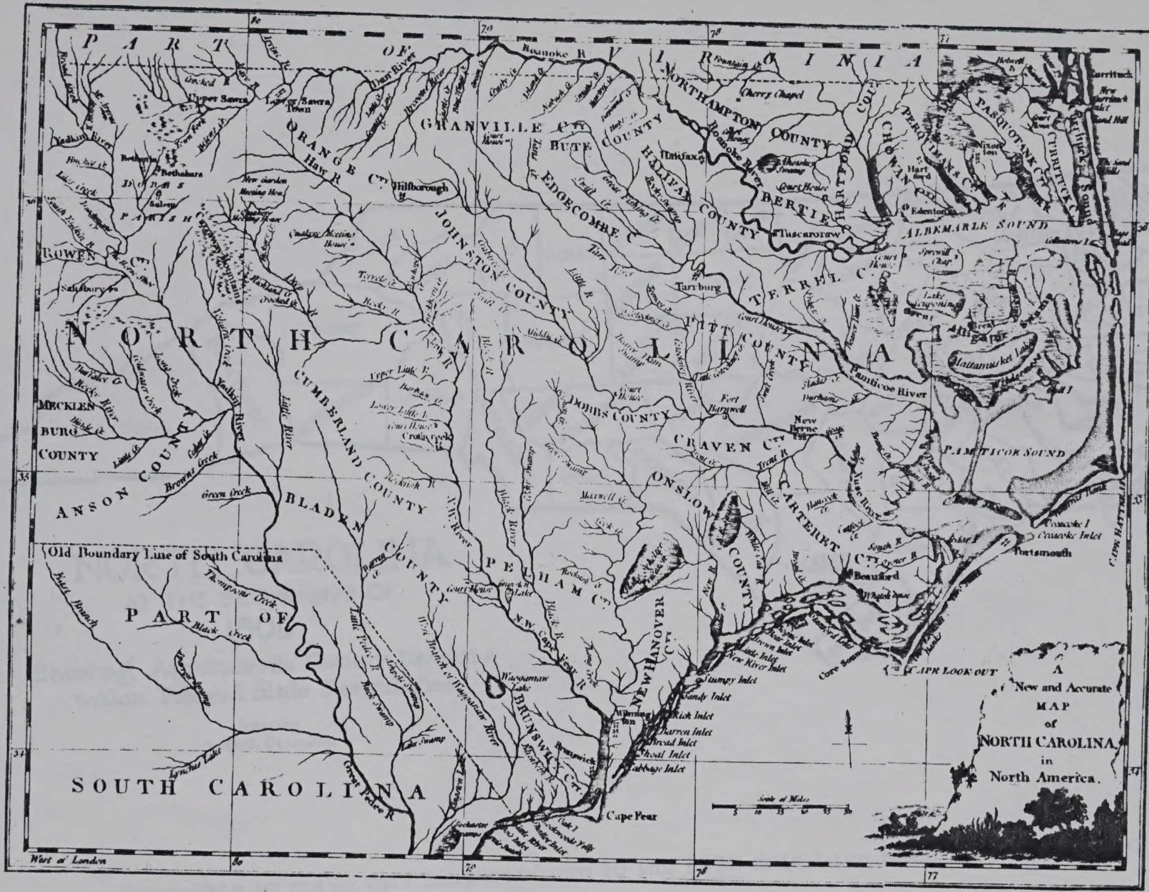
Continue on Page 52

KILOMETERS 1 0 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10

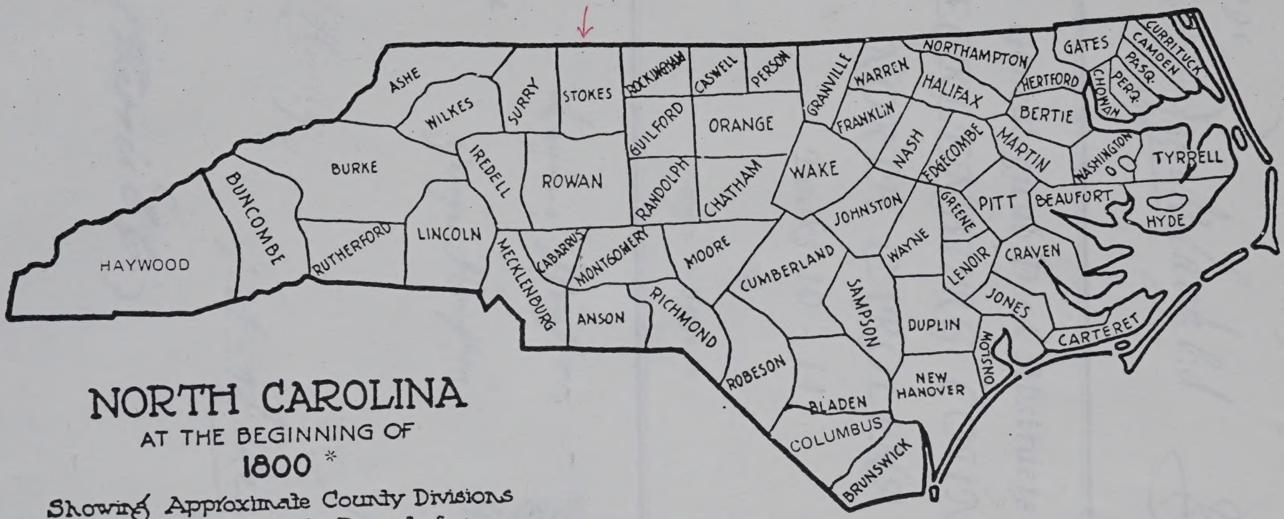
MILES 1 0 1 2 3 4 5 6


PART OF VIRGINIA
NORTH CAROLINA
PART OF SOUTH CAROLINA
Old Boundary Line of South Carolina
GRANVILLE Cy.
BUTE COUNTY
NORTHAMPTON COUNTY
HALIFAX COUNTY
BERTIE
HARTFORD
CHOWAN
PERQUIMANS Cy.
PARQUOTANK Cy.
CURRITUCK
ORANGE Cy.
Hillsborough
EDGCOMBE C.
JOHNSTON COUNTY
ROWEN Cy.
Salisbury
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
ANSON COUNTY
CUMBERLAND COUNTY
BLADEN COUNTY
DOBBS COUNTY
CRAVEN Cy.
PITT COUNTY
TERREL C.
Tarrburg
ONSLOW COUNTY
CARTERET Cy.
PELHAM Cy.
NEW HANOVER Cy.
BRUNSWICK Cy.
Wilmington
Cape Fear
Beaufort
Portsmouth
New Berne
Edenton
Halifax
Tuscarora
ALBEMARLE SOUND
PAMTICOE SOUND
Pamticoe River
Mattamuskeet Lake
Roanoke R.
Cape Hatteras
Ocracoke Inlet
CAPE LOOKOUT
Old Topsail Inlet
Stumpy Inlet
Sandy Inlet
Rich Inlet
Barren Inlet
Bread Inlet
Shoal Inlet
Cabbage Inlet
Waccamaw Lake
Great Pedee R
Yadkin River
Haw R
Deep R
Salem
Bethabara
Bethania
Scale of Miles
5 10 15 20 25 30
West of London
80 79 78 77
35 34
A New and Accurate MAP of NORTH CAROLINA in North America.

Map of North Carolina in 1779, detailing the results of its physical expansion in the eighteenth century.


A New and Accurate MAP of NORTH CAROLINA in North America.
PART OF VIRGINIA
NORTH CAROLINA
PART OF SOUTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
Old Boundary Line of South Carolina
ROWEN
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
ANSON COUNTY
ORANGE CTY
GRANVILLE CTY
BUTE COUNTY
HALIFAX COUNTY
NORTHAMPTON COUNTY
BERTIE
EDGECOMBE C
JOHNSTON COUNTY
CUMBERLAND COUNTY
BLADEN COUNTY
DOBBS COUNTY
PITT COUNTY
TERREL C
CRAVEN CTY
ONSLOW COUNTY
CARTERET CTY
PELHAM CTY
NEW HANOVER CTY
BRUNSWICK CTY
CHOWAN CTY
PERQUIMANS CTY
PASQUOTANK CTY
CURRITUCK C
DOBBS PARISH
Salisbury
Salem
Bethabara
Hillsborough
Halifax
Tarrburg
Tuscarorraw
Edenton
New Berne
Beaufort
Wilmington
Brunswick
Portsmouth
Cape Fear
CAPE LOOK OUT
CAPE HATTERAS
ALBEMARLE SOUND
PAMTICOE SOUND
Pamticoe River
Roanoke R
Roanoke River
Yadkin River
Dan River
Haw R
Tarr River
Neuse R
Little Pedee R
Great Pedee R
Little River
Black River
N.W. River
NW Cape Fear R
Lake Mattamusket
Waccamaw Lake
Ocracoke Inlet
Topsail Inlet
New River Inlet
Stumpy Inlet
Sandy Inlet
Rich Inlet
Barren Inlet
Shoal Inlet
Lockwoods Folly
Currituck
Scale of Miles
West of London
80
79
78
77
35
34
36

Map of North Carolina in 1779, detailing the results of its physical expansion in the eighteenth century.


ASHE
WILKES
SURRY
STOKES
ROCKINGHAM
CASWELL
PERSON
GRANVILLE
WARREN
NORTHAMPTON
GATES
CURRITUCK
CAMDEN
PASQ.
PERQ.
CHOWAN
HERTFORD
HALIFAX
BERTIE
FRANKLIN
NASH
EDGECOMBE
MARTIN
WASHINGTON
TYRRELL
BURKE
IREDELL
ROWAN
GUILFORD
ORANGE
RANDOLPH
CHATHAM
WAKE
JOHNSTON
GREENE
PITT
BEAUFORT
HYDE
HAYWOOD
BUNCOMBE
RUTHERFORD
LINCOLN
MECKLENBURG
CABARRUS
MONTGOMERY
MOORE
CUMBERLAND
WAYNE
LENOIR
CRAVEN
JONES
SAMPSON
DUPLIN
ONSLOW
CARTERET
ANSON
RICHMOND
ROBESON
BLADEN
NEW HANOVER
COLUMBUS
BRUNSWICK

NORTH CAROLINA

AT THE BEGINNING OF

1800 *

Showing Approximate County Divisions
within Present State Boundaries.

Map by
L. Polk Denmark

---

* Revisions to make this map conform to the 1820 date have been made by the compiler.

WI SHS F262 M4 F47 (1990)

026-60

Geo. C. Caldwell Alex. Craighead Wm Hemphill

1791

John Helmes Wm Black C.S. Sam Martin Cmt

J. McAlexander

Genealogical Deed Abstracts

MECKLENBURG COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA

Books 10 - 14

By

Herman W. Ferguson

Adam Alexander J.P.

Levinis Houston

Wm Alexander

George Houston

Eli Crockett

Elias Crockett

John Cannon

Robert McKinley

Test Isaac Alexander

Robert Harris C.C.

Zacheus Wilson Cnty J.

Jas. N. Houston

✓**456**, p 224. 10 Feb 1780. David Griffith, saddler, and wf Catherine (X), to James Belk, blacksmith, for £100 current NC money, 100 A on the north fork of Leintrous Cr, including improvements whereon Henery Lewis lives. Wit: John Belk, Senr., and Britain Belk. Prvd in Apr 1783 Ct by oath of John Belk, Senr. Sam Martin, CMC.

720, p 270. 10 Apr 1784. David Griffeth, planter, and wf Hannah (H) to Larence Shanepaker, for £200 specie, 200 A at the head of Polecat Br of Lynch Cr. Wit: John Belk and James Doster. Prvd in Apr 1784 Ct by oath of John Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

768, p 379. 6 Sep 1784. George Miller, planter, and wf Lese of Camden Dist., SC, to Josias Randle, planter, of Mecklenburg, for L100 current NC money, 200 A surveyed for David Griffeth, Junr, on Linches Cr adj other lands of Griffeth. Wit: John and James Belk. Prvd in Oct 1784 Ct by oath of James Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

1029, p 83. 25 Sep 1783. James Belk, sadler, and wf Elizabeth (X) to John Belk, Senr, sadler, for £20 specie, 100 A with improvements on the north fork of Lynch Cr adj the [NC-SC] province line being the land patented to David Griffith, Senr, where he once lived. Wit: Darlin Belk. Prvd in Apr 1787 Ct by oath of Darlin Belk. Sam Martin, CMC.

1382, p 447. 19 Jan 1788. Josiah Randle, Senr, to Josiah Randle, Junr, both of Anson, for £100 current NC money, 200 A on Lynch Cr surveyed for David Griffeth, Junr. Wit: Legrow (X) Bennett. Prvd in Apr 1788 Ct by oath of John Stokes. Sam Martin, CMC.

FAMILY HISTORY LIBRARY
35 NORTH WEST TEMPLE
SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH 84150

ABSTRACTS OF LAND ENTRIES:
MECKLENBURG CO, NC 1778-1795

BY Dr. A. B. PRUITT

ISBN #0-944992-07-2

copyright 1988 A. B. Pruitt

US/CAN
975.676
R28p

MECKLENBURG COUNTY
NORTH CAROLINA

LAND WARRANTS
1765-1768

20 October 1767

1482. David Griffey. 100 acres. On the N° [illegible] itsses Creek, Joining the province line & runing up on both sides of the Creek, to Include his own Improvements.
1483. Thomas Polk. 150 acres. On the waters of Sugar Creek, Joining his own John McKelwe and John Springsteen

1961. David Griffeth. 200 acres. On & including the head of Richardsons Creek Pool Cat & Cain Creek near & to the S° of Graves Rode. 21 Dec 1768

MECKLENBURG CO, NC LAND ENTRIES 1778-1795

page 29

168. Mar. 27, 1778 David Guffey enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co on waters of Richardsons Cr; border: "the" South line on both sides of waggon road on Silver Br; warrant to be issued in John Belh's name by order from the jury(?) of David Griffer; warrant issued.

280. Dec. 24, 1778 David Griffith enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co; border: Joseph McCall's survey, runs down Cain Cr, & joins his own survey; transfered to Harmon Mircin [or Mirien].

885. May 8, 1779 Abel Lewis enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co on Pole cat Cr; border: David Griffeth sr and widow Deason; warrant issued.

886. May 8, 1780 David Griffeth enters 50 ac in Mecklenburg Co on Watry Br on Pole cat Cr; border: David Griffeth, "the widow", & his own land (sic); warrant issued.

887. May 11, 1780 Charles Farr enters 150 ac in Mecklenburg Co on Long Run on E side of Dutch Buffilow Cr on SW of bent of said Run; warrant issued.

888. May 20, 1780 Jonathan Helms enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co on Watry Br of Pole cat Cr; includes his own improvement; border: David Griffeth, widow Deason, & runs down branch; warrant issued.

1325. Jun. 14, 1789 Gabriel Sibley enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co; border both sides of Chas Cook, John Sibley, & Richd Griffin; no land

1436. Oct. 29, 1790 Jno Smith enters 100 ac on waters of McCalpins Cr; border: his land, Jas Boy [or Moy], & Jno Kilpatrick; includes Aaron Griffin's improvement.

1769. Aug. 31, 1793 Geo Daugherty enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co on waters of Waxhaw Cr; border: Thos Parr, David Nicholas, Chas Gillaspie, Jno Williams, Saml Griffin, & Jno Walker.

1811. Nov. 28, 1793 Jno Belk esq enters 200 ac on watersof Buffilow Cr on Lynches Cr; border: his own land that David Griffin entered, Jonas Belk, & Josiah Randal on E side of the creek.

David Griffith has either moved or died. His land on Polecat Creek of Lynches Creek/River is on the So. Carolina border.
Was David my kin?

CROWN to: (William Tryon, Royal Governor) **PATENT BOOK 20**

2755 pg. 621 DAVID GRIFFITH 24 December 1770 100 acres in Mecklenburgh on the N. fork of Lentious Creek - including the improvement Griffith now lives on, joining (a point) near the Province Line and both sides of the branch Lynches

3547 pg. 22 JOHN GRAHAM 15 May 1772 350 acres in Tryon on Griffins Branch of Thicketty Creek Patent Bk 22

7397 pg. 47 DAVID GRIFFITH, JR. 4 March 1775 200 acres in Mecklenburg on the waters of Lenteouses Creek, joining Griffiths own land (Lynches Creek) Book 25

8062 pg. 268 JOHN POWERS 11 March 1775 167 acres in Anson, joining HOPKIN HOWELL, STEPHEN THOMAS, Heamors line, and Griffiths lower line N. E. of Pedee Patent Book 25

Mecklenburg
now Union

F253 H625 V2 - WI S.

COLONY

OF

NORTH CAROLINA

1765 - 1775

Abstracts of Land Patents

Volume Two

by Margaret M. Hofmann

(This covers old Mecklenburg Co)

MECKLENBURG COUNTY
NORTH CAROLINA

LAND WARRANTS
[illegible]

20 October [illegible]

[illegible]. David Griffey. 100 acres. On the N° [illegible] Creek, [illegible] the [illegible] sides of the Creek, to include his own Improvements.
[illegible]. Thomas Polk. 150 acres. On the waters of Sugar Creek Joining his own, [illegible] John [illegible].

[illegible]. David Griffith. 200 acres. On & including the head of Richardsons Creek, [illegible] Cane Creek [illegible] of the S° of Stoney Rock. [illegible]

[illegible]ENBURG CO, NC LAND ESTATES [illegible]

Page 23
[illegible], Mar. [illegible], 1778 [illegible] enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co on [illegible] Richardsons Cr, between "the" South line on North side of [illegible] [illegible] Warrant to be issued in John Baillie [illegible] order [illegible] of David Griffith warrant issued.

[illegible], [illegible], 1778 David Griffith enters [illegible] in Mecklenburg Co [illegible] [illegible]'s survey [illegible] down [illegible] Cr, & joins his own survey [illegible] [illegible] Branch (Warrant issued).

[illegible], May [illegible], 1778 [illegible] enters [illegible] ac in Mecklenburg Co on [illegible] between David Griffith [illegible] and widow [illegible] warrant issued.

[illegible]. May [illegible], 1780 David Griffith enters [illegible] ac in Mecklenburg Co on [illegible] [illegible] survey David Griffith, "the widow", & his own land [illegible] warrant issued.

[illegible], May [illegible], 1780 Charles Parr enters 100 ac in Mecklenburg Co [illegible] S side of Dutch Buffaloe Cr on [illegible] of [illegible] of said [illegible] warrant [illegible].

THE PROVINCIAL CONGRESSES

The first Provincial Congress of North Carolina met in New Bern August 25, 1774. Another Provincial Congress convened in New Bern. They met at the same time and in the same hall. The next Provincial Congress met in Hillsborough in August 1775, with every borough in North Carolina represented among the 184 delegates. The Hillsborough Congress provided for an army and for a provisional government. After Independence was declared, the state legislature held a session in Hillsborough in August, 1778, and again in 1782. The North Carolina Board of War met there from September 14 to December 1, in the year 1780.

Orange County was the home of important state and national leaders. Thomas Burke and John Kinchen, represented Orange in the Fourth Provincial Congress, served on the committee that drew up the Halifax Resolutions on April 12, 1776. Burke was governor of the state from June, 1781, to April, 1782. William Hooper, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, lived in Hillsborough. Nathaniel Rochester of Hillsborough, who later helped to establish Rochester, New York, served as Deputy Commissary General of military stores in N. C. for the use of the Continental Army, in 1776. Brigadier-General Francis Nash, of Hillsborough, joined Washington's army on July 1, 1777. He was mortally wounded on October 4, in the battle of Germantown.

From: The Age of Orange—by Ruth Blackwelder.

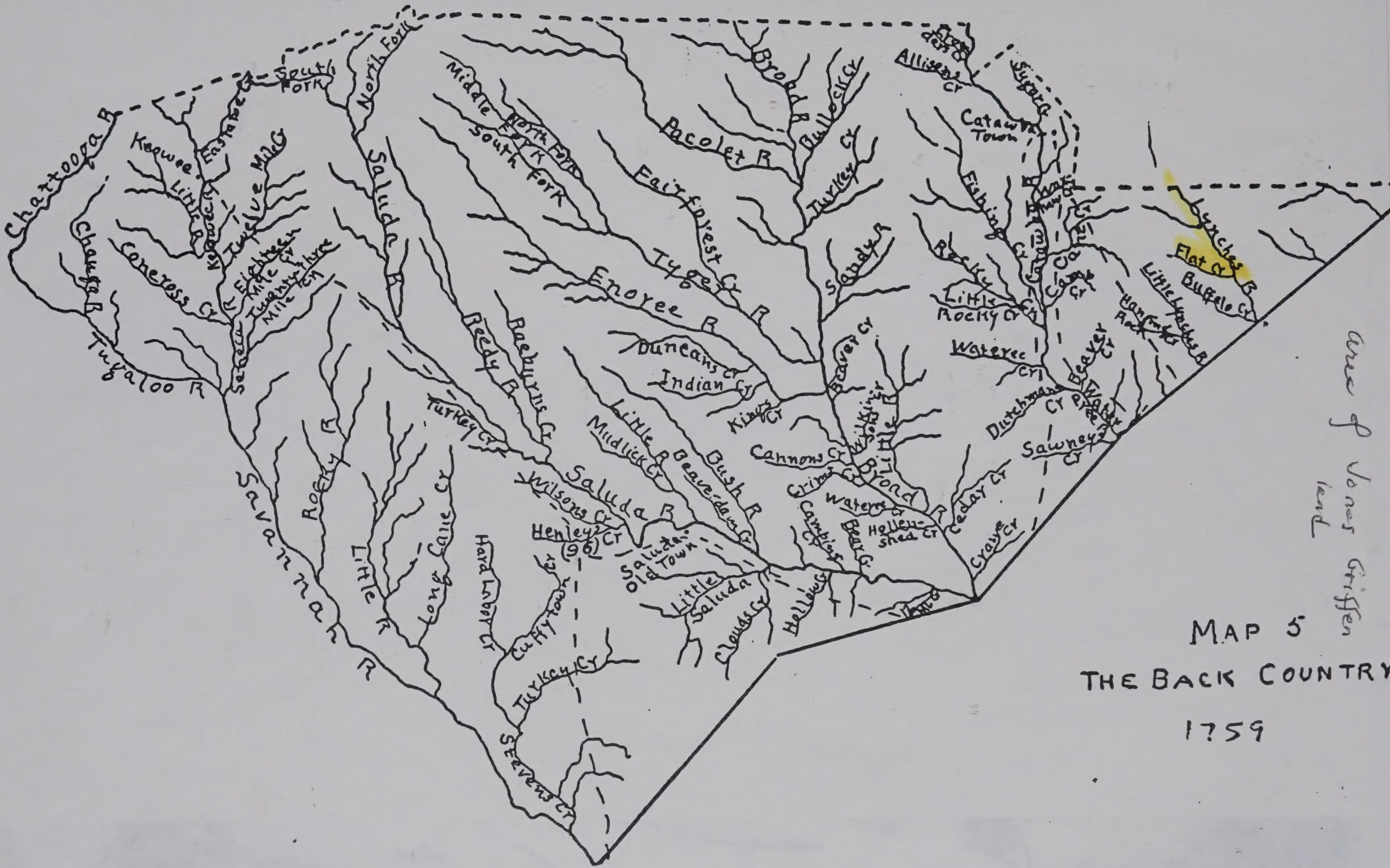
BATTLES OF REVOLUTION FOUGHT IN NORTH CAROLINA

(From: North Carolina Booklet)

Moore's Creek Bridge	Feb. 27, 1776
Ransom's Mill	June 20, 1780
Pacolet River	July 14, 1780
Earler Ford	July 18, 1780
Cane Creek	Sept. 12, 1780
Wahab's Plantation (Charlotte)	Sept. 21, 1780
Wilmington	Feb. 1, 1781
Cowan's Ford	Feb. 1, 1781
Torrence Tavern	Feb. 1, 1781
Shallow Ford	Oct. 15, 1780
Bruce's Cross Road	Feb. 12, 1781
Haw River	Mar. 2, 1781
Clapp's Mill	Mar. 5, 1781
Guilford Courthouse	Mar. 15, 1781
Hillsborough	April 24, 1781 and Sept. 13, 1781
Kirk's Farm	Sept. 13, 1781
Sudley's Mill	Sept. 13, 1781
Lindley's Mill	Sept. 12, 1781

The Battle of Lindley's Mill closed the war in North Carolina, and a month later at Yorktown Lord Cornwallis surrendered the tattered remains of a once proud British Army.

The words of James Pugh had come true . The blood shed at Alamance had been the seed of the American Revolution, a seed from which the entire nation reaped the blessing of independence—As Alamance was birthplace of the Revolution, Mecklenburg thus became the birthplace of Independence.

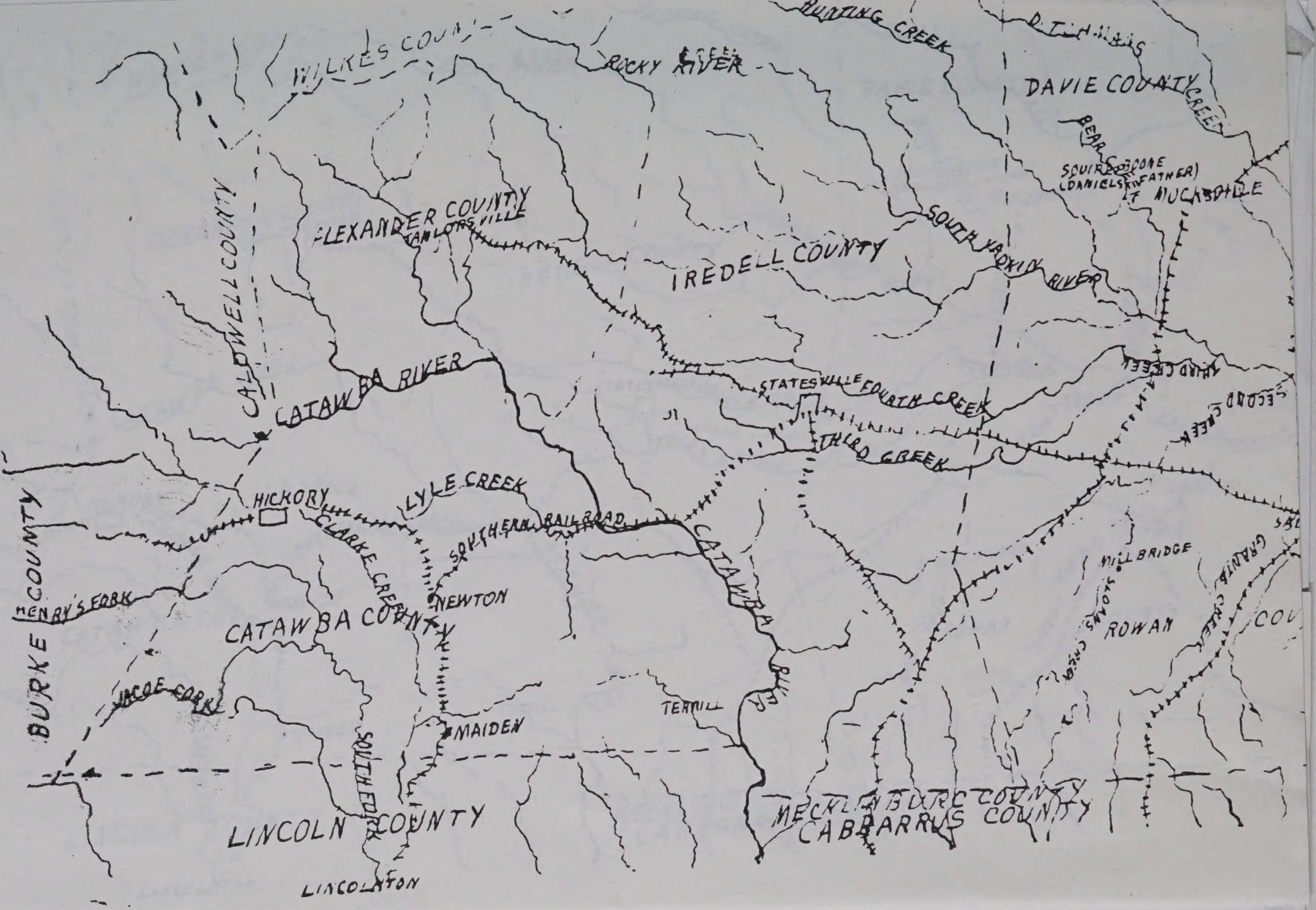

Chattooga R
Chauga R
Tugaloo R
Keowee
Little R
Keowee R
Eastatoe Cr
Twelve Mile Cr
Coneross Cr
Eighteen Mile Cr
Twenty-three Mile Cr
Seneca R
South Fork
North Fork
Saluda R
Middle Fork
North Fork
South Fork
Reedy R
Raeburns Cr
Turkey Cr
Savannah R
Rocky R
Little R
Long Cane Cr
Hard Labor Cr
Cuffytown Cr
Turkey Cr
Stevens Cr
Wilsons Cr
Henleys Cr
(96)
Saluda R
Saluda Old Town
Little Saluda
Clouds Cr
Hollow Cr
Little R
Mudlick Cr
Beaverdam Cr
Bush R
Enoree R
Tyger R
Fairforest Cr
Pacolet R
Broad R
Bullocks Cr
Turkey Cr
Sandy R
Duncans Cr
Indian Cr
Kings Cr
Beaver Cr
Wateree Cr
Cannons Cr
Crims Cr
Camping Cr
Bear Cr
Hollow-shed Cr
Little R
Broad R
Ceday Cr
Crane Cr
Allisons Cr
Catawba Town
Sugar Cr
Fishing Cr
Rocky Cr
Little Rocky Cr
Wateree Cr
Dutchmans Cr
Sawneys Cr
Beaver Cr
Wateree R
Camp Cr
Hanging Rock
Little Lynches R
Lynches R
Flat Cr
Buffalo Cr

area of Jones Griffen land

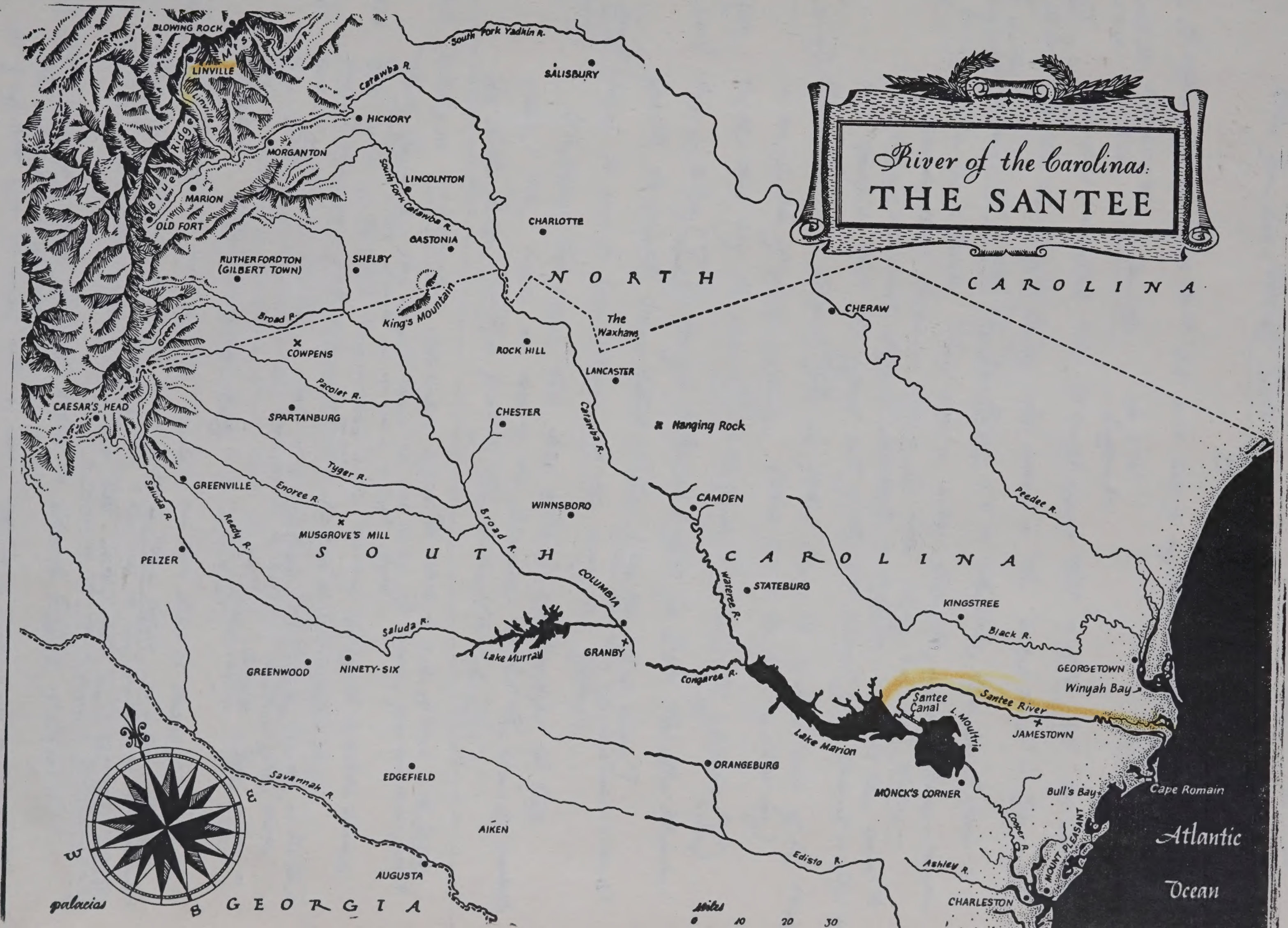
MAP 5

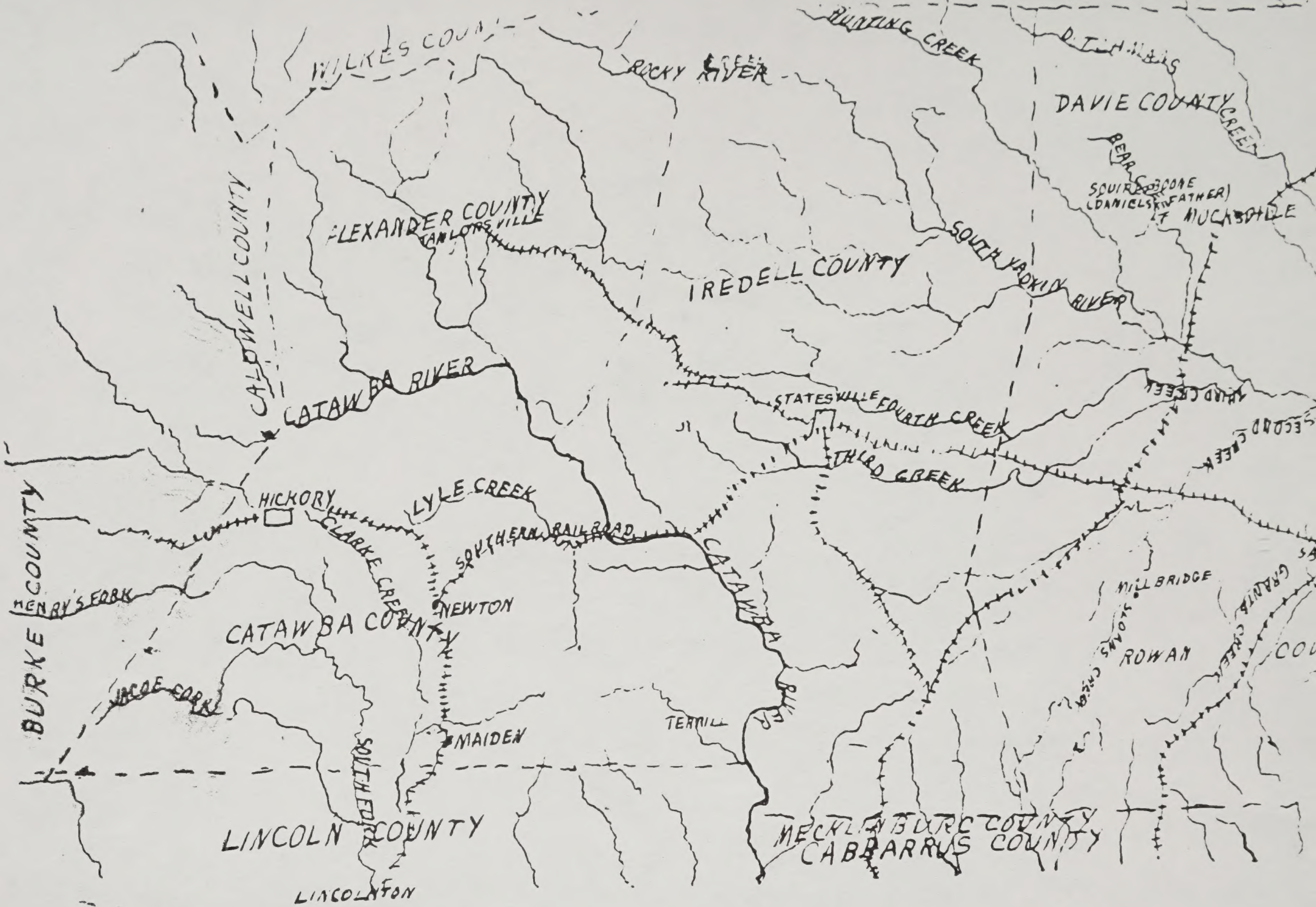
THE BACK COUNTRY

1759

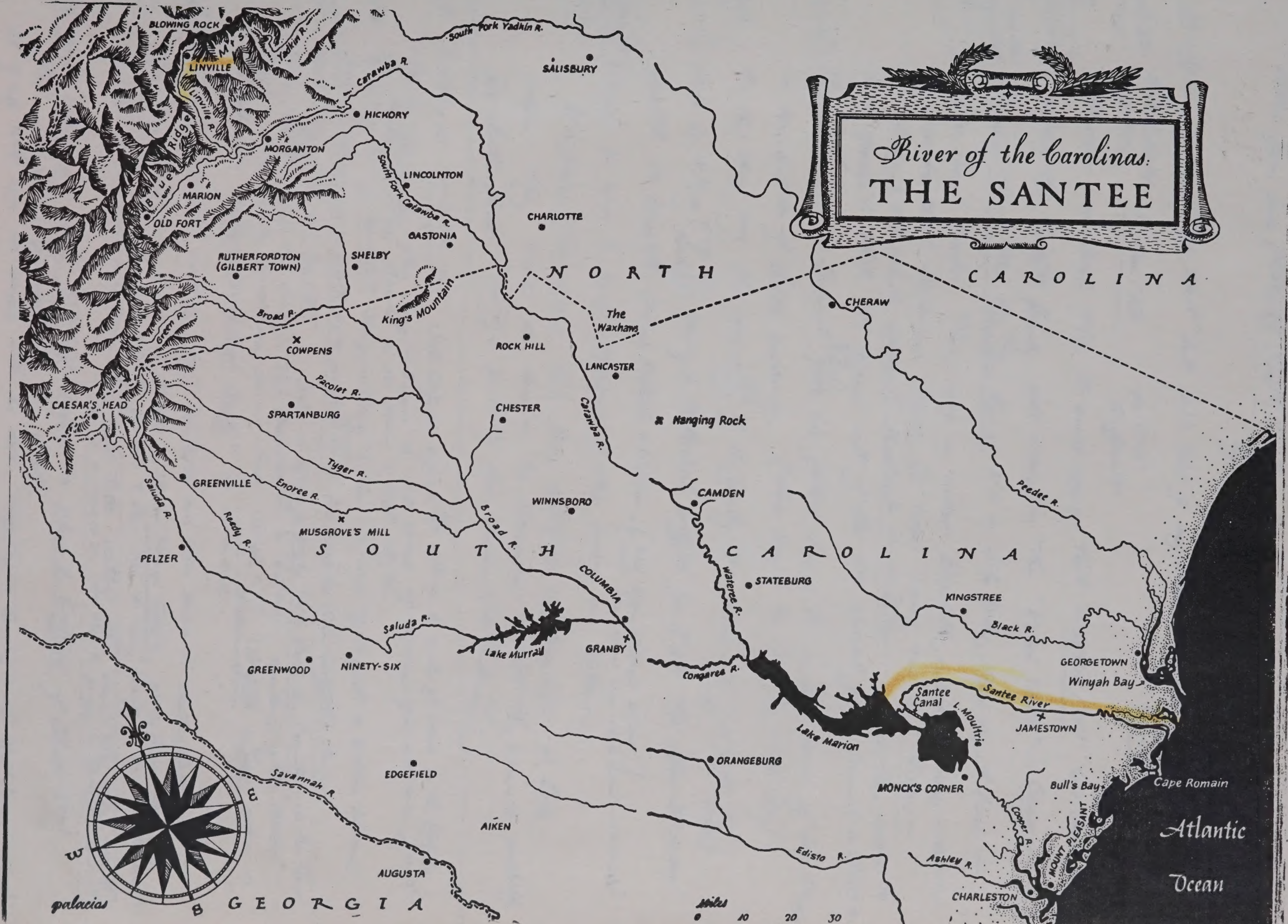

HUNTING CREEK
D. T. HILLIS
WILKES COUNTY
ROCKY CREEK
ROCKY RIVER
DAVIE COUNTY
CREEK
BEAR CREEK
SQUIRE BOONE
(DANIEL'S FATHER)
MOCKSVILLE
CALDWELL COUNTY
ALEXANDER COUNTY
TAYLORSVILLE
IREDELL COUNTY
SOUTH YADKIN RIVER
CATAWBA RIVER
STATESVILLE
FOURTH CREEK
THIRD CREEK
THIRD CREEK
SECOND CREEK
HICKORY
LYLE CREEK
SOUTHERN RAILROAD
CLARKE CREEK
BURKE COUNTY
HENRY'S FORK
NEWTON
CATAWBA COUNTY
CATAWBA RIVER
MILL BRIDGE
SLOANS CREEK
ROWAN
GRANITA CREEK
SAL
COU
JACOB FORK
SOUTH FORK
MAIDEN
TERRILL
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
CABBARRUS COUNTY
LINCOLN COUNTY
LINCOLNTON

Griffith


River of the Carolinas:
THE SANTEE
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
BLOWING ROCK
LINVILLE
Mts.
Yadkin R.
South Fork Yadkin R.
SALISBURY
Catawba R.
HICKORY
Linville R.
Blue Ridge
MORGANTON
LINCOLNTON
South Fork Catawba R.
MARION
OLD FORT
CHARLOTTE
GASTONIA
RUTHERFORDTON (GILBERT TOWN)
SHELBY
King's Mountain
Broad R.
Green R.
The Waxhaws
CHERAW
COWPENS
ROCK HILL
LANCASTER
Pacolet R.
CAESAR'S HEAD
SPARTANBURG
CHESTER
Catawba R.
Hanging Rock
Tyger R.
GREENVILLE
Enoree R.
Saluda R.
Reedy R.
MUSGROVE'S MILL
Broad R.
WINNSBORO
CAMDEN
Peedee R.
PELZER
COLUMBIA
Wateree R.
STATEBURG
KINGSTREE
Black R.
Saluda R.
Lake Murray
GRANBY
GREENWOOD
NINETY-SIX
Congaree R.
GEORGETOWN
Winyah Bay
Santee Canal
L. Moultrie
Santee River
JAMESTOWN
Lake Marion
ORANGEBURG
EDGEFIELD
MONCK'S CORNER
Bull's Bay
Cape Romain
Savannah R.
AIKEN
Cooper R.
MOUNT PLEASANT
Atlantic Ocean
Edisto R.
Ashley R.
AUGUSTA
CHARLESTON
Miles
0 10 20 30
E
W
palacios


WILKES COUN
HUNTING CREEK
ROCKY RIVER
D. T. HILLS
DAVIE COUNTY
CREEK
BEAR
SQUIRE BOONE
(DANIEL'S FATHER)
MOCKSVILLE
CALDWELL COUNTY
ALEXANDER COUNTY
TAYLORSVILLE
IREDELL COUNTY
SOUTH YADKIN RIVER
CATAWBA RIVER
STATESVILLE
FOURTH CREEK
THIRD CREEK
THIRD CREEK
SECOND CREEK
HICKORY
LYLE CREEK
SOUTHERN RAILROAD
CLARKE CREEK
NEWTON
CATAWBA COUNTY
BURKE COUNTY
HENRY'S FORK
JACOB FORK
SOUTH FORK
MAIDEN
TERRILL
CATAWBA RIVER
LINCOLN COUNTY
LINCOLNTON
MILL BRIDGE
ROWAN
GRANITE CREEK
SA
COU
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
CABARRUS COUNTY

Griffith



River of the Carolinas:
THE SANTEE

BLOWING ROCK
Blue Ridge Mts.
LINVILLE
Linville R.
Yadkin R.
South Fork Yadkin R.
SALISBURY
Catawba R.
HICKORY
MORGANTON
South Fork Catawba R.
LINCOLNTON
MARION
OLD FORT
CHARLOTTE
GASTONIA
RUTHERFORDTON
(GILBERT TOWN)
SHELBY
NORTH CAROLINA
King's Mountain
The Waxhaws
CHERAW
Broad R.
Green R.
COWPENS
ROCK HILL
LANCASTER
Pacolet R.
CAESAR'S HEAD
SPARTANBURG
CHESTER
Catawba R.
Hanging Rock
Tyger R.
GREENVILLE
Enoree R.
CAMDEN
Peedee R.
Saluda R.
Reedy R.
MUSGROVE'S MILL
WINNSBORO
Broad R.
SOUTH CAROLINA
PELZER
COLUMBIA
Wateree R.
STATEBURG
KINGSTREE
Black R.
Saluda R.
Lake Murray
GRANBY
GREENWOOD
NINETY-SIX
Congaree R.
GEORGETOWN
Winyah Bay
Santee Canal
L. Moultrie
Santee River
JAMESTOWN
Lake Marion
ORANGEBURG
EDGEFIELD
MONCK'S CORNER
Bull's Bay
Cape Romain
Savannah R.
E
W
B
AIKEN
Cooper R.
MOUNT PLEASANT
Atlantic Ocean
Edisto R.
Ashley R.
AUGUSTA
CHARLESTON
palacios
GEORGIA
Miles
0
10
20
30

(Re: Griffith)

Notes from book (4 Vol Set) South Carolina Deed Abstracts 1719-1772
by Langley
MPL - R929.3 L283

Nos ① + ② were in the "Welch Tract" but can't tell if any other connection.

Not likely related to ③ as I have other records on him in Orangeburg before 1747

Vol III
p. 257-8

Book C p 574 Lease 31 Dec 1760 - p 575 Feoffment

①

Worded in the book as though Elizabeth was the one who requested that this be recorded

Not sure I understand this. It would appear that on 28 Nov 1747 Gov James Glen granted the Griffith family 400 acres in The "Welch Tract" in Craven Co, SC bounding SW on the Pee Dee River, NW on John Hicks; NE on vacant land + SE on David Roach. There was a widow Elizabeth, relict of James — was she a grandmother? Because James Sr was living; he had 4 sons — Samuel the oldest, James Jr, Michael + William. Gov. Glen seems to have specified that 100 acres out of the 400 should go to Samuel as eldest son.

Samuel →

On 31 Dec 1760 Samuel (his x mark) gave his father James Sr a life lease of his 100 acres in consideration of £100 currency. (Where Samuel then lived they did not say.)

(also Michael, William + James x 2 or 3)

On the same day the remainder of the family (viz: James (his x mark) Elizabeth (her x mark) James Jr, + Mary (her x mark)) conveyed to Michael Griffith for £500 the other 300 acres granted to Elizabeth, James, Michael + William. [Was Mary William's widow?]
(was she James wife - which James? - or a dau?)

Looks like James Jr. was the only literate one in the family

James Sr was to have 100 acres of this during his lifetime.

Whatever the case, this does establish relationships + tell where they lived on coming to America + that they arrived ~~probably~~ by late fall (1747), + probably from Wales (or Delaware?)

Vol IV p 29

②

Book K-3 p 355 1+2 Aug 1765 John Griffith signed ~~at~~ as witness to sale of land in the Welch Tract, Craven Co, from Sampson Thomas to John Evans of 150 acres of a 400 acre grant to Thomas in 1743. Bounds on Mr James + Capt. Blyth.

John 1765

p 48 Book L-3 p 460 21 Fe 1767 Sampson Thomas sells 150 acres of his grant to William Edwards. Bounds SE on James, SW on Blyth, NE on vacant ~~land~~ marsh + "SE + NE" on (John) Griffith's land.

Vol IV p 167

③

Joseph

Book S-3 pp 392-7 25 Jan 1755 Sale in Orangeburgh TWP, Berkeley County, on Pon Pon River (note another name for the Edisto). This transaction is between members of the "Hutto" family + witnessed by purchasers son-in-law, Joseph (his x mark) Griffith. See notes in excerpts from "History of Orangeburgh County" in our records.

Vol IV p 279

④ Thomas

Book B-4 pp 335-341 7+8 Dec 1772 Charleston man sells land in Craven County to William Cooper of Craven C. Land is bound on SE by Thomas Griffith, SW by Thomas Farlass, other sides vacant. The land originally granted 7 Mar 1733 to Leay family. The Charleston man was the only heir of the Leay family.

I can't tell whether this was in the Welch Tract
This is a generation later than the people in ① + ② cases over.

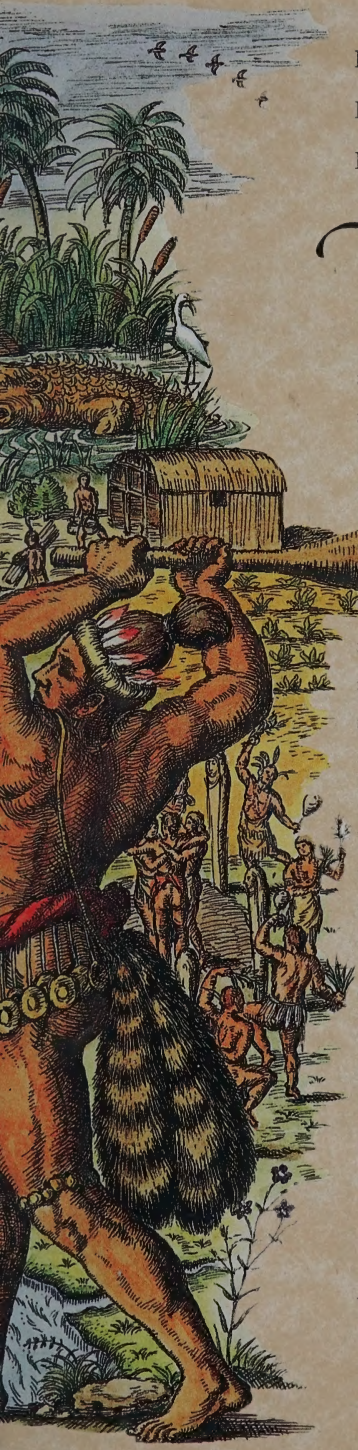
I did not copy pp 104-5 of Vol IV - Refers to Edward Griffith of Charleston who bought 4 plantations in 1769.

Edward of Charleston

As of Sept 1994, have not connected with the above. Save (esp re Samuel) in case the "Jonas" connection falls thru.

Possible Griffiths &

Much about our Richard Peeris



By JOSEPH JUDGE SENIOR ASSOCIATE EDITOR

Photographs by BILL BALLENBERG

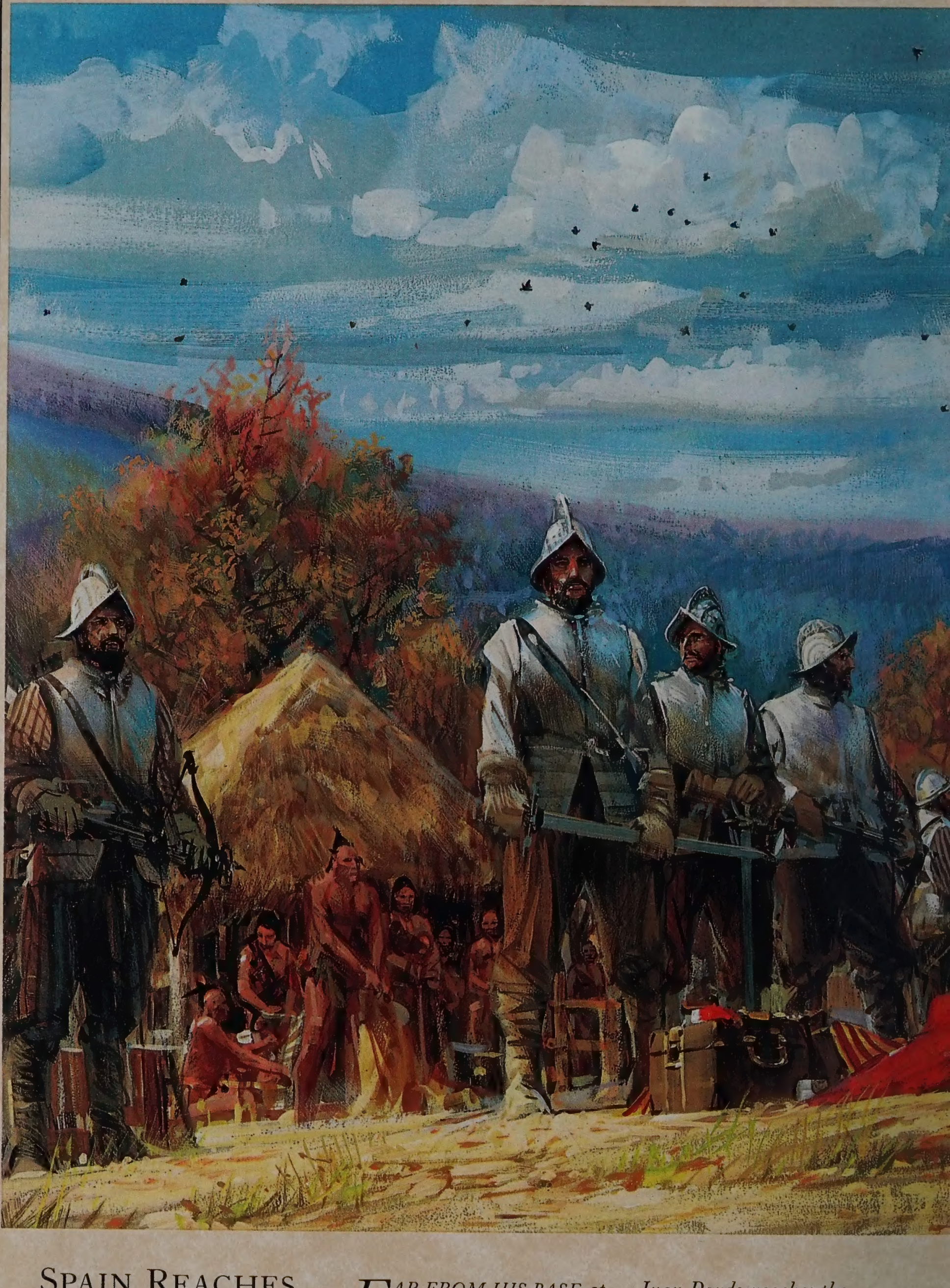
Paintings by JOHN BERKEY

Was ever a tale more writ in blood than this I am about to tell? Or more put away from memory . . . for little remains but bone and parchment. The ships have all melted into the seas, the villages are charcoal dust under field and forest, the men and women who fought and suffered and died have no tombstones.

Yet something may be learned from the telling. For this is not only the story of how a king and his people tried and failed to settle a wild new world. Nor only the story of nations at war—Spanish, French, English, Guale, Chisca, Orista. It is the story also of how knowledge is so hard won, how men and women of our own time, archaeologists and historians, piece together the past, tiny bit by fragment by sherd, until what is revealed to our wondering eyes is a portrait of ourselves.

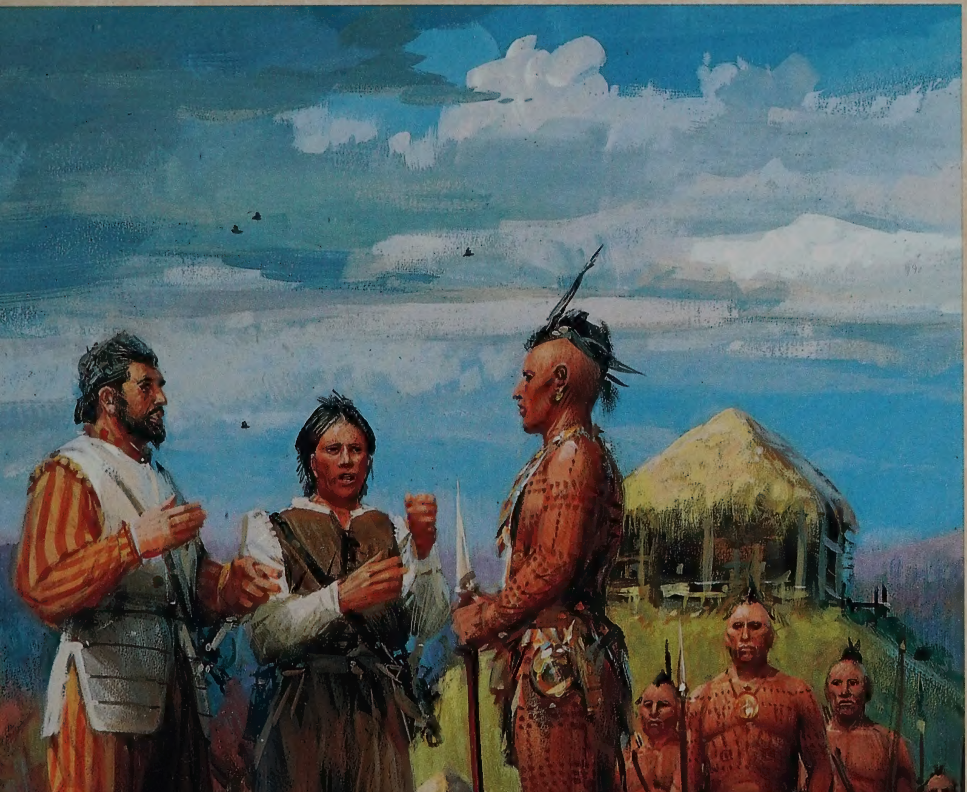
When this turbulent era in North America ended, the French flag flew over the north, the Spanish over the south, and the English over the lands between. Thus the wheel of history had made a great turn and paused. This is the story of that turning in what is now the eastern United States.

WAR CLUB AND SWORD clash in this cartouche by Kinuko Y. Craft, based in part on the art of Jacques Le Moyne de Morgues, the first important painter of North America.



SPAIN REACHES INLAND FOR EMPIRE

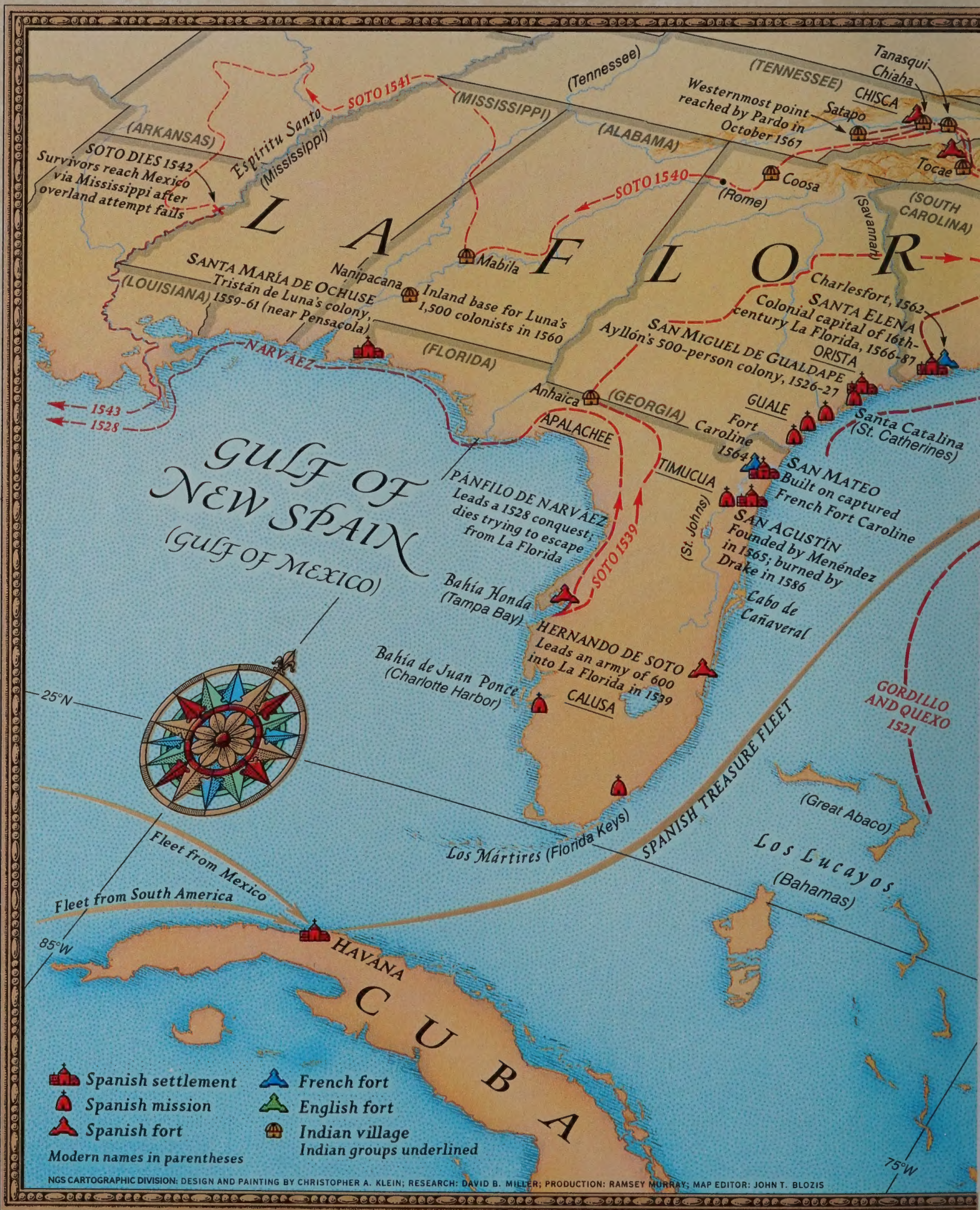
FAR FROM HIS BASE at the town of Santa Elena on the Atlantic coast of La Florida, Spanish captain Juan Pardo reaches the Tennessee Valley in 1567 and meets with the ancestors of the Creek and Cherokee.



From its first attempt at settlement in the future U. S. in 1526, Spain tried repeatedly to control the vast continent to the north of Mexico. Repulsing Indian attacks, French incursions, and English raids, explorers extended the Spanish sphere within the Southeast until English colonies drove them back to Florida.

The Fatal Lure of La Florida

ITS PENINSULA discovered by Juan Ponce de León in 1513, the land known as La Florida once covered the entire Southeast of the present-day United States. Voyages by Pedro de Quexo, Giovanni da Verrazano (for France), and Esteban Gómez in 1524 and 1525 completed the picture of the eastern North American


Tanasqui
Chiaha
CHISCA
Satapo
Tocae
Westernmost point reached by Pardo in October 1567
(TENNESSEE)
(Tennessee)
SOTO 1541
(MISSISSIPPI)
(ALABAMA)
(ARKANSAS)
Espíritu Santo (Mississippi)
SOTO DIES 1542
Survivors reach Mexico via Mississippi after overland attempt fails
LA FLOR
Coosa
SOTO 1540
(Rome)
(Savannah)
(SOUTH CAROLINA)
Mabila
Nanipacana
Inland base for Luna's 1,500 colonists in 1560
SANTA MARÍA DE OCHUSE
Tristán de Luna's colony, 1559-61 (near Pensacola)
(LOUISIANA)
Charlesfort, 1562
SANTA ELENA
Colonial capital of 16th-century La Florida, 1566-87
SAN MIGUEL DE GUALDAPE
Ayllón's 500-person colony, 1526-27
ORISTA
NARVÁEZ
(FLORIDA)
1543
1528
Anhaica
(GEORGIA)
APALACHEE
GUALE
Fort Caroline 1564
Santa Catalina (St. Catherines)
GULF OF NEW SPAIN
(GULF OF MEXICO)
TIMUCUA
SAN MATEO
Built on captured French Fort Caroline
PÁNFILO DE NARVÁEZ
Leads a 1528 conquest; dies trying to escape from La Florida
(St. Johns)
SAN AGUSTÍN
Founded by Menéndez in 1565; burned by Drake in 1586
SOTO 1539
Bahía Honda (Tampa Bay)
Cabo de Cañaveral
HERNANDO DE SOTO
Leads an army of 600 into La Florida in 1539
Bahía de Juan Ponce (Charlotte Harbor)
CALUSA
GORDILLO AND QUEXO 1521
25°N
SPANISH TREASURE FLEET
(Great Abaco)
Los Mártires (Florida Keys)
Los Lucayos (Bahamas)
Fleet from Mexico
Fleet from South America
85°W
HAVANA
CUBA
75°W
Spanish settlement
Spanish mission
Spanish fort
French fort
English fort
Indian village
Indian groups underlined
Modern names in parentheses

NGS CARTOGRAPHIC DIVISION: DESIGN AND PAINTING BY CHRISTOPHER A. KLEIN; RESEARCH: DAVID B. MILLER; PRODUCTION: RAMSEY MURRAY; MAP EDITOR: JOHN T. BLOZIS

coast. From Santo Domingo (inset map), a wealthy lawyer, Lucas Vásquez de Ayllón, led the first settlement attempt to the Carolina coast in 1526.

With his failure Spanish attention turned toward the Gulf of Mexico entrance to the great hinterland.

In 1528 Pánfilo de Narváez landed at Tampa Bay with 400 men. Eight years later four survivors appeared in Mexico, having walked thousands of miles.

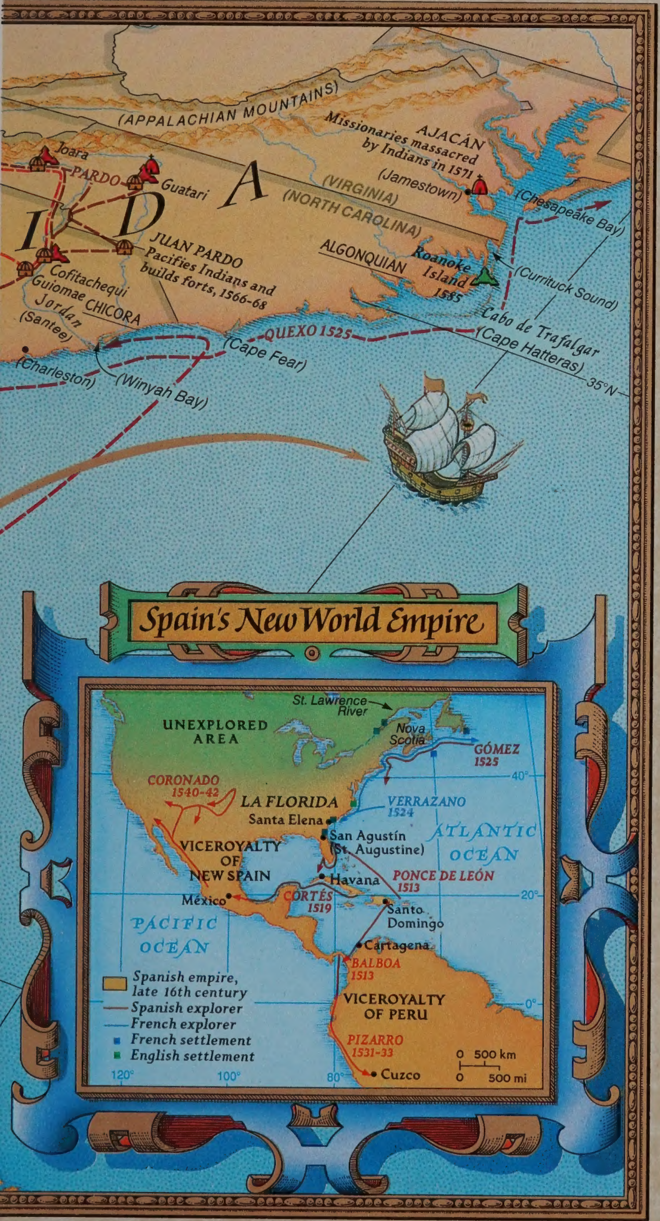
Tampa Bay was also the site of Hernando de Soto's landing in 1539 with 600 men in ten ships. He wandered for three years through the Southeast, discovering the Mississippi River, in which he was buried. Again, survivors made it to Mexico.

In 1559 Tristán de Luna y Arellano led 1,500 soldiers and settlers to Pensacola Bay, where a storm wrecked his fleet. Angel de Villafañe rescued survivors two years later.

As Spain grappled with the problems of La Florida, French Protestants established a foothold at Fort Caroline in 1564, intensifying a conflict that brought Pedro Menéndez de Avilés to La Florida. He obliterated the French and founded St. Augustine along with a town on modern Parris Island—Santa Elena—from which expeditions reached the Tennessee Valley and Chesapeake Bay.

Spanish Florida survived Indian risings, epidemics, and English attack until it was granted to Britain in 1763. It was returned to Spain 20 years later and became part of the U. S. in 1821.

Excavations at Santa Elena, St. Augustine, and St. Catherines Island, along with recent scholarly work on 16th-century documents in Spain, have shed light on this long-neglected epoch.


(APPALACHIAN MOUNTAINS)
Joara
PARDO
Guatari
A
I
D
AJACÁN
Missionaries massacred by Indians in 1571
(Jamestown)
(VIRGINIA)
(NORTH CAROLINA)
ALGONQUIAN
Roanoke Island 1585
(Chesapeake Bay)
(Currituck Sound)
JUAN PARDO
Pacifies Indians and builds forts, 1566-68
Cofitachequi
Guiomae
CHICORA
Jordan
(Santee)
QUEXO 1525
(Cape Fear)
Cabo de Trafalgar
(Cape Hatteras)
35°N
(Charleston)
(Winyah Bay)
Spain's New World Empire
St. Lawrence River
UNEXPLORED AREA
Nova Scotia
GÓMEZ 1525
40°
CORONADO 1540-42
LA FLORIDA
VERRAZANO 1524
Santa Elena
San Agustín (St. Augustine)
ATLANTIC OCEAN
VICEROYALTY OF NEW SPAIN
Havana
PONCE DE LEÓN 1513
México
CORTÉS 1519
20°
Santo Domingo
PACIFIC OCEAN
Cartagena
BALBOA 1513
VICEROYALTY OF PERU
0°
PIZARRO 1531-33
Cuzco
Spanish empire, late 16th century
Spanish explorer
French explorer
French settlement
English settlement
0 500 km
0 500 mi
120°
100°
80°

"COLUMBIA PLAIN. . . ."

That certain light of excitement brightened the face of archaeologist Stanley South as he extended a hand on which rested a small, gray piece of pottery.

". . . we are standing on Santa Elena."

Actually we were standing in the rough of the golf course at the Parris Island Marine Corps base in South Carolina. Beyond a tawny marsh, the waters of Port Royal Sound mirrored the morning sun—and the past, for that fragment of early Spanish ware confirmed what historians Eugene Lyon and Paul Hoffman had predicted: Santa Elena, the long-lost capital of the vast Spanish domain called La Florida, which had covered the whole of the eastern United States, lay beneath our feet. The site had once been excavated, in 1923 by a Marine officer who found a wooden palisade and took it to be from Charlesfort, a small bastion built by the first French to visit the Carolina coast in 1562. A handsome marble monument perpetuates the error.

"Stanley, just remember to replace your divot," I said, and we laughed. Soon after, on July 4, 1979, South did make divots in the course, 42 small test pits and trenches that turned up early Spanish pottery and mud plaster from houses and bit into the moat of a fort. It was the beginning of six seasons of digging under the course, which laid bare the bastions of two of the forts that had guarded the settlement at different times, a small plaza bordered by simple houses of thatch and daub, the remains of a vineyard—enough to evoke the hard life of the 400 colonists who once lived there, hoping for the best against Indian hostility, disease, and the forsaken feeling of living at the very margin of the European world.

The revelation of Santa Elena is but one of a number of recent discoveries that have greatly enlarged our knowledge of Spain's astonishing reach for conquest and settlement in eastern North America. It is a seldom told early chapter of American history.

It begins 467 summers ago, in 1521, just 29 years after the discovery of the New World by Columbus. From the colonial capital of Santo Domingo, in the modern Dominican Republic, two caravels were on the prowl for slaves.

Francisco Gordillo had been sent out by a wealthy lawyer named Lucas Vásquez de Ayllón. At Great Abaco in the northern Bahamas, Gordillo fell in with the caravel of a friend and fellow pilot, Pedro de Quexo, who worked for an official named Juan Ortiz de Matienzo. They joined forces and followed the Gulf Stream northward toward a mysterious "island of giants" that had been discovered five years earlier.

In mid-June they raised a coast that they named Land of John the Baptist, for it was near his feast day, and entered a river they called the Jordan. Nearby was an Indian village where they spent three weeks trading, took possession of the country in the names of their patrons, and took possession of 60 unwilling inhabitants. On the way home Gordillo's seaworn ship foundered; captives and crew crowded aboard Quexo's, and she limped home, the first European ship known to have visited the Carolina coast.

In Santo Domingo the Indians, who were especially large in stature, looked like good bargains but weren't; most died quickly. One who did not said the name of his land was Chicora. Ayllón dubbed him Francisco de Chicora and took him along when he sailed back

THE BLOOD of the adelantado, *or royal representative, of La Florida runs in Alvaro Armada, Count of Güemes (facing page), direct descendant of Pedro Menéndez, whose portrait—a copy of one by Titian—adorns the count's apartment in Madrid. While serving King Philip of Spain, Menéndez hoped to turn La Florida into a personal empire as Cortés had done in Mexico, but his dream was still unfulfilled when he died in 1574. Although Menéndez's capital of Santa Elena was abandoned and long forgotten, his St. Augustine has survived from its founding in 1565. The oldest continuously inhabited city in the United States remains proud of its Spanish heritage.*

to Spain to secure a claim to the newfound land. At the court they met the first historian of the New World, Peter Martyr, and what tales Francisco spun for the elderly scholar—of men with tails so thick that they had to dig a hole to sit down, and of a magic balm used by priests to stretch the bones of royal children. But the largest myth he left behind, which Martyr passed to gullible generations, was that of Chicora itself, a land like Andalucía, fertile and fruitful beyond measure.

After Ayllón returned to Santo Domingo with royal permit in hand, Matienzo served him with an angry lawsuit: Had not his caravel also discovered this land? Should he not also profit?

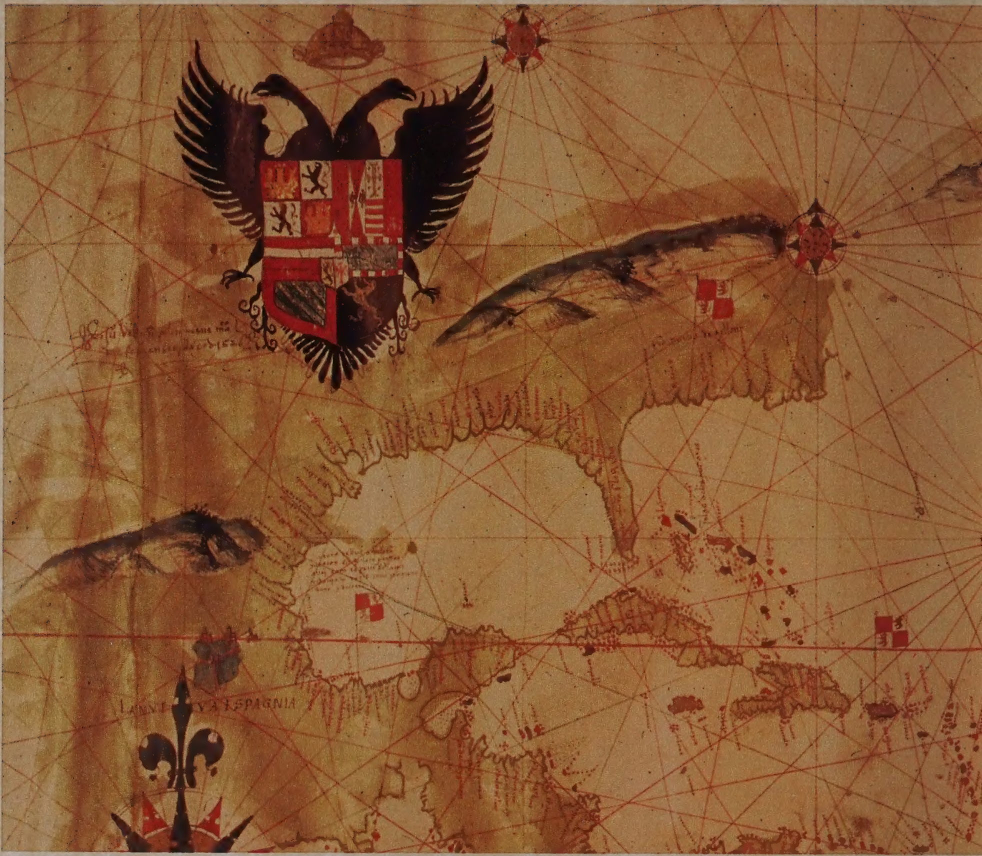
Even before lawyers began proceedings, Ayllón sent Quexo out in 1525 with two caravels to survey the vast and unknown land he intended to settle, where lay perhaps another golden Mexico, another silver Peru. Quexo sailed for months, seeing the surf break along 500 miles of beach, as far north as the great bay that he called Bay of the Mother of God—and we call Chesapeake. His voyage survives on the wonderful world map (following pages) painted by Juan Vespucci, Amerigo's nephew.

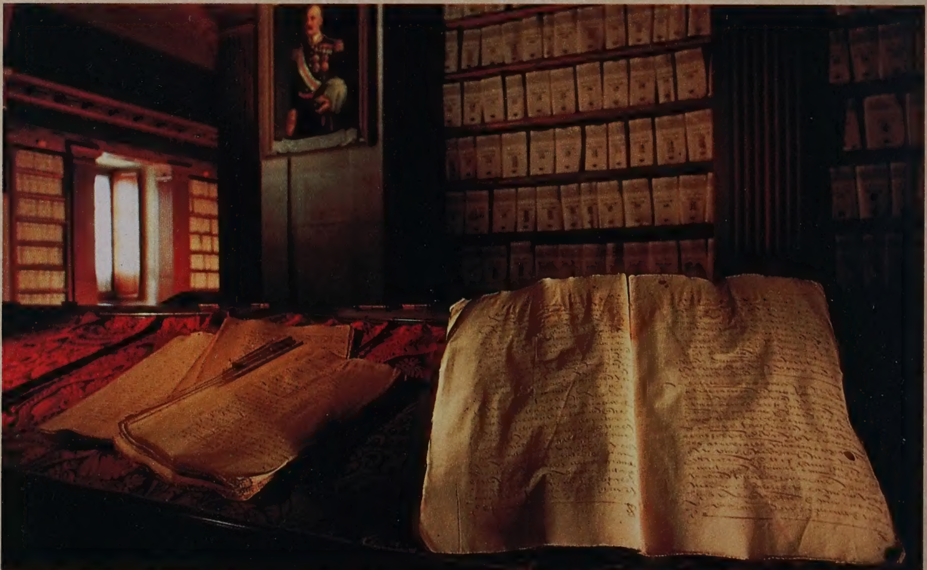
The court was still taking testimony against Ayllón in July 1526 when his fleet departed—six ships carrying some 500 souls—men, women, children, soldiers, priests, and the first black slaves to reach American shores.

At the shoal-guarded mouth of the River Jordan the flagship grounded and went down, along with most of the supplies. The smaller ships took off survivors and landed them on an inhospitable shore, where Francisco de Chicora breathed the air of home, dropped his civilized trappings like leaves, and vanished.

Ayllón decided to move down the coast for 150 miles, until he came to a likely place to build the first European settlement within the present United States; he called it San Miguel de Gualdape.

Autumn storms brought shivering and fever and Indian attack. Two hundred Spaniards were soon shoveled into graves. On October 18, 1526, Ayllón himself died. A mutiny followed. In a wild melee between factions, houses were fired, men murdered. In the dawn light, there was nothing for the survivors to do but abandon the colony.


LA NVE VA ESPAGNIA



Only 150 made it back home. Nothing remains except words on a map, repeated on maps of North America for the next 50 years, "land of ayllon."

Where was it, exactly? Where lie the bones of these first settlers on our shores? Historians reading historians have guessed at many places, as far north as Cape Fear, North Carolina, and as far south as the Savannah River—yet testimony taken in the Matienzo lawsuit against Ayllón gives us the answer.

Pilot Pedro de Quexo recalled that in 1521 he and Gordillo had drifted for eight or nine days north of Great Abaco before they were becalmed in 65 fathoms—below Cape Fear, North Carolina. They changed course to the southwest, and Quexo recalled a series of fathom readings—34, 19, 8—that still trace the grain of the continental shelf to within sight of the Santee River and Winyah Bay. The Jordan River is the Santee. There Ayllón's flagship went down in 1526.

The movement down the coast took them past the Savannah River mouth to Sapelo Sound, near St. Catherines Island. Paul Hoffman believes that the site of Gualdape lies somewhere there. Indian names apparently from the same root—Guale and Gualapini—have long identified that coast.

Nothing has ever been found of the settlement—not a bone, a potsherd, a nail. But they are there somewhere, among the fish camps and condominiums and palmetto woods, the Spanish dead of long ago who still sleep in the once cruel land of Ayllón—and historians and archaeologists are still searching.

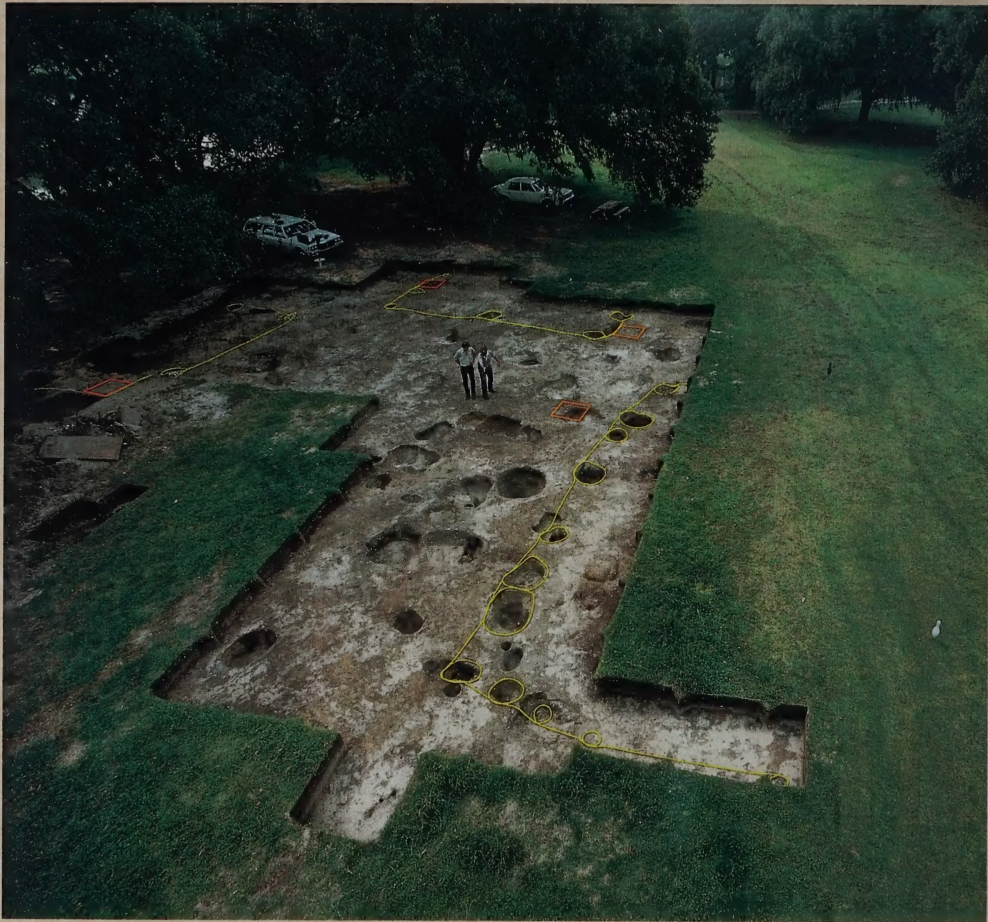
LA FLORIDA was now on the world map, stretching from Key West to the mouth of the St. Lawrence, from the Atlantic surf to the distant Pacific with, many believed, a passage somewhere between them. For the next generation La Florida would devour a succession of expeditions—Narváez, Hernando de Soto, Tristán de Luna, Villafañe—lured by mirages of wealth and a new life.

As a result King Philip II of Spain discouraged further attempts at conquering La Florida; he wanted no more of sand and swamps, fever and flames, wild animals and wilder men. But history had another plan. On May 1, 1562, a ship emerged from the ocean mist off the Florida coast near the St. Johns River. She flew not the red and gold colors of Spain but the royal blue of France. She was commanded by a famous Protestant sea dog, Jean Ribault, devoted not to Rome but to Luther and Calvin. La Florida

THE HISPANIC SOCIETY OF AMERICA, NEW YORK CITY

ACTS OF DISCOVERY live again in 16th-century documents. Juan Vespucci's 1526 map shows the "new land of ayllon" ending at Chesapeake Bay. To the north lies the "land of the codfish," Nova Scotia and Labrador. The lands between are unknown.

In Seville's Archive of the Indies, a treasury of 82 million manuscript pages, Juan Pardo's account seems written yesterday. A Spanish sword was uncovered near Rome, Georgia, where Soto explored in 1540.



A KING-SIZE DIVOT *taken from the Parris Island Marine base golf course revealed the town of Santa Elena, capital of Spanish Florida in the mid-16th century. The site is being excavated by archaeologist Stanley South (right), who passes a hose to assistant Michael Hartley in a Spanish well made of barrels.*

A silver coin and a bullet mold are among the objects found that evoke the life of the town, once home to more than 300 people living in 40 houses protected by a wooden fort. Life was hard. Disease and Indian attack were constant threats. Burned during an Indian rising and rebuilt, Santa Elena was finally abandoned in 1587 following an English attack on Spanish America, and the families were ordered to move to St. Augustine.

ALL BY DAVID L. BRILL

was about to become a bloody battleground in a European war waged in different names of God.

The St. Johns rises in central Florida and flows north to Jacksonville and the sea. On its right bank, ten miles east of the port city, stands Fort Caroline, one of the rare monuments in the United States to the horrific events of 400 years ago when Spain and France warred over North America.

Deep forces were moving in the world. Protestantism was spreading through northern Europe. Spain regarded the defense of Catholicism as a sacred mission. Both of these Christian beliefs were faced with a massive military challenge from Süleyman the Magnificent,* whose Islamic banners flew across the whole Mediterranean.

Men born into such a world knew no quarter. They died for uttering a word of treason or simply for believing what they believed. Kingdoms were divided. As Jean Ribault's ship left France, sent out to find a foothold in Spain's La Florida, his nation erupted in religious warfare.

BUT NOW the voyagers drank in the beauty of the land as they coasted northward, passing and naming nine rivers before entering Port Royal Sound, just beyond the point the Spanish called, since Ayllón's time, Santa Elena. There Ribault built a wooden fortification named Charlesfort, left a garrison of 30 men, and with his second in command, René de Laudonnière, sailed for home. They found their home port, Dieppe, under siege by a Catholic army; when it fell, Ribault fled to England.

Queen Elizabeth listened with interest to this fellow Protestant and enemy of Spain and offered to return him to La Florida in English ships. It became clear to him, however, that she intended to take La Florida for her own. Soon after, he was arrested trying to flee the country and was thrown into the Tower of London.

There he languished while his small command in the American wilderness, without another European for hundreds of miles, watched and waited. Isolation gave way to despair. The commander became homicidal. He hanged one man with his own hands and sentenced another, named Lachère, to slow starvation on a small island. His exasperated men mutinied, killed him, freed Lachère, and named Nicolas Barré to command. They made a pitiful boat out of pine, vines, and moss, and everyone climbed aboard except 17-year-old Guillaume Rouffi, who said he would take his chances with the Indians.

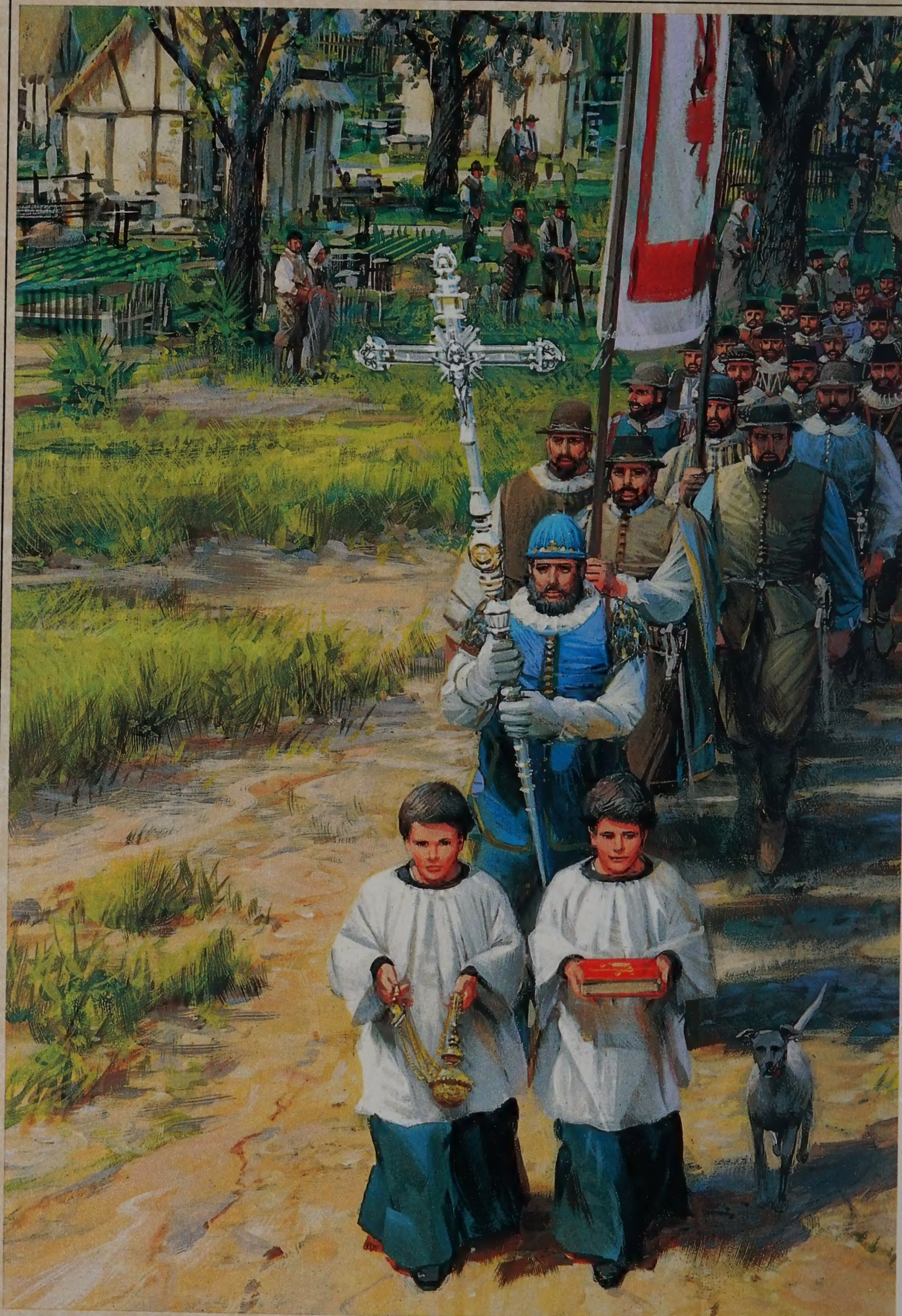
The overloaded bark sailed somehow into the open Atlantic, where it was becalmed for 21 days. The men ate their clothing, drank their own urine, then "made this motion that it was better that one man should die than that so many . . . should perish."

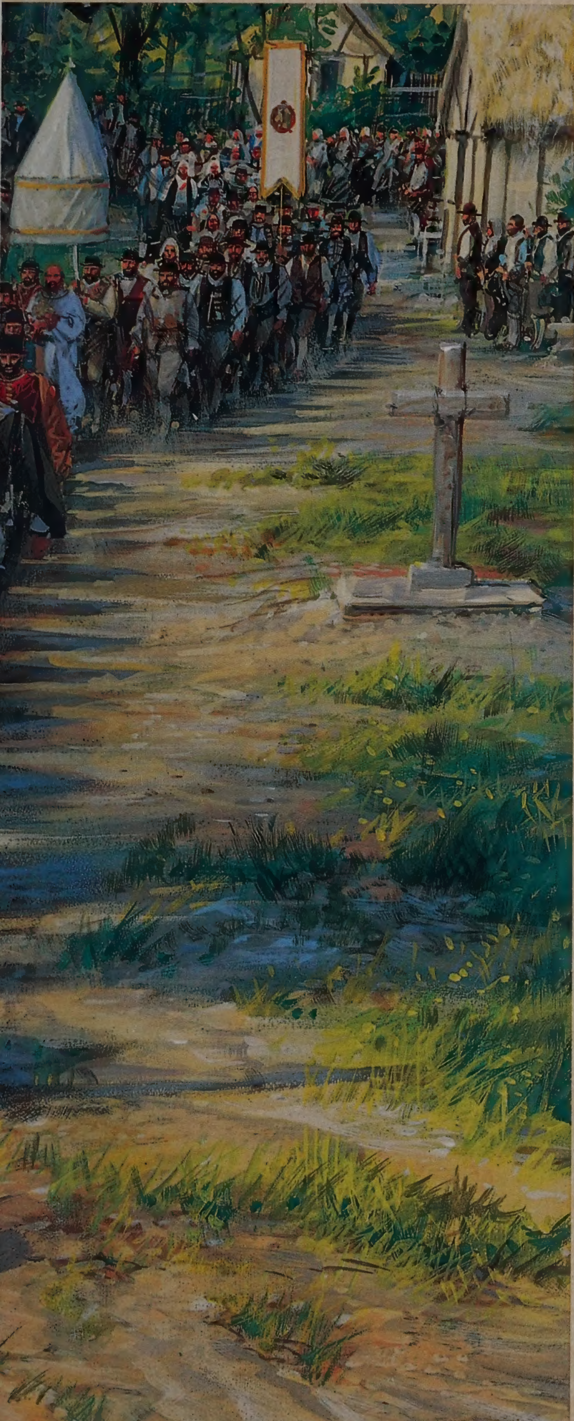
The man who drew the fatal lot was the twice-doomed Lachère, whose "flesh was divided equally among his fellows."

By the time the ship of horrors reached the coast of Europe, the men were too weak to land her, and she was picked up by an English patrol vessel. In August a recovered Nicolas Barré was interviewed by Elizabeth and clapped into the Tower. History is silent

---

*See "The World of Süleyman the Magnificent," by Merle Severy, in the November 1987 NATIONAL GEOGRAPHIC.





AN OLD FAITH IN A NEW WORLD

THOUGH OFTEN POOR and struggling in its 20-year history, Santa Elena knew moments of rustic splendor, as on feasts like Corpus Christi when the ruling class—friends and relations of founder Pedro Menéndez de Avilés—led townsfolk in procession to church. This crucifix (above) was uncovered at the site of Santa Elena.

DAVID L. BRILL

Two years before the town's founding, French Protestants in 1564 had quietly established a fort and colony on the St. Johns River in Spain's La Florida, provoking a bitter war between faiths and empires. No quarter was asked or given as Spanish forces under Menéndez drove out the French. He established Santa Elena to protect Spanish claims and serve as a base for exploration and settlement of the interior.

on whether he met Ribault there; if so, it must have been a classic moment of mutual astonishment.

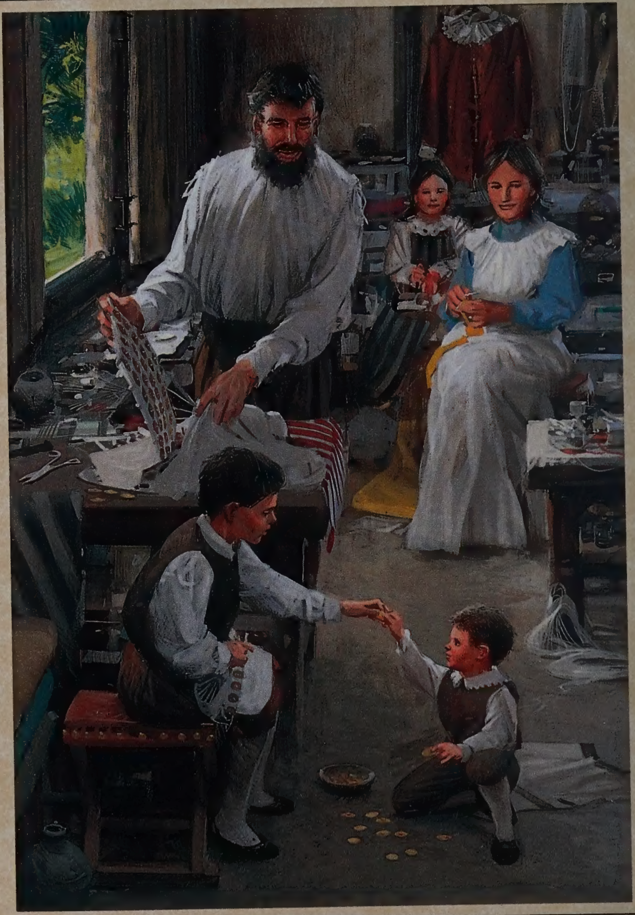
WHERE WAS CHARLESFORT? Stanley South proved that it was not under the golf course on Parris Island. But if not there, where?

Cartographic historian W. P. Cumming discovered a small hand-drawn map long stored in the Naval Museum in Madrid. He argues persuasively that it is a tracing by a Spanish spy of a map made by Barré, perhaps in England, and that it fixes the location of Charlesfort—somewhere under the concrete and railroad tracks of a shrimp dock not far from the bridge that carries State Highway 281 across Battery Creek near Port Royal, South Carolina.

When an interlude of peace came to France in 1563, René de Laudonnière, Ribault's old shipmate, led another French attempt on La Florida. Among the 300 men and four women aboard the three ships was the artist Jacques Le Moyne de Morgues, who made the first important paintings of North America.

ARTIFACTS TELL A TALE OF FRONTIER LIFE

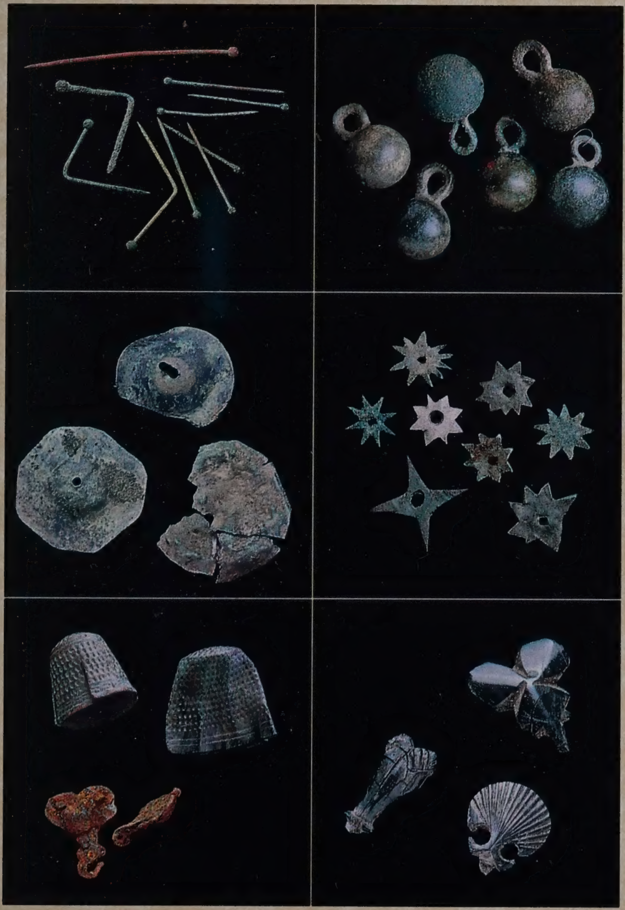
LITTLE THINGS mean a lot to archaeology, for portraits of daily life are built on them. Tailor Alonso de Olmos and his young family enjoy a moment of domestic tranquillity in Santa Elena, reconstructed by artist John Berkey from Stanley South's collection of artifacts that includes a buckle and (clockwise from top left, facing page) straight pins; ball



Coincidentally, Philip of Spain decided to move against Charlesfort, not knowing it had been abandoned. Thus, 20 days after Laudonnière sailed from Le Havre, Capt. Hernando Manrique de Rojas departed Havana in a lean fighting caravel with 25 men, bound for La Florida, blood in his eye.

On June 12, Carolina Indians brought to Rojas's ship that young Frenchman, Guillaume Rouffi, who guided him to Charlesfort, which was then burned. Rojas headed back to Havana, convinced he had removed all traces of the French. A few days later Laudonnière's little fleet slipped over the bar of the St. Johns River and went upstream to a bend where they built Fort Caroline.

At once they became embroiled in warfare between two Indian tribes, supporting first one side and then the other. The men began to lust after the gold and silver said to be found in the "Apalatcy Mountains." Winter brought scarcity and near starvation. The discontent turned against Laudonnière. When a plot to blow him up with a keg of powder was discovered, 13 of the rebels took a small boat and made for Cuba, where they seized a Spanish prize—and announced that the French had returned to La Florida.



buttons for pants and jackets; copper and silver stars that adorned clothing, harnesses, and saddles; decorative ornaments for clothing, including a figa, *or clenched hand of God holding the souls of the saved, believed to repel bullets; thimbles and hooks and eyes; and jack plates that armored jackets (Olmos is making one in the painting).*

Olmos's eldest son, Alonso, accompanied a Spanish mission to Chesapeake Bay, where he survived an Indian massacre only to be killed later near Santa Elena. The elder Alonso eventually moved to St. Augustine and became a merchant.

Historian Eugene Lyon has uncovered hundreds of documents in Spain that recount the life of Santa Elena, its citizens and their lawsuits, dress, food, shelter—and their once bright hopes and aspirations.

After a few weeks a second band of mutineers, 66 in all, took a larger ship and sailed toward the Antilles, where they intended to land on Christmas Eve and "enter into the Church while Mass was sayd after midnight, and to murder all those they found there."

As weeks dragged by at starving Fort Caroline, the sentries each day looked for the sails of a relief fleet from France, and finally sails did appear—a Spanish brigantine, sailed by the mutineers who had seized her. Only 26 were aboard; the others had been cornered and killed by a Spanish fleet.

If they expected mercy from Laudonnière, they misjudged their man. He shot the leaders and hung the bodies from gibbets.

At long last, in the sweltering heat of August, four ships were seen at the bar, but flying the English flag. It was John Hawkins, prowling for Spanish prizes and being led upriver by another rebel from Fort Caroline he had picked up in the Caribbean.

Hawkins and Laudonnière struck a deal—a ship for cannon and powder. Before he returned to sea, Hawkins threw 50 pairs of shoes into the bargain.

The French now had only to wait for a fair wind to take them home, but the wind was contrary for days, and it brought in yet another fleet of seven ships. On the flagship stood none other than Jean Ribault, escaped at last from England and its Tower and sent out by the French to succor their foothold in La Florida.

Philip of Spain was furious at word of this second French encroachment on his lands. He had already granted license to one of his most capable captains, Pedro Menéndez de Avilés, for a large settlement attempt in La Florida; now he ordered Menéndez to drive the French out "by what means you see fit."

MENÉNDEZ was a man of the sea who had escorted the treasure fleet home from the Indies. He had just built a big ship, the *San Pelayo,* named for the knight who had first turned the tide against the Moors 850 years before. *San Pelayo* at the head, 18 ships with 1,504 soldiers and settlers started across the Atlantic. They were scattered by a hurricane. Menéndez pushed on with five ships and 600 people—including 26 women.

Thus it fell out that on the day Jean Ribault dropped anchor off the St. Johns, Menéndez made landfall at Cape Canaveral and turned north. The French ships were still riding at anchor offshore on the afternoon of September 4 when Menéndez's sails split the horizon to the south, bearing down.

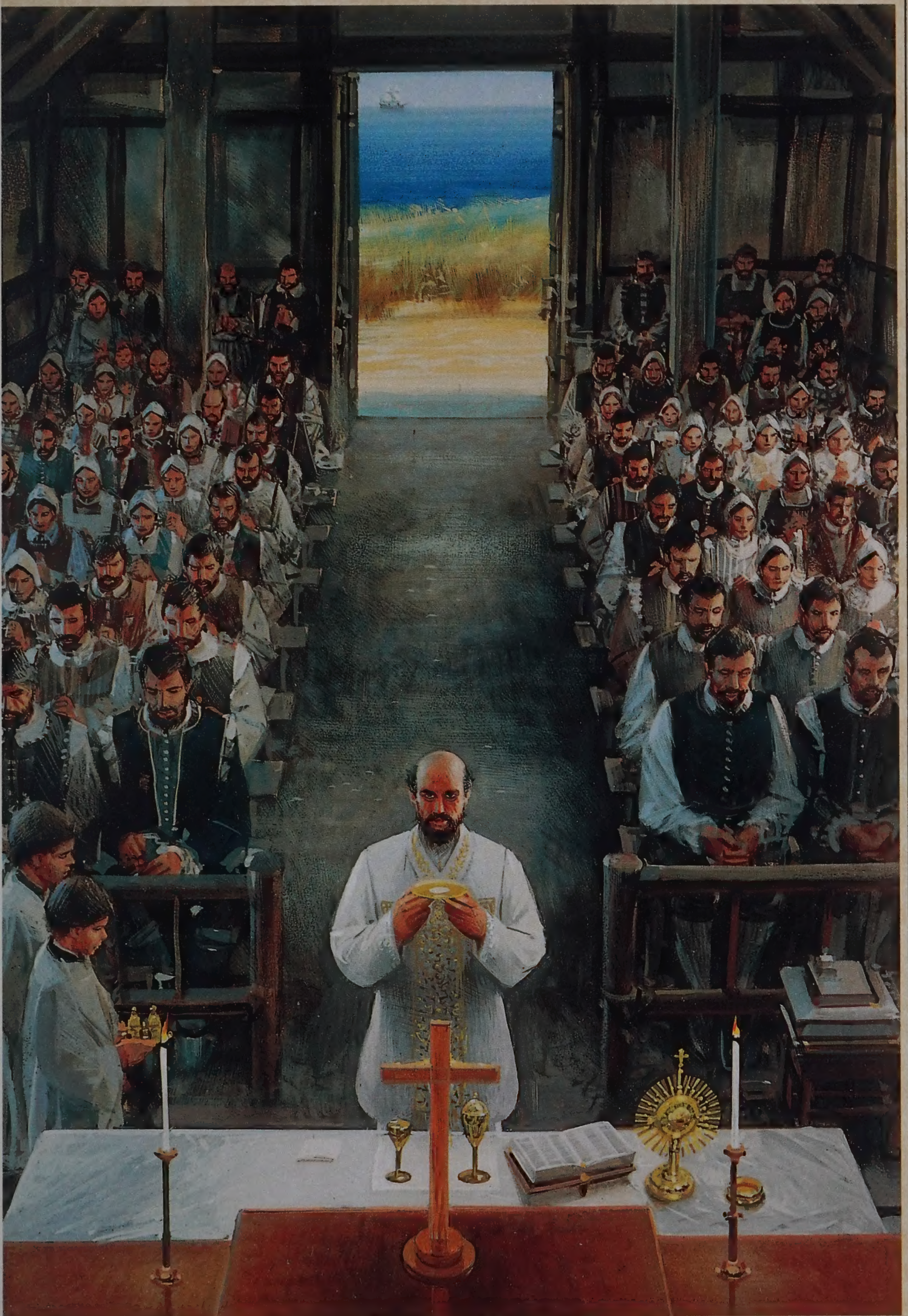
The wind died, night fell, the Spanish glided in among the French. Men cursed and taunted in the dark. When the Spanish attempted to board, the French cut their cables and ran to sea.

Next day Menéndez dropped down the coast to a small inlet that gave access to a harbor. He landed a party that threw up a fortification around the council house of a local Indian chief. On September 8, 1565, Menéndez came ashore "with many banners spread, to the sounds of trumpets and salutes of artillery" and called the place St. Augustine. Thus it has remained the oldest permanently inhabited city in the United States.

Archaeologist Kathleen Deagan has been patiently digging in the backyards of St. Augustine for 15 years. In 1985, not long after the publication of her study of the ancient Creole community of our

"I Think I See Aid From Heaven. . . ."

SO SAID the Jesuit father Gonzalo del Alamo as he preached at Christmastide to the starving community of Santa Elena gathered in the church in 1569. The small and infertile fields were inadequate to feed the 327 souls who had descended on the hamlet; families survived by gathering oysters and eating roots. During the church service Father Gonzalo said that God would soon come to the rescue, and that in his vision he saw a ship crossing the bar. Soon after, the first bell rang out with news of a relief ship. In time the colonists, like their Indian neighbors, relied on corn, melons, and squash rather than barley and wheat to sustain them.



THE WORD of a Christian God came to a people already familiar with divinity. Throughout the area of Spanish interest, between the Tennessee River and the Gulf, a unified mythology held sway. Its symbols are shown on conch-shell carvings (facing page) sharing motifs with Mexico and Central America. The rites of southern tribes involved ritual sacrifice and sacramental meals.

Mundane objects were not without their adornment. This pot, which was probably used for cooking, is shaped like a moccasin.

oldest city, she found Menéndez's fort, or what was left of it. Surprisingly it was in a still open field overlooking the harbor behind a tourist attraction called Fountain of Youth Park.

When I visited, Dr. Deagan was knee-deep in mud, supervising the installation of pumps to keep water out of the excavation. She had a bit of a well and a piece of a palisade and a few bits of pottery, enough to evoke the events—*San Pelayo* being frantically unloaded and sent off to summon the rest of the scattered forces, the troops landing and sizing up this shore of sand and palmettos.

Ribault's ships had regrouped at Fort Caroline. A council of war was held in Laudonnière's quarters as he lay ill in bed. Ribault determined to attack Menéndez before he could further strengthen St. Augustine; he started south with 12 ships and 600 men. They noted at once that the big warship was missing from the Spanish flotilla and started in pursuit, a fatal mistake as the wind veered sharply north and a huge storm bore down on Florida.

Menéndez realized that the French ships could not return to Fort Caroline; he ordered 500 harquebusiers to march and led them into the storm. It took three days to cover 45 miles. It was still raining furiously at dawn on September 20 when Menéndez pointed them toward the unguarded fort with the cry: *"Santiago!"*

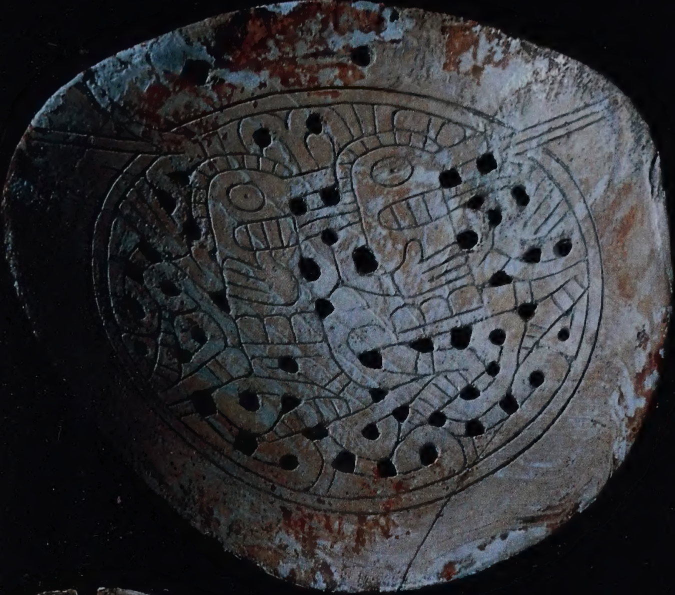
"They vied with one another to see who could best cut the throats of our people," said a survivor. In an hour 132 French corpses littered the ground. In all, 45 people escaped, including Laudonnière and the artist Le Moyne. They made their way through the dark, steaming woods to two small ships that Ribault had left behind and set sail for France; for them the war was over.

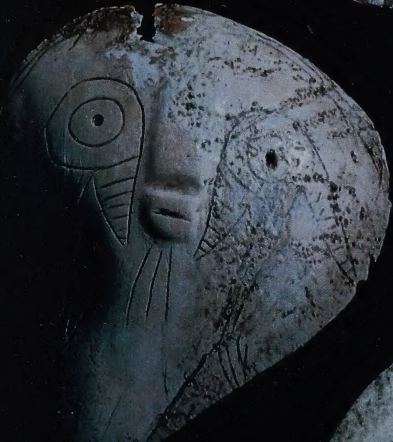
Ribault's fleet was smashed by the storm and driven ashore near Cape Canaveral. Even as Menéndez renamed Fort Caroline, calling it Fort San Mateo, and marched back to St. Augustine, the dazed French survivors were struggling northward along the Florida beaches in search of the St. Johns.

Eighteen miles south of St. Augustine the brackish waters of the river that flows past the city bend eastward and meet the Atlantic surf at a lovely inlet with an ominous name—Matanzas, the "slaughters." Here, at dawn on September 29, 1565, Menéndez and his soldiers met 200 French survivors walking north.

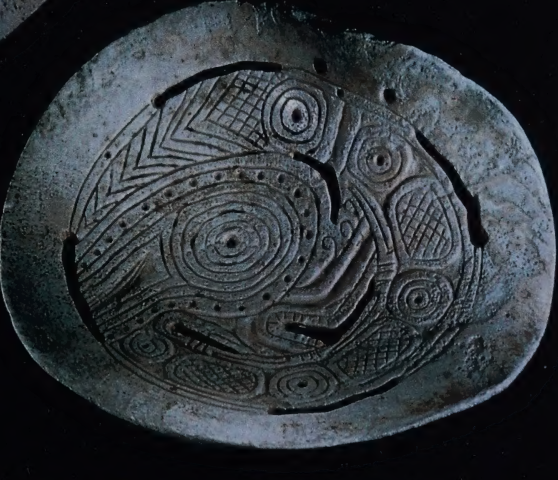
The French had no way to cross the river. They agreed to surrender without terms. Menéndez ferried them over in groups of ten, tied their hands, marched them behind a dune, and put them to the knife. Only a dozen who professed to be Catholic were spared.

Ribault's turn came on October 11, at the same place and in the same way as he led a larger group up the beach. He was brought





A shell gorget engraved in the "spaghetti" style with two dancers was found during excavation for Tennessee's Chickamauga Reservoir. The rattlesnake gorget, in the Citico style, was probably an emblem of status.

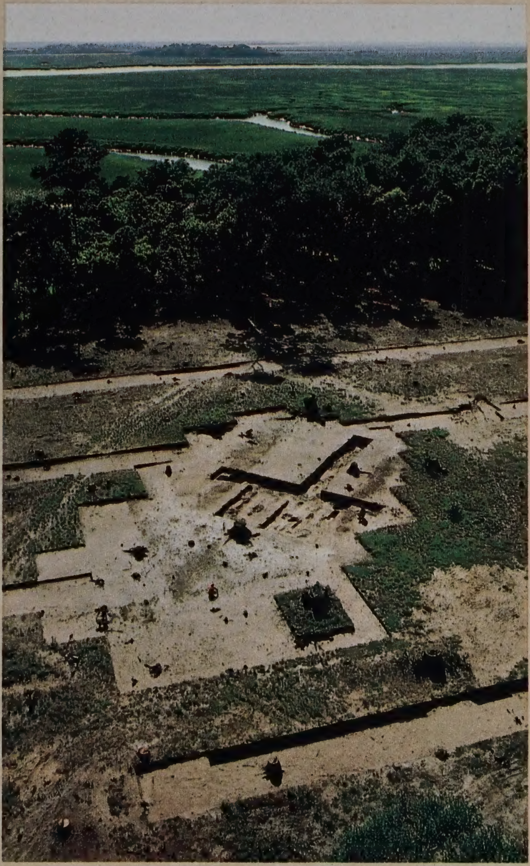


A "weeping eye" gorget (above) shows the eye markings of a peregrine falcon. Images of falcon men, or falcon spirits, appear frequently in Southeast Indian art.

over the river to speak to Menéndez, and the great antagonists faced each other directly. It was said that Ribault offered a large ransom for his life, but he died like the rest, on a dagger and a spike.

When Philip of Spain read Menéndez's report of such complete victory in La Florida, he wrote a cramped little note in the margin: "As to those he killed, he has done well." The furious French ambassador reported to Paris: "This court were more gladdened than if it had been a victory over the Turks."

EARLY IN 1566 Menéndez led a small fleet northward from St. Augustine along the Florida, Georgia, and Carolina coasts, meeting and entreating the tribes in the towns of Guale and Orista. He entered Port Royal Sound, the same magnificent harbor that had earlier attracted the French as the site for Charlesfort. On Parris Island he built a fort, the first of four that would stand there, and the first structure of Santa Elena, the little capital of his vast domain.



In July a troop of 250 men under Capt. Juan Pardo arrived from Spain and built a more substantial fort and a number of houses—small thatch-roofed domiciles with walls of daub, a kind of mud plaster. Having planted his second La Florida community, Menéndez looked to the interior. He thought it possible to trek from Santa Elena to New Spain (Mexico) and find rich mines along the way. On St. Andrew's Day, November 30, he ordered Juan Pardo and 120 soldiers westward to find out. With Pardo as guide and interpreter was the young man once named Guillaume Rouffi but now called in Spanish Guillermo Rufín.

Pardo's own account of his exploration reads like a duty roster, a laconic account of Indian place-names. He stopped at a large settlement named Cofitachequi and went on to the foothills of the Appalachians where, at a riverine town named Joara, he built a fort and left behind a company under Sgt. Hernando Moyano de Morales. He then turned east again, to Guatari, where 30 chiefs met him, and a note from Santa Elena with "news of the French" reached him. Before heading for home, Pardo stationed four soldiers and his chaplain, Sebastian Montero, at Guatari—the first successful Christian mission in the present United States.

REQUIEM PRAYERS 300 years after death were said on St. Catherines Island by Bishop Raymond Lessard of Savannah (above left) for the 430 individuals found in the mission church. A face sculpted of daub (left) adorned a wall—perhaps the image of a Guale Indian.

In the 1600s the settlement, overlooking Georgia's Sapelo Sound (above), was Spain's northernmost outpost until destroyed by English-led Yamassee Indians in 1680.

THE CROSSING of cultures at St. Catherines was ruled by religion. Glass cruets (above) held altar wine and water. Hawkbells and glass ornaments (below) and a cotton sash woven with copper thread added touches of color to the mundane rural mission life.

A fragment of mission bell, one of the objects conserved at the American Museum of Natural History by Nancy Demytteneare (above right), recalls an Indian rising in 1597 that killed five priests.

DURING THAT SPRING of 1567 a letter from Sergeant Moyano in the faraway foothills reached Santa Elena. He was up to his neck in Indian trouble. No sooner had Pardo left Joara than Moyano became embroiled in an exchange of insults with a chief of the Chisca, a tribe on the other side of the mountains. The chief threatened to eat not only Moyano but his dog as well.

Moyano took the offensive. Crossing the mountains, he found the Chisca in a fortified village. The Spanish rushed the entrance. Moyano was wounded but with his men forced the palisade, the defenders spilling away to the protection of their houses. Moyano fired the buildings; flames and smoke rose into the valley sky, a death pall for more than a thousand Indians.

After the fight Moyano took his company down a valley, that of the Nolichucky River, to Chiaha, where 3,000 warriors greeted him in peace, and onward to the village of the "main chief," where he built a fort and settled down to wait—for whatever a man waits for deep in an unknown land.

While Moyano was thus engaged on the frontier, Menéndez at Santa Elena listened to Pardo's report of where he had been the previous winter. It was not the easy road to Mexico, but it was a broad and fertile land worthy of conquest. On September 1, 1567, Pardo was again on the march, and this time we have a clearer idea where he went.

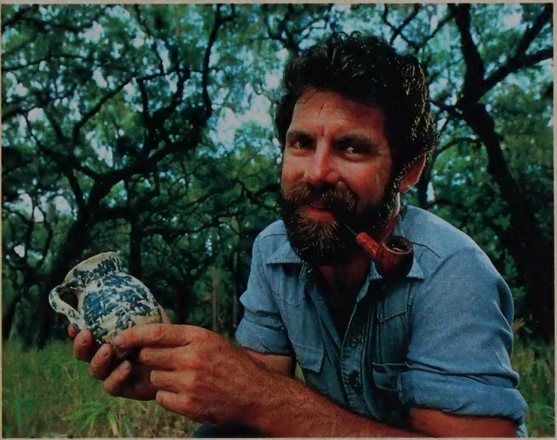
For years historians have noted that many of the places visited by Pardo have the same or similar names as places visited by Hernando de Soto during his long trek through the Southeast. Soto's route, despite the best efforts of scholarship and a presidential commission, has never been known with certainty. Thus, fixing the Pardo route might unlock one of the oldest mysteries of our early history.

About 1945 historian Herbert Ketcham, during "a fortunate bit of browsing" in the North Carolina State Archives, came upon copies of a 900-page narrative of Pardo's second expedition, written at Santa Elena in April 1569 by the notary Juan de la Bandera. In 1963 Michael Gannon came across Ketcham's translation while searching for the site of Father Montero's mission at Guatari, and in 1979 Gannon's study directed others to the Bandera document—Charles Hudson and his students Chester DePratter and Marvin Smith at the University of Georgia. Paul Hoffman rendered a new translation, and Hudson began to unlock, through the now clarified Pardo route, the old mystery of the Soto track.

From Santa Elena and Port Royal Sound, Pardo traveled west and north to the village named Guiomae, at the juncture of the Congaree and Wateree Rivers. Here he picked up Soto's route, a well-trod trail leading up the Wateree to the town of Cofitachequi.

What remains of the town today is an assemblage of mounds on

"THE BEGINNING of the end for the Spanish in the Southeast," is how archaeologist David Hurst Thomas (below, with a jug of Spanish majolica ware) characterizes the mission's fall. He located the long-sought St.



Catherines site using ground-penetrating radar and other electronic tools. Six digging seasons have yielded a full picture of the settlement, founded by 1587, filling a gap in the history of the Southeast, where more than 50 Franciscan missions once gathered souls.

the riverbank outside Camden, South Carolina, an aristocratic little city with deep memories of the Confederacy and the Revolution. From here the trail follows the river to Charlotte, North Carolina, where the Wateree, now drowned by dams, assumes a new name, Catawba, and bends west toward the mountains. Somewhere along its banks was Joara (a town Soto had called Xuala). Charles Hudson places it near Marion, North Carolina, probably in the fertile floodplain called locally the McDowell Bottom.

PARDO REACHED JOARA on September 24, then pushed on to Tocae, near present Asheville, and crossed the Great Smoky Mountains by walking the margin of the French Broad River. By October 6 he had reached Tanasqui, on a fertile black bottom near Newport, Tennessee. And the following day he met at length the patient Sergeant Moyano, waiting for him at Chiaha.

"Chiaha was on Zimmerman's Island," archaeologist Richard Polhemus told me. "It's 70 feet under Lake Douglas because of a TVA dam." In the spring of 1985 Polhemus surveyed a site where the Pigeon River joins the French Broad and found traces of a town plaza and palisade that he believes was Tanasqui.

"From there," Polhemus continued, "Pardo mentions going through rugged country near a place called Chalahume and on to a town named Satapo. A friendly Indian slipped him the word that a huge army was waiting to ambush him, so he chose the better part of valor and turned around, returning to Chiaha by what he called 'a better way.' "

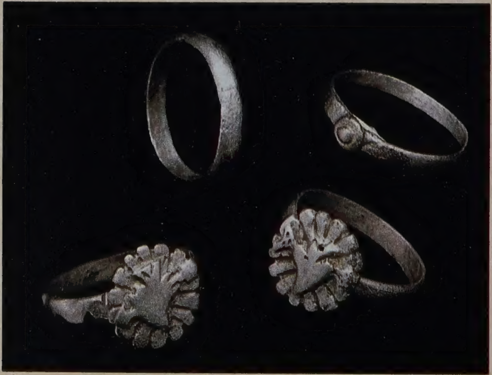
Those place-names, Chalahume and Satapo, proved keys to unlocking the Pardo path, for they are Muskogean words, the language of the historic Creek and other southern tribes. The Cherokee pronunciation of these foreign words survives in the modern names of Chilhowee Mountain and Citico Creek, both near Knoxville.

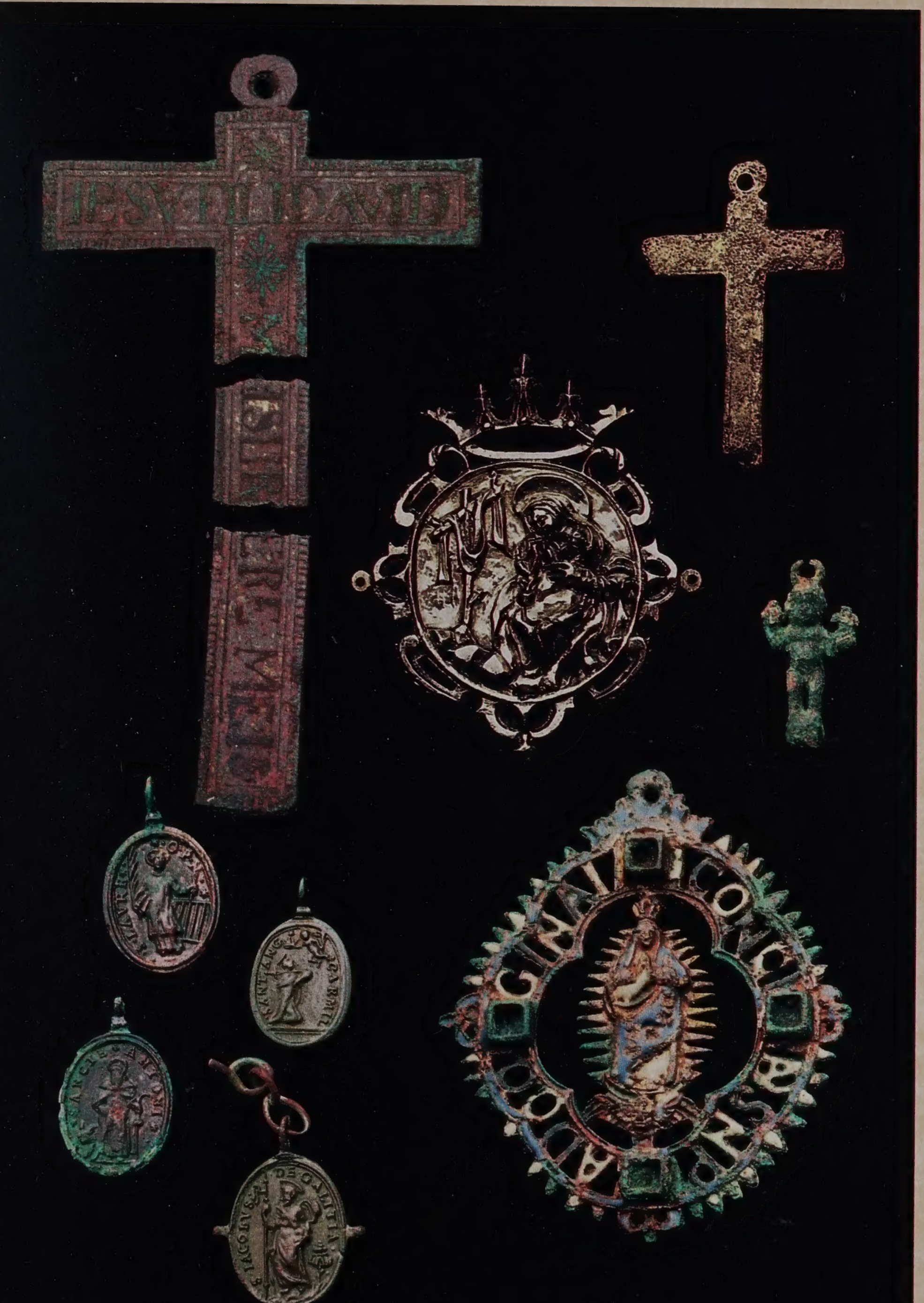
"It all fell into place," says Charles Hudson. "Pardo came down the east side of Chilhowee Mountain and at Citico Creek turned back along the Great Indian Warpath. The peoples living in the region were decimated by European disease, and in the 17th century they moved south to become Creek and the Overhill Cherokee moved in."

On his way home Pardo drove in a series of manned forts like fence posts across the Southeast from Tennessee to South Carolina, and on March 2, 1568, he reached Santa Elena, bringing sacks filled with sorely needed corn and tales of the wild west.

Pardo described the interior as "good for bread and wine and all kinds of livestock." That hope soon brought settlers to Santa Elena. Two caravels unloaded 193 immigrants, farmers and their families, who formed a town government and elected a *cabildo,* or town council. By October 1569 the little capital numbered 327 souls. Around the fort clustered 40 houses, some very crowded, like that of merchant, tailor, and tavern keeper Alonso de Olmos, who

EMBLEMS of their adopted faith—crosses and medals bearing images of saints and the Virgin—were buried with Indian converts at St. Catherines mission. Even personal jewelry like silver finger rings (below) displayed religious symbols such as a Sacred Heart of Jesus. The Roman Catholic Church has begun an inquiry into the lives of the five priests slain in the rebellion of 1597, anticipating that they might someday qualify for sainthood.




IESV FILI DAVID
MISERERE MEI
SANT ANG CARMEL
S IACOBVS A DE GALITIA

lived with his wife, mother-in-law, and six children. Juan de la Rosa, a social cut above Alonso, lived with his wife, three children, a nephew, and three servants.

Jesuit missionaries arrived and spread out into the country to teach the faith to the Indians, but it did not go well. The Indians "made sport of what I said," reported one priest. They kept asking questions "of a low order" such as "Does God have a wife?"

SYMBOL of vanished empire, the headboard from the coffin of Pedro Menéndez—adorned with his coat of arms—was a gift from Spain, where Menéndez is buried, to the city of St. Augustine. Historian Michael Gannon raised funds to erect the cross, a feature of the city's skyline since 1965; it marks the place where Menéndez landed 400 years earlier.

Bad times came when food ran short. Only the dramatic arrival of a relief ship saved the colony from starvation (painting, page 347). When hungry soldiers were quartered on the Orista, a policy that could end only in hostility, the Jesuits withdrew.

In 1571 Menéndez again shored up Santa Elena, arriving with his wife and a new governor. They brought symbols of permanence—canopied beds, a pewter table service for 36, carpets, saddles—and probably typhus, which struck the settlement.

Again Santa Elena survived and even flourished. The upper class, friends and relatives of Menéndez, dressed finely for Mass in a church humble of design but boasting an embossed leather altar canopy. In the processions on feast days, they were followed by a mix of craftsmen—a mason, a tailor, a barber, a carpenter who built both kitchen tables and gun carriages, a notary, and a smith.

The farmers had learned that corn, melons, and squash grew well. Sarsaparilla root, cedar, and oak were shipped out to Spain, and town officials hoped to prosper in a business that would come to shape North American history—trading in furs.

THE COLONY had long dreamed of more distant and more fertile lands. One of the most tempting surrounded the Bay of the Mother of God at the top edge of the maps, where might be found a passage to the Pacific. The Spanish had an entrée into that land—the son of an Indian chief picked up in 1561. Taken to Spain and later to Mexico, he became known as Don Luis de Velasco after the Viceroy of New Spain.

The king had ordered Don Luis returned home, where he could act as an interpreter and set a good example for a mission. So it was that a small band of Jesuits gathered in Santa Elena in 1570, bound with Don Luis for the land far to the north he called Ajacán.

The story of their journey has been assembled from Jesuit archives in Rome by historians Clifford Lewis and Albert Loomie.

The Jesuit leader, Juan Bautista de Segura, was a saintly man, set in his resolve to "live with his little community where there would be no white men to give bad example. . . ." The younger brothers tried to talk him out of going. One noted: "I did not like the looks of that Indian, Don Luis."

Nonetheless they embarked, taking with them Alonso de Olmos, the young son and namesake of the town's tailor, to assist at Mass. After a wave-tossed voyage around Capes Fear and Hatteras, they came on September 10 to "the best and largest port in the world."

Chesapeake Bay is loveliest in September, with bright days under a cobalt sky, and the voyagers' hearts must have been gladdened as their ship made its way across the bay and up a river to a stream now called College Creek. Five miles farther upriver lay the island the English would, 37 years later, call Jamestown.

Don Luis was greeted by demonstrations of joy by his people. The Jesuits sailed to the head of the creek—then navigable for five miles—and portaged their goods over the watershed where Williamsburg now stands to King's Creek, which they canoed down to the York River. On a bluff not far from the village of Chiskiac, the priests built a small church of timber and thatch.

In Ajacán, Don Luis's fervor as a convert quickly dissipated; within a week he had left for the village of an uncle, where he said he was gathering chestnuts and souls—Segura's opinion was that he was gathering "many wives."

By February the missionaries had been abandoned. Segura was very ill. He sent three of his company on a last embassy to Don Luis. The Indian greeted them cordially and promised to follow them back to the mission—and follow he did, killing all three.

On February 9 Don Luis and his warriors did come to the mission and asked for trading axes to cut wood for the priests; instead, he cut down the fathers, all but the boy Alonso, who was saved by a brother of Don Luis.

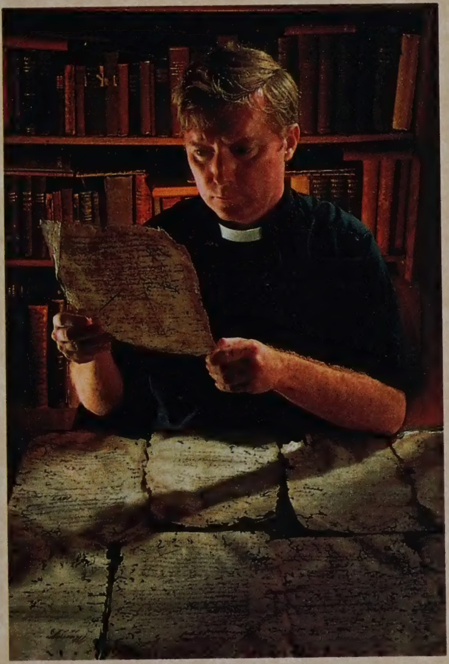
When a relief ship arrived that summer, the pilot did not see the signals that Segura had promised. Then the "Jesuits" appeared, walking along the shore—a ruse by costumed Indians. A fight followed. The Spanish captured two Indians and sailed for Havana, where one revealed that young Alonso was still alive.

Menéndez was unable to launch a punitive expedition until August of 1572, when he led three ships into the Chesapeake and sent 30 soldiers to attack the Indians at College Creek. In short order young Alonso was produced "naked as an Indian." He "knelt at the feet of his father" and tried to remember his Spanish.

As captives were brought to the ships, Menéndez hanged eight or nine for the murder of the missionaries and let others go, but the object of his vengeance, Don Luis, did not appear. Menéndez sailed for Spain vowing to return, but in two years he was dead, stricken while building a new fleet.

Thus it ended in Ajacán, the land that would one day be called Virginia. Or did it?

OLDEST DOCUMENTS penned in the United States, parish registers that date from 1594 are examined by Father Philip R. Gagan, archivist of the diocese of St. Augustine, where Catholic services have been held regularly since 1565.

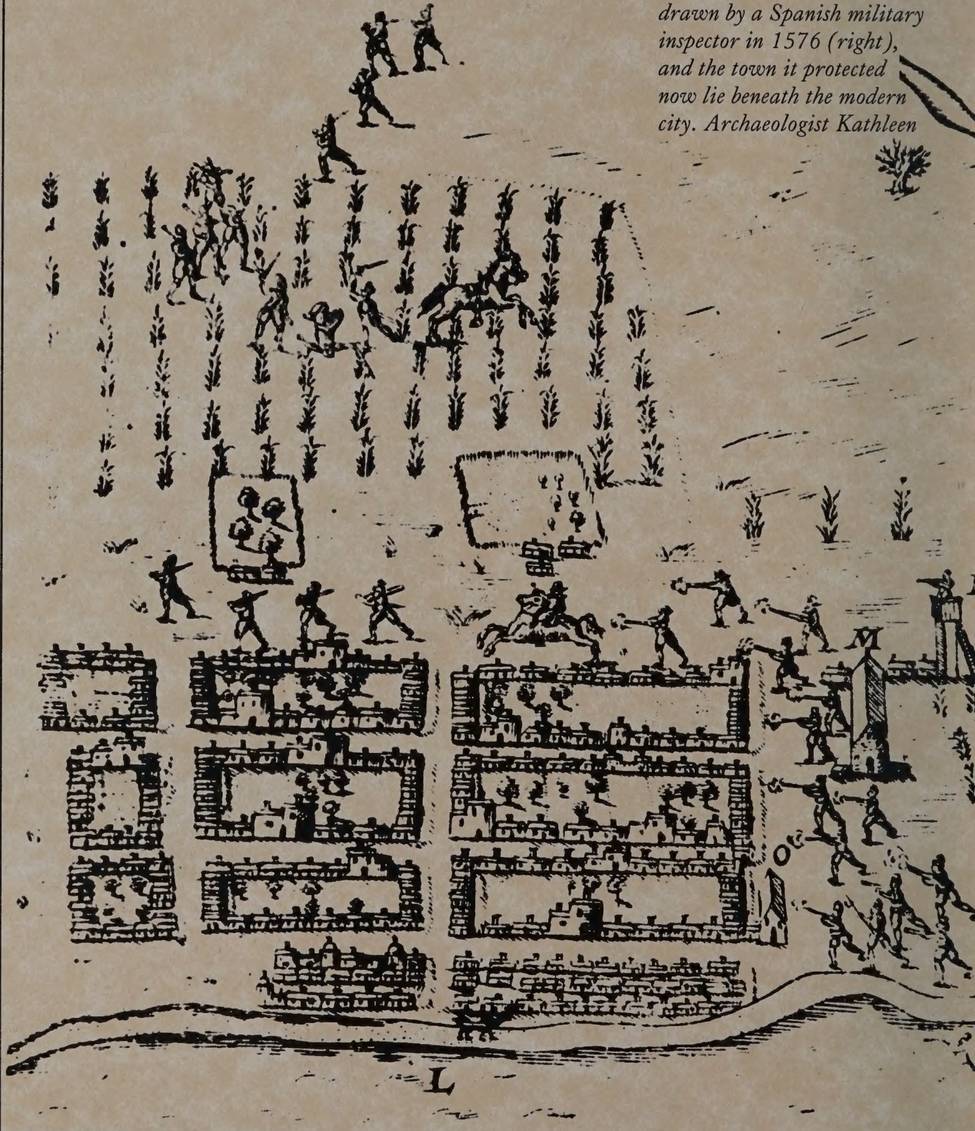


"THE SACK THE CORSAIR DID IN THIS CITY . . ."

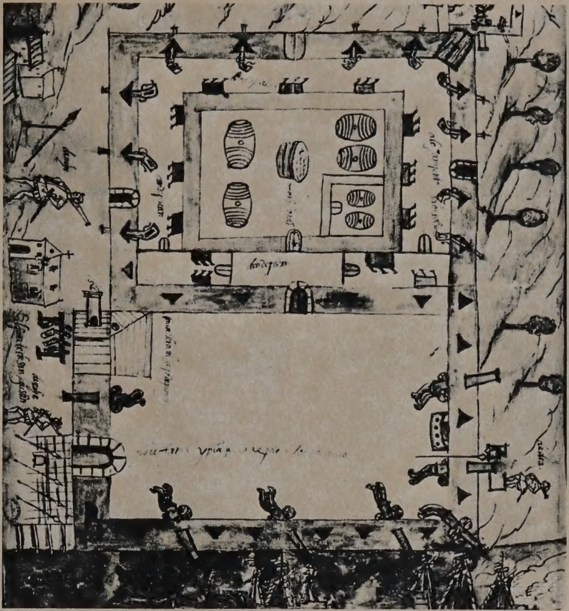
THE GREATEST BLOW to Spanish America was struck by English freebooter Sir Francis Drake, who raided through the Caribbean in 1586, sacking Santo Domingo and Cartagena before falling on St. Augustine with 42 vessels and 2,000 men.

Drake's cartographer made the first map of the Spanish colony (detail below), showing the ordered blocks of streets and Drake's assault force coming ashore.

The fort attacked by Drake, as shown in a plan drawn by a Spanish military inspector in 1576 (right), and the town it protected now lie beneath the modern city. Archaeologist Kathleen



Deagan has spent a decade probing through backyards and under floors to retrieve hundreds of objects from the city's early periods, when it was a poor but cosmopolitan outpost of Spain, and, after Santa Elena was abandoned, when it became the hub of a mission network.



FLORIDA STATE ARCHIVES (LEFT); ARCHIVO GENERAL DE INDIAS, SEVILLE (ABOVE)

HISTORIAN CARL BRIDENBAUGH, refining the work of Lewis and Loomie, makes a convincing case that Don Luis was none other than Opechancanough ("he whose soul is white"), brother of the famous Powhatan and leader of the two risings, in 1622 and 1644, that almost obliterated the infant English colony at Jamestown. "[It] cannot be proved," writes Bridenbaugh; "it is, however, a reasonable, workable, and plausible hypothesis into which the known facts fit . . . [it] explains nearly all of the matters that have hitherto been obscure, preventing our understanding of many events in the early history of Virginia."

It is cause to wonder at history that the old Indian chief, about 100 when he was shot in the back while being held prisoner in Jamestown, had been feted at a Spanish court and baptized in a great cathedral.

After Menéndez's death, Spain sent out new leaders to Santa Elena and St. Augustine. In 1576 the long-feared Indian rising erupted along the whole Spanish coast. It began when the Guale tribe killed a chief who had been baptized. Capt. Alonso de Solís led troops from Santa Elena to the Guale village, killed two chiefs, and cut the ears off a third. The Guale then waylaid a Spanish ship near Sapelo Island and killed all aboard.

The Orista tribe, living closer to Santa Elena, joined the war. A party of 21 men marched on the Orista and seized their corn. Before dawn the Indians struck back—and dead in the new day were two whom the frontier had finally killed, Sergeant Moyano, who had once trooped to Tennessee and killed a thousand Chisca warriors, and a new recruit to the army, young Alonso de Olmos, who had once been an altar boy in bloody Virginia. A lone survivor hastened back to Santa Elena to spread the alarm.

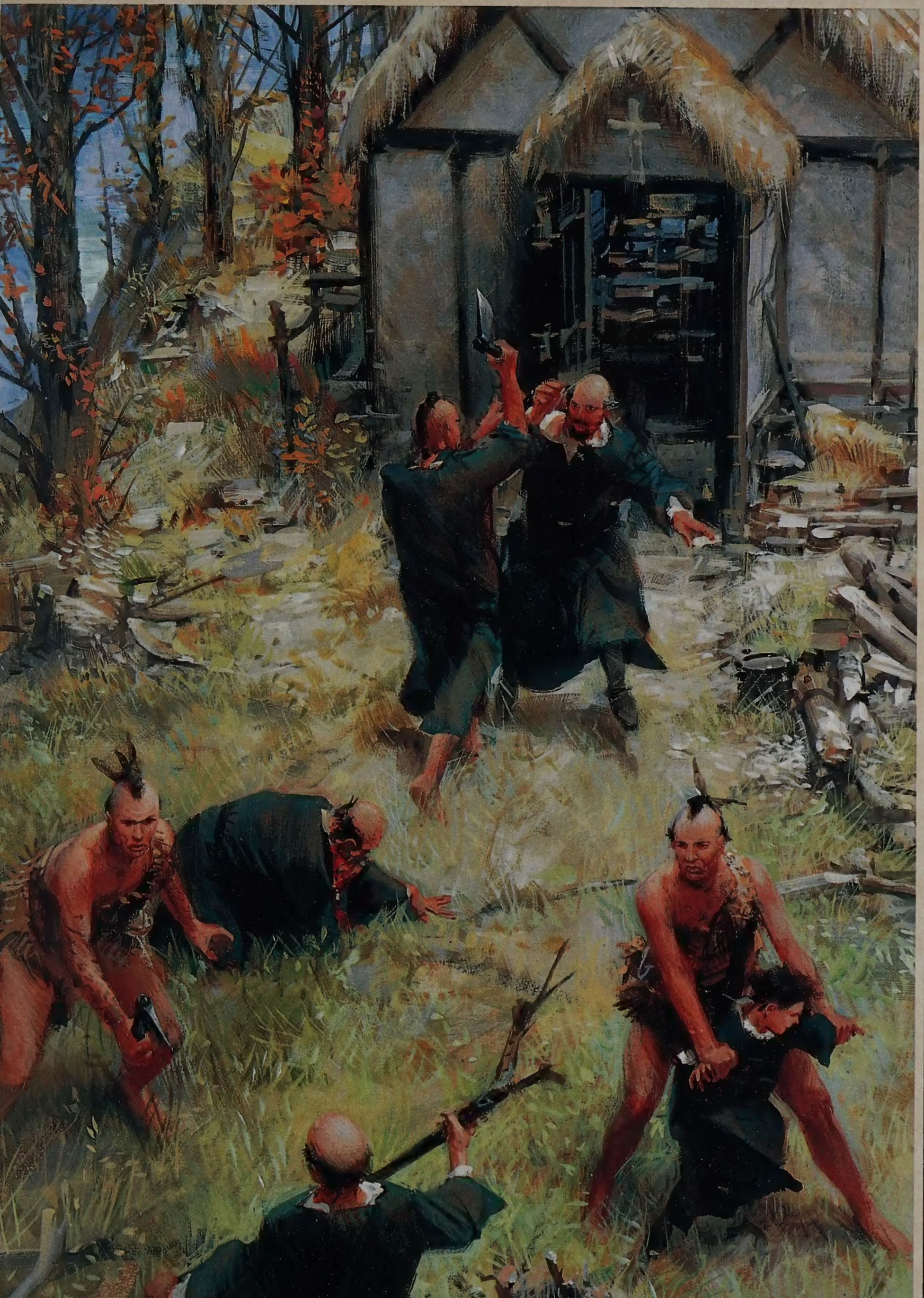
A month later the war reached Santa Elena itself. As smoke began to billow from the houses, the people rushed to the creek, where they crowded into small boats and made for St. Augustine. Through eyes blurred by anger and loss, they watched ten years of labor go up in smoke behind them as the town and fort became a firebrand.

The king sent out another Menéndez—Pedro's nephew, Pedro Menéndez Marqués—to take command and restore La Florida. As part of the campaign he loaded sawed timber and planking aboard a fleet in St. Augustine and sailed back to Santa Elena, where a fort was quickly assembled—San Marcos, one of two that Stanley South excavated under the Parris Island golf course. Menéndez took the war to the Indians, burning 19 Guale towns and fighting a pitched battle at Orista against 300 bowmen. By 1580 the rising was quelled, and Santa Elena entered its second life, with 60 houses and a new governor and a complement of 80 men in San Marcos. It must have seemed at that moment that this tale would be written in Spanish.

In England, the young queen who had listened so attentively to Ribault and Laudonnière 20 years before was now a mature queen with powerful fleets of privateers, and her eye was on North America. In 1584 Sir Walter Raleigh's scouting ships reached Cape Hatteras, athwart the course of Spanish treasure fleets. The following year Sir Richard Grenville sent settlers to erect a fort on Roanoke Island. The thorns in King Philip's side were being driven deeper.

A BLOODY BEGINNING TO VIRGINIA HISTORY

A MISSION to the Chesapeake Bay in 1570 ended when an Indian convert dubbed Don Luis, who had been taken to Spain by a previous expedition, led an attack from which only young Alonso de Olmos survived. In 1572 Menéndez rescued Alonso and hanged several Indians for murder—but failed to find Don Luis. He reappears in history, scholars suggest, as the famous Opechancanough, leader of two risings against the later English colony at Jamestown. The mission was on the York River, near where Cornwallis would surrender and the United States win its Revolution almost 200 years later.



In 1586 came Sir Francis Drake, sweeping through Spanish America with a fleet of 42 vessels and an army of 2,000. He sacked the major cities of Santo Domingo and Cartagena. When his huge force arrived off St. Augustine, the garrison put up a token fight and fled to the woods. Drake's cartographer made the first map of the settlement (pages 358-9) before it was burned. Moving north, Drake missed Santa Elena when the wind blew him offshore. He kept north to Roanoke Island, where he picked up the miserable survivors of the first colony and took them home to England.

A year after Drake's attack, orders were issued to the 33 families at Santa Elena to tear down their fort and move to St. Augustine, where defenses would be concentrated. Despite their vigorous protests, it was done, and Santa Elena was no more.

THERE REMAINED along the barrier islands of the Spanish coast a number of missions established by the Franciscans, who began to replace the Jesuits in 1573. In the following century they founded more than 50 thriving missions in La Florida. Those on the Atlantic coast centered on Santa Catalina de Guale, the site of which was undetermined until 1981, when archaeologist David Hurst Thomas found it after a systematic survey of St. Catherines Island.

Once the home of Button Gwinnett, signer of the Declaration of Independence, St. Catherines is used today by the New York Zoological Society as a breeding farm for endangered species, many from Africa, which give an exotic look and sound to the old Guale Indian island. On its southwestern side, Thomas and his colleagues have unearthed the old mission church and the skeletons of 430 Indian converts buried inside its walls.

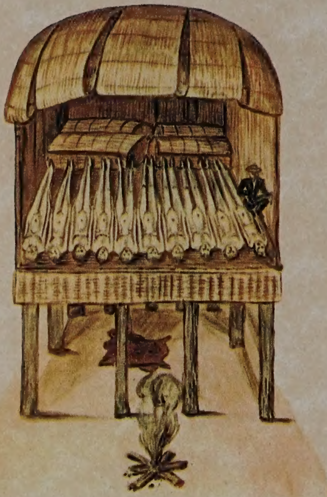
St. Catherines died in flames and arrows when 300 English-led Yamassee Indians descended on it in 1680, during the century when English settlement, anchored in Charleston, drove the Spanish back into St. Augustine. There the red and gold, first brought to the coast by Ayllón in 1526, flew with one brief English intermission until it was finally hauled down and replaced by the Stars and Stripes of a new constitutional republic in 1821.

That energetic young republic had its own memories and no reason to remember Chicora, the land of Ayllón, or Pardo's forts and first mission, or Santa Elena, or Segura and his dead companions beside the York in old Ajacán. But the muse of history delights in small ironies and keeps them for others to discover in time.

Thus it was when a Spanish caravel came into the Chesapeake in 1611, under pretext of searching for a lost ship, and captured a young English pilot named John Clark. Three from the caravel were stranded ashore and were jailed. One died of starvation; another, found to be English, was later hanged for treason. The third, Don Diego de Molina, survived five years' imprisonment in Virginia, railing in letters smuggled home against English designs in a land to which Spain had such an ancient and honorable claim, and calling Jamestown "a new Algiers in America."

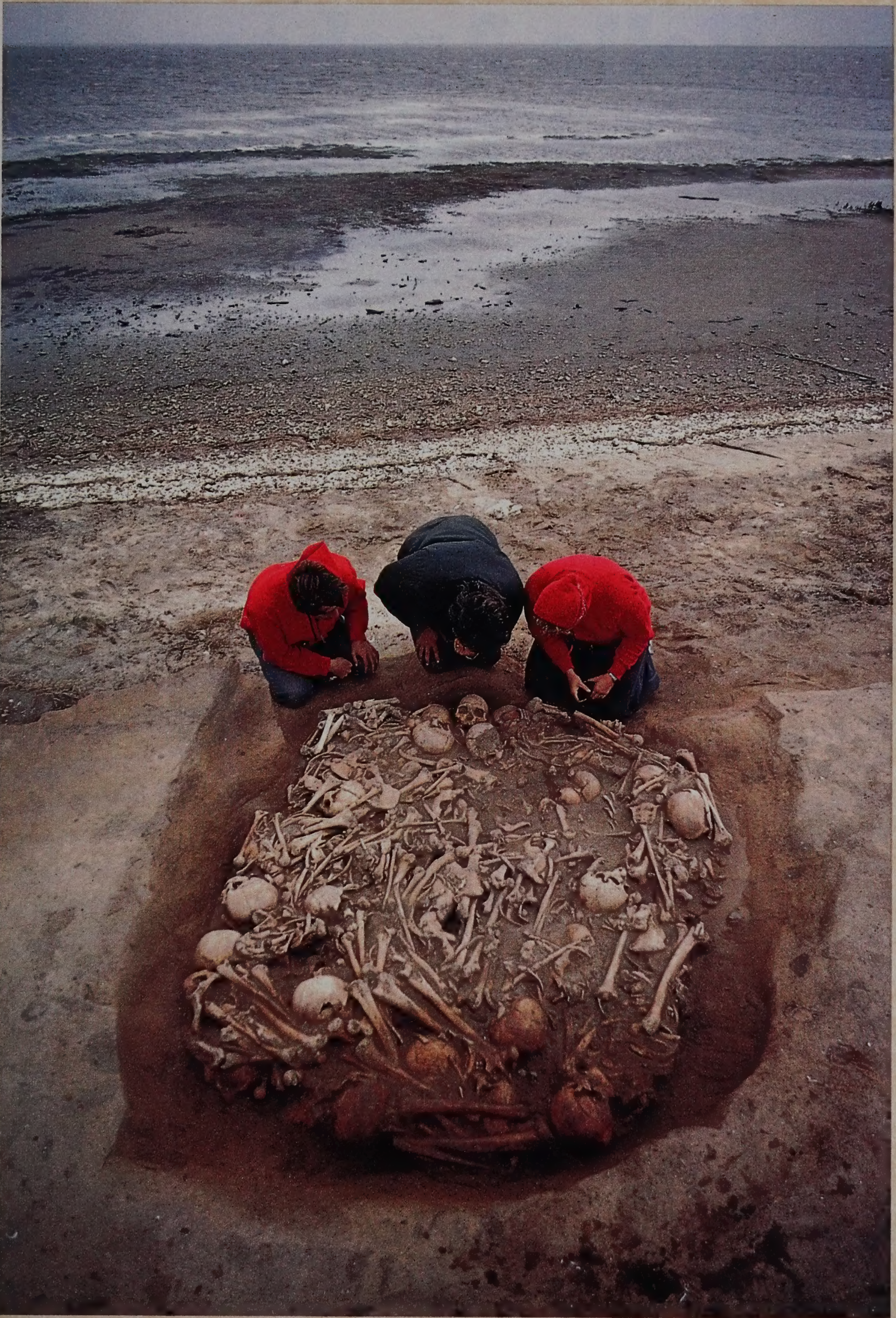
Clark had been taken to Spain and interrogated, and in due course of time each man was returned to his native land. Clark returned to the sea and found work to his liking as first mate on a ship bound for America.

Her name was *Mayflower.* ☐



IN A RACE with nature, archaeologist David Sutton Phelps and his crew preserved the bones of 30 individuals from an Algonquian ossuary eroding into North Carolina's Currituck Sound. The Carolina Algonquian faced the end of their history with the arrival of the English. John White, member of a failed 1585 colony, painted an Algonquian mortuary house (above), where bodies were stored prior to ossuary burial. Although a second settlement, in 1587, disappeared as the Lost Colony, the English established Jamestown in 1607. By 1750 the Algonquian culture, which had survived here for a thousand years, had vanished.

BRITISH MUSEUM, LONDON

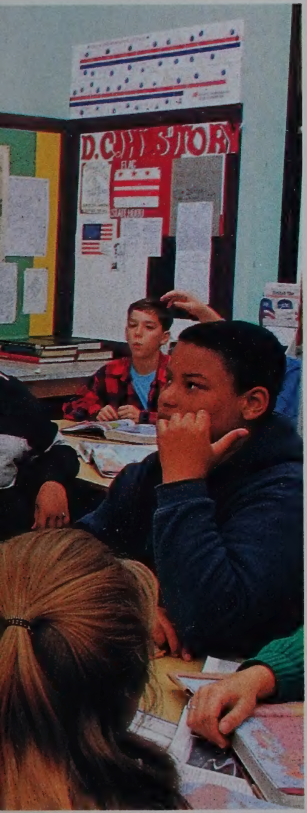


DAN DRY

Hello Anchorage, Good-Bye Dream

another passing fad. This we can do through the new foundation. Legally distinct from the Society, though closely linked through board and staff members, the foundation will guarantee continued financial support for the best geography programs.

Initially the foundation will make grants to the same kinds of programs that have already proved so successful. Last summer, for example—with financial support from the Society, Chevron USA, and the William and Flora Hewlett Foundation—the Bay Area Global Education Program and the Northern California Geographic Alliance, one of 22 we support, sponsored an institute at Stanford University for 60 educators. Those teachers, armed with exciting new classroom methods and materials, are now conducting in-service workshops that should reach hundreds of other educators who, in turn, will pass along new enthusiasm for geography to thousands of students.



PHOTOGRAPH BY CHRIS JOHNS

The National Geographic [sponsored] Institute in Knoxville turned out to be the best experience I've ever had in education.

MRS. JOHN V. DUNCAN
SPARTANBURG, SOUTH CAROLINA

Despite such encouraging numbers, this work can never be finished. Our children can never be too well informed. Nor can we ever have too many good teachers.

During the next ten years, in fact, we are likely to face a critical shortage of qualified teachers. The growing demand for teachers in the United States will soon exceed the capacity of all our colleges and universities to produce them. By one estimate, we will need a million new teachers between now and 1993, not only because of an upswing in school enrollments and an increased rate of teacher retirements, but also because fewer college students are becoming teachers.

For that reason we need to make sure that our new teachers are well trained in geography. And we need to raise the prestige of the classroom teacher in our society to the point where teaching attracts its share of America's best talent.

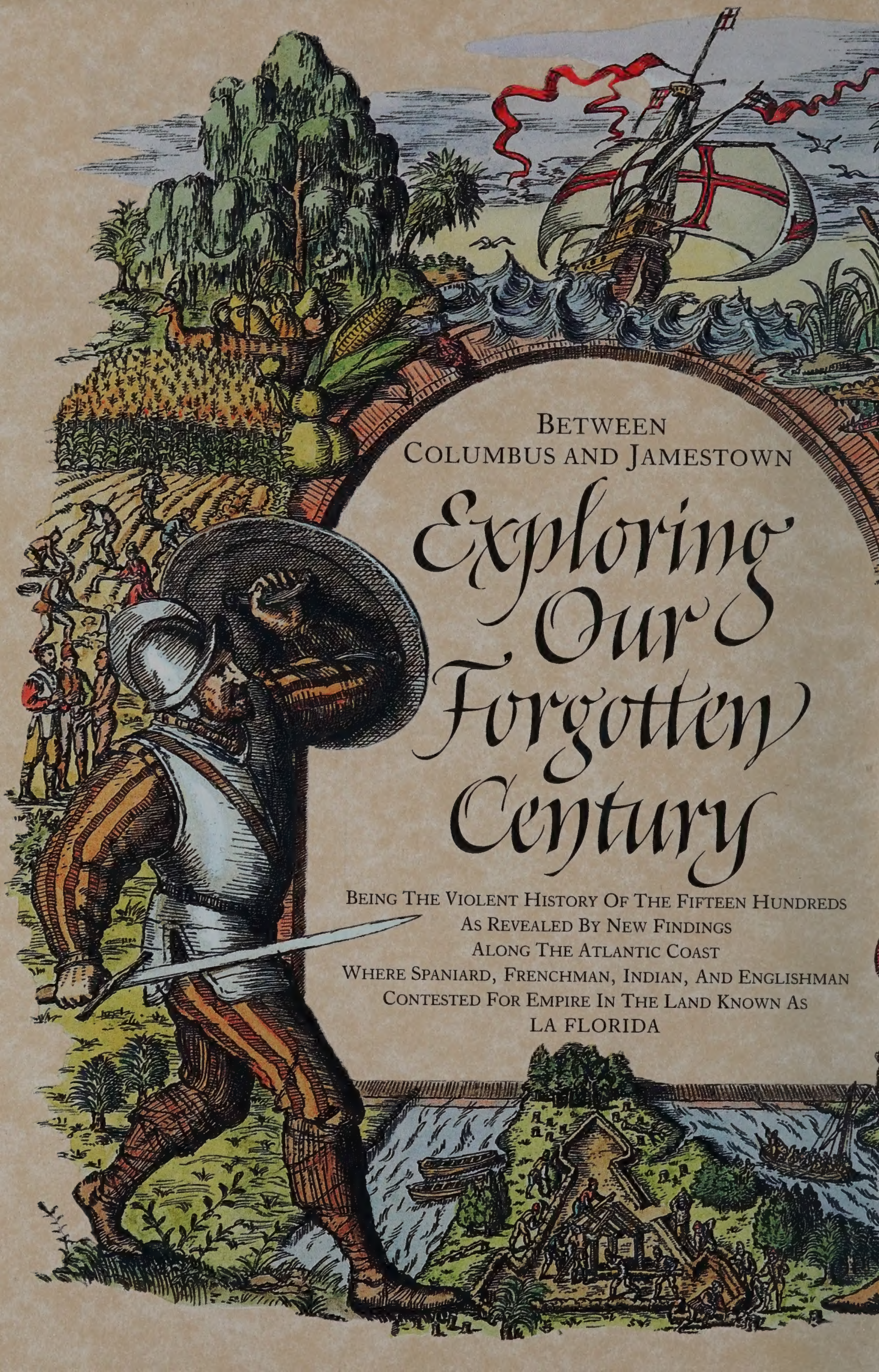
In establishing the foundation, the Society has made a good start in this direction. It represents the best effort of a much respected institution to look at one part of the broader education picture and to make a serious long-term commitment toward correcting the problem.

I believe we now have the best chance ever to restore geography to the prominence it deserves.

If you share my conviction about the value of geographic knowledge and would like more information about the foundation, I hope you will write to me directly. The address is National Geographic Society Education Foundation, 17th and M Streets N.W., Washington, D. C. 20036. Your interest and support will mean a more knowledgeable and responsible citizenry in our next hundred years. □

Every day I am in the classroom I am reminded of something gleaned from the institute held at Texas A & M.

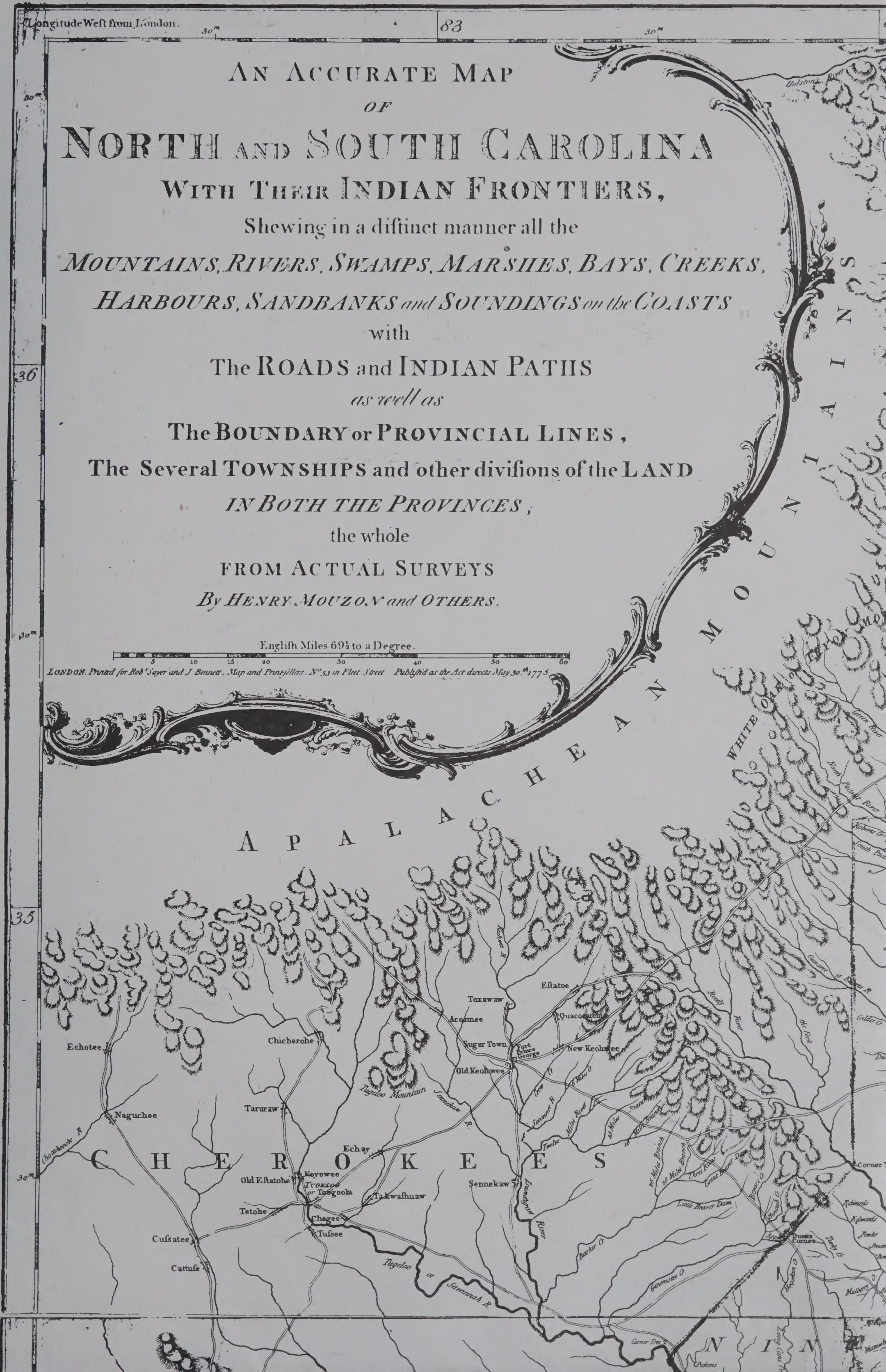
SHARON STELTER
BRENHAM, TEXAS

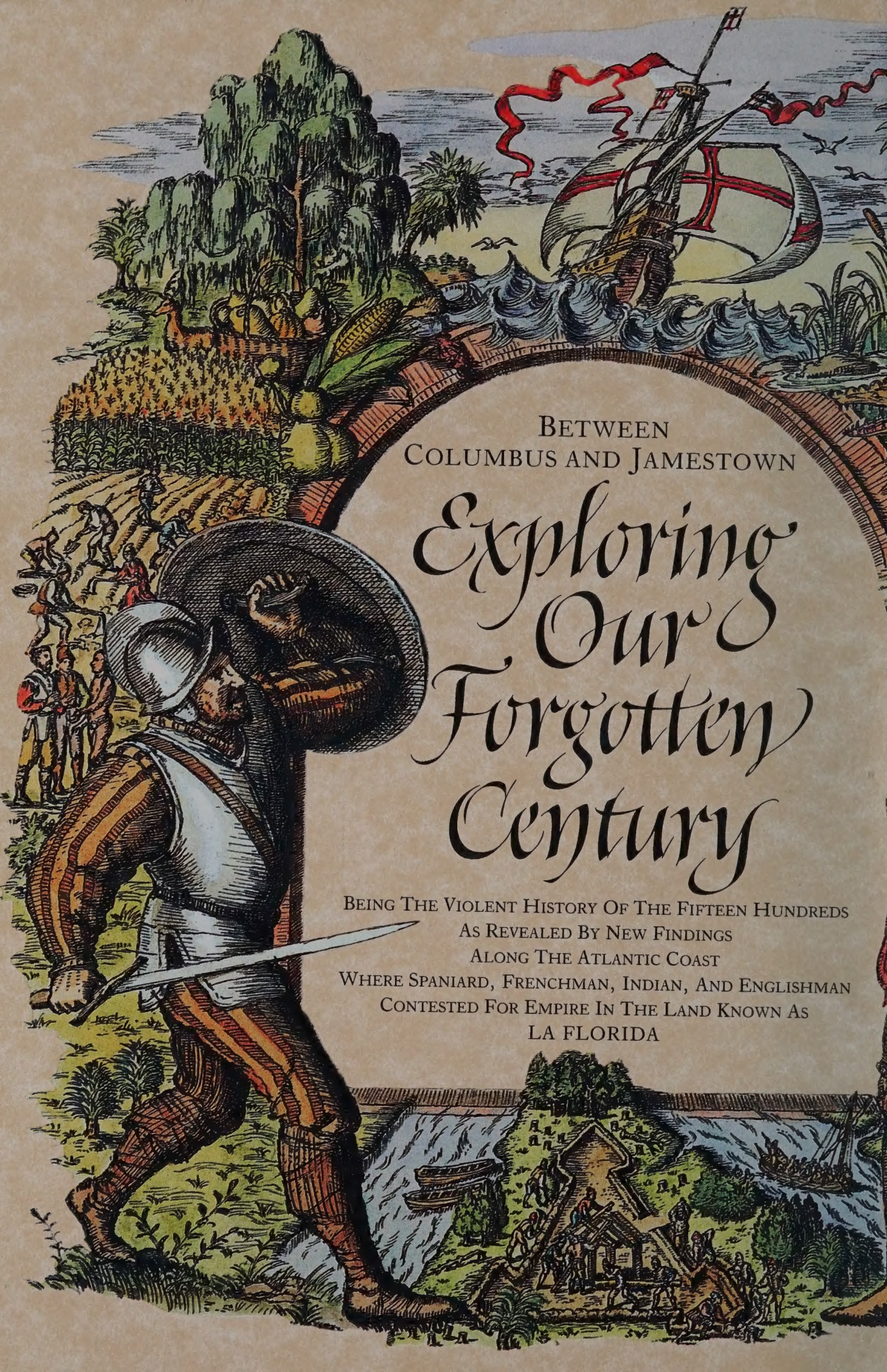


BETWEEN
COLUMBUS AND JAMESTOWN

Exploring Our Forgotten Century

BEING THE VIOLENT HISTORY OF THE FIFTEEN HUNDREDS
AS REVEALED BY NEW FINDINGS
ALONG THE ATLANTIC COAST
WHERE SPANIARD, FRENCHMAN, INDIAN, AND ENGLISHMAN
CONTESTED FOR EMPIRE IN THE LAND KNOWN AS
LA FLORIDA

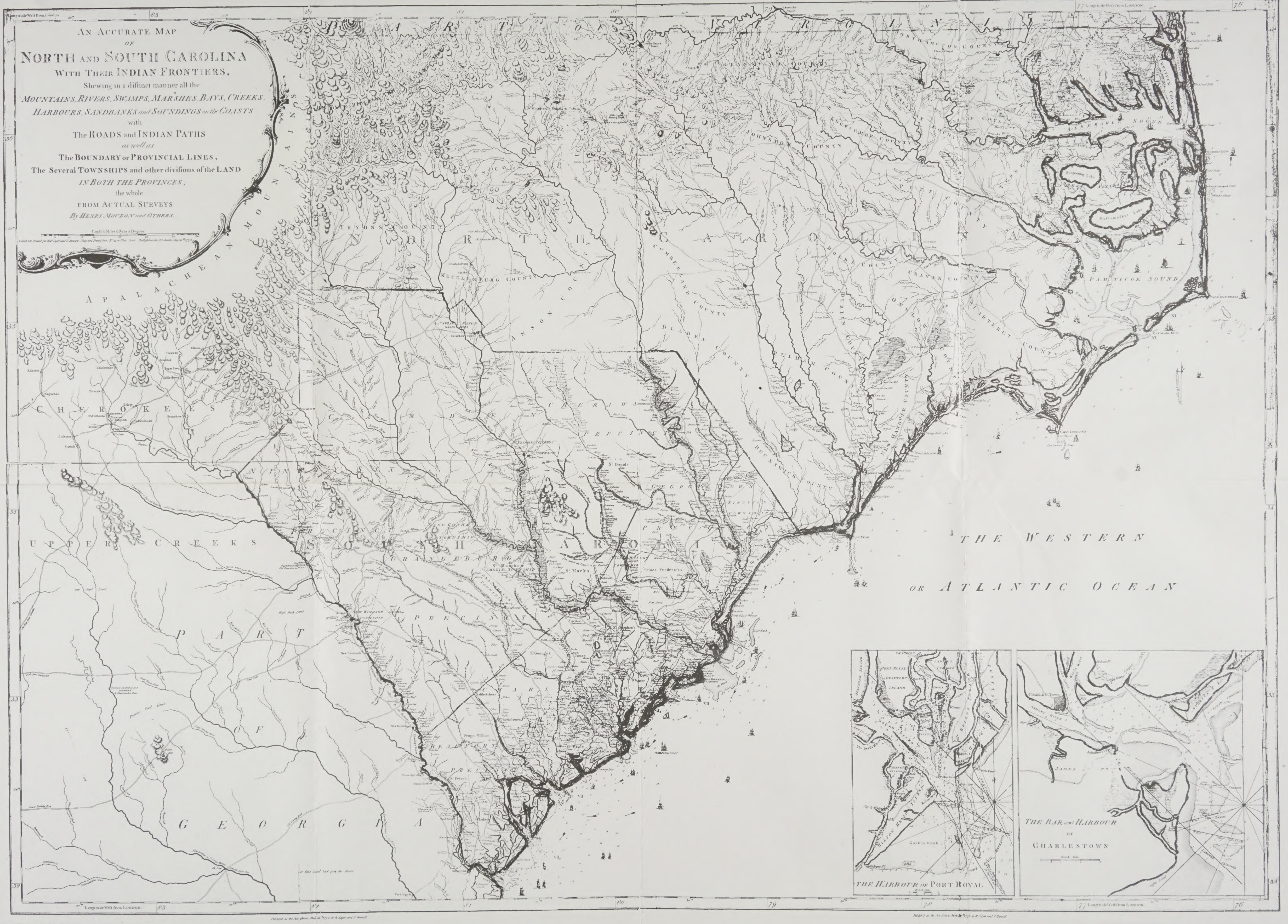

Longitude Weſt from London.
30m
83
30m
AN ACCURATE MAP
OF
NORTH AND SOUTH CAROLINA
WITH THEIR INDIAN FRONTIERS,
Shewing in a diſtinct manner all the
MOUNTAINS, RIVERS, SWAMPS, MARSHES, BAYS, CREEKS,
HARBOURS, SANDBANKS and SOUNDINGS on the COASTS
with
The ROADS and INDIAN PATHS
as well as
The BOUNDARY or PROVINCIAL LINES,
The Several TOWNSHIPS and other diviſions of the LAND
IN BOTH THE PROVINCES;
the whole
FROM ACTUAL SURVEYS
By HENRY MOUZON and OTHERS.
Engliſh Miles 69½ to a Degree.
5 10 15 20 30 40 50 60
LONDON. Printed for Robt Sayer and J. Bennett, Map and Printſellers, No 53 in Fleet Street Publiſh'd as the Act directs May 30th 1775.
36
35
30m
APALACHEAN MOUNTAINS
WHITE OAK MOUNTAINS
Holſton River
CHEROKEES
Echotee
Naguchee
Chattahooche R.
Chicherohe
Taruraw
Echay
Noyowee
Old Eſtatoe
Tugeloo or Toogoola
Takwaſhuaw
Tetohe
Chagee
Tuſsee
Cuſsatee
Cattuſe
Toxawaw
Aconnee
Sugar Town
Fort Prince George
Old Keohwee
Eſtatoe
Quacoratchie
New Keohwee
Tugeloo Mountain
Sennekaw R.
Sennekaw
Keowee R.
Tugeloo or Savannah R.
Twelve Mile River
Eighteen Mile Branch
Twenty Six Mile Branch
Three Runs
Little Beaver Dam
Barkers C.
Generostee C.
Rocky River
Green River
North Pacolet River
South Pacolet
Saluda or Corner R.
Corner Tree
Duets Corner
Pickens
NINETY SIX



BETWEEN
COLUMBUS AND JAMESTOWN

Exploring Our Forgotten Century

BEING THE VIOLENT HISTORY OF THE FIFTEEN HUNDREDS
AS REVEALED BY NEW FINDINGS
ALONG THE ATLANTIC COAST
WHERE SPANIARD, FRENCHMAN, INDIAN, AND ENGLISHMAN
CONTESTED FOR EMPIRE IN THE LAND KNOWN AS
LA FLORIDA

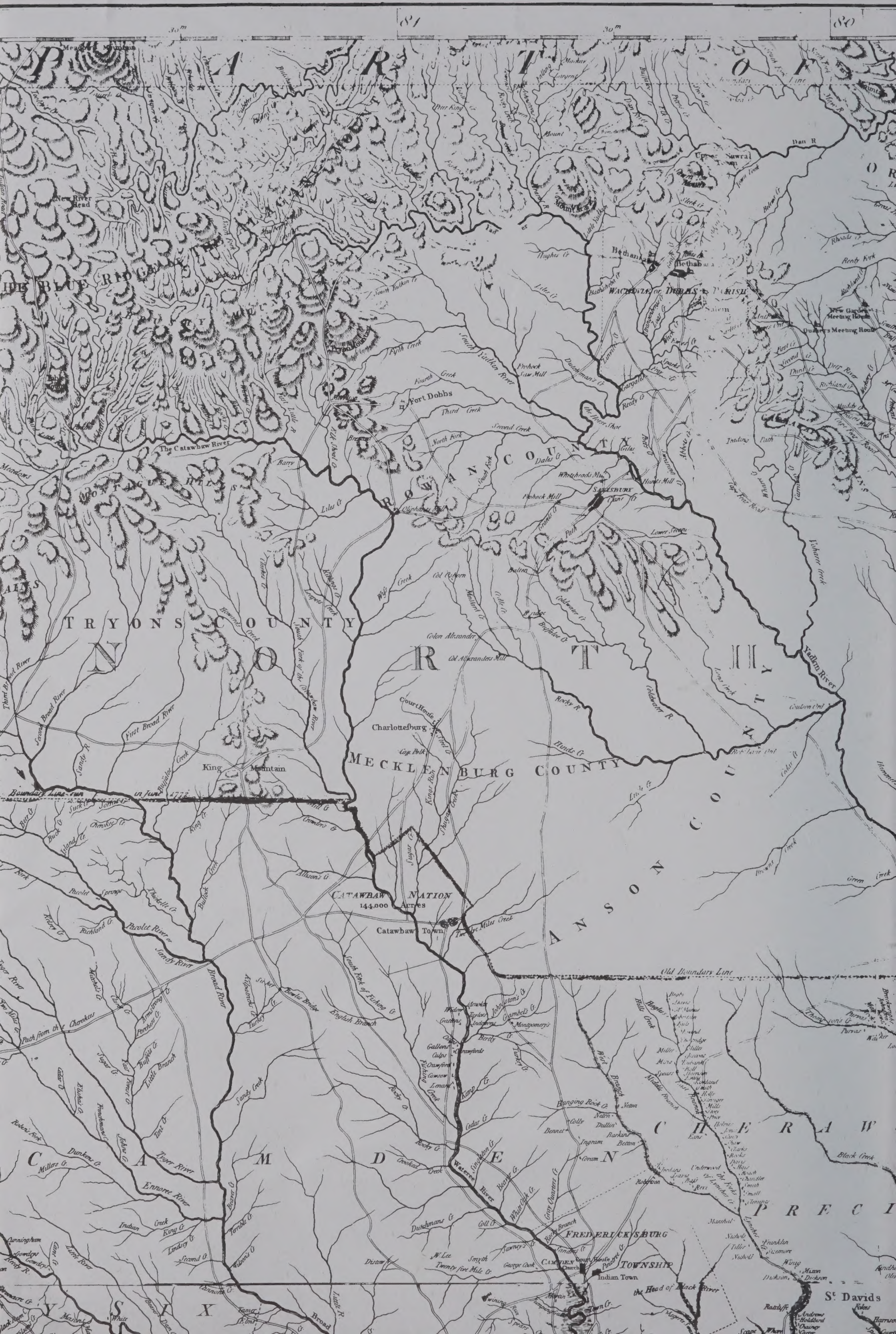


AN ACCURATE MAP
OF
NORTH AND SOUTH CAROLINA
WITH THEIR INDIAN FRONTIERS,
Shewing in a diſtinct manner all the
MOUNTAINS, RIVERS, SWAMPS, MARSHES, BAYS, CREEKS,
HARBOURS, SANDBANKS and SOUNDINGS on the COASTS
with
The ROADS and INDIAN PATHS
as well as
The BOUNDARY or PROVINCIAL LINES,
The Several TOWNSHIPS and other diviſions of the LAND
IN BOTH THE PROVINCES;
the whole
FROM ACTUAL SURVEYS
By HENRY MOUZON and OTHERS.

English Miles 69½ to a Degree

LONDON Printed for Robt Sayer and J. Bennett Map and Printsellers No 53 in Fleet Street Publiſhed as the Act directs May 30th 1775.

Longitude West from London
83
82
81
80
79
78
77 Longitude West from London
76
36
35
34
33
32
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
PART OF VIRGINIA
PART OF GEORGIA
APALACHEAN MOUNTAINS
CHEROKEES
UPPER CREEKS
THE WESTERN OR ATLANTIC OCEAN
PAMTICOE SOUND
ALBEMARLE SOUND
TRYONS COUNTY
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
ANSON COUNTY
CUMBERLAND COUNTY
BLADEN COUNTY
JOHNSTON COUNTY
EDGECOMBE COUNTY
NORTHAMPTON COUNTY
PITT COUNTY
DOBBS COUNTY
CRAVEN COUNTY
CARTERET COUNTY
ONSLOW COUNTY
DUPLIN COUNTY
NEW HANOVER COUNTY
BRUNSWICK COUNTY
CHERAWS PRECINCT
CAMDEN PRECINCT
NINETY SIX
ORANGEBURG PRECINCT
GEORGETOWN PRECINCT
CHARLESTOWN PRECINCT
BEAUFORT PRECINCT
KINGSTON TOWNSHIP
AMELIA TOWNSHIP
NEW WINDSOR TOWNSHIP
SAXE GOTHA TOWNSHIP
Prince Fredericks
St Marks
St Matthew
St Davids
St Georges
St Bartholomew
Prince William
St Peters
Mattamuskeet Lake
Scuppernong Lake
Cape Hatteras
Cape Lookout
Cape Fear
Fort Argyle
THE HARBOUR OF PORT ROYAL
PORT ROYAL or BEAUFORT ISLAND
Gaskin Bank
THE BAR and HARBOUR OF CHARLESTOWN
CHARLES TOWN
ASHLEY RIVER
JAMES
Publiſhed as the Act directs May 30th 1775 by R. Sayer and J. Bennett


81
80
30m
30m
PART OF
THE BLUE RIDGE OR THE APALACHIAN MOUNTAINS
New River Head
Dan R
Upper Sawral Town
Bethania
Bethabara
WACHOVIA or DOBBS's PARISH
Salem
New Garden Meeting House
Quakers Meeting House
South Yadkin R
Fifth Creek
Fourth Creek
Fort Dobbs
Third Creek
Second Creek
North Fork
Prohock Saw Mill
Dutchman's Cr
The Catawbaw River
ROWAN COUNTY
Salisbury
Whitcheads Mill
Prohock Mill
Lower Settlement
TRYONS COUNTY
NORTH CAROLINA
Col. Alexanders Mill
Colon Alexander
Rocky R
Court House
Charlottesburg
Cap. Polk
MECKLENBURG COUNTY
King Mountain
Boundary Line run in June 1772
ANSON COUNTY
Yadkin River
Third Broad River
Second Broad River
First Broad River
Sandy R
Buffalo Creek
Kings Run
Sugar Creek
Allisons Cr
CATAWBAW NATION 144,000 Acres
Catawbaw Town
Twelve Miles Creek
Old Boundary Line
Pacolet Springs
Pacolet River or Sandy River
Broad River
Path from the Cherokees
Tyger River
Ennoree River
Fishing Creek
Hanging Rock Cr
Little Lynches Cr
CAMDEN
CHERAW PRECINCT
FREDERICKSBURG
CAMDEN TOWNSHIP
Court House
Indian Town
the Head of Black River
St Davids
Wateree River
Sawneys Cr
Twenty five Mile Cr
Black Creek
Green Creek
Browns Creek
Cunningham
Reedy R.
Little River
Little R
Broad

My New Years Resolution for 2011 is to get rid of all possible excess baggage – this includes genealogical search materials – histories, deed & contract of people of the same names of f our ancestors who resided in South Carolina (in this case).

To be kept are Dick Scar-data, also of our Richard Pierce & family who came there. The 1870 Iowa census claims our John Griffith's father (ie Samuel Griffith) born 1768 or 50 in South Carolina. John was elderly & probably ailing – perhaps his niece gave the info. Was she (or he?) correct. This deceased Griff's parents were born in 54 so it makes sense that his parents were born there. Our distant cousin Sylvan Griffith is convinced our Griffiths lived in Surry N Carolina (VA border just se of present Patrick (or Henry) Co. Many Surry C records would certainly fit in. –

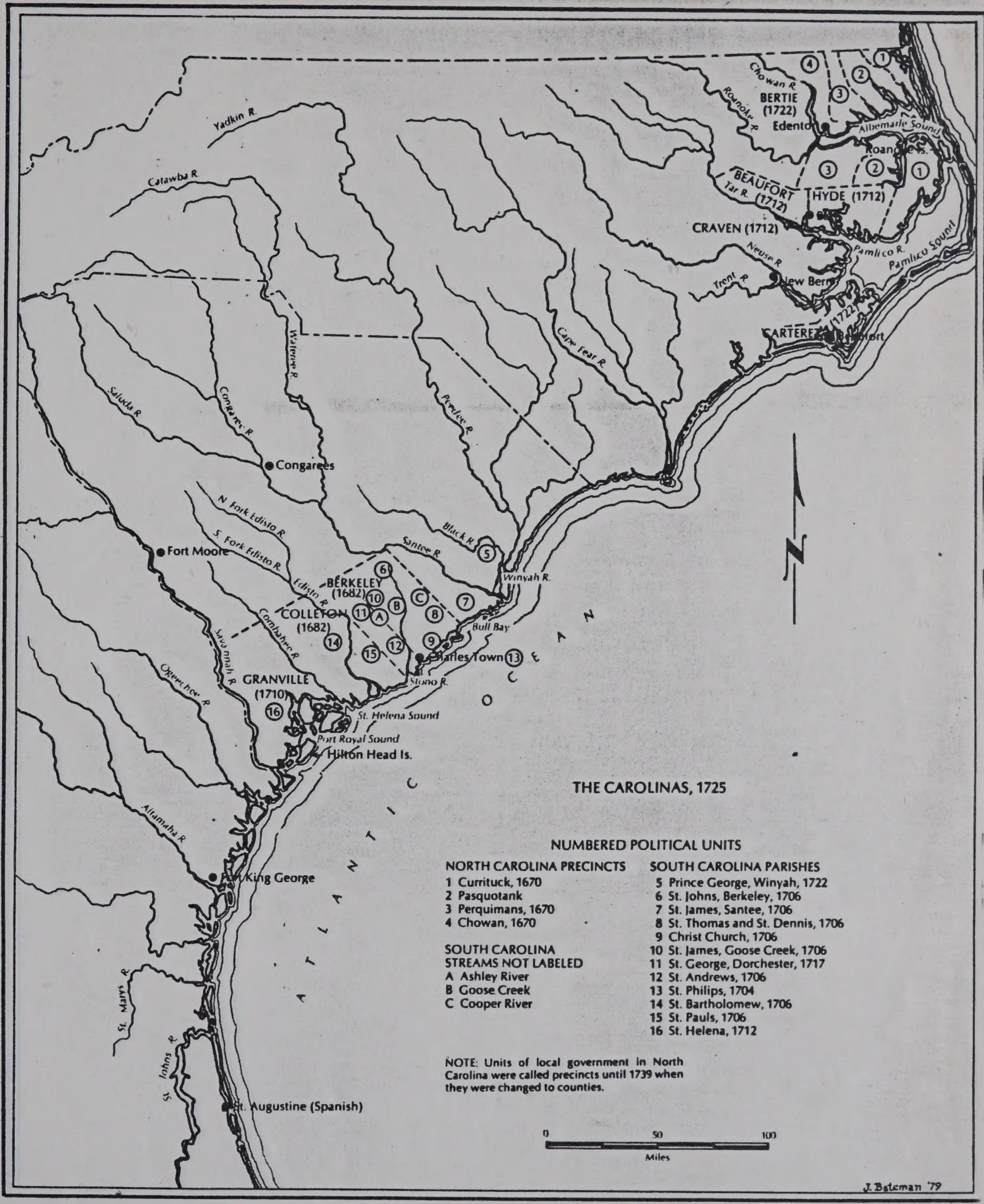
Experts say early S Carolina records are in a baffling mess. Up to 1769 all records or trials took place in Charleston because the stuffy gentry disliked the common people in the Piedmont. In 1769 "Pine Tree" (now Camden) then soon few of those had courts (judges came from Charleston and deposited the records in Charleston. There were also episcopal churches but many of these records went to England & maybe destroyed.

As for deeds, in the 1760's deeds started to be recorded in any settlement handy – not necessarily the right one & boundaries changed often in that era. And a great many people were arriving from VA, PA etc down the Great Wagon Road – outnumbering the South Carolinians – and NC claimed land that later – after troops came after the Revolution to survey the boundary. A David Griffith, Senior, etc had come and settled in Fairfield Co — near the Wagon Road when settlers first came in — not far from our Parrises. This evidently entered Mecklenburg & N Car — land on Polecat Creek flowing into Lynches Creek. (Now [illegible] Co.) but some of his land ~~in process~~ was probably in now what is So Carolina — Lancaster Co? — mostly on the county line.

There were a number of Welsh Baptists in the very early days by the Pee Dee River (Cheraws Dist.) — they could be ours but no connection found. My gut feeling is that if our Griffiths were really in SC, it was in the Waxhaw Dist (Lancaster or York Co?) slightly west. Most likely they came down the Wagon Road with the Scotch Irish, etc.

Griffin & Griffith was spelt interchangeably — we can't be sure if they are Griffith (Welsh) or Griffin (Scots Irish).

I'm through with So Carolina histories. After I'm gone no one else would be interested in them — except for [illegible] [illegible] —


Chowan R.
BERTIE
(1722)
Roanoke R.
Edenton
Albemarle Sound
Roanoke Is.
BEAUFORT
(1712)
Tar R.
HYDE (1712)
CRAVEN (1712)
Pamlico R.
Pamlico Sound
Neuse R.
Trent R.
New Bern
CARTERET (1722)
Beaufort
Yadkin R.
Catawba R.
Wateree R.
Cape Fear R.
Pee Dee R.
Saluda R.
Congaree R.
Congarees
N. Fork Edisto R.
S. Fork Edisto R.
Edisto R.
Fort Moore
Black R.
Santee R.
Winyah R.
BERKELEY
(1682)
COLLETON
(1682)
Combahee R.
Savannah R.
Bull Bay
Charles Town
Stono R.
GRANVILLE
(1710)
Ogeechee R.
St. Helena Sound
Port Royal Sound
Hilton Head Is.
Altamaha R.
Fort King George
St. Marys R.
St. Johns R.
St. Augustine (Spanish)
ATLANTIC OCEAN
N
0
50
100
Miles
J. Bateman '79

THE CAROLINAS, 1725

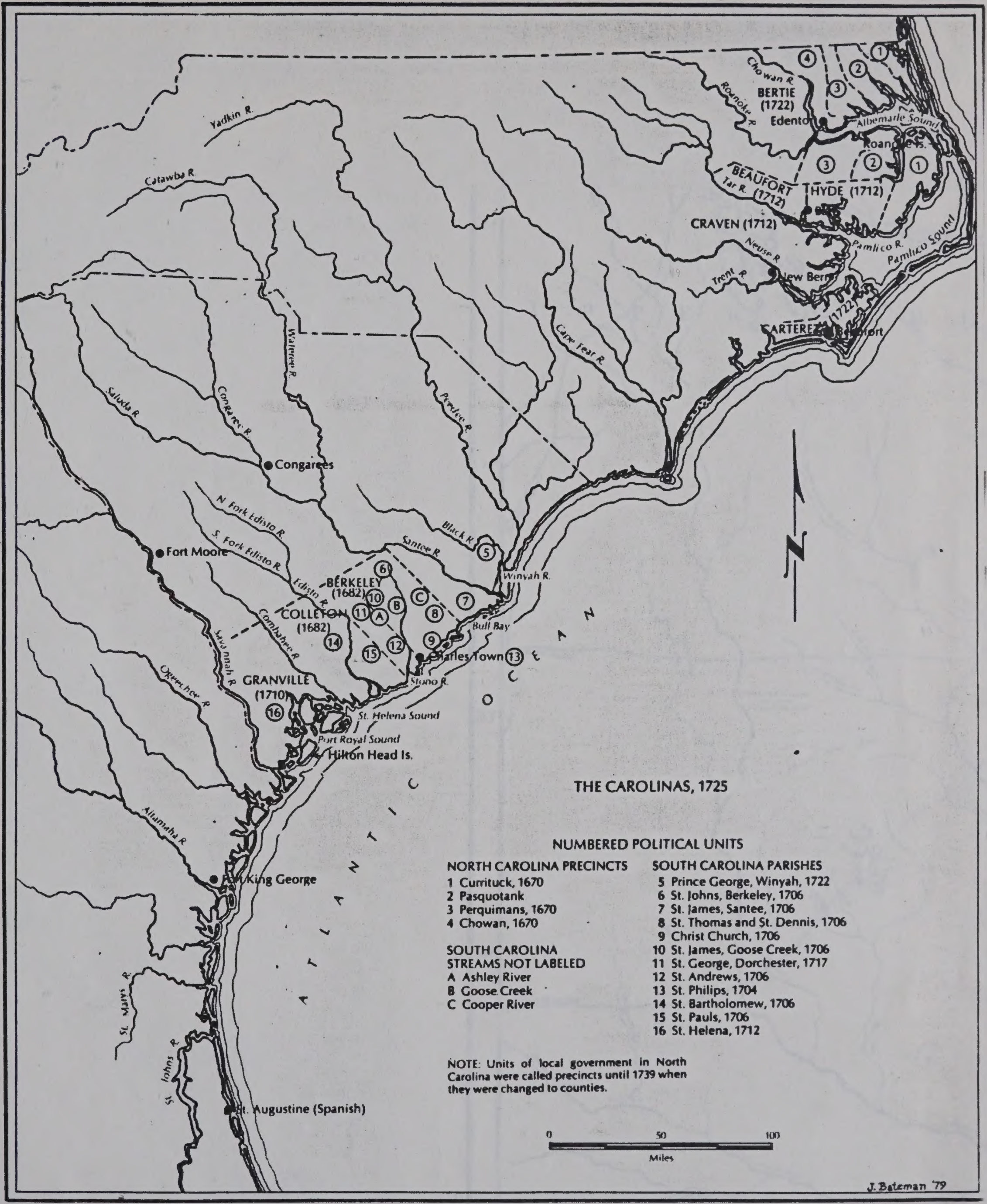
NUMBERED POLITICAL UNITS

NORTH CAROLINA PRECINCTS
1 Currituck, 1670
2 Pasquotank
3 Perquimans, 1670
4 Chowan, 1670

SOUTH CAROLINA
STREAMS NOT LABELED
A Ashley River
B Goose Creek
C Cooper River

SOUTH CAROLINA PARISHES
5 Prince George, Winyah, 1722
6 St. Johns, Berkeley, 1706
7 St. James, Santee, 1706
8 St. Thomas and St. Dennis, 1706
9 Christ Church, 1706
10 St. James, Goose Creek, 1706
11 St. George, Dorchester, 1717
12 St. Andrews, 1706
13 St. Philips, 1704
14 St. Bartholomew, 1706
15 St. Pauls, 1706
16 St. Helena, 1712

NOTE: Units of local government in North Carolina were called precincts until 1739 when they were changed to counties.


Yadkin R.
Catawba R.
Chowan R.
Roanoke R.
BERTIE (1722)
Edenton
Albemarle Sound
Roanoke Is.
BEAUFORT (1712)
Tar R.
HYDE (1712)
CRAVEN (1712)
Pamlico R.
Pamlico Sound
Neuse R.
Trent R.
New Bern
CARTERET (1722)
Beaufort
Wateree R.
Congaree R.
Saluda R.
Congarees
Pedee R.
Cape Fear R.
N Fork Edisto R.
S. Fork Edisto R.
Edisto R.
Fort Moore
Black R.
Santee R.
Winyah R.
BERKELEY (1682)
COLLETON (1682)
Combahee R.
Savannah R.
Bull Bay
Charles Town
Stono R.
GRANVILLE (1710)
Ogeechee R.
St. Helena Sound
Port Royal Sound
Hilton Head Is.
Altamaha R.
Fort King George
St. Marys R.
St. Johns R.
St. Augustine (Spanish)
ATLANTIC OCEAN
N
0
50
100
Miles
J. Bateman '79

THE CAROLINAS, 1725

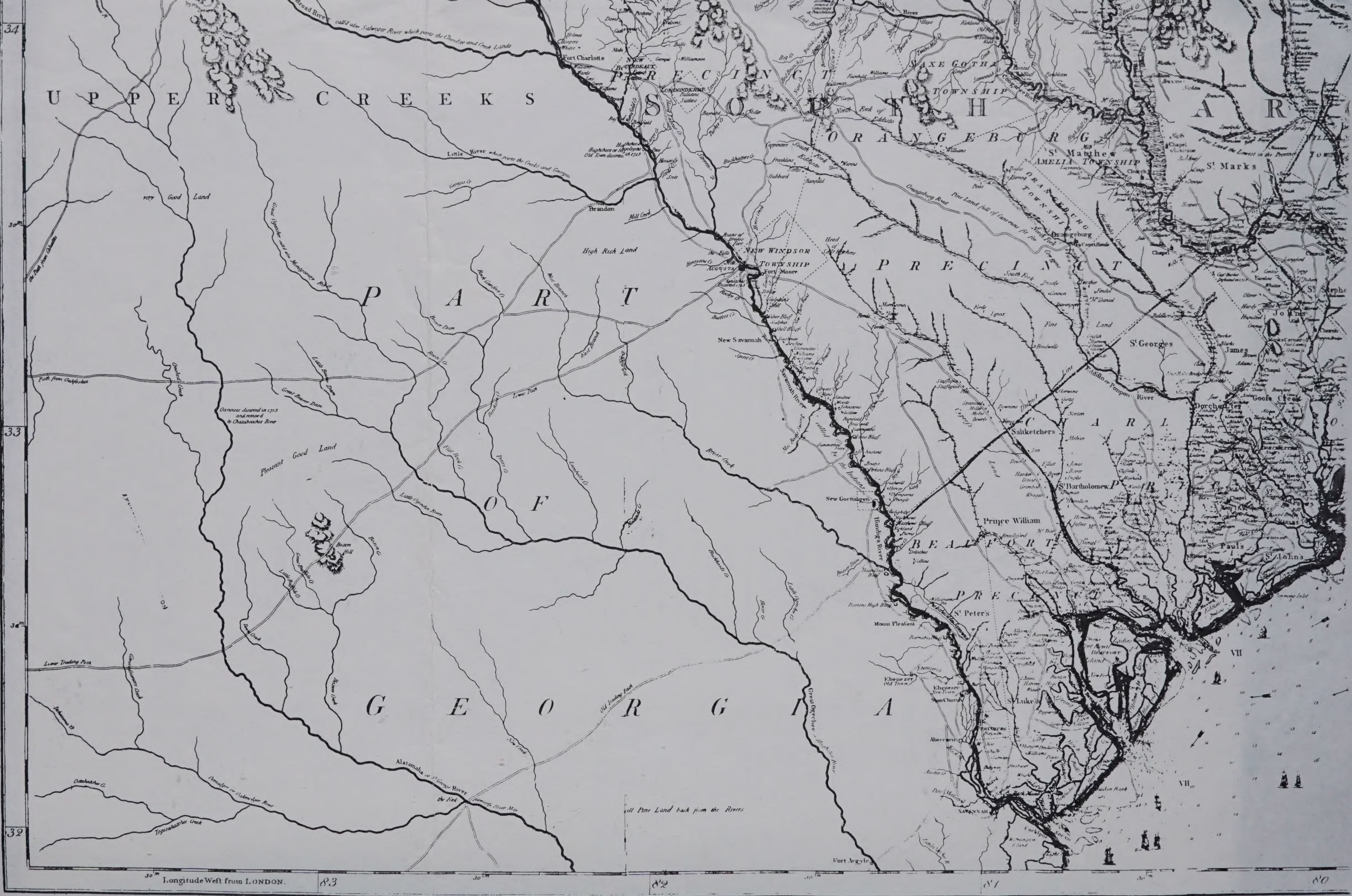
NUMBERED POLITICAL UNITS

NORTH CAROLINA PRECINCTS
1 Currituck, 1670
2 Pasquotank
3 Perquimans, 1670
4 Chowan, 1670

SOUTH CAROLINA
STREAMS NOT LABELED
A Ashley River
B Goose Creek
C Cooper River

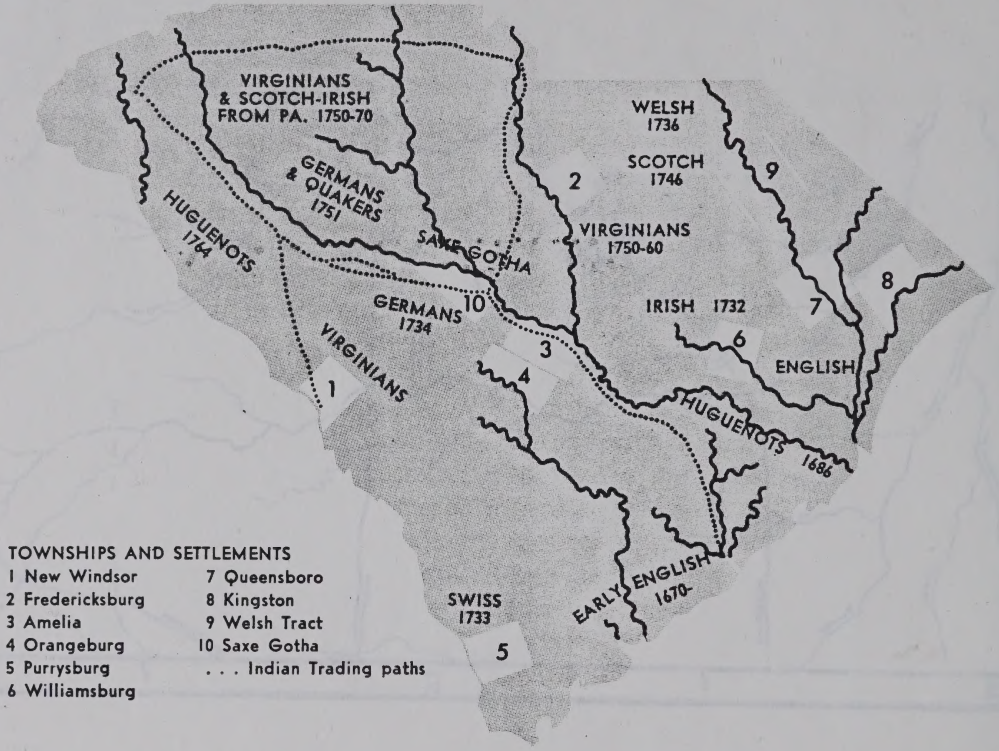
SOUTH CAROLINA PARISHES
5 Prince George, Winyah, 1722
6 St. Johns, Berkeley, 1706
7 St. James, Santee, 1706
8 St. Thomas and St. Dennis, 1706
9 Christ Church, 1706
10 St. James, Goose Creek, 1706
11 St. George, Dorchester, 1717
12 St. Andrews, 1706
13 St. Philips, 1704
14 St. Bartholomew, 1706
15 St. Pauls, 1706
16 St. Helena, 1712

NOTE: Units of local government in North Carolina were called precincts until 1739 when they were changed to counties.



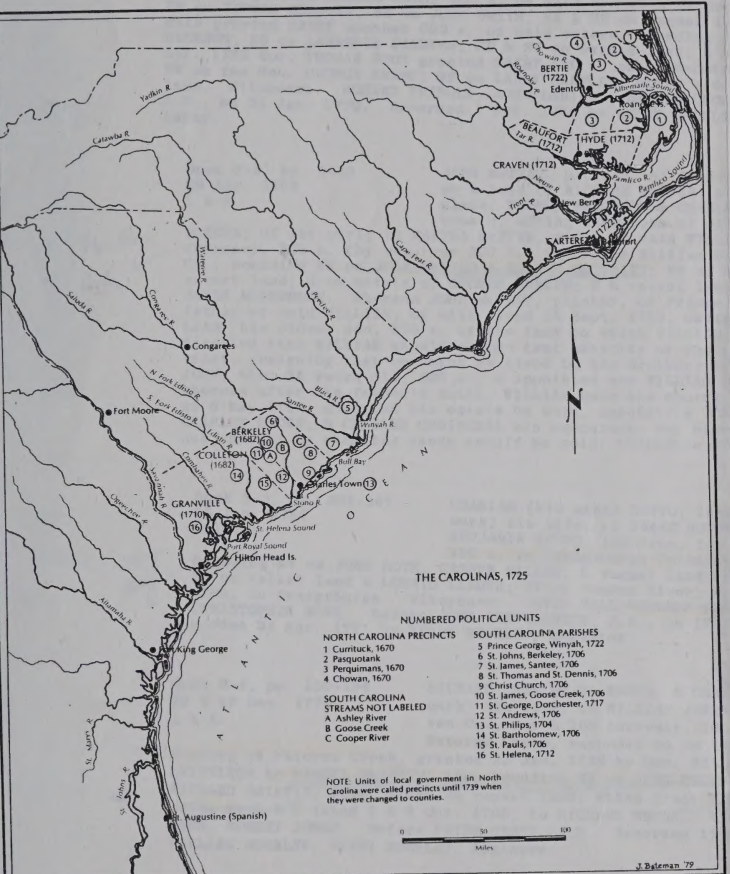
UPPER CREEKS
SOUTH CAROLINA
PART OF GEORGIA
Broad River call'd also Savannah River which parts the Cherokee and Creek Lands
Fort Charlotte
NEW BORDEAUX
LONDONDERRY
PRECINCT
SAXE GOTHA TOWNSHIP
Saluda River
Congaree River
North Fork of Edisto
South Fork of Edisto
ORANGEBURG
St. Matthew
AMELIA TOWNSHIP
ORANGEBURG TOWNSHIP
Orangeburg
St. Marks
Little River which parts the Creeks and Georgia
very Good Land
Brandon
High Rich Land
NEW WINDSOR TOWNSHIP
Fort Moore
AUGUSTA
PRECINCT
Great Ogeechee
New Savannah
Savannah River
St. Georges
Pine Land the Lowest in the Province
St. Johns
St. James
Goose Creek
Dorchester
Edisto or Pompon River
Saltketchers
CHARLES TOWN
St. Bartholomew
Prince William
BEAUFORT
St. Peter's
St. Pauls
St. Johns
St. Lukes
Purysburg
New Goettingen
Pleasant Good Land
Path from Oakfuskee
Oakmulgee
Ocunnee deserted in 1715 and removed to Chatahoochee River
Little Ogeechee River
Buffaloe Creek
Beaver Dam
Brier Creek
Little Ogechee
Mount Pleasant
Ebenezer
Abercorn
SAVANNAH
Cockspur
Fort Argyle
Lower Trading Path
Old Trading Path
Ocmulgee or Okamulgee River
Alatamaha or St. George River
the Fork
all Pine Land back from the Rivers
Oconee
Ocanahatchee C.
Togoehatchee Creek
34
33
32
30m
Longitude West from LONDON
83
82
81
80

Publish'd as the Act directs May 30th 1775 by R. Sayer and J. Bennett.


VIRGINIANS & SCOTCH-IRISH FROM PA. 1750-70
GERMANS & QUAKERS 1751
HUGUENOTS 1764
SAXE GOTHA
GERMANS 1734
VIRGINIANS
WELSH 1736
SCOTCH 1746
VIRGINIANS 1750-60
IRISH 1732
ENGLISH
HUGUENOTS 1686
EARLY ENGLISH 1670-
SWISS 1733
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
TOWNSHIPS AND SETTLEMENTS
1 New Windsor
2 Fredericksburg
3 Amelia
4 Orangeburg
5 Purrysburg
6 Williamsburg
7 Queensboro
8 Kingston
9 Welsh Tract
10 Saxe Gotha
. . . Indian Trading paths

even heard the Lord's Prayer. In shock, he wrote, "After the Service they went out to Revellg, Drinking, Singing, Dancing and Whoring, and most of the Company was drunk before I quitted the Spott."

For awhile the newcomers had a good record of law and order. The idle and worthless are not attracted to new frontiers near the Indians. Eventually, in the 1760s a group of villains were to come and to be a source of much trouble. Those who adopted vigilante tactics in the face of these ruffians, however, did not exactly qualify as Little Lord Fauntleroys themselves, however devoted to "law and order" they may have been. The tart-tongued Woodmason portrays some rather wretched conditions and uninspiring characters in his record of his own passionate combat against immorality and irreligion in general and against Baptists and Presbyterians in particular. A sample: "Almost perish'd in these Journeys—the Weather sharp and cold. Their Cabbins quite open and expos'd. Little or no Bedding, or anything to cover them. Not a drop of anything, save Cold Water to


THE CAROLINAS, 1725
NUMBERED POLITICAL UNITS
NORTH CAROLINA PRECINCTS
1 Currituck, 1670
2 Pasquotank
3 Perquimans, 1670
4 Chowan, 1670
SOUTH CAROLINA STREAMS NOT LABELED
A Ashley River
B Goose Creek
C Cooper River
SOUTH CAROLINA PARISHES
5 Prince George, Winyah, 1722
6 St. Johns, Berkeley, 1706
7 St. James, Santee, 1706
8 St. Thomas and St. Dennis, 1706
9 Christ Church, 1706
10 St. James, Goose Creek, 1706
11 St. George, Dorchester, 1717
12 St. Andrews, 1706
13 St. Philips, 1704
14 St. Bartholomew, 1706
15 St. Pauls, 1706
16 St. Helena, 1712
NOTE: Units of local government in North Carolina were called precincts until 1739 when they were changed to counties.
0
50
100
Miles
J. Bateman '79
BERTIE (1722)
Edenton
Chowan R.
Roanoke R.
Albemarle Sound
Roanoke
BEAUFORT (1712)
HYDE (1712)
Tar R.
CRAVEN (1712)
Pamlico R.
Pamlico Sound
Neuse R.
Trent R.
New Bern
CARTERET (1722)
Beaufort
Yadkin R.
Catawba R.
Cape Fear R.
Pee Dee R.
Wateree R.
Congaree R.
Saluda R.
Congarees
N. Fork Edisto R.
S. Fork Edisto R.
Edisto R.
Fort Moore
Black R.
Santee R.
Winyah R.
BERKELEY (1682)
COLLETON (1682)
Combahee R.
Savannah R.
Bull Bay
Charles Town
Stono R.
GRANVILLE (1710)
St. Helena Sound
Port Royal Sound
Hilton Head Is.
Ogeechee R.
Altamaha R.
King George
St. Marys R.
St. Johns R.
St. Augustine (Spanish)
ATLANTIC OCEAN
N

frontier, and the Assembly turned to rangers who c
similar to ones Virginia and Maryland had initiate
originally for rangers in 1716, the Assemb[illegible]ntinu
that designated three groups in addition [illegible]e gar
assigned to the Old Palachacola Town on the Savan
lieutenant, and twenty-eight privates; another com
rangers" patrolled Rawling's plantation on Edisto
five privates; and the third group known as the "
captain and nine privates. In addition to the provis
and care of both the garrison and ranger troops, a
current money was authorized to any person, w
service, for "every entire scalp of a male Indian er
whole scalp had to be presented to discourage unsc
cutting it into several pieces in an effort to collect m

Other changes occurred in the supervision of I
Indian trade. The system of Indian commissioners r
licensing agents continued, but in the aftermath c
colony wanted to improve administration of the tra
June 30, 1716, the provisions for a public monopoly
urged in previous years by planters in the lowe
resisted until this time by the merchants of the upp
monopoly came because of the desperate state of t
over the failure of earlier trade and diplomacy to
Indians. The measure was also aided by the pote
revival of trade with Indians to the southwest, part
Cherokee.

The public monopoly provided for the trade
commissioners named in the act under direction fr
Only three "factories" were authorized and were to
Congaree, and Winyah. This limitation p[illegible]d un
because of the distance it forced them to [illegible]vel a
traders in their own town. Theophilus Hastings,
country, stated to the Commissioners of the India
Charikees utterly dislike coming down to the Garr
agree to that Proposal, on any Account, (except
additional factories were authorized and set up in
also considerable quibbling by Carolinians about p
Indians and about the possibility of driving them i
and Spanish, or at least into the trading posts
undesirable for Carolinians.

The public monopoly was an issue clouded by co
focus of discontent was the repeal of the act by th
largely through the urging of London merchants. A

Griffith

Book O-3, pp. 507-517
14 & 15 Dec. 1769
L & R

GEORGE SAXBY, ESQ., & ELIZABETH his wife, to EDWARD GRIFFITH, merchant, both of Charleston, for Ŀ 1750 currency, 4 plantations of 1000 a., 600 a., 600 a., 550 a. Whereas on 16 Feb. 1759 Gov. WILLIAM HENRY LYTTELTON granted GEORGE SAXBY 1000 a. on the branches of Coosahatchee & Chulapheny Creeks, in Granville Co., bounding NW on ROBERT MACKEWN; SE on DUNCAN McQUEEN; NE & SW on vacant land; & on same day granted GEORGE SAXBY 600 a. on said branches of creeks, bounding NW on THOMAS ELLIOTT; SE on JOHN SMITH; NE & SW on vacant land; & on same date granted SAXBY another 600 a. on said waters, bounding NW on JAMES DICKSON; SE on LAWRENCE SANDERS; NE & SW on vacant land; & whereas on 2 Apr. 1762 Gov. THOMAS BOON granted SAXBY 550 a. on Coosahatchee, bounding NW on the Hon. GEORGE SAXBY; SE on LARRY SANDERS; other sides on vacant land. Witnesses: ROBERT PRINGLE, JOHN DERING. Before GEORGE MURRAY, J.P., on 30 Jan. 1770. Recorded 1 Feb. 1770 by HENRY RUGELEY, Dep. Register.

Charleston

Book P-3, pp. 5-12
25 Apr. 1769
L & R

JOHN McTEER, planter, of Granville Co., brother & heir of WILLIAM McTEER, planter, of same place; THOMAS FERGUSON & CHARLES BROWN, merchants; acting executors of will of WILLIAM McTEER; of 1st part; to MARTHA McTEER, widow of said WILLIAM; for Ŀ 5400 currency, 500 a. (by resurvey 533 a.) in Prince William Parish, Granville Co., bounding NE on JOHN McTEER & EDWARD GRIFFITH; NW on MATHEW BEARD & vacant land; S on estate of GEORGE WARING; N & vacant land; E on CAPT. JAMES McPHERSON. Whereas JOHN McTEER, planter, of Prince William Parish, father of said WILLIAM, by will dated 15 Sept. 1753, devised to said WILLIAM, his eldest son, 520 a. of the land on which WILLIAM then lived, but directed that WILLIAM should choose that quantity at the upper end of the tract, resigning that on which he lived to his brother; also devised to JOHN, when 25 years old, 520 a.; & appointed son WILLIAM sole executor; & whereas after his father's death, WILLIAM made his choice, & by will dated 6 May 1767, directed his estate be sold, appointing THOMAS FERGUSON, CHARLES BROWN, & CHARLES ODDINGSEL his executors; but since the will did not specify by whom the lands should be sold; therefore JOHN McTEER joins

Pr Wm Psh

Book S-3, pp. 392-397
25 Jan. 1755
Release

CHARLES (his mark) HUTTO, laborer, & ANN (her mark) his wife, to ISAAC HUTTO, JACOB HUTTO, & BENJAMIN HUTTO, laborers, for Ŀ 50 currency, 350 a. in Orangeburgh Township, Berkeley Co., bounding NW on JOHN ROTE, CASPER MILLER, & vacant land; NE on vacant land; SE on vacant land & LUDWIG LINDER; SW on PonPon River; also a half a. lot, #282, in Orangeburgh. Witnesses: DAVID HALL, JOSEPH (his mark) GRIFFETH, CHRISTOPHER ROWE. Before JOHN CHEVILLETTE, J.P., on 17 Feb. 1755. Recorded 24 Apr. 1771 by HENRY RUGELEY, Register.

Orange burg

Dec 1770

CRAVEN

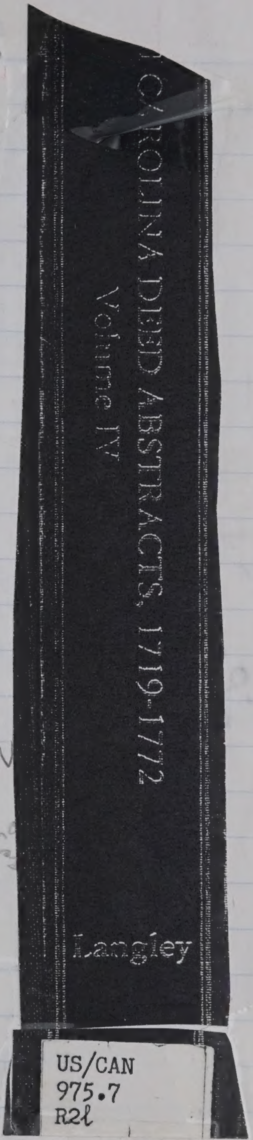
Book B-4, pp. 150-154
28 & 29 Dec. 1770
L & R

RICHARD (his mark) SNUGS, & CHRISTIAN (her mark) his wife, to WILLIAM JONES, both of Craven Co., for Ŀ 100 currency, 100 a. on NE side Wateree Creek, supposed to be 1/2 of 200 a. on N prong of Wateree Creek, granted 22 Jan. 1759 by Gov. WILLIAM HENRY LYTTELTON to SAMUEL GRIFFIN; then bounding NE on JOHN GRIFFIN; SW on RICHARD GRIFFIN; other sides on vacant land; which tract SAMUEL GRIFFIN sold, by L & R dated 7 & 8 Oct. 1765, to RICHARD SNUGS. Witnesses: JOHN WINN, ROBERT JONES. Before PETER GRANT, J.P. Recorded 11 Jan. 1773 by WILLIAM RUGELEY, HENRY RUGELEY, Register.

Craven Co
N prong
Wateree

Book E-4, pp. 352-357
7 & 8 June 1773
L & R

EDMUND (his mark) CARROL, of St. Marks Parish, to ANDREW SALLISBURY, for Ŀ 100 currency, 100 a. in the fork of Congaree & Wateree Rivers on a branch of Stono Creek, bounding SW on JOHN GRIFFIN; other sides on vacant land; granted EDMUND CARROL 12 Dec. 1771 by Gov. CHARLES GREVILLE MONTAGU. Witnesses: WILLIAM ELLIOTT, WILLIAM REID, JOHN MOFFETT. Before EDMUND COSSENS, J.P. Recorded 5 Aug. 1773.



CAROLINA DEED ABSTRACTS, 1719-1772
Volume IV
Langley

US/CAN
975.7
R2l

It's unlikely the Griffiths on this or reverse page are ours. Copied just in case.

C-5, 244-250: Lease and release. 17 & 18 Nov 1779, John Raven Mathews of Charles Town, SC, Esquire, and Elizabeth his wife, to Edward Griffith of Prince Williams Parish, for £20,000 SC money, lot on east side of old Church Street adj. land late of Benjamin Mathews, said John Raven Mathews, Paul Hamilton. John Raven Mathews (LS), Elizabeth Mathews (LS), Wit: Isc. Holmes, J. B. Holmes. Proved by the oath of J. B. Holmes in Charles Town District 23 Feb 1781 before Wm. Rugeley, J.P. Recorded 25 Feb 1781. Elizabeth Mathews, wife of John Raven Mathews, relinquished dower 18 Dec 1779 before Aedanus Burke.

Pr Wm

1775

D-5, 284-286: 30 Sept 1775, Joseph Kershaw of Camden, merchant, to Aaron Loocock of Charlestown, merchant, for £1500 SC money, two adj. tracts of land 250 acres on south west side Wateree River in Craven County, 150 acres being granted to Thomas Smith 1 Feb 1758 recorded in Book RR, page 142 and by said Thomas Smith conveyed to John Griffin and by said John Griffin to Joseph Kershaw, 4 &5 Sept 1765; the other tract of 100 acres granted to said Joseph Kershaw 31 March 1761 recorded in Book V, page 34. Joseph Kershaw (LS), Wit: Jno Caldwell, John Wyly. Proved in Chs. Town District before Henry Rugeley by the oath of John Adamson who attested to the signature of John Wyly 13 Aug 1781. Recorded 2 Oct 1781.

witness

SOUTH CAROLINA
DEED ABSTRACTS
1776-1783

Books Y-4 through H-5

Abstracted by

Brent H. Holcomb

Indexed
L.L.L. 2
AUG 15 1952

THE EXPANSION

of

SOUTH CAROLINA

1729–1765

DATE MICROFICHED
FEB 24 1993 19
PROJECT and FICHE # 2118710S #12854
G. S. CALL # 6101664

① Welsh Tract (Pedee/Cheraws)

② NW Frontier

No wonder decent, ambitious folk like Dicks and Griffiths moved to Kentucky & Tennessee after the Rev War ended, to better their condition. This and the pages about the Regulators explain what conditions were like.

By

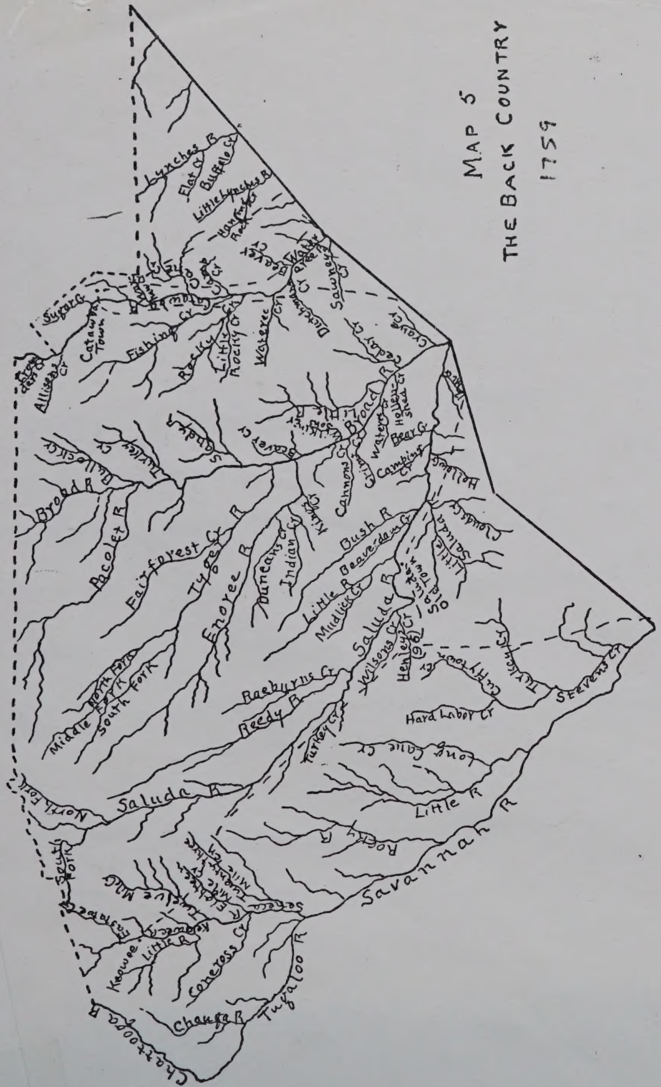
ROBERT L. MERIWETHER

Professor of History
University of South Carolina

GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY
OF THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST
OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS
47169

SOUTHERN PUBLISHERS, Inc.
KINGSPORT, TENNESSEE
1940

S.C. 50
975.7


Lynches R
Flat Cr
Buffalo Cr
Little Lynches R
Hanging Rock
Sugar Cr
Catawba Town
Allisons Cr
Fishing Cr
Rocky Cr
Little Rocky Cr
Wateree Cr
Beaver Cr
Dutchmans Cr
Sawney Cr
Cedar Cr
Crane Cr
Broad R
Thicketty Cr
Turkey Cr
Sandy R
Pacolet R
Fairforest Cr
Tyger R
Enoree R
Duncans Cr
Indian Cr
Kings Cr
Cannons Cr
Bear Cr
Bush R
Beaver-dam Cr
Little R
Mudlick Cr
Saluda R
Little Saluda
Clouds Cr
Wilsons Cr
Henleys Cr
Ninety Six
Cuffytown Cr
Turkey Cr
Stevens Cr
Hard Labor Cr
Long Cane Cr
Little R
Rocky R
Savannah R
Raeburns Cr
Reedy R
Middle Fork
North Fork
South Fork
Saluda R
North Fork
South Fork
Twelve Mile
Eighteen Mile Cr
Seneca R
Keowee R
Little R
Conneross Cr
Chauga R
Tugaloo R
Chattooga R

MAP 5
THE BACK COUNTRY
1759

THE SETTLEMENT OF THE BACK COUNTRY

By 1759 South Carolina settlement, following the rivers of the middle country, had largely realized Governor Johnson's plan. As though by a seven-fingered hand the tidewater had laid hold upon the entire coastal plain, and by its economic and social system bound the region securely to itself. Meanwhile for twenty years forces of expansion, much the same as those which had settled the lower and upper pine belts, had been filling up the piedmont. Already, however, it was apparent that this was a section fundamentally different from the plain below the sand hills, and the grave problems which were in store for the South Carolina government were even now faintly foreshadowed.

Soil, topography, climate and distance from the coast all had their part in marking out a different development for this "up country", as it later came to be called. Originally it was a low plain of sand and clay, with its seashore the line of great sand banks which later became the sand hills. As the ocean receded to its present position, the rivers deepened their valleys across the piedmont plain which now became a plateau, carved into rectangles and triangles by the parallel or converging streams. A thousand creeks cut through the edges of these valleys, sometimes reducing them to gentle slopes, but near the large streams making veritable little mountain ranges. The desirable land thus came to lie upon two levels, the river valley with its adjoining creek bottoms, and the long parallel stretch of plateau with its ridges that reached out and interlaced with the arms of the valley. The river sometimes ran through a wide basin, then again between steeply sloping sides, while the upland stretches in turn might be several miles wide or mere ridges from which one could look down a creek bottom in either direction to a river.

the attacks made upon the Indians themselves by their own enemies. As late as 1751 a party of northern Indians traversed the region quite to the coast and there slew or captured five Uchees. About this time at Silver Bluff the Uchees lost thirty-five of their women and children in the same manner, but turned the tables on the invaders and killed nearly all of them. Most of these settlement Indians went to the Creeks about 1750, and by 1761 the rest of them appear to have followed.[23]

After 1740 large grants in this region ceased for a time. During the next twenty years a score of men of English name had warrants or surveys here for tracts of five hundred acres or less, chiefly on the Salkehatchie. One of these plats, in the fork of the river, shows "Indigo vats" near a house. An advertisement of a larger holding in 1760 gives an unusually complete description of an indigo plantation. It consisted of one thousand acres on Buckhead Swamp, a branch of the east fork of the Salkehatchie; one hundred acres of the higher land had been planted with indigo in 1758 and fifty more the next year—all of it under good fence; more than one-third of the tract was good swamp for rice, a hundred acres having been cleared; there were "eleven setts of wedged indico vats", together with a large quantity of rice, corn feed and some hogs. The plantation had been in the hands of an overseer.[24]

The northern half of this district lay in the upper pine belt, the swamps becoming smaller as the sand hills near New Windsor were approached, the sand becoming less compact, and the soil usually better drained. Here about twenty small landholders settled by 1760, most of them on the Upper Three Runs or on Steel Creek, but several were on the Lower Three Runs.[25] Farther down, on the headwaters of the Coosawhatchie, in a slightly rolling section which is in effect an extension of the upper pine belt, a small group made their homes. Thomas Barker in 1755 had a plat surveyed on Jacksons Branch, which drained into the Salkehatchie; part of his land was the site of Jackson's "Old Cowpen". John Townsend Dade, who in 1748 was a settler in the Welsh Tract, in 1758 had a hundred and fifty acres surveyed on Duck Branch, a tributary of the Coosawhatchie. Dade and his wife were among the first members of the Coosawhatchie Baptist Church organized here in 1759—the first Baptist church to be established beyond the tidewater after those of the Peedee and Lynches River. The minister of this church was James Smart who first appears in the province on Lynches River. Four years after the organization of the church he had a plat surveyed on Beech Branch of Coosawhatchie. Henry Smart had land surveyed adjoining that of James and probably came with him. These and other names among the nineteen original members of the church show that it was largely an offshoot of the distant Welsh Neck Church.[26]

-(Beaufort)

In the entire region, from the Forks to the Upper Three Runs, cattle raising was evidently an important business until the Revolution. Lazarus Brown in 1758 became owner of three hundred and fifty acres on the Lower Three Runs from which he advertised in 1765 a thousand head of cattle. Brown was reputed to be the tallest man in the province—nearly seven feet. He was killed by one of his slaves who was tried and according to sentence burned alive. Robert Oswald in 1761 advertised for sale three thousand acres on the Coosawhatchie, including good corn, rice and indigo land and six hundred cattle. In 1768 a stock of two thousand head was advertised, part being in the fork and part on Buckhead Swamp, "being as good a range for cattle as any in the southern parts of the province, having a large cane swamp between them for a winter's range, and a most extensive and plentiful summer's range." And in 1771 there was offered a third of a stock of cattle and horses "ranging on *Coosawhatchie,* reckoned one of the largest Stocks and as good Cattle as any in this Province." [27]

The continued weakness of the southwest was the chief factor in the effort of the Commons in the 'forties to work out a plan of settlement for the parishes, and in 1749 the governor and council reserved the vacant lands in a six-mile strip along the Savannah from Purrysburg to New Windsor for persons who would settle upon them. The reservation amounted to no more than did the parish settlement plans, but the renewed immigration of the foreign Protestants a few years later provided a partial solution of the problem. For lack of sufficient vacant lands near the tidewater the Germans were evidently directed to the upper part of the Salkehatchie forks, and there between 1753 and 1759 at least sixty surveys were made, amounting to over eleven thousand acres. The great majority of these were on or near Willow Swamp, Coltsons Branch or the forks of the Salkehatchie nearby. Forty or fifty miles from tidewater, they were on the edge of the upper pine belt, and had good land for the compact settlements for which the Germans in other parts of the province had shown so marked a prefimpelled to publish in the *South Carolina Gazette* of May 2nd an affidavit he had made in January preceding. From the piazza of the house of John McDougal, justice of the peace and tavern keeper of Kingston, Hunter had seen the owner and Joseph Jordon begin a quarrel which, interlarded with many and furious oaths, proceeded to displays of horsewhip, sword, and knife; in the course of the long altercation Jordon paused to eat the victuals set before him by the negro wench of the tavern, and on McDougal's refusal to let him have punch, sent to Mrs. Wilson's for it. Presently McDougal wounded Jordon, pursued him eighty yards to a smith's shop and there killed him. Mrs. Gaddis dressed a cut in McDougal's hand, and a negro belonging to Hunter's schooner also saw part of the affair.

---

[23] JCHA, May 27, 1742; JC, May 26, 1742, May 7, June 15, July 2, 1751, Apr. 4, 1761; JUHA, June 6, 1747; Adair, *American Indians,* p. 346.

[24] JC, July 4, Sept. 6, 1749, July 3, Aug. 7, 1753, Oct. 21, 1755, Aug. 23, Oct. 5, 1756, Jan. 4, Sept. 6, 1757, Aug. 1, Oct. 5, Nov. 7, Dec. 5, 1758, Jan. 2, Feb. 6, 1759; P, V, 137. The advertisement was that of John Lining (*SCG,* Mar. 15, 1760).

[25] Bureau of Soils, Barnwell, Bamberg and Hampton; for the upper settlements see P, VI, 231, 359, VII, 133, 176, 182; for the others see P, VI, 294, 296, 304, 305.

[26] JC, Mar. 8, 1748, Mar. 4, 1755, P, VI, 252, XI, 411; Barker was probably from St. George Dorchester (JCHA, Mar. 16, 1756). See below, p. 145, P, VIII, 249, Townsend, *S. C. Baptists,* pp. 47–48. The church has long been known as Beech Branch Baptist Church.

[27] P, VI, 296; see advertisements, *SCG,* June 25, 1750, Aug. 29, 1761, May 4, 1765, July 2, 1772, *SCGCJ,* Jan. 9, 1770, July 30, 1772, *SCAGG,* July 15, 1768, May 27, 1771.

The Reverend John Baxter of Cainhoy occasionally preached at Waccamaw, and in 1756 William Donaldson, a newly ordained minister from the north, accepted a call to that congregation. After his death three years later the *Gazette* advertised his estate—seven hundred acres on the river, ten slaves, and the year's indigo crop. Mouzon's map of 1775 shows a church at Kingston, and in 1795 Bishop Asbury preached in an old Presbyterian meeting-house then repaired for the Methodists.[23] This church could hardly have been other than a Presbyterian church founded chiefly by the Scotch-Irish settlement of Kingston, and served by Baxter and Donaldson.

---

[23] Howe, *Presbyterian Church,* I, 282, 594, *SCG,* Dec. 8, 1759 (advt. of Glen and Skinner).

CHAPTER VIII

QUEENSBORO AND THE WELSH TRACT

The Peedee, like the Santee and Savannah, offered the best advantages for the small farmer in its upper pine belt, which lay above Black Creek. In 1729, however, the population north of the Santee was too scanty for the government to encourage settlement at such a distance, and the Peedee township was placed on the lower course of the river in a region of many and wide swamps, ill adapted as a whole to any but large plantations. Queensboro was surveyed in 1733 and lay on both sides of the Peedee, having its "town" and center on the west bank three or four miles above the mouth of Lynches River.[1]

In November of this year James Gordon, proposing to settle one hundred families in Queensboro, applied to the assembly for the same aid as that given to Purry. The Commons House refused his request on the ground that the northern townships needed no encouragement for settlement. Thereupon, in 1734, Gordon at his own expense imported twenty-seven persons whom he freed from indentures the next year when he applied for the bounty for these and for twenty-one others just arrived. The second group was from Pennsylvania as probably was the first; each settler was given a bounty of eight bushels of corn and a peck of salt. Gordon was commissioned as justice of the peace and captain of the militia for the township although he seems to have had his home in Georgetown.[2]

The bounty given was only a part of the usual supply, but these settlers, being neither foreign nor European, were not within the intention of the settlement program. No individual grants appear which would correspond to this migration, but Gordon himself in 1735 had surveys made in the township of eight tracts amounting to thirty-one hundred acres. The settlers may have established themselves in the township, or perhaps moved up the river with the later arrivals from Pennsylvania. As for the town, so little was it regarded that Gordon had his overseer plant the area reserved for it. Meanwhile the planters were taking up the land of Queensboro. Besides Gordon's holdings there were a dozen others of a thousand acres or more, and by 1745 about sixty-five plats had been surveyed, which brought the total to nearly thirty thousand acres. The three surveys of John Hammerton, Secretary of the province, who was the chief grantee, amounted to four thousand acres.[3]

---

[1] JC, Mar. 10, 1732; JCHA, Sept. 20, 1733; copies of Welsh Tract and Queensboro plats (see Alexander Gregg, *History of the Old Cheraws*—Columbia, 1905—opposite pp. 45 and 49, and n. 8 below), De Brahm, *Map of S. C.* The township and its town may also be approximately located by the following plats: P, I, 512, II, 160, 172, 427.

[2] JCHA, Nov. 17, Dec. 6, 1733; JC, Mar. 7, 29, 1735; *SCG,* Mar. 8, 1740 (advt. of sale of Gordon's property). In his estimate of expenses of the province for settlement (PR, XVII, 228—above, p. 22, n. 14) Furye listed a year's allowance "to Mr. Gordon & 40 Highlanders in one of the Northern Townships" but the group cannot be identified, nor, perhaps, the statement entirely relied upon.

Even earlier than the arrival of Gordon's immigrants several men had settled on the river above the township. Malachai Murphy, a native of the province, claimed to have purchased part of a warrant for land on the Peedee about 1728. He made his home a short distance above Mars Bluff, a three or four mile stretch of high ground on the west bank of the river five miles above Jeffreys Creek.[4] When in 1746 he applied for a warrant for the land he had so long occupied without legal title, he had twelve slaves. Gideon Gibson, who established a cowpen on the Peedee about 1732, later moved to the Little Peedee.[5]

John Thompson, Junior, lived near enough to Prince Frederick's Church on the lower Black River to serve as vestryman, but in 1735 he had a thousand acres surveyed on the point between Jeffreys Creek and the Peedee, and by the spring of 1736 several tracts for others were surveyed on the creek nearby. Thompson traded with the Cheraw Indians, who lived on the east bank of the river at the shoals and caused the vicinity to be called "the Cheraws".[6] They hunted along the river, with some of the Peedees who probably lived with them, and claimed the land at least as far down as Mars Bluff, sometimes called "the Little Cheraws". Francis Young lived on the river opposite the Great Cheraws town, and he and Thompson later had lands surveyed there at the mouth of Thompsons Creek.[7]

In August 1736 Lieutenant-Governor Broughton and the council read and granted the petition of David Lewis, Samuel Wild and Daniel James. These men represented members of a colony of Welsh Baptists living in Newcastle County, then one of the three Lower Counties of Pennsylvania, but later part of the state of Delaware. On examination they had found the land of the Peedee valley suited to their purpose of raising "Hemp, Flax, Wheat, Barley &ca". They asked for the prospective settlers a reservation of ten thousand acres of Queensboro—the northeast portion of that township—and all the land above for eight miles on each side the river as far as the junction of its two main branches. The nearest tributary of the Peedee that could be called its main branch was Little River, seventy miles north of Queensboro and twenty miles beyond the North Carolina line as later surveyed. The South Carolina portion alone thus constituted a reservation for immigrants with which no township could compare in area of fertile and convenient land.[8]

Associated with James in the reservation for the Welsh was Maurice Lewis, a Charleston member of the Commons House who had but recently taken up surveys of fifteen hundred acres of land in Queensboro, and who called himself one of "the Welch and Pensilvanians". The records of the Welsh Tract Baptist Church in Pennsylvania state, in November 1735, that Abel Morgan, teaching elder, James James, ruling elder, Thomas Evan, deacon, Daniel James, Samuel Miles [Wilds], John Harry, John Harry, Junior, Thomas Harry, Jeremiah Rowell, Richard Barrow, Thomas Money, Nathaniel Evan, Mary James, Annie Evan, Sarah James, Mary Wilds, Elizabeth Harry, Margaret Harry, Eleanor Jenkin, Sarah Harry, Margaret William, Mary Rowell, and Sarah Barrow were removed to Carolina and were dismissed to the Baptist Church in Charleston, or permitted to form themselves into a church. But not until January 1737 is there reference in the South Carolina records to the arrival of "several" in the province.[9] During the year 1737 the Welsh Tract Church dismissed to the Peedee settlement eight men and seven women, in 1738 John Jones and his wife, Ann, and in 1739 and 1741 several other members. With the exception of Abel Morgan, listed in the record as returned, James James who soon died, and Thomas Money, references to all the men named appear on Peedee plats within the next few years.[10] In the summer of 1737 warrants were granted to several whose names do not appear in the minutes of the mother church, among them Evan Vaughan, Samuel Sarancy and Evan Davis.[11]

---

[3] See above, p. 20, n. 9; P, II, 316, 322, 344, IV, 14–18, 20, 22–24, 39–40; JC, June 2, 1752. In 1743 five hundred acres in fifty acre tracts was advertised as formerly the property of Gordon (*SCG*, Mar. 14th).

[4] JC, Apr. 13, 1744, Feb. 20, 1746 (the name is sometimes given as Michael); Welsh Tract plat (below, n. 8); *SCG*, Apr. 17, 1755 (advt. of Edward Jerman); Bureau of Soils, Florence (map).

[5] JC, Nov. 12, 1747, P, IV, 510. He was probably the carpenter who came from Virginia—JCHA, July 2, 8, 1731—but the identity of the Gideon Gibsons is not clear.

[6] See index to *Register . . . Prince Frederick* and P, III, 156, 516, IV, 5; JUHA, Jan. 26, 1738; JC, June 8, 1739; Mooney, *Siouan Tribes*, p. 60.

[7] *SCG*, Feb. 7, 1761, *SCGCJ*, Aug. 26, 1766 (advts. of Andrew Johnston and Isaac Navel); Grooms' land was on or near Mars Bluff (*SCAGG*, Mar. 18, 1768—advt. of John Murray); JC, Nov. 9, 1743; P. IV, 195, 263–264.

[8] *Records of the Welsh Tract Baptist Meeting . . . Delaware, 1701–1828* (Wilmington, 1904), I, 7–18; JC, Aug. 13, 1736; Gregg, *Old Cheraws*, pp. 614–617. The plat finally surveyed according to these directions was not returned until January 1738 (JC, Jan. 27, 1738); it has not been found. A plat of Nov. 29, 1736, rejected by the administration, is in the state archives; it is reproduced without the signature of the surveyor in Gregg, *Old Cheraws*, opp. p. 49. For the attempts to deceive the administration into depriving the Welsh of a great part of their reservation, see JC, Feb. 18, Dec. 14, 1737, Jan. 27, 1738, July 7, 1739; *SCG*, Feb. 12, 1737 (proclamation).

[9] JCHA, Feb. 1, 1738, *Register of St. Philip's*, pp. 128, 167, P, III, 375, 412, JC, Jan. 19, 1737.

[10] See Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, p. 62, n. 2; P, IV, 297 (Wild), 203 (S. Parsons), 197 (J. Rowell), IV, 262 (Barrow), 302 (Ellerbe, adjoining N. Evans), 187 (Dousenal—*i.e.*, Devonald), 189 (Evan Harry, adjoining J. Harry).

[11] JC, July 29, 1737. Daniel James already had received a warrant for 350 acres (JC, Dec. 9, 1736).

To each head of a family among these settlers arriving in 1737 were given six bushels of corn and a bushel of salt. Eight hundred and fifty-nine pounds was set aside from the township fund as a bounty for the first two hundred settlers over twelve years of age who should come from Wales. The reservation was extended from time to time until 1745, but there is no evidence of direct immigration from Wales, the war with Spain being given as the cause of the failure of the plan. From Pennsylvania, however, the Welsh continued to come in considerable numbers.[12]

The immigrants made little use of the lower half of their great reservation. In 1737 Thomas Evans and the widow of Samuel Wilds had their surveys made in or near Queensboro, followed in 1738 by Thomas James, Griffith John and Evan, John and David Harry. These were near the mouth of Catfish Creek. There was room for others, for none of the plats showed outsiders adjoining, but the rest of the Welsh evidently preferred land farther north.[13]

Between Black Creek and the sand hills on either side of the Cheraws the Welsh Tract included the typical soils of the upper pine belt. A short distance from the river was a light sandy loam, excellently adapted to agriculture, but next to the Peedee the land was even more fertile, convenient for water transportation, and, because of the forage in the swamp portions, better suited for cattle raising. A five mile square of this river bottom, on the east side of the river and ten miles below the Cheraws, lay nearly enclosed in a great bend of the Peedee. The soil was a rich silt loam like that of Raifords Creek, and the area less subject to the floods that afflicted it later when the valley above was cleared. Here in the "Welch Neck", before they had been a year in the province, the Welsh began their surveys, their plats fronting the river above and below the mouth of Crooked Creek. William and Abel James, Thomas Evans, James Rogers, William Terrel, Daniel Devonal and John Jones had their plats made in 1738.[14] Within seven years of that date nearly a hundred plats were run out in the Welsh reservation, amounting to about twenty five thousand acres. Few of the holdings were over five hundred acres. The population of five hundred thus represented was probably half Welsh, all of whom lived in or near the Welsh Neck. The petitions from the west side of the river indicate that a larger number of the early settlers there came from the South Carolina coast than from Virginia or the northern colonies.

One of the first difficulties of the Welsh was with the Cheraw and Peedee Indians who by "running among their Settlements under pretence of Hunting" caused them great uneasiness. In 1739 John Thompson was called before the lieutenant-governor and council, but he denied that he had promoted "any misunderstanding between the Welch and Indians or Virginians &ca." About two years before he had bought all the lands of these Indians on the river, including about forty "old fields" as the abandoned cleared lands of the Indians were called. His expenses, including his service in quieting the apprehensions of settlers in the Welsh Tract and in Williamsburg, came to a hundred and five pounds which the provincial government undertook to pay him in return for surrender of the deed, giving him warrants for a thousand acres of land besides. Some of the Cheraws were already with the Catawbas; probably the rest of their tribe and the Peedees soon joined them.[15]

James James was the leading member of the Welsh group at the time of the migration. He was a justice of the peace in Pennsylvania and was the father of Abel, Daniel and Philip James. He seems to have died within a year, however, and Daniel James became justice of the peace, succeeded in turn by William James, who was likewise the first captain of the militia. Daniel James started a mill which William completed, each receiving a reward of fourteen pounds from the provincial government. John Newberry, on Muddy Creek at the lower end of the Welsh Neck, set up a grist- and sawmill and another like it was built by Gideon Ellis, who came to the Welsh Tract from the lower part of the province, and settled on the south side of the river on or near Jeffreys Creek.[16] Among four other mills projected at the same time one belonged to John Kolp and one to James Gillespie, formerly of Winyaw and sometime Cherokee trader. These mills are evidence of the success of the Welsh plans for grain production. In 1743 the governor and council offered a bounty of fourteen shillings a barrel for the first twenty barrels "of good and merchantable white flower" made in the Welsh Tract and brought to the Charleston market. It was promptly claimed the next year.[17]

---

[12] JC, Dec. 14, 1737 (a few others may have received the bounty later—JC, June 6, 1739, Oct. 15, 1742), July 7, 1739, Jan. 26, 1743, Mar. 25, 1745. James Price, however, claimed to have come from Wales on encouragement by the province; see also William Hughes and Job Edwards (JC, Jan. 22, 1746), and note JC, Jan. 20, July 19, 1738.

[13] P, IV, 145–146, 188–189, 297; the later claim of the Welsh that grants to South Carolinians had forced them to settle further up the river and had prevented immigration of others was evidently an excuse on which to ask an extension of the reservation—(JC, July 7, 1739).

[14] Bureau of Soils, Marlboro; above, p. 59; P, IV, 187, 190–194 (Devonald's plat was stated to be in Queensboro, but later surveys—see P, IV, 394—and the index to Plats show this to be an error). The location of the Welsh Neck surveys may be worked out from the names on a later plat of Thomas James (P, XVII, 228).

[15] JC, June 8, 1739, *SCG*, June 2, 1746, Adair, *American Indians*, p. 224, Indian Books, V, 94. There were other Peedees, living near Charleston (JC, July 25, 1744).

[16] Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, p. 62; JC, June 8, 1739, Jan. 26, Apr. 28, 1743, Nov. 29, 1744, Mar. 14, 1745, Feb. 8, Nov. 20, 1746; P, II, 252–253, IV, 203, 373; *Register of St. Philip's*, p. 166.

[17] JC, Sept. 16, 1736, July 9, 1739, Jan. 26, 1743, Oct. 5, 1744, Mar. 22, 1745, May 29, 1750; for Kolp see JC, Jan. 14, 1746, P, IV, 241; for Gillespie see Commissions and Instructions, p. 186, P, II, 395–396, IV, 282. For other mills see JC, Feb. 8, Nov. 20, 1746.

When in 1747 indigo suddenly became a Carolina staple the planters in the Queensboro portion of the Peedee valley turned to it with great success. Over a thousand acres of James Gordon's land was advertised as extraordinarily good for indigo. It was probably also responsible for no small part of the prosperity of the Welsh Tract. At Mars Bluff eighteen hundred acres was offered for sale which Malachi Murphy said was good for indigo and corn. Even the settlers on the Rocky River in North Carolina made indigo and shipped it to Charleston.[18]

From the expiration of the reservation in 1745 until 1759 settlement proceeded apace. Nearly five hundred warrants were issued for about 115,000 acres of land on the Peedee, chiefly in the Welsh Tract. These warrants represent an addition of 2,300 persons to the five hundred earlier settlers of the region. The militia returns of 1757 listed seven Welsh Tract companies numbering 865 officers and men and 117 male slaves sixteen to sixty years of age, and indicated a population of about 4,300 whites and 500 negroes. The returns, however, list only two companies between the Welsh Tract and the Waccamaw River, and it is probable that some of the so-called Welsh Tract companies included settlers below the lines of that reservation. The population of the Welsh Tract proper was perhaps three thousand whites and three hundred negroes. The slaves were widely distributed, nearly a hundred persons owning them. As early as 1745 Thomas Ellerbe, a Virginian, had applied for warrants on headrights of twenty-five persons, doubtless most of them slaves. George Hicks, likewise from Virginia, could boast fifteen negroes and an overseer, and Samuel Sarancy had twenty-one.[19] The Welsh like the other earlier settlers had their full share in the expansion of holdings in slaves and land. There was, apparently, little shifting of population in the area.

The Peedee was unobstructed by shoals below the Cheraws, and was even navigated above as far as Rocky River. The settlers received "all their salt and heavy goods" by water from Georgetown, but sent their indigo by wagons to Charleston. The Welsh had a church rule censuring a member who should travel up or down the river on the Sabbath save in case of absolute necessity. Thus the Cheraws like the other settlements of the fall line of the rivers was in an excellent position for trade, and references from time to time show that it became the center for the neighboring middle and back country. In 1750 a Charleston firm sued Samuel Armstrong "of Cheraws . . . Trader" for a debt of one hundred pounds made in 1747. In 1760 mention was made of the stores of John Crawford

and Christopher Gadsden, and the next year Gadsden announced the sale of all his goods and warned the public not to trust his Dutch servant who "lately attended at his stores at the *Charraws* and *George-Town.*"[20]

The Welsh Tract paid a penalty for its prosperity and freedom from serious Indian dangers by becoming early a prey to horse thieves. In 1739 one of the petitions of the Welsh complained "That several Out Laws and Fugitives from the Colonies of Virginia and North Carolina most of whom are Mullatoes or of a mixed Blood" had thrust themselves among them, paying no taxes nor quit rents, "and are a Pest & Nuisance to the adjacent Inhabitants". A few years later seven men on the unsurveyed North Carolina boundary defied the officers of both provinces, and sent word to Captain James "to raise all his Company, swearing they were Men enough if the whole Inhabitants of the River came after them." They were part of a band of robbers sought by the Virginia government, and had, so the Welsh suspected, the sympathy of some of their neighbors. The governor, however, thought it sufficient to order James to issue a magistrate's warrant and to call out an adequate force of the militia to enforce it. In 1746 two settlers petitioned for lands elsewhere, one stating that the robbers had reduced his stock of hogs from twenty-five to six. In 1750, on recommendation of James Gillespie, the governor appointed George Hicks and John Crawford justices of the peace, for Gillespie declared that he and James were the only magistrates within a hundred miles, and some of the settlers were "Living very Riotous". Two years later Crawford himself, with about sixty others, petitioned for a county court for the district between the mouth of Lynches River and the North Carolina line, but nothing came of the request.[21]

Another episode in the boundary controversy concerned the lands of Governor Arthur Dobbs, part of whose 200,000 acres lay on Rocky River. A colony of Scotch-Irish from Pennsylvania had settled on his land, but—probably encouraged by the wording of the Welsh Tract reservation—a score of them applied to South Carolina for their grants instead of to the North Carolina governor, hoping to get their land for the cost of fees instead of paying Dobbs fifteen or twenty pounds per hundred acres. In 1755 and 1756 about seventy of these Rocky River settlers petitioned the South Carolina government for protection. They even offered to seize Dobbs' agent and surveyor and bring him to Charleston if Glen would send instructions and commissions to certain of their number as justices of the peace and militia officers. Commissions were given, and under another name the Rocky River company of fifty men was included in the South Carolina militia list of 1757. To avert violent measures, however, Glen and the council urged Governor Dobbs to allow all persons in the disputed boundary area to remain on their lands until the crown gave proper instructions. Final settlement of the dispute did not come until 1764 when the boundary was run west to the Catawba River, and after a riot in which Dobbs was threatened with violence.[22]

---

[18] See *SCG* advertisements of: Alexander Fraser (Mar. 19, 1754), Provost Marshal (June 9, 1759, Nov. 20, 1762), Edward Jerman (Apr. 17, 1755), Andrew Johnston (Feb. 7, 1761), Robert Williams (Sept. 18, 1762); *Col. Recs. of N. C.*, V, 356.

[19] JC, July 5, 1742, Mar. 20, 22, May 3, 1745, Nov. 18, 1747, Nov. 5, 1751, May 4, 1757; note also John Crawford and his ten slaves near Thompsons Creek (JC, June 4, 1751, JCHA, Mar. 27, 1759, P, VI, 52).

[20] *Col. Recs. of N. C.*, V, 357, Welsh Neck Church Book, MS, p. 4; Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, p. 85; Court Records, Common Pleas, Feb. 1750; *SCG*, Mar. 14, 1761. Gadsden's thirteen hundred acre plat in 1763 included land earlier surveyed for John Thompson, and showed a building near the mouth of Thompsons Creek (P, IV, 195, VI, 213). See JCHA, May 19, 1760, for Gadsden and Crawford stores.

[21] JC, July 7, 1739, Mar. 25, 1745, Mar. 12, 1746, May 29, 1750; JCHA, Mar. 17, 1752; JUHA, Mar. 16, 1752, *Col. Recs. of N. C.*, IV, 760.

By this time, very many of the settlers had come down the wagon road through PA & VA & taken up SC land, thinking they were still in N. Carolina, S.C. disdained all but the taxes & provided no local government!

The Welsh immigrants constituted a religious group as compact and vigorous as that which settled Williamsburg. In January 1738 fifteen of them with their wives were organized as the Peedee—later the Welsh Neck—Baptist Church. Philip James, son of James James, was dismissed from the Pennsylvania church in November 1737 and came with the first settlers; he was ordained as their minister in 1743, and served till his death in 1754. The congregation first met in the house of John Jones who used a Welsh concordance of the scriptures by Abel Morgan. In 1744 they built a church which was replaced in 1769 by another, forty-five feet by thirty. There were sixty-six members in 1759.[23]

The early history of this church was far from tranquil. Declaring that it was not a church of Christ, the Reverend Robert Williams withdrew from it in 1759, his lands and slaves no doubt giving him quite enough to do. After many patient inquiries and admonitions the church excommunicated him. The congregation immediately called the Reverend Nicholas Bedgegood, an Englishman who had been partially trained for the law, and who was later associated with Whitefield in the management of the Georgia Orphan House. The conduct of the members was the subject of constant investigation. In 1760 James James was suspended for beating a neighbor. John Booth was likewise suspended for quarrelling and using profane language, and required to make public acknowledgment of repentance before he was restored. Other offenses, both lighter and graver, were inquired into and handled with fine firmness, charity and common sense.[24]

In 1752 thirty-one settlers, among them Gideon Gibson and several of the first Welsh immigrants to Queensboro, organized a Baptist Church on Catfish Creek, and in 1758 they built a meeting house near the mouth of the stream. During the 'fifties the Welsh Neck Church established two branches, one at Mars Bluff, the other in Cashaway Neck on the east side of the river and above Mars Bluff. In 1756 the latter congregation, which had been meeting " 'at the Scholl house' ", achieved separate organization, and in its activity and influence was second only to the Welsh

---

[22] *Col. Recs. of N. C.*, V, xxxii–xxxiv, 355–356, VI, 788–789, JC, Aug. 12, 1755, Jan. 7, 1756, May 4, 1757, below, p. 135.

[23] Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, pp. 62–64, 74; Welsh Neck Church Book; Abel Morgan, *Cyd-Gordiad Egyddorawl o'r Scrythurau* . . . (Philadelphia, 1730)—John Jones' copy has notes in Welsh made after the settlement on the Peedee.

[24] See JC, Feb. 23, 1749, May 5, 1752, Mar. 22, 1754, Feb. 4, 1755; Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, pp. 64–67, 69; Welsh Neck Church Book, pp. 1–19.

Neck. Like that church it kept a strong but kind hand upon its errant members, requiring their attendance on Sundays and striving to keep them from excessive drinking—the latter a fault for which it became necessary to suspend one of the ministers. The Reverend Evan Pugh began his long service to this church in 1764. Among the first members were Abel and Benjamin James, Jeremiah Rowell, and Henry, John Martin and Peter Kolb. The Kolbs, too, were said to have come from Pennsylvania.[25]

The Anglican church developed more slowly in the Welsh Tract than did the Baptist, but the settlement there of South Carolinians and Virginians provided it with possible members, and the growth of population and wealth on the Peedee made parish government necessary. The rector of Prince Frederick, John Fordyce, visited the upper Peedee in 1743. He held services at four places, and baptized twenty-nine children for his own parish and nineteen from North Carolina. He had an eye for the material as well as spiritual future of the region; in 1737 he had had a thousand acres surveyed for himself in Queensboro, and now looked enviously upon the Welsh reservation, which he found "as good land as ever was plowed and Capable of Great Improvements but ill bestowed on a people who will never answer the Intention of the Governmts Indulgence to them". Members of even the Gibson, Wild and Evans families resorted to Fordyce for baptism or marriage, but after his death in 1751 there was a different story. That the Peedee was soon well provided with dissenting ministers was a condition which his successors had some part in bringing about The vestry and wardens of Prince Frederick declared to the Bishop of London that their rector, the notorious Michael Smith, "did make a Tour into these remote Parts of the Parish. But He had better stay'd at home, for the Consequence has been, that thro' his indiscreet Carriage, (We shd rather say immoral Conduct) among them, instead of bringing them over, and joining of them to the Communion of our Church, he has unhappily driven them to send for Anabaptist Teachers from Philadelphia, who dip many, and form them into Congregations; so that the regaining of them, and making them Members of the Established Chh will (we judge) be attended with great Pains, if not an impossibility." [26]

When St. Mark's parish was created in 1757 its minister served the Peedee settlers three years before the church was built on the Santee. It was not until 1768 that St. David's was formed; the church was built at Cheraw Hill. This parish extended from Lynches River to the North Carolina line, the southern boundary running northeast and crossing the

---

[25] Gregg, *Old Cheraws*, p. 83, Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, pp. 78–79, 84–90. Shortly after 1765 two other Baptist Churches appear on the Peedee, growing out of the Catfish Church (*ibid.* pp. 79, 81).

[26] JC, Dec. 16, 1743, P, II, 395, Dalcho, *Episcopal Church*, pp. 319–320, *Register* . . . *Prince Frederick*, p. 132, and Welsh names in index; see also Francis Young, Malachi Murphy, Daniel McDaniel, George Hicks, and Thomas Ellerbe.

Northeast

March 1757, Robert Miller, "min^r of the Waxaws", bought a tract of land on which was an old cabin, but in February of the next year simply as Mr. Robert Miller, with his wife, he resold the cabin and the land except four and a half acres. This latter tract, with a house for divine worship and a retiring house, he gave by deed a few weeks later to Robert Davies, Robert Ramsay, John Linn, Samuel Dunlap, and Henry White, planters, for the use of the Waxhaw Presbyterian congregation. The deed mentioned a spring on the lot. Miller and his wife Jean reserved the seat at the left of the north entrance, the seat to be four feet long and to be paid for at the same rate as the others then rented in the church.[21]

The short-lived ministry, which thus came to an end with such apparent good feeling on the part of Miller, began with the church's appeal to the Charleston Presbytery for a minister and the licensing by that body of this probationer, a Scotch schoolmaster. In June 1758 Miller was deposed by the Presbytery on the charge of adultery. Within a year the church called William Richardson, an Englishman educated at the University of Glasgow and a student of theology under Samuel Davies of Virginia. He had recently been ordained by the Hanover Presbytery of Virginia as missionary to the Cherokees, but had given up the task as hopeless almost as soon as appointed. His widely extended ministry, lasting till his death in 1771, did much to make the Waxhaws the Presbyterian center of the South Carolina back country. The church stood near the point where the old Catawba path crossed the new path to Land's ford, and was only a mile and a half from the river. During the next decade settlers even forebore their usual search for river and creek bottoms and took up every foot of land near the church. The Presbyterian congregation on Fishing Creek evidently joined the Waxhaw Church in calling Richardson, and a plat surveyed on the creek in 1763 shows paths to the meeting house.[22]

So varied had been the social types of the newer South Carolina communities, so gradual the drift of the settlement process away from the plantation and trading post types of the early royal period toward non-staple and non-commercial communities, that there were probably few in the province who realized that the Waxhaw settlement had any significance save for trade and frontier defense. In one way or another the dominant planter and merchant group of the tidewater had a powerful grip upon each of the preceding settlements, whether by its staple crop, slave labor, fear of the Indians or French, or by the low country origin of its settlers. But two-thirds or three-fourths of the settlers of the upper Wateree and Catawba came from the north, among them nearly all the leaders of the region, and their slaves were negligible in number. The absence of economic ties, however, promised to be less serious than social and political differences, for already there was a small sale from the upper valley of the products of the dairy and of the farm. It was the strengthening of South Carolina Presbyterianism and its connections with the north that constituted a real threat to the tidewater system.

2/3 from North

The valley of Lynches River above the sand hills made a small and somewhat isolated area, which because of its position and scanty resources played a minor part in the colonial life of South Carolina. In 1750 Robert Stuart, from the Jerseys, and John Middleton whose family had six slaves, applied for warrants near the mouth of Buffalo Creek, a branch of the main stream, Middleton explaining that his father before his death had built a house and made improvements there. In 1752 William McKee from the northward, who had a white servant in his family, applied for a warrant which was surveyed on a branch of the south fork, or Little Lynches River, which rises so far to the west that it interlaces with the waters of the Catawba. The Catawba path crossed this creek where a hundred-foot cliff and the great Hanging Rock overhung the stream, and McKee's plat included the rock.[23]

A contemporary historian of the Baptists stated that about 1754 nineteen members of the Welsh Neck congregation moved to this region and in September 1755 formed a church. Henry Ledbetter was their first pastor and James Smart his assistant, both men being originally from Virginia. Edward Boykin and his son Henry were made deacons; Ledbetter and Smart both applied for warrants on November 6, 1755 and the plat of the former was surveyed on the south fork. Edward Boykin and William DeLoach appear among the landholders of the Peedee section, and DeLoach and Henry Boykin now had warrants surveyed on Little Lynches. The church built in 1757 was probably on the east side of the main fork, but a few years later was rebuilt near the mouth of Flat Creek across the river. The rectors of Prince Frederick's occasionally visited this as other nearby settlements.[24]

The names of several settlers taking out warrants for land on these upper waters indicate that some of them were from the communities on the Black River and nearby stretches of Lynches River. John Pickens, however, came from Virginia with the Waxhaw group of settlers. He bought land on the west side of the Catawba in 1755 from Robert McClenachan, but two years later resold the tract to its former owner, meanwhile in 1756 applying to the South Carolina government for two hundred

---

[21] Deed Books (Anson County, N. C.), V, 12, 125, 136–137; Howe, *Presbyterian Church*, I, 286–288.

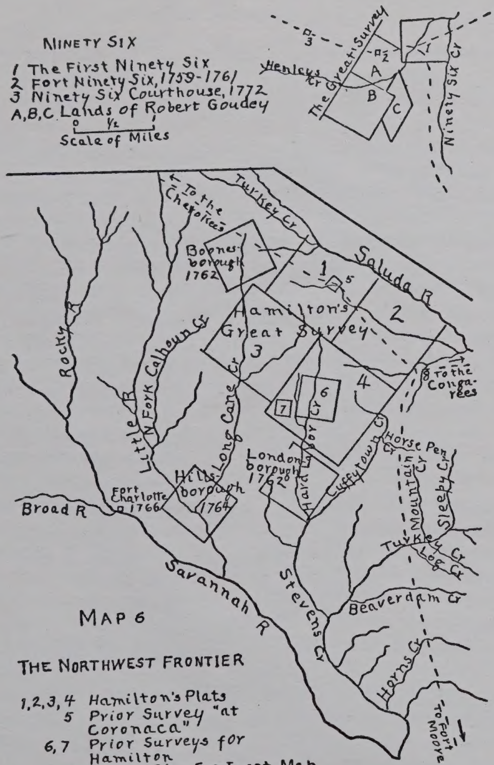
[22] *Ibid.*, 287–293, 297–298, 336, 417, P, VII, 339.

[23] JC, Aug. 10, 1750. For Stuart, see P, VI, 1, 227 (plat of John "Perkins"), JC, Nov. 6, 1755 (David Anderson); for Middleton, and James Clark, a neighbor, JC, Aug. 10, 1750, Jan. 8, 1752, P, V, 390, VI, 227, 418, VII, 10; for McKee, JC, Dec. 5, 1752, P, V, 383.

[24] Townsend, *S. C. Baptists*, pp. 95–96, JC, Feb. 8, 1746, Nov. 6, 1755, P, V, 59, 169, VI, 121, 146 VII, 162; *Register . . . Prince Frederick*, pp. 33, 36, 39 (Hewet, Dial, Clark, Cantey). Smart in 1759 moved to the Coosawhatchie and became minister of that church (see above, p. 75).

the
'ina

NW



Ninety Six
1 The First Ninety Six
2 Fort Ninety Six, 1759-1761
3 Ninety Six Courthouse, 1772
A, B, C Lands of Robert Goudey
0 ½ 1
Scale of Miles
Henleys Cr
The Great Survey
Ninety Six Cr
To the Cherokees
Turkey Cr
Saluda R
Boonesborough 1762
Hamilton's Great Survey
To the Congarees
Rocky R
N Fork Calhoun Cr
Little R
Long Cane Cr
Londonborough 1762
Hard Labor Cr
Cuffytown Cr
Horse Pen Cr
Mountain Cr
Sleepy Cr
Fort Charlotte 1766
Hillsborough 1764
Broad R
Savannah R
Stevens Cr
Turkey Cr
Log Cr
Beaverdam Cr
Horns Cr
To Fort Moore

MAP 6

THE NORTHWEST FRONTIER

1, 2, 3, 4 Hamilton's Plats
5 Prior Survey "at Coronaca"
6, 7 Prior Surveys for Hamilton
8 Ninety Six—See Inset Map

References: for the Great Survey, Chapter X, n. 24; for the townships, Chapter XVI, notes 30, 34; for Ninety Six, Chapter X, n. 3.

0 5 10 20
Scale of Miles

CHAPTER X

THE NORTHWEST FRONTIER

The movement of settlers into the hills waited for the Carolina population to span the low country—not even the hardiest of frontiersmen cared to be more than a day's journey from his fellows. But no sooner was the settlement of the upper tier of townships well under way than men began to seek the creek and river valleys beyond the fall line. Such was the isolation of the region, however, that in some portions the Indians and their trade largely determined its early history. The Cherokee path along the Saluda River first opened the way for back country settlement, but then, having been indirectly the means of encouraging expansion, the Indians so effectually blocked its progress that the farther end of the path was not reached until the whole province east of it had been settled.

In the early part of the century the chief route to the Cherokees began at Fort Moore and followed the eastern side of the Savannah River to the Lower Towns. Near the crossing of the path over Stevens Creek John Stevens in 1715 maintained a cowpen, the establishment surviving only in the name of the stream. This path was half as long again as that which ran by way of the Congarees, but so inconsiderable was the trade of the Cherokees that they had to depend for their goods upon the center of the greater southwestern traffic. By 1730 or earlier some traders, to avoid the large streams that fell into the Savannah, were making their way due north from Fort Moore along the ridge between the headwaters of Stevens Creek and the Little Saluda. Reaching the Saluda valley at the point which later came to be called Ninety Six, the path followed an easy course along the edge of the narrow western side of that valley until it was within fifty miles of Keowee.[1]

By 1740 there was a fundamental change in the situation. The Cherokee trade had become an important factor in the general South Carolina expansion, and the traffic turned toward the well settled Congaree and Santee valleys which afforded the shorter route, and a wagon road and

---

[1] See above, p. 10; Mouzon, *Map of N. and S. C.;* P, V, 100, 137, 405; *Year Book, Charleston,* 1894, p. 327; Crane, *Southern Frontier,* pp. 41, 132, and map; JC, Mar. 1, 1744; PR, XIII, 76 (Philemon Parmeter, Oct. 19, 1727, enclosed by Middleton, June 13, 1728); Swanton, *Creek Indians,* map 3. For the Fort Moore-Saluda path see P, II, 361, IV, 439; for the Congaree-Keowee path see Salley, *George Hunter's Map,* Mouzon, *Map of N. and S. C.,* and compare the journal with stream numbers on modern maps.

Sheds more light on Cunningham & other

This copied material contains Chapters 5 & 7 of Mr Wright's book — "Pioneers in the Back Country" and "Reluctant Rebels." The emphasis is on the Scotch-Irish settlers in the Up-Country from 1750's thru the Revolutionary War.

South Carolina

A Bicentennial History

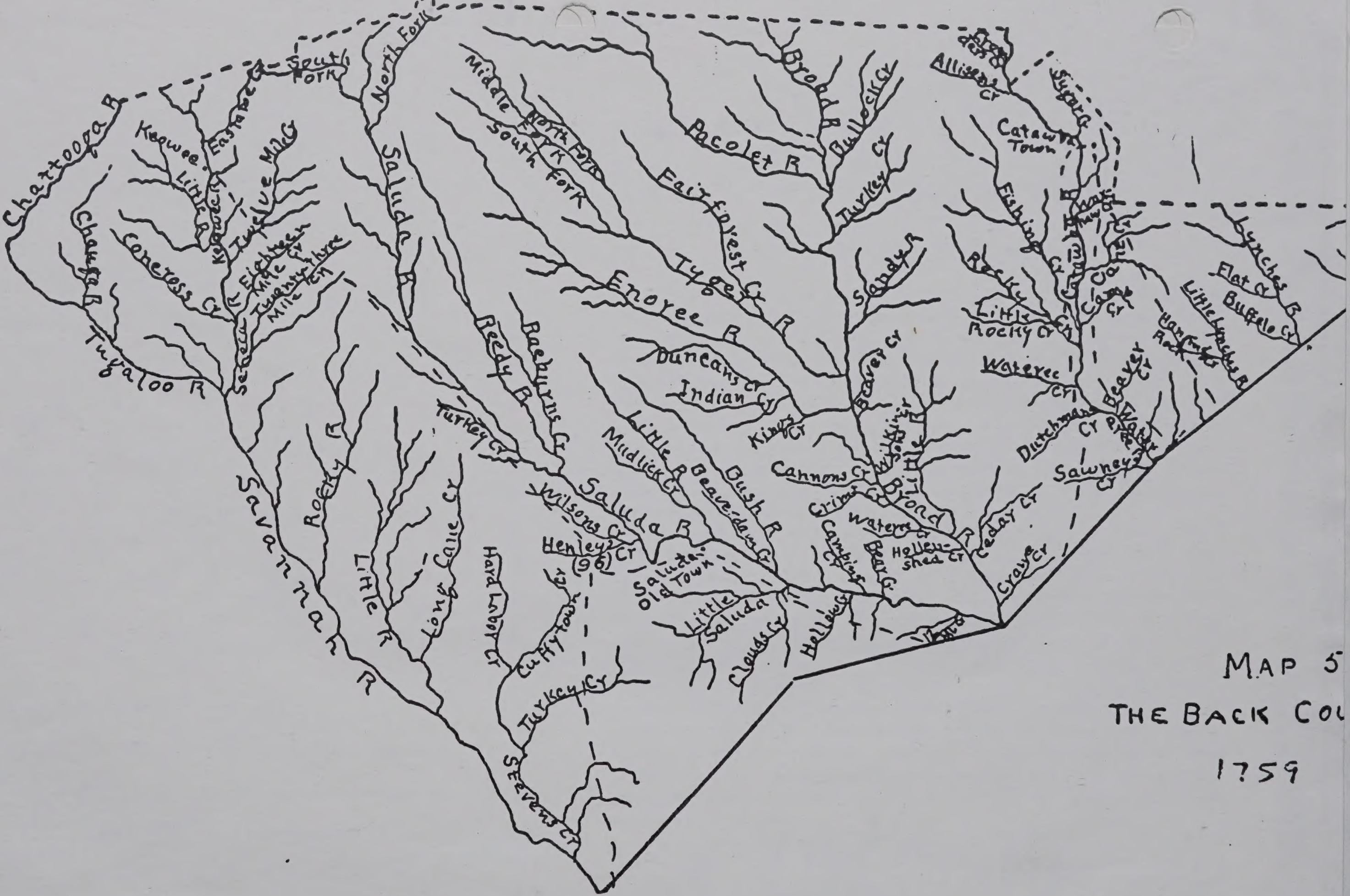
Louis B. Wright

STATES AND THE NATION

W. W. Norton & Company, Inc.
New York
American Association for State and Local History
Nashville

Ref. 975.7 W951

th


Chattooga R
Chauga R
Keowee
Estatoe Cr
South Fork
North Fork
Little R
Keowee R
Twelve Mile Cr
Coneross Cr
Eighteen Mile Cr
Twenty three Mile Cr
Seneca R
Tugaloo R
Saluda R
Middle Fork
North Fork
South Fork
Broad R
Pacolet R
Bullock Cr
Turkey Cr
Fair Forest Cr
Tyger R
Enoree R
Sandy R
Allisons Cr
Sugar Cr
Catawba Town
Fishing Cr
Rocky Cr
Little Rocky Cr
Wateree Cr
Camp Cr
Lynches R
Flat Cr
Buffalo Cr
Little Lynches R
Hanging Rock
Beaver Cr
Dutchmans Cr
Sawneys Cr
Duncans Cr
Indian Cr
Kings Cr
Beaver Cr
Little R
Cannons Cr
Crims Cr
Wateree Cr
Broad R
Cedar Cr
Camping Cr
Bear Cr
Hellenshed Cr
Crane Cr
Reedy R
Raeburns Cr
Turkey Cr
Little R
Mudlick Cr
Beaverdam Cr
Bush R
Saluda R
Wilsons Cr
Henley's Cr
(96)
Saluda Old Town
Little Saluda
Clouds Cr
Hollow Cr
Rocky R
Little R
Long Cane Cr
Hard Labor Cr
Cuffytown Cr
Turkey Cr
Stevens Cr
Savannah R

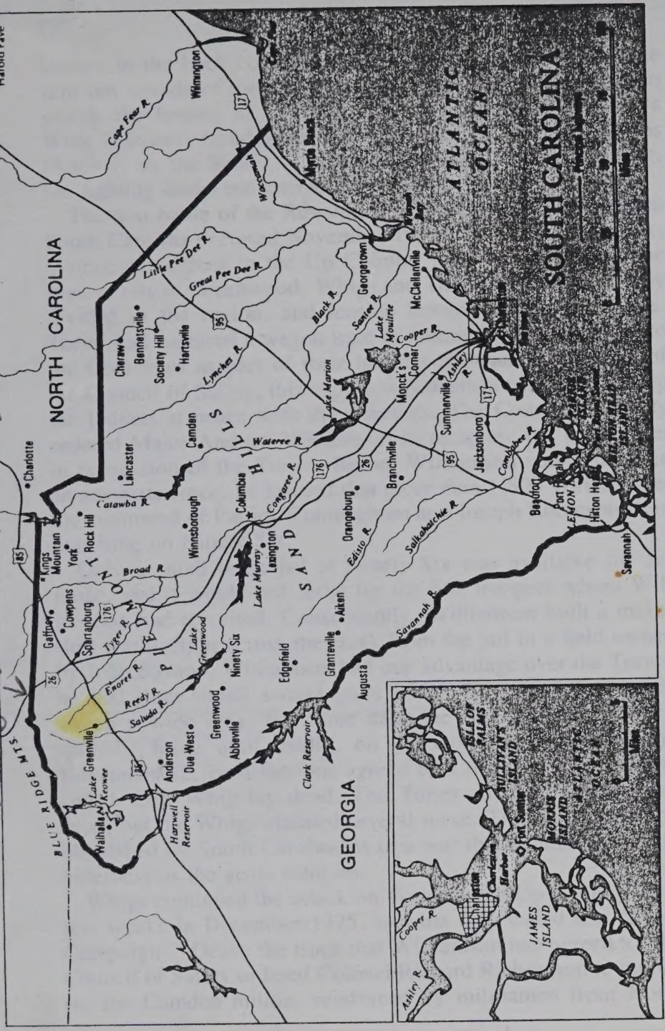
MAP 5

THE BACK COU

1759

Sheds more light on Cunningham & other Pearis associates

(location of Richard Pearis' home plantation, a 150,000 acre grant from the Cherokees, who loved him because of his Indian wife & son)


Harold Faye
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
ATLANTIC OCEAN
BLUE RIDGE MTS.
PIEDMONT
SAND HILLS
Charlotte
Wilmington
Cape Fear R.
Myrtle Beach
Georgetown
Charleston
Columbia
Camden
Greenville
Spartanburg
Ninety Six
Savannah
Augusta
Aiken
Orangeburg
Beaufort
SULLIVAN'S ISLAND
JAMES ISLAND
Fort Sumter
Miles

Invitation to the Reader

IN 1807, former President John Adams argued that a complete history of the American Revolution could not be written until the history of change in each state was known, because the principles of the Revolution were as various as the states that went through it. Two hundred years after the Declaration of Independence, the American nation has spread over a continent and beyond. The states have grown in number from thirteen to fifty. And democratic principles have been interpreted differently in every one of them.

We therefore invite you to consider that the history of your state may have more to do with the bicentennial review of the American Revolution than does the story of Bunker Hill or Valley Forge. The Revolution has continued as Americans extended liberty and democracy over a vast territory. John Adams was right: the states are part of that story, and the story is incomplete without an account of their diversity.

The Declaration of Independence stressed life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; accordingly, it shattered the notion of holding new territories in the subordinate status of colonies. The Northwest Ordinance of 1787 set forth a procedure for new states to enter the Union on an equal footing with the old. The Federal Constitution shortly confirmed this novel means of building a nation out of equal states. The step-by-step process through which territories have achieved self-government and national representation is among the most important of the Founding Fathers' legacies.

The method of state-making reconciled the ancient conflict between liberty and empire, resulting in what Thomas Jefferson called an empire for liberty. The system has worked and remains unaltered, despite enormous changes that have taken

JE.
This Carolina history does not mention Capt.-(Col) Richard Pearis per se, though it mentions his father-in-law Cunningham (3rd wife) and gives an overall picture of the Revolution in the back country.

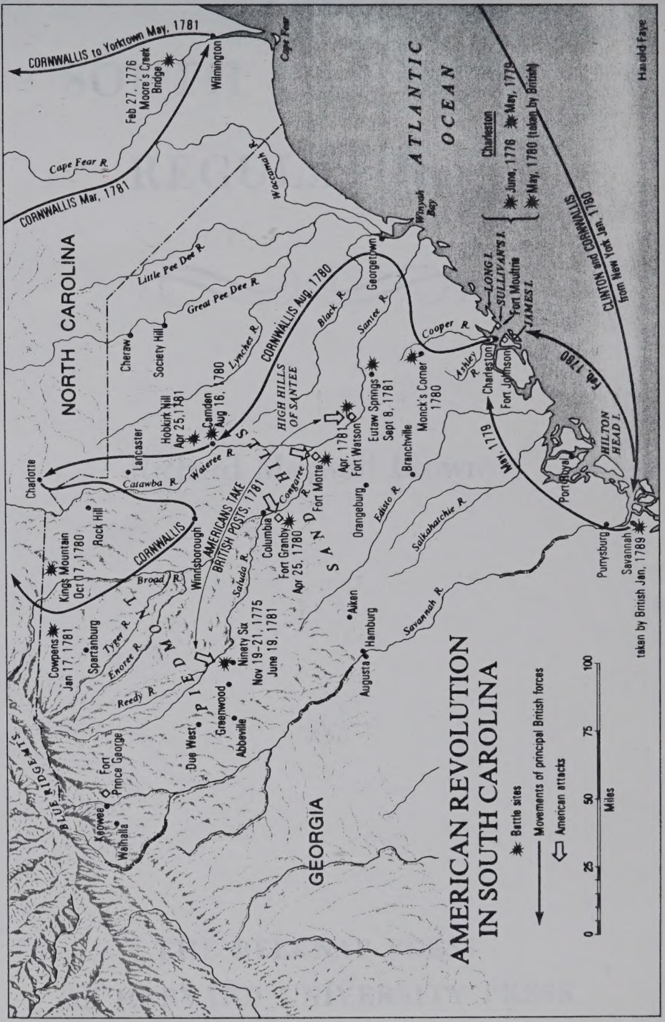
leaders in the back country would have to be arrested, and he sent out squads of men from his headquarters at Ninety Six to search the houses of loyalists. During September, Drayton's Whig followers faced a force of Tories led by Colonel Thomas Fletchall on the Saluda. They came to terms without fighting, but fighting broke out later in the autumn.

The first battle of the Revolution in which blood was shed in South Carolina occurred November 19–21, 1775, at Ninety Six, a strategic outpost in the Up Country nine miles south of the present city of Greenwood. Whigs and Tories were about evenly divided in the region, and tension between them was acute. Tories had captured a wagon train of ammunition being taken to the Cherokees as part of their hunting allowance on orders of the Council of Safety; this supply was deemed essential to keep the Indians at peace with the colonists. The Council of Safety ordered Major Andrew Williamson to recapture the gunpowder in possession of the Tories. Before Williamson could mobilize an adequate force, he learned that more than 1,800 Tories under the command of Patrick Cunningham and Joseph Robinson were marching on Ninety Six.

Only a small brick jail at Ninety Six was available for defense, and it would not serve for the 562 troopers whom Williamson had recruited. Consequently, Williamson built a makeshift fortification across the creek from the jail in a field owned by John Savage. Williamson had one advantage over the Tories: he had three small swivel guns which he mounted so as to sweep a wide area. For three days the two forces exchanged sporadic firing until finally, on the morning of Wednesday, November 22, both factions agreed to a truce and the fighting ended. One Whig lay dead. The Tories admitted to one man dead, but the Whigs claimed several more. Thus ended the first bloodshed by South Carolinians in a war that would increase in bitterness as the years went on.

Swivel guns

Whigs continued the attack on Tories in the Up Country for a few weeks in December 1775, in what they called the "Snow Campaign." Desite the truce that Williamson had agreed to, the Council of Safety ordered Colonel Richard Richardson to mobilize the Camden militia, reinforced by militiamen from North

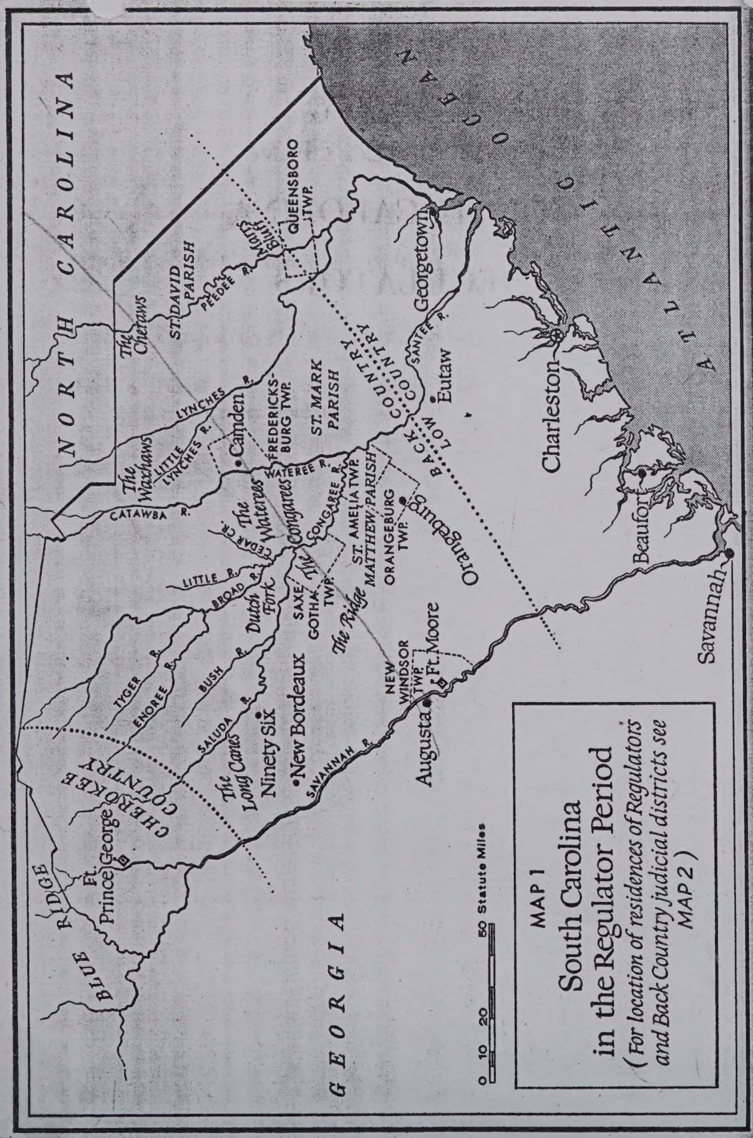

AMERICAN REVOLUTION IN SOUTH CAROLINA
Battle sites
Movements of principal British forces
American attacks
0 25 50 75 100
Miles
Harold Faye
ATLANTIC OCEAN
NORTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
BLUE RIDGE MTS.
PIEDMONT
SAND HILLS
HIGH HILLS OF SANTEE
CORNWALLIS to Yorktown May, 1781
CORNWALLIS Mar, 1781
CORNWALLIS Aug, 1780
CORNWALLIS
CLINTON and CORNWALLIS from New York Jan, 1780
Feb, 1780
May, 1779
AMERICANS TAKE BRITISH POSTS, 1781
Feb 27, 1776 Moore's Creek Bridge
Wilmington
Cape Fear
Cape Fear R.
Waccamaw R.
Winyah Bay
Little Pee Dee R.
Great Pee Dee R.
Lynches R.
Black R.
Santee R.
Cooper R.
Ashley R.
Wateree R.
Catawba R.
Congaree R.
Broad R.
Saluda R.
Tyger R.
Enoree R.
Reedy R.
Edisto R.
Salkahatchie R.
Savannah R.
Charleston
June, 1776
May, 1779
May, 1780 (taken by British)
LONG I.
SULLIVAN'S I.
Fort Moultrie
JAMES I.
Fort Johnson
Georgetown
Cheraw
Society Hill
Hobkirk Hill Apr 25, 1781
Camden Aug 16, 1780
Lancaster
Charlotte
Kings Mountain Oct 7, 1780
Rock Hill
Cowpens Jan 17, 1781
Spartanburg
Winnsborough
Columbia
Fort Granby Apr 25, 1780
Fort Motte
Apr, 1781
Fort Watson
Eutaw Springs Sept 8, 1781
Monck's Corner 1780
Orangeburg
Branchville
Ninety Six Nov 19-21, 1775 June 19, 1781
Greenwood
Abbeville
Due West
Fort Prince George
Keowee
Walhalla
Aiken
Hamburg
Augusta
Purrysburg
Savannah taken by British Jan, 1789
Port Royal
HILTON HEAD I.

F272 B75 (1963)

THE SOUTH CAROLINA REGULATORS

Richard Maxwell Brown

THE BELKNAP PRESS
OF HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS
Cambridge, Massachusetts
1963


NORTH CAROLINA
ATLANTIC OCEAN
GEORGIA
CHEROKEE COUNTRY
BLUE RIDGE
Ft. Prince George
The Cheraws
ST. DAVID PARISH
PEDEE R.
Mars Bluff
QUEENSBORO TWP.
Georgetown
SANTEE R.
Eutaw
LOW COUNTRY
BACK COUNTRY
ST. MARK PARISH
FREDERICKSBURG TWP.
Camden
LYNCHES R.
LITTLE LYNCHES R.
The Waxhaws
CATAWBA R.
WATEREE R.
The Waterees
CEDAR CR.
The Congarees
CONGAREE R.
ST. MATTHEW PARISH
AMELIA TWP.
ORANGEBURG TWP.
Orangeburg
SAXE GOTHA TWP.
The Ridge
Dutch Fork
LITTLE R.
BROAD R.
TYGER R.
ENOREE R.
BUSH R.
SALUDA R.
The Long Canes
Ninety Six
New Bordeaux
SAVANNAH R.
NEW WINDSOR TWP.
Ft. Moore
Augusta
Charleston
Beaufort
Savannah
0 10 20 50 Statute Miles

MAP 1
South Carolina
in the Regulator Period
(For location of residences of Regulators and Back Country judicial districts see MAP 2)

I

THE CHEROKEE WAR AND THE SOUTH CAROLINA FRONTIER

1760–1761

ON November 5, 1767, Governor Charles Greville Montagu of South Carolina went before the Commons House of Assembly and asked for measures "to suppress those licentious Spirits, that have so lately appeared . . . and assuming the name of Regulators, have in Defiance of Government, and to the Subversion of good Order, illegally tried, Condemned and Punished many Persons."[1] Governor Montagu thus expressed the official view that the Regulator movement violated the rule of law.

Far from desiring the subversion of "good order," however, the Regulators were its most zealous champions. They believed in the rule of law. To that end they clamored for the introduction of a regular system of courts and sheriffs. By taking the law into their own hands the Regulators did defy the government. But they acted in the interest of true justice.

The Regulators thus incorporated an inconsistency—a conflict in ideals—into their movement, although a sense of paradox did not plague their consciences nor paralyze them in indecision. Like many Americans after them, the Regulators unlawfully took up arms to establish lawful authority.

The Regulator story properly begins with the great Cherokee War of 1760–61. Dislocations caused by the war helped to bring on their movement six years later. Settlement of the South Carolina Back Country had begun in the 1730's.[2] Great rice and indigo plantations sprawled among the tidewater streams and swamps of the Low Country. Beyond lay the Back Country, a vast frontier hinterland where small farms appeared among the pine forests. The Back Country began about fifty miles inland, traversed the upper pine belt, and continued through the Sand Hills across the Fall Line and into the Piedmont. The victory of South Carolina in the terrible Yemasee War of 1715 resulted in the expulsion of the Indians from the area between the Low Country and the Fall Line. Outposts were immediately established at Fort Moore on the Savannah River and at Congaree Fort on the Congaree River, but settlement did not get under way until the introduction of Governor Robert Johnson's township plan of 1730. Johnson projected a series of frontier townships, to be settled by white small farmers, spanning the province from the Savannah to the North Carolina border. The object of the scheme was to provide a counterpoise to the Low Country's slave population, which was increasing at an alarming rate. As a result of this plan the townships of New Windsor, Orangeburg, Amelia, Saxe Gotha, Fredericksburg, and Queensboro were settled in the mid-1730's.

Pioneers infiltrated the hills and valleys of the Piedmont in the 1740's and 1750's. A purchase of Cherokee land opened the Long Canes section to settlement. Stevens Creek, the Ninety Six area, and the Saluda basin also attracted immigrants. The Broad River Valley, the parallel courses of the Tyger and Enoree rivers to the north, and Dutch Fork, a wedge of German settlement between the Saluda and the Broad, were likewise peopled in this period. Further east, communities grew up in the Waxhaws, the valley of the Catawba (called the Wateree in its lower portion), and the Lynches River area.

Ethnically the Back Country was a hodgepodge. The Germans and the Swiss were predominant in Amelia, Orangeburg, New Windsor, Saxe Gotha, and Dutch Fork. Elsewhere, the Scotch-Irish and other immigrants from the northern colonies were the largest of the ethnic groups. The ubiquitous "Virginians"—principally British stock from the older sections of the Old Dominion—were especially prominent in the Back Country. The Scotch-Irish, most of whom came down from western Virginia, Pennsylvania,

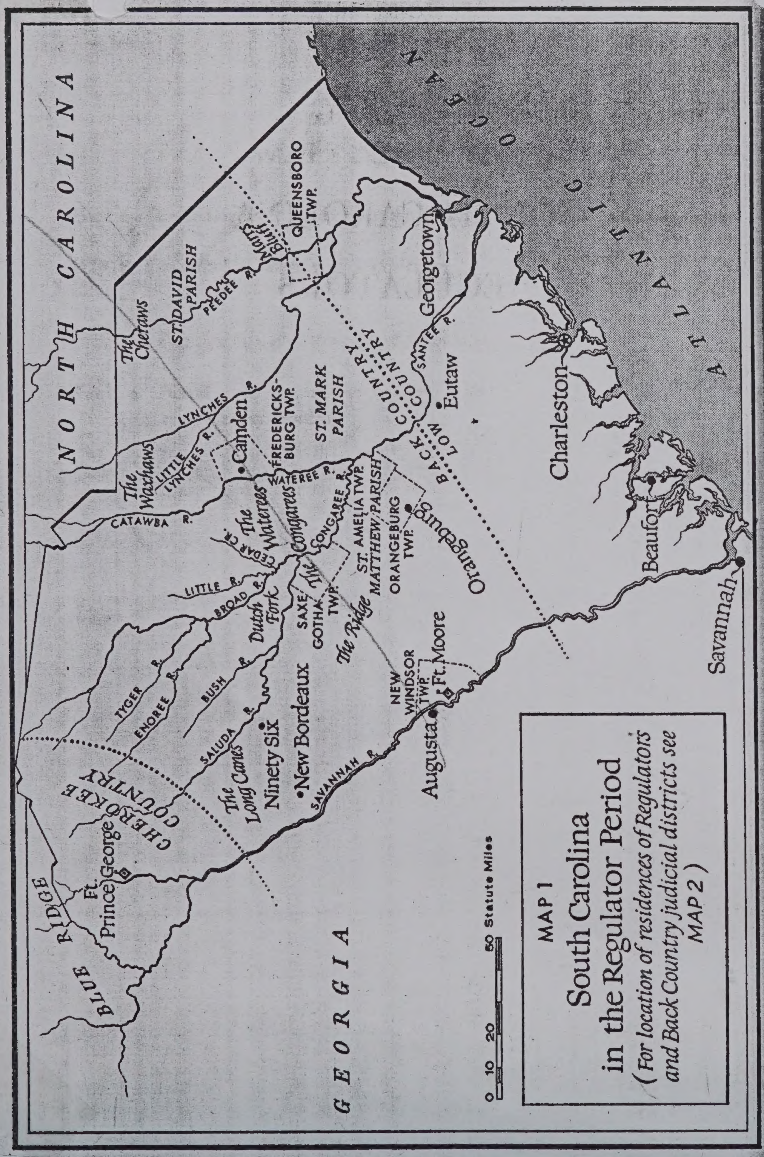
and North Carolina, appeared everywhere in the Back Country but were particularly numerous in the Long Canes and the Waxhaws.

In the "Welsh Tract" on the Peedee River there was a prosperous community of Welsh Baptists from Pennsylvania. A colony of Irish Quakers migrated directly from the old country to Pinetree Creek in Fredericksburg Township. Shortly after the Cherokee War, French Huguenots founded the settlement of New Bordeaux in the Long Canes. Native South Carolinians were a minority in the Back Country, and their numbers decreased as the distance from the Low Country increased.[3]

In 1759 the population of the Back Country was about twenty thousand, consisting mostly of white frontiersmen. During the 1740's and 1750's the leading men took part in the lucrative Indian trade. There were also hundreds of lesser traders—packhorsemen—a motley crew whom some white men considered little better than Indians. Many hunters and squatters remained among the pioneer farmers who were steadily taking up land under the headright system. Here and there could be found slaveholding indigo planters. Thus the Back Country on the eve of the Cherokee War "was no society at all; it was rather a mixture of various racial and religious elements with half a dozen rudimentary centers and few unifying influences." [4]

The dominant factor in the frontier period of the Back Country was an external force, the great Cherokee nation lying to the northwest. The Cherokees consisted of three thousand warriors and their families living in fifty or sixty towns dispersed through the Southern mountains. On the South Carolina frontier in the foothills of the Appalachians were the Lower Towns. Across the Blue Ridge were the Middle Settlements, the Overhills Towns, and the Valley Towns. The existence of the Cherokee nation posed a threat to the frontier. So long as the tribesmen remained unconquered, white settlement in the exposed Back Country was insecure. Friendly relations between whites and Indians were subject to transitory and unstable influences on both sides.

Ultimately the Cherokee War of 1760–61 ended the Indian threat to white occupation of the Back Country. The immediate


NORTH CAROLINA
ATLANTIC OCEAN
GEORGIA
BLUE RIDGE
CHEROKEE COUNTRY
Ft. Prince George
The Long Canes
Ninety Six
•New Bordeaux
SAVANNAH R.
SALUDA R.
BUSH R.
ENOREE R.
TYGER R.
BROAD R.
LITTLE R.
Dutch Fork
CEDAR CR.
The Waterees
CATAWBA R.
The Waxhaws
LITTLE LYNCHES R.
LYNCHES R.
Camden
FREDERICKS-BURG TWP.
The Cheraws
ST. DAVID PARISH
PEEDEE R.
Mars Bluff
QUEENSBORO TWP.
ST. MARK PARISH
WATEREE R.
The Congarees
CONGAREE R.
SAXE GOTHA TWP.
The Ridge
ST. MATTHEW PARISH
AMELIA TWP.
ORANGEBURG TWP.
Orangeburg
NEW WINDSOR TWP.
Ft. Moore
Augusta
BACK COUNTRY
LOW COUNTRY
SANTEE R.
Eutaw
Georgetown
Charleston
Beaufort
Savannah
0 10 20 50 Statute Miles

MAP 1
South Carolina
in the Regulator Period
(For location of residences of Regulators and Back Country judicial districts see MAP 2)

I

THE CHEROKEE WAR AND THE SOUTH CAROLINA FRONTIER

1760–1761

On November 5, 1767, Governor Charles Greville Montagu of South Carolina went before the Commons House of Assembly and asked for measures "to suppress those licentious Spirits, that have so lately appeared . . . and assuming the name of Regulators, have in Defiance of Government, and to the Subversion of good Order, illegally tried, Condemned and Punished many Persons." [1] Governor Montagu thus expressed the official view that the Regulator movement violated the rule of law.

Far from desiring the subversion of "good order," however, the Regulators were its most zealous champions. They believed in the rule of law. To that end they clamored for the introduction of a regular system of courts and sheriffs. By taking the law into their own hands the Regulators did defy the government. But they acted in the interest of true justice.

The Regulators thus incorporated an inconsistency—a conflict in ideals—into their movement, although a sense of paradox did not plague their consciences nor paralyze them in indecision. Like many Americans after them, the Regulators unlawfully took up arms to establish lawful authority.

The Regulator story properly begins with the great Cherokee War of 1760–61. Dislocations caused by the war helped to bring on their movement six years later. Settlement of the South Carolina Back Country had begun in the 1730's.[2] Great rice and indigo plantations sprawled among the tidewater streams and swamps of the Low Country. Beyond lay the Back Country, a vast frontier hinterland where small farms appeared among the pine forests. The Back Country began about fifty miles inland, traversed the upper pine belt, and continued through the Sand Hills across the Fall Line and into the Piedmont. The victory of South Carolina in the terrible Yemasee War of 1715 resulted in the expulsion of the Indians from the area between the Low Country and the Fall Line. Outposts were immediately established at Fort Moore on the Savannah River and at Congaree Fort on the Congaree River, but settlement did not get under way until the introduction of Governor Robert Johnson's township plan of 1730. Johnson projected a series of frontier townships, to be settled by white small farmers, spanning the province from the Savannah to the North Carolina border. The object of the scheme was to provide a counterpoise to the Low Country's slave population, which was increasing at an alarming rate. As a result of this plan the townships of New Windsor, Orangeburg, Amelia, Saxe Gotha, Fredericksburg, and Queensboro were settled in the mid-1730's.

Pioneers infiltrated the hills and valleys of the Piedmont in the 1740's and 1750's. A purchase of Cherokee land opened the Long Canes section to settlement. Stevens Creek, the Ninety Six area, and the Saluda basin also attracted immigrants. The Broad River Valley, the parallel courses of the Tyger and Enoree rivers to the north, and Dutch Fork, a wedge of German settlement between the Saluda and the Broad, were likewise peopled in this period. Further east, communities grew up in the Waxhaws, the valley of the Catawba (called the Wateree in its lower portion), and the Lynches River area.

Ethnically the Back Country was a hodgepodge. The Germans and the Swiss were predominant in Amelia, Orangeburg, New Windsor, Saxe Gotha, and Dutch Fork. Elsewhere, the Scotch-Irish and other immigrants from the northern colonies were the largest of the ethnic groups. The ubiquitous "Virginians"—principally British stock from the older sections of the Old Dominion—were especially prominent in the Back Country. The Scotch-Irish, most of whom came down from western Virginia, Pennsylvania, and North Carolina, appeared everywhere in the Back Country but were particularly numerous in the Long Canes and the Waxhaws.

In the "Welsh Tract" on the Peedee River there was a prosperous community of Welsh Baptists from Pennsylvania. A colony of Irish Quakers migrated directly from the old country to Pinetree Creek in Fredericksburg Township. Shortly after the Cherokee War, French Huguenots founded the settlement of New Bordeaux in the Long Canes. Native South Carolinians were a minority in the Back Country, and their numbers decreased as the distance from the Low Country increased.[3]

In 1759 the population of the Back Country was about twenty thousand, consisting mostly of white frontiersmen. During the 1740's and 1750's the leading men took part in the lucrative Indian trade. There were also hundreds of lesser traders—packhorsemen—a motley crew whom some white men considered little better than Indians. Many hunters and squatters remained among the pioneer farmers who were steadily taking up land under the headright system. Here and there could be found slaveholding indigo planters. Thus the Back Country on the eve of the Cherokee War "was no society at all; it was rather a mixture of various racial and religious elements with half a dozen rudimentary centers and few unifying influences." [4]

The dominant factor in the frontier period of the Back Country was an external force, the great Cherokee nation lying to the northwest. The Cherokees consisted of three thousand warriors and their families living in fifty or sixty towns dispersed through the Southern mountains. On the South Carolina frontier in the foothills of the Appalachians were the Lower Towns. Across the Blue Ridge were the Middle Settlements, the Overhills Towns, and the Valley Towns. The existence of the Cherokee nation posed a threat to the frontier. So long as the tribesmen remained unconquered, white settlement in the exposed Back Country was insecure. Friendly relations between whites and Indians were subject to transitory and unstable influences on both sides.

Ultimately the Cherokee War of 1760–61 ended the Indian threat to white occupation of the Back Country. The immediate consequences, however, were evil. After two years of horror and destitution, crime and chaos bedeviled the region until the Regulator movement was formed.

In the late 1750's the alliance of the Cherokees and British in North America began to deteriorate. French intrigues, the exactions of rapacious traders, and fears of encroachment by white frontiersmen fed the Indians' discontent. Finally, a series of incidents in 1758 and 1759 brought on full-scale war in 1760.

In 1758 a large party of Cherokees joined General Forbes in western Pennsylvania for the attack on Fort Duquesne. The Indians deserted before the campaign got under way and, on their return, clashed with Virginia settlers. White officials and Indian leaders tried to smooth over the trouble. Governor William Henry Lyttleton of South Carolina sent gifts to pacify the Cherokees, but they could not forget that many braves had been killed. Isolated fighting broke out in 1759. Thirteen white settlers were killed in Rowan County, North Carolina, and there were murders elsewhere in the Carolinas.

Governor Lyttleton led a strong expedition in 1759 to Fort Prince George, a British outpost in Cherokee country on the Keowee River in present Pickens County, South Carolina, and there induced the Indians to sign a treaty of friendship. Unfortunately, Attakullakulla and the other chiefs who really desired peace could not bind the whole nation. Hotheads among them were bent on war. On January 19, 1760, an Indian attack on Fort Prince George failed, but a few days later the Cherokees murdered two white traders. This was the prelude to a general onslaught on the South Carolina frontier.[5]

The Scotch-Irish colony of the Long Canes bore the brunt of the assault. Forewarned by the attack on the Indian traders and by the tidings of a friendly Cherokee girl, the Long Canes settlers hurried toward safety at Augusta, Georgia. At ten o'clock on the morning of February 1, 1760, the wagon train of 250 men, women, and children was passing through a marsh near Long Cane Creek when a hundred mounted Cherokees burst upon them with guns blazing. The sudden attack upon helpless settlers floundering in the bog resulted in a slaughter. About forty persons—mostly women and children—were killed or captured. The prominent Calhoun family of the Long Canes was caught in the ambush; Patrick, the father of John C. Calhoun, escaped unscathed, but Patrick's mother was slain. The warriors burned the woods around the marsh and looted the thirteen wagons and carts of the caravan. A few days later Patrick Calhoun returned to the site to help bury the dead; he found only twenty inhumanly butchered bodies.[6]

Two days later the Indians struck again. A small party of twenty-three women and children from the Long Canes were fleeing to safety when they were waylaid by Cherokees near Stevens Creek. Davis, their leader, fought off the Indians as long as possible and killed two of them but at last was forced to desert his defenseless flock. The outcome was another massacre; the next day the militia came upon the "cruelly mangled Bodies" of the refugees. For days thereafter, dazed and wounded children who had escaped the carnage were found walking in the woods. On one day nine children—terribly hacked by tomahawks and their scalps slashed off—were brought into Augusta.[7]

Most Back Country inhabitants fared better in their flight from the danger zone than did the ill-starred refugees of the Long Canes. Those fortunate enough to survive set to work building or strengthening forts. The "settlers' forts" were not regular military structures but were private dwellings protected by stockades and made into strong points under local commanders. John Pearson, a leader in the Congarees community, reported on February 8, 1760, that frightened settlers were streaming into Saxe Gotha and the Congarees, where such forts were being hastily thrown up or reinforced. In the Augusta–Fort Moore area, already crowded with refugees, no less than six forts were then being feverishly erected or strengthened.[8]

In the first week of war the Indians launched hit-and-run attacks all over the Back Country. On February 3 they fired upon the fort at Ninety Six for two hours, losing two of their men and wounding one in the garrison. Robert Goudey, an old settler of Ninety Six, saved only his fortified barn during an assault which burned his other buildings to the ground. Andrew Williamson, a leading planter of the same place, was shot through the coat sleeve as he pursued Indians who had stolen two Negroes, five horses, and a wagon from a neighbor, Doctor John Murray. At the fortified house of William Turner a "smart engagement" cost some redmen their lives. After the fray at Turner's the same Cherokee band went to besiege the dwelling of Thomas Haverd. To the north the Indians burned and destroyed property all along Bush River, forcing the settlers to unite for safety in the fort at Jacob Brooks' place. On Rayburns Creek twenty-seven people were killed.[9]

The Cherokee attack on the Back Country was a staggering success for the Indians. Hundreds of frontier families abandoned their plantations and clustered in the forts. Normal life was shattered. Those who gained refuge dared not return to their gutted homes and ruined fields. Conditions were so bad that Lachlan Shaw of Augusta wrote to Governor Lyttleton, "if I was to give one hundred Guineas to a person to Cross the Country to Orangeburgh, I could not get any person to Undertake it." [10]

Virtually all the able-bodied males in the Back Country who were not on garrison duty in the forts were drafted for service either in the militia or in the Ranger detachments raised specifically for the war. Shipments of ammunition from Charleston bolstered the Back Country defenses.[11]

In late February 1760 Governor Lyttleton sent Colonel Richard Richardson of the Saint Mark's militia on an expedition along Broad River to "put a stop to the Panic." But there was no abatement in the warfare. Eighteen Cherokees pounced on four white men heading for Fort Moore, killed Ulric Tobler, a militia captain and justice of the peace, and wounded William Calhoun, the brother of Patrick. The Cherokee who took Tobler's life had been a busy warrior; the hatchet he left in his victim's neck bore three old notches and as many new ones. About the same time two men were killed and scalped near Germany's Fort.[12]

The Cherokee War, which was marked by savagery on both sides, exerted a brutalizing influence on the white settlers. The Indians laid siege to Ninety Six once more, on March 3, 1760. They struck just after sunrise and maintained almost constant fire for thirty-six hours until reinforcements for the garrison frightened them away. Several Indians were slain, but only two whites were wounded. James Francis, one of the defenders, gleefully wrote Governor Lyttleton of his delight in seeing the enemy drop. "We have now the Pleasure Sir," he added, "to fatten our Dogs with their Carcasses, and to Display their Scalps, neatly ornamented on the Top of our Bastions." [13]

Frustrated in their investment of the fort, the Cherokees ravaged the area around Ninety Six, Turner's Fort, and Halfway Swamp. They burned houses, grain, and fodder and butchered all the cattle they could find. On March 6 about forty Indians attacked six men proceeding from Turner's Fort to Pennington's Fort. Two of the whites were killed, two escaped, and two were reported missing. A troop of thirty-nine Rangers gave chase to the Indians but were themselves surprised and forced to retreat. On March 10 twenty-five people were killed near the head of Congaree Creek.[14]

The Cherokees threatened Rabb's Fort at the forks of the Edisto on March 12; a man sent out was cut down and scalped in sight of the enraged defenders, who immediately sallied forth to kill and scalp two of the Indians and drive the others off. The bodies of the two dead Indians were "cut to Pieces and given to the Dogs, so much [were] the Back-Settlers exasperated at their Perfidy and Barbarity." The Commons House of Assembly responded to the heinous fighting by raising the bounty for each Indian scalp from £25 to £35.[15]

In mid-March a fierce encounter occurred near the Catawba River. Thirty white men out on a scouting expedition happened on a band of forty Indians. Shots were exchanged. The Indians crowded into a deserted house where they held out until John Perkins, "who had lost some of his Family by the Savages" and was "much exasperated," urged that the building be set on fire. The structure was set ablaze, and as the Cherokees dashed from the flames they met a hail of bullets from the besiegers. Perkins' dog hounded one of the Indians into the Catawba and held him under water until he drowned. The jubilant Back Countrymen sent nineteen Cherokee scalps down to Charleston for the bounty. One of the dead Indians had "six green white Scalps" on him. None of the whites were killed.[16]

A melee took place twenty miles west of Orangeburg on April 7, 1760. A scouting party of twenty-three men, led by Gavin Pou, had stopped for a rest when sixteen Indians, appearing seemingly out of nowhere, surrounded them. Pou was shot in the leg in the first volley, and two others were wounded. After the initial shock Pou and his men rallied and pursued the Cherokees for three miles into a deep swamp. One of the Indians was killed and scalped.[17]

The Ninety Six–Long Canes area was in constant danger. On April 4 two scouting parties set out from Fort Ninety Six for the Long Canes. After making camp for the night, four of the men went into the woods to hunt turkeys. Before they had gone half a mile, they were startled by eight Cherokees. The Indians slew one man, took a lad prisoner, and chased the other two back to camp. A few days later the boy escaped and, having returned to Ninety Six, reported that his Indian captors were carrying five white and three Negro scalps.[18]

On May 3, 1760, Richard Ratcliff and Matthew Abenshine were hastening from Ninety Six to Doctor John Murray's plantation to take charge of a large herd of cattle. They were two of the most promising young men in the community. Ratcliff was honest, bold, active, and a good woodsman. Abenshine was "a Youth of an extraordinary Genius, was very fond of Books, and had a tolerable Notion of Physic and Surgery." Near Wilson's Creek seventeen Indians suddenly opened fire from behind a log and killed both men on the spot.[19]

The proximity of the Tyger and Enoree river districts to the Cherokee nation made them especially vulnerable. Scalping parties infested the area and slew many settlers. Four hundred refugees, mostly women and children, were packed into a small fort on the Enoree. Nor were the supposedly secure centers of Saxe Gotha, the Congarees, and Orangeburg below the Fall Line immune to hostile incursions. In March 1760 Indians killed several men in Saxe Gotha as they went out to tether horses and to work in the fields. In May a Cherokee party raided deep into white territory and carried off all six of the Negro field hands of Henry Young, an Orangeburg planter.[20]

During the winter of 1760–61 the war slackened, but sporadic

killings and ambushes still occurred. In October 1760 two old men, Llewellin and Hughes, were killed and scalped near Pennington's Fort on the Enoree. In November it was the turn of some settlers on Broad River. On March 16, 1761, eight Bush River settlers who ventured out of Brooks' Fort to look after their plantations were beset by twenty-seven Cherokees, who killed and scalped Cadwallader Eaton and took Edward Box prisoner. Eaton's body was later found "shockingly mangled" and almost decapitated. The remainder of the party got back safely to the fort. New alarms sent settlers scurrying for the forts in the Savannah Valley, and in April 1761 the Rayfords Creek area was despoiled by the Cherokees.[21]

In 1761 attrition brought the Cherokees to their knees. They became destitute as a result of the interruption of the trade with South Carolina upon which they had come to depend for supplies. The winter of 1760–61 was long and hard, with heavy snows. Although the Cherokees plundered and foraged in the Long Canes—"by far the most fruitful of all the back settlements"—in an attempt to offset their deficiency in provisions, two-thirds of the nation suffered from want of food and clothing by the spring of 1761.[22]

Cherokee hopes that the Creeks would join in the war had come to naught, since the Creeks were loath to have their own vital trade with Georgia and South Carolina cut off. The Cherokees continued to raid the Back Country with impunity, but their guerrilla tactics were no match for the systematic attacks of British regulars and South Carolina provincials. The demoralized and starving Cherokees were dealt a devastating blow by the Grant expedition which desolated the Middle Towns in the summer of 1761. Finally, in December 1761 the Cherokees acknowledged defeat and signed a peace treaty.[23]

Peace came none too soon for the prostrate Back Country, which had been drastically depopulated as many inhabitants retreated to the Congarees or below. Of those who remained in the upper valleys of the Piedmont, about half were pinned down in wretched settlers' forts. Almost fifteen hundred people spent the winter of 1760–61 in the thirty forts of the area. Life in the forts was crowded and unhealthy. During 1759 and 1760 smallpox raged in the Back Country, and in early March 1760 two-thirds of the garrison of Fort Ninety Six were down with the disease, which took fourteen lives.[24]

Eventually, the plight of the people in the forts gained the attention of the Charleston government. Captain Edward Musgrove, respected Back Countryman who commanded Fort William Henry Lyttleton on the Enoree, in an appeal to the capital in June 1760 outlined "the distressed Situation and Circumstances" of the refugees, especially the women and children, who were bereft of clothing and all necessaries. On June 20, 1760, Lieutenant Governor William Bull asked the Assembly to grant Musgrove's request for aid. The Assembly responded in July by appropriating a general fund of £5000, which Bull was to parcel out to the settlers as needed.[25]

The relief of the poverty-stricken refugees was a major problem for more than a year. Requests for aid far exceeded the £5000 appropriation, but by allotting money and supplies to only the neediest forts the Lieutenant Goveror managed to spend no more than £2000 from July 1760 to January 1761. But the balance was inadequate to the needs. The refugees took advantage of the lull in fighting during the winter of 1760–61 to sow fields of "winter grain" around almost every fort. However, the winter crop could not be harvested until June or July. Meanwhile, the country around the forts was "so much exhausted by the devastation of the enemy, & twelve months consumption, that latterly they are obliged to send thirty, nay sixty miles for [grain]." Reminding the Assembly that the back settlers "must either starve, or break up the forts," Bull sought further provision until the harvests.[26]

As though the refugees in the forts had not undergone hardship and deprivation enough, commanders of some of the forts plotted to rob their charges of the supplies provided by the government. The situation came to light in July 1761, although the thievery had apparently been going on for some time. Bull got wind of the scandal first and lost no time in investigating. The Assembly then launched an inquiry of its own through a special committee. The committee reported that £147.5.0. in supplies ordered for Pennington's Fort had never arrived and pointed the finger of suspicion

at the commanders, Abraham and Jacob Pennington. Nor did the other commanders receive a clean bill of health. The committee had found it difficult to accumulate specific information about the forts and implied that there were cases of corruption which it had been unable to document.[27]

While commanders were stealing from the people in the forts, fighting men were deserting in the field. As month after month passed with peace still not in sight, desertion increased. In the spring of 1761 there was a battle on the Wateree River between faithful recruits from North Carolina and deserters from Colonel Thomas Middleton's regiment of South Carolina provincials. From the Congarees on April 25, 1761, came word that deserters from both the regulars and the provincials had been punished. But the evil continued.[28]

In May 1761 resistance to further service flared among the Rangers, who had been a constant source of trouble during the war.[29] "These Rangers," related one observer, "instead of annoying the Enemy, fell to plundering of, and living at free quarter on the poor Scatter'd Inhabitants. The forts into which they retir'd were fill'd with Whores and Prostitutes and there maintain'd at the Public Expence." Rangers pillaged stores of clothing, plundered settlers of strong drink, wasted ammunition and supplies, and "liv'd in an open, scandalous debauch'd Manner with their Doxies, instead of going on Duty." Many of the settlers "complain'd That they sustain'd more damage from their Protectors than from the Enemy, as they stript them of the little the other had left. . . ."[30]

Thanks to government assistance, the Back Country escaped starvation, but the war meant economic ruin for those who held out. In 1761 residents of the New Windsor–Stevens Creek area petitioned the Assembly for relief from all provincial taxes for two years. They claimed that "Constant dread & frequent Alarms" occasioned by the Indians had kept them shut up in forts for long periods of time. Their plantations lay vacant and uncultivated, their stock ran wild, and they had been unable to harvest a half or even a third of their normal crops.[31] All sections of the Back Country from the Catawba to the Savannah suffered similarly.

The white settlers remained in possession of the Back Country;

in 1760 the hitherto harmless cult degenerated into a homicidal craze. One day the Reverend Christian Theus, venerable minister of the Congarees, happened upon a Weberite meeting. The leaders beset Theus with fanatical questions; when the old man rebuked them, they wildly denounced him and asked that he be hung from the highest tree. A bit more subtle, the congregation decided that since Theus had blasphemed God and offended "the holy assembly" he should instead be drowned in the deepest depths. Just as he was about to be seized, Theus broke away and fled to the nearby Broad River, where a waiting Negro ferried him to safety.

Eventually the three members of the trinity fell to quarreling. Weber and Smithpeter turned on the Negro, Dauber. They accused him of not properly filling the role of the Holy Spirit, holding "that he was neither hot nor cold, but lukewarm." The members assembled in the woods and dug a pit. They placed mattresses on the bottom, threw Dauber in, piled more mattresses on top of him, and leaped upon them until the erstwhile Holy Ghost suffocated. Next came the turn of Smithpeter, the Son. Weber assailed him as Satan in disguise and ordered him chained to a tree. The band surrounded Smithpeter, "struck him with their fists, and beat him until he fell to the ground, and finally they danced around him and trampled upon his throat until he was dead."

Charleston authorities learned of the excesses of the Weberites, and soon the whole province was aghast at their shocking crimes. Leading members of the sect were brought to Charleston for trial. Jacob Weber was convicted and hung in April 1761, but the others were pardoned by Lieutenant Governor Bull. The absence of firm ecclesiastical organization in Dutch Fork gave an opening to the doctrinal errors of Jacob Weber, while the grave dislocations and terrors of the Cherokee War exacerbated the delusion and led to its final murderous phase.[15]

In the more familiar dissenting sects, religious practices were often noted for enthusiasm rather than serene piety. Charles Woodmason excoriated the New Light Baptists and the Presbyterians for their hymn singings, in which the people of a neighborhood gathered together in a private home, usually without a minister present, for an evening of singing and sociability. Woodmason

condemned these assemblies as occasions for debauchery, assignations, and blasphemous songs masquerading as hymns.[16] However, the hymn singings were significant not so much for the occasional loose behavior that accompanied them as for the way in which Back Country social conditions modified conventional religious practice. The dissenting churches afforded one of the few means of relief from the toil and isolation of Back Country existence. The haphazard nature of the sects allowed the people to hit upon an informal practice, the hymn singing, which combined religion with conviviality.

Outside observers made much of the immorality of the Back Country. Charles Woodmason claimed that ninety-four out of a hundred women married by him were already pregnant and that social disease was rife among the dissenters.[17] A generally reliable reporter, Woodmason nevertheless was prone to exaggeration where his Anglican prejudices were involved. As in similar young societies, ? fornication, adultery, and bastardy were no doubt all too common. But while religious excitement may have led some men and women into moral lapses, the dissenting sects waged unremitting warfare on immorality.[18]?

what is the meaning of This entire ||

The graphic details of the undisciplined side of Back Country life, about which Woodmason often wrote, must not obscure the sober, constructive role of the dissenting congregations. Practically all shades of doctrine were found in the region. The Presbyterians and Baptists predominated, but there were also Lutherans, Quakers, Sabbatarians, Dunkers, Methodists, Congregationalists, and Huguenots.[19]

In 1768 twenty-one Presbyterian churches were scattered through the Back Country. The three oldest had been founded in 1755. The largest, that at Long Canes, served 500 families in a heavily Scotch-Irish neighborhood. The Saluda Church had 200 families, and the Waxhaws Church included 120 families in another strong Scotch-Irish settlement. The Presbyterians, originally the Back Country's leading sect, lagged in the 1760's because of a drastic shortage of ministers. Only two of the twenty-one churches had pastors in 1768.[20]

By the middle 1760's the New Light Baptists had forged ahead of the Presbyterians. The Baptists achieved their position under the guidance of some notable preachers: Philip Mulkey, Joseph Reese, Daniel Marshall, Thomas Blount, and Evan Pugh. These ministers possessed wide influence, and they led in the creation of a host of congregations in the 1760's and 1770's.

The pattern of growth of the Baptist churches was simple. A wandering preacher entered the land, roamed about, halted, and founded a "mother church" around which branches proliferated. The top Baptist minister, Philip Mulkey, had drifted down from North Carolina about 1760 and founded a church on Fairforest Creek far up in the Piedmont. Under his direction Fairforest Church produced nine branches of which four, at least, were in existence by 1770: Little River of Broad (*circa* 1768), Tyger River (1765), Little River of Saluda (1770), and Enoree River (1768). Between 1765 and 1772 Mulkey and the Reverend Daniel Marshall also founded churches in a wide area radiating from the Congarees.[21]

Welsh Neck Baptist Church, the oldest in the Peedee section, was established in 1738 by Welsh immigrants from Pennsylvania who originally settled the section. Churches which were either branches of Welsh Neck or were located in the Peedee were Catfish Creek(1752), Beauty Spot (1768), Dog Bluff (1768), First Church on Lynches Creek (1755), and Lower Fork of Lynches Creek (1770). Evan Pugh was the outstanding Baptist minister in the Peedee. A Pennsylvanian, Pugh was minister of Welsh Neck Church from 1763 to 1766; in 1767 he began his long pastorate at Cashaway Church.[22]

At first glance, the community life of the Back Country was chaotic. There were no formal organs of local government. Counties and county courts were non-existent. Justices of the peace could only commit malefactors to jail; trials had to take place in Charleston. There were no towns, and the few tiny hamlets possessed no governmental bodies. The parish officers in South Carolina performed some functions of local government, but the one parish in the Back Country was huge, unmanageable Saint Mark's. Only the loose structure of militia companies and justices of the peace served

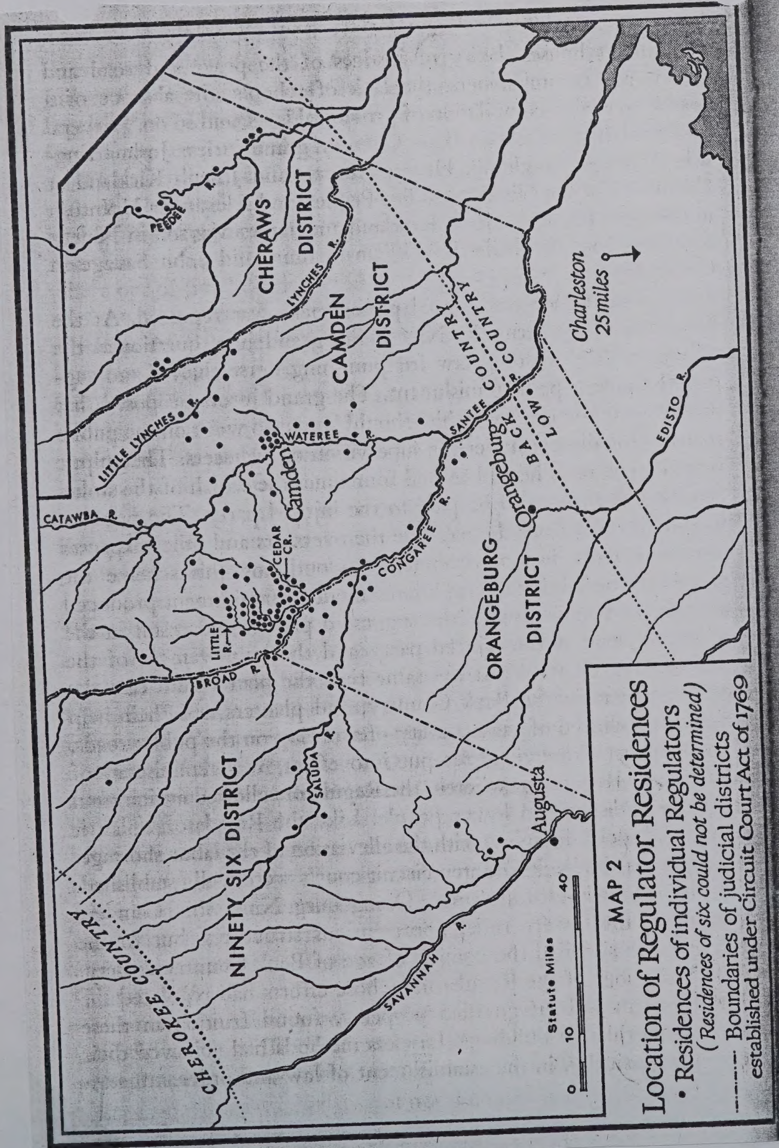
as a partial, though fundamentally unsatisfactory, substitute for local government.[23]

The Back Country militia was composed of four regiments averaging about 1500 men each and totaling around 6500 men, divided among 70 or 80 companies. Each regiment was commanded by a colonel, assisted by majors. The companies varied in size from about 50 or 60 to 100 or 125 men and were led by three officers—captain, lieutenant, and ensign—who were men of standing in their localities. Company or regimental musters were held at least six times a year.[24]

William Bull, the astute Lieutenant Governor, was aware of the utility of the militia in the absence of other effective organs of government. In 1764 he formed a regiment between the Broad and the Saluda to give the settlers "some sort of Order and Government which they seem generally at present not sufficiently acquainted with, being chiefly from the back parts of the Northern colonies." [25] But the militia system worked better in periods of frontier emergency when its defensive function was at a premium; the militia's rigid organization and unwieldy size were not geared to the positive needs of civil government. At best, the bimonthly militia musters merely provided a rough ground of social organization on which a more pervasive order of civil authority might be erected. Meanwhile, respectable citizens were impatient for the establishment of regular government.

The justices of the peace were the most important men in the Back Country. Their judicial power was slight, but they performed a number of other duties. They "issued warrants of the peace and warrants of hue and cry, administered oaths, took depositions, attested the returns of appraisements, and issued certificates for the heads of wild beasts, so that the owner could get his bounty." One of their most important functions was that of toll master, wherein they "took charge of stray live stock, advertised for the owners, and, if they were unclaimed, sold them for the benefit of the public and the informers." [26]

The important role of the justice of the peace became apparent on Saturday, the day he held his sittings. The Back Country then


CHERAWS DISTRICT
CAMDEN DISTRICT
ORANGEBURG DISTRICT
NINETY SIX DISTRICT
CHEROKEE COUNTRY
BACK COUNTRY
LOW COUNTRY
Charleston 25 miles
PEEDEE R.
LYNCHES R.
LITTLE LYNCHES R.
WATEREE R.
Camden
CATAWBA R.
CEDAR CR.
LITTLE R.
BROAD R.
CONGAREE R.
SANTEE R.
Orangeburg
EDISTO R.
SALUDA R.
SAVANNAH R.
Augusta
Statute Miles
0
10
40

MAP 2
Location of Regulator Residences
• Residences of individual Regulators
(*Residences of six could not be determined*)
—·—·— Boundaries of judicial districts established under Circuit Court Act of 1769

VIII

THE COMPOSITION OF THE REGULATOR MOVEMENT

1767

RESPECTABLE Back Countrymen rose *en masse* against the outlaws in the fall of 1767 and then "chose a thousand Men" who called themselves Regulators to carry on their activities.[1] In November of that year four thousand men were said to have signed the Regulator remonstrance to the Assembly before it was decided to submit the document over the signatures of four deputies.[2] Between twenty-five hundred and three thousand Regulators of Saint David (the Peedee area) and Saint Mark (the Catawba–Wateree area) Parishes were to prepare for a rendezvous at Eutaw in October 1768 before marching to Charleston to present their grievances, while fifteen hundred Regulators of the Congarees, the Broad, and the Saluda were to hold themselves in readiness.[3] According to this report, about forty-five hundred Regulators were involved. The Regulators of Ninety Six and the Savannah Valley (who apparently were not included in these plans) [4] probably numbered about a thousand or fifteen hundred. On the basis of these figures the entire movement included between five and six thousand Back Countrymen. However, Back Country sources may have been prone to exaggerate the number of Regulators. It is possible that there were as few as three thousand, with a hard core of about five hundred or a thousand. A search of the records has revealed the full names of 118 Regulators, a rough sample which offers a basis for some judgment of the composition of the Regulator movement.[5]

The four Back Country districts established under the circuit court act of 1769 coincide with natural subdivisions and form a useful basis for geographical analysis of the Regulators. Cheraws

District comprised mainly the Peedee basin and ran westward to Lynches River. Camden District was centered on the Wateree basin and extended from Lynches River to the Santee–Congaree–Broad line. Ninety Six District included the large area lying between the Broad and the Savannah. Orangeburg District was shaped like a huge wedge with the Santee, Congaree, and lower Broad forming its northeast boundary and Ninety Six District sprawling along its northwest margin. (See Map 2.) The breakdown in Regulator membership by districts—with Ninety Six and Orangeburg Districts combined to make a unit of the area extending from the Santee-Congaree-Broad to the Savannah—appears in Table 1.

Table 1. Geographic distribution of Regulators

District	*Regulators*	*Per cent*
Camden	75	64
Ninety Six and Orangeburg	25	21
Cheraws	12	10
Residence unknown	6	5
Total	118	100

These figures, however, exaggerate the number of Camden Regulators in comparison to those of Ninety Six, Orangeburg, and Cheraws Districts, for other sources indicate that the Regulators of Ninety Six–Orangeburg and the Peedee were as vigorous and probably almost as numerous in their respective areas as those of Camden District. The overrepresentation of Camden District stems from the fact that well over half the names of the 118 Regulators come from a pardon list of 1771 that refers overwhelmingly to Camden District.

Governor Montagu's proclamation of October 31, 1771, pardoned seventy-five Regulators under authority of the clemency proclamation of August 6, 1768.[6] The pardon was granted more than two years after the end of the Regulator movement to Regulators who sought forgiveness in order to forestall the bringing of damage suits by their Back Country victims.[7] "We do . . . Direct," said the Governor, "that no suit shall henceforward be Instituted or Prosecuted in our Name or at our Instance against all or either of the above named persons for any of the Trespasses or Misdemeanours aforesaid." Montagu then "required" the Attorney General and "all others whom it may concern" to "take due Notice & govern themselves accordingly." [8] The fall of 1771 was a logical time for Back Country victims of the Regulation to seek redress for maltreatment. At that time construction of courthouses and jails under the circuit court act of 1769 was well along, and it was expected that the courts would soon open in Camden, Ninety Six, Orangeburg, and the Cheraws. Victims of the Regulators would have little chance of winning damage suits in the new courtrooms of the Back Country where juries and public feeling would be predominantly pro-Regulator, but there might be a chance of success if the cases could be tried away from the Back Country in the provincial court at Charleston.

Glen Lyttleton
~~Gov~~ Bull
Gov Montagu 1771

The Regulator movement was a coalition of small planters and leading men. One-third (39) of the 118 were leading men and two-thirds (79) were small planters by 1769. The leading men formed the rude gentry of the Back Country: large planters, storekeepers, justices of the peace, militia officers, tax collectors, and occupants of other positions of trust and authority. From among them were drawn the leaders of the Regulation, such individuals as Samuel Boykin, Robert Cunningham, Benjamin Farrar, Tacitus Gaillard, Gideon Gibson, Benjamin Hart, Henry Hunter, Joseph Kirkland, Moses Kirkland, Edward McGraw, Sr., James Mayson, Barnaby Pope, John Scott, Charles Woodmason, and Thomas Woodward.[9] The small planters—who planted a few hundred acres at most and whose names appear only fleetingly in the records—formed the rank and file.[10]

A substantial number (14 or 18 per cent) of the seventy-nine small planters rose into the leading man category after the Regulation. Service in the Revolutionary War, tenure of local office, election to state legislatures and conventions, and increases in landed property made these men prominent in the 1770's, 1780's, and 1790's. For example, William Kirkland and William Welsh helped settle the fate of the defeated Tories in the Jacksonborough Legislature of 1782; Andrew Baskin, John Cook, and John Gray were members of the state convention that ratified the federal constitution in 1788; William Kirkland, John Marshall, and William Welsh served in the state constitutional convention of 1790; John Boykin became a legislator; John Marshall was a Whig colonel under Thomas Sumter; and John Woodward, the son of Regulator leader Thomas Woodward, died owning fifty-five slaves and over seven thousand acres of land.[11]

Upward social mobility was thus one of the characteristics of the ~~movement~~ sample. Many who were already leading men at the time of the Regulation reached even higher levels of success in later years. Moses Kirkland, Robert Cunningham, and Alexander McIntosh figured prominently in the Revolutionary fighting. Joshua English, Samuel Boykin, Moses Kirkland, and James Carey became rich planters and were among the largest slaveholders in the Back Country. Evan Pugh became one of the most distinguished Baptist ministers in South Carolina. William Wofford blossomed as a Back Country ironmaster. James Mayson became a Whig colonel, a postwar judge, and one of the wealthiest planters and businessmen in the Back Country.

The meager information available on the age of the Regulators at the time of the movement confirms this picture of them as aggressive men of affairs. Of the fourteen whose age in 1768 can be ascertained, two were from 21 to 29, nine from 30 to 45, and three over 45. The Regulators tended to be in the later years of youth or early middle age—the age groups most likely to be socially and economically aggressive.

The Regulators were predominantly agriculturists. Ninety-two per cent (108) of the 118 were planters, either large or small. Ten Regulators were engaged in other occupations, but even eight of these were also planters, some on a large scale. Rudolph Buzzard, Benjamin Gigary, and Matthias Weeker were miller, planter-miller, and wagoner, respectively; socially they may be lumped together with the small planters. Thomas Charlton, a leading man, was a merchant-physician-planter. Benjamin Farrar was a physician and planter. Moses Kirkland was a planter, merchant, and sawmill and gristmill operator. Evan Pugh was a minister and planter. John Savage was a merchant and planter. Charles Woodmason was a minister and had been a planter and merchant. William Wofford was a planter and ironmaster. Farrar, Kirkland, Pugh, Savage, Woodmason, and Wofford were all leading men. Some Regulators may have engaged in other pursuits not disclosed in the records, but the predominantly agricultural character of the Regulators jibes with the state of the Back Country at the time.

Analysis of the individual landholdings of the 118 Regulators shows that they appreciably increased their acreage in the years after the end of the Regulation in 1769, thus reinforcing the picture of the movement as a group of ambitious men of youthful or middle years. Table 2 indicates that the Regulators increased their holdings in almost all categories of acreage, both large and small. At the same time, the number of Regulators whose holdings were unknown decreased by almost one third (from 62 to 43). After 1769 the aggregate of small landholders (50–399 acres) remained almost stationary, but there was a decided increase in the medium and large landholders, those owning 400 acres or more. The percentage changes are revealing. In 1769 well over half (61 per cent) of the 56 Regulators whose holdings were known were in the small acreage (50–399) category, but later the situation was reversed, with 53 per cent in the medium and large acreage category (400 acres or more) and 47 per cent in the small acreage category. Regulators owning from 400 to 999 acres increased by half (from 14 to 21)

Table 2. Number of Regulators holding land through and after 1769, by size of holding

Acres	*through 1769*	*after 1769*
50–99	4	1
100–199	14	16
200–299	10	10
300–399	6	8
400–499	4	7
500–999	10	14
1000–1499	6	14
1500–1999	1	1
2000–	1	4
unknown	62	43
Total	118	118

after 1769, and those owning 1000 or more acres more than doubled (from 8 to 19).

Examination of the holdings of individual Regulators reveals a general increase all along the line. Many Regulators whose names did not appear in the land records through 1769 emerged in the early 1770's as small landholders of less than three hundred acres. Others who held a small acreage in 1769 moved into the middle categories of three, four, and five hundred acres. Landholders originally in the latter categories tended to move upward beyond five hundred acres. Owners of from four hundred to a thousand acres tended to move into the really large category between one thousand and fifteen hundred acres and even higher. While the upward movement was general, a few of the large landholders after 1769 were men for whom acreage figures became available for the first time. Thus Thomas Charlton, whose holdings were unknown in 1769, later possessed a total of twelve hundred acres. (The total acreage ultimately held by each Regulator is listed in Appendix A.)

Nineteen Regulators owned a thousand or more acres each after 1769:

	Acreage through 1769	*Total acreage after 1769*
Moses Kirkland	1,145½	11,460
John Woodward	200 (1772)	7,389 plus
James Carey	unknown	2,262
Charles Woodmason	unknown	2,150 (through 1759)
Matthew Singleton	1,800	1,800
Edward McGraw, Sr.	750	1,550
James Mayson	600	1,400 plus
William Wofford	400	1,400 plus
Philip Shaver	150 (1772)	1,275
Robert Stark	500	1,250
Thomas Charlton	unknown	1,200
Joshua English	900	1,200
Philip Pledger	861	1,161
Joseph Kirkland	1,141	1,141
John Savage	1,000	1,130
Gideon Gibson	1,100	1,100
Claudius Pegues	1,000 plus	1,000 plus
Robert Cunningham	unknown	1,000
George Hicks	1,000	1,000

At the top of the list stands Moses Kirkland with the huge, war-swollen total of 11,460 acres. (A short biographical sketch of Kirkland appears later in this chapter.) John Woodward, son of Thomas Woodward, a young man of twenty-one at the time of the Regulation, by his death in 1817 had taken advantage of the agricultural revolution which transformed the Back Country and made his own county, Fairfield, one of the leading cotton producers of the state. Charles Woodmason, on the other hand, had lost most of his original acreage of 2,150 by the time he became the itinerant minister of Saint Mark Parish.

Except for the acreage totals which represent wills or inventories, the amounts in the list above, while revealing the trend, can only be considered approximate. Amounts based solely on pre-Revolutionary land plats do not take into account later acquisitions and sales and purchases. Regulators whose acreage is unknown and hence do not appear on the list but who, by virtue of their high status, probably owned over a thousand acres include John Marshall, Samuel Boykin, and Evan Pugh—all large slaveholders; Tacitus Gaillard, aristocratic planter and a leading member of the colonial Assembly; and Alexander McIntosh and Morris Murphy, Sr.—prominent men of the Peedee. Sometimes the available acreage figures grossly understate an individual's total landholdings. For example, the figure of two hundred acres for Benjamin Farrar is too low for a man who was an Assemblyman and a member of South Carolina's pre-Revolutionary elite.

While the Back Country was not a large slaveholding area at the time of the Regulation, many leading men probably owned some Negroes. Pre-Revolutionary statistics are not available, but a few of the most affluent Regulators, like Moses Kirkland, George Hicks, and Claudius Pegues, were probably substantial slaveholders in the Regulator era. These men and others cited below made up the twenty-five per cent (30) of the 118 Regulators who, according to wills and inventories and the federal census of 1790, eventually owned slaves. The following sixteen Regulators ultimately owned ten or more slaves:

Samuel Boykin	64	John Cook	33
Claudius Pegues	63	Henry Hunter	27

John Woodward	55	Evan Pugh	17
Joshua English	45	John Boykin	15
James Carey	42	William Kirkland	14
George Hicks	42	William Welsh	11
John Marshall	36	Thomas Woodward	11
Moses Kirkland	36	John Fulmore	10

Six other Regulators owned from five to eight slaves, three others owned from two to four, and four others owned one each.[12] James Mayson's will states that he was a slaveholder but does not tell how many slaves he owned; undoubtedly he had many. In addition, some Regulators whose slaveholdings never appear in the records probably owned slaves; men of high social status such as Benjamin Farrar, Tacitus Gaillard, Alexander McIntosh, Morris Murphy, Sr., John Savage, Matthew Singleton, and William Wofford were doubtless large slaveholders.

Regulator leading men filled numerous offices in the Back Country. Thirty Regulators (25 per cent of the 118) at one time or another held the important commission of justice of the peace. Forty-one (35 per cent) of the 118 Regulators held military commissions at one time or another. Twenty-one (18 per cent) were pre-Revolutionary militia or ranger officers.[13] Twenty-eight Regulators (eleven of whom had been pre-Revolutionary militia or ranger officers) served as Whig officers during the Revolution. Four Regulators (one of whom had been a pre-Revolutionary militia officer) became Tory officers.[14]

Regulators filled a host of other offices and positions of note. Fifteen Regulators (13 per cent of the 118) were tax inquirers and collectors. At least two—Benjamin Farrar and Moses Kirkland—were deputies to the Surveyor General and laid out land tracts for settlers. Many Regulators served as commissioners of one kind or another. Twenty Regulators (17 per cent of the 118) were commissioners to oversee the building or maintenance of roads.[15] Five were commissioners charged with clearing rivers of obstructions to navigation.[16] Seven were commissioners to supervise the construction of Back Country courthouses and jails under the circuit court act of 1769.[17] Five served as commissioners to oversee state legislative elections.[18] George Hicks was a county commissioner of caveats, William Arthur was on the commission to divide Orangeburg District, Charles Woodmason at one time served as supervisor of harbor pilotage and streets for Charleston, and James Mayson was a bail commissioner.

Christopher Coulliett, Benjamin Farrar, Tacitus Gaillard, George Hicks, Claudius Pegues, Philip Pledger, and Charles Woodmason were parish officers.[19] James Mayson, William Kirkland, and John Gray became county judges, and Mayson was also appointed a trustee for Cambridge College, which, however, never became more than a Ninety Six District grammar school. Charles Woodmason served as a coroner. At least five Regulators were constables,[20] and five—Robert Cunningham, Joshua English, Tacitus Gaillard, Moses Kirkland, and James Mayson—were appointed proprietors of public ferries. Thirty-four Regulators (29 per cent) were selected for grand jury service.[21]

Twenty-four Regulators participated in all the major legislative bodies and conventions of South Carolina down to 1800. Four (Farrar, Gaillard, Moses Kirkland, Pegues) were members of the colonial Assembly; twelve were members of the Provincial Congresses of 1775–76.[22] Ex-Regulators were present in all three important postwar deliberative bodies. The Jacksonborough Legislature was called in early 1782 to restore civil government and deal with the Tories following the defeat of the British. A body "of great distinction, including almost every available civil and military leader of the Revolution in South Carolina," [23] it numbered among its members Regulators William Arthur, Henry Hunter, Joseph Kirkland, William Kirkland, and William Welsh. Five Regulators—Andrew Baskin, Samuel Boykin, John Cook, John Gray, and William Kirkland—were elected to the state convention held in Charleston in May 1788, which ratified the federal constitution by a vote of 149 to 73. The Back Country voted heavily against the constitution,[24] and the old Regulators were no exception. Five Regulators—William Kirkland, John Marshall, James Mayson, Evan Pugh, and William Welsh—took part in the state constitutional convention of 1790 that established a government of "aristocratic stability" for South Carolina.[25]

Seven ex-Regulators served at various times in regular sessions of the state legislature: William Arthur, John Boykin, Thomas Charlton, Robert Cunningham, Alexander McIntosh, James Mayson, and Matthew Singleton. Ten of the twenty-one Regulators who had legislative or convention service were elected to more than one body: William Arthur (Provincial Congress, Jacksonborough Legislature, regular legislature), Benjamin Farrar (colonial Assembly, Provincial Congress), Tacitus Gaillard (colonial Assembly, Provincial Congress), Henry Hunter (Provincial Congress, Jacksonborough Legislature), Joseph Kirkland (Provincial Congress, Jacksonborough Legislature), William Kirkland (Jacksonborough Legislature, ratification convention, constitutional convention of 1790), Alexander McIntosh (Provincial Congress, regular legislature), James Mayson (Provincial Congress, constitutional convention of 1790, regular legislature), Claudius Pegues (colonial Assembly, Provincial Congress), and William Welsh (Jacksonborough Legislature, constitutional convention of 1790).

The list of seventy-five Regulators pardoned by Governor Montagu in 1771 was composed mainly of rank and file Regulators from Camden District.[26] Of the seventy-five, seventy (93 per cent) were of small planter status at the time of the Regulation; only five were leading men.[27] In later years ten of the small planters[28] rose into the leading man category, so that a total of fifteen (20 per cent) of those pardoned in 1771 were then or later leading men. The 1771 pardon list is additional proof that the Regulator movement was part of the climb upward for ambitious younger men. It also suggests that family and kinship were important factors in the movement. Thirty-one, or almost half, of the seventy-five men on the pardon list had surnames that appeared more than once; only twelve surnames accounted for nearly half of the men listed.[29]

Thirty-four Regulators listed in the pardon lived in the Little River–Cedar Creek section and exemplify the movement at the local level. Little River and Cedar Creek flow into the Broad River from the east about five miles apart. Their small watersheds are adjacent and form a fairly distinct section in the southwest and south central area of present Fairfield County and the north central section of present Richland County, about fifteen miles north of the present city of Columbia. The group from this area was mainly rank and file.[30] Only three (9 per cent)—Thomas Woodward, Barnaby Pope, and Edward McGraw, Sr.—were leading men at the time of the Regulation; all the rest were small planters. Six of the latter became leading men in after years;[31] hence nine, or one quarter, of the Little River–Cedar Creek Regulators fell ultimately in that category.

Nineteen, or more than half of the Little River–Cedar Creek men, were related to each other or had common surnames, an indication of probable kinship. Some of the family relationships were notable: the five McGraws, the Woodwards, the three Andrews, and the Kirklands.[32] Other men were related by marriage; for example, William Kirkland and Barnaby Pope each married McKinney girls.[33] Nearly half—fifteen—of the Little River–Cedar Creek Regulators were neighbors or owned adjoining land tracts. The land plats show only landowners bounding directly on the plat in question, but it is likely that other Little River–Cedar Creek Regulators were neighbors in the general sense of living only a few miles from each other. For example, on Morrison's (or Morris) Creek, a branch of Little River, were intermingled plats belonging to Thomas Woodward, James Andrews, Sr., David McGraw, and Edward McGraw, Sr.[34] The Little River–Cedar Creek group affords a picture of the Regulator movement at the local level where it probably functioned most effectively. Here local bands of small planters—friends, neighbors, and relatives headed by a handful of leading men—operated along particular creeks or streams, rounding up outlaws and tasking lower people.

The widely accepted view that resentment against Low Countrymen who were Liberty Boys in the 1760's and Whigs in the 1770's caused old Regulators to support the King during the war is not correct. Of the 118 Regulators, sixty-nine (59 per cent) were Whigs (fifty-five or 47 per cent definitely, fourteen or 12 per cent probably), six (5 per cent) were Tories, and forty-three (36 per cent) were either dead or of unknown status. When the forty-three ex-Regulators whose Revolutionary allegiance cannot be determined are excluded, the figures are even more striking. Of sixty-one Regulators whose Revolutionary status is definitely known, fifty-five (82 per cent) were Whigs. Of the seventy-five Regulators whose Revolutionary status is definitely *or* probably known, sixty-nine (92 per cent) were Whigs. Hence, the ex-Regulators were predominantly Whig.[35]

The six Regulators who became Tories were Moses Kirkland, Robert Cunningham, James Carey, Joshua English, Jacob Fray, and Charles Woodmason. Kirkland, Cunningham, and Carey were among the leading Tories in the Back Country; no doubt the proportion of loyalists among the ex-Regulators was greater than the 5 per cent indicated by the six known Tories. It is possible that there were some loyalists among the forty-three Regulators whose Revolutionary status is unknown. However, Robert Woodward Barnwell's thorough and careful study of South Carolina loyalism has shown that Tory strength in the Back Country has been exaggerated. Only the section between the Broad and the Saluda was predominantly Tory.[36]

If resentments generated by the Regulator troubles influenced loyalties during the Revolution, it would seem to have been the Moderators who became Tories, as David Ramsay concluded.[37] John Musgrove and Joseph Coffell, top Moderator leaders, both turned Tory. The term "Coffellite" (or "Scovilite" or variations) became a term of opprobrium which Back Country Whigs leveled at their Tory opponents during the Revolution.[38]

Individual Regulators became patriots, were Whig officials or representatives in 1775–76 and later, served in the Whig militia, or contributed supplies and provisions to the Whig cause. Of the forty-seven who served militarily, twenty-eight (60 per cent) were officers and nineteen (40 per cent) served in the ranks.[39] Most of these men took part in South Carolina's sanguinary Whig–Tory civil war of 1780–81. Twelve ex-Regulators helped launch the Revolution in South Carolina by representing their sections in the 1st and 2nd Provincial Congresses of 1775–76: William Arthur, Benjamin Farrar, Tacitus Gaillard,[40] Henry Hunter, Joseph Kirkland, Alexander McIntosh, James Mayson, Claudius Pegues, John Savage, Matthew Singleton, William Wofford, and Thomas Woodward. Some of the same men were also among the sixteen who were named by the Provincial Congress to the committees to execute the Continental Association and govern their localities under the authority of the Congress: John Alran, Samuel Boykin, Robert Cunningham (who turned Tory), Benjamin Farrar, Tacitus Gaillard, George Hicks, Henry Hunter, Joseph Kirkland, Alexander McIntosh, James Mayson, John Marshall, Claudius Pegues, Philip Pledger, John Savage, Matthew Singleton, and Thomas Woodward. Twenty-seven ex-Regulators—many of whom also served in a civil or military capacity—contributed supplies and provisions to the state.[41]

There was strong support for the Whigs among the Little River–Cedar Creek Regulators. Sixteen (46 per cent) of these thirty-five men fought in the Whig militia and four others were probably Whigs, so that a total of twenty (57 per cent) may be considered to have been Whigs. Of the sixteen who served in the military, ten—John Cook, Jacob Frazer, William Kirkland, David Moore, John Owens, Thomas Parrot, Barnaby Pope, Thomas Trapp, John and Thomas Woodward—were officers, and six were in the ranks.[42] There were no known Tories among the Little River–Cedar Creek Regulators. Thomas Woodward, the chief Regulator of Little River and Cedar Creek, became the outstanding Whig leader of the area at the outbreak of the Revolution.

Many other Regulators became important and energetic Whig leaders. James Mayson of the Ninety Six area was a member of the Provincial Congress, a commissioner to enforce the Continental Association, and a lieutenant colonel in the Whig Ranger regiment. Alexander McIntosh of the Long Bluff area on the Peedee was elected to the Provincial Congress, helped execute the Continental Association, and became lieutenant colonel and eventual commander of the Fifth Regiment of South Carolina Continentals. George Hicks of Welsh Neck on the Peedee was named to enforce the Continental Association and became a colonel of the Whig militia. Morris Murphy, Sr., of Marrs Bluff on the Peedee became a lieutenant colonel of militia. Claudius Pegues and Philip Pledger of the upper Peedee were too old to fight, but the former was a delegate to the Provincial Congress, both helped administer the

Continental Association in their areas, and both ranked among the leading patriots of the Peedee.

Camden District Regulators were zealous Whigs. John Marshall of Lynches River executed the Continental Association and became a colonel under Thomas Sumter. Joseph Kirkland enforced the Continental Association, became a lieutenant colonel of militia, and helped mete out punishment to the vanquished Tories in the Jacksonborough Legislature of 1782. Matthew Singleton of the lower Wateree was Provincial Congressman, executor of the Continental Association, and Whig colonel. Samuel Boykin executed the Continental Association and in 1776, as Ranger captain, led a company of Catawba Indians in the defense of Charleston; he later fought in Thomas Sumter's partisan band. Henry Hunter was a Provincial Congressman, executed the Continental Association, and in 1780 was among a score of leading Camden Whigs whom Lord Rawdon cast into jail for refusing to take up arms against the approaching Gates; later Hunter served in the Jacksonborough Legislature. Elsewhere, William Wofford, a "leading patriot" of the Tyger–Enoree section of Ninety Six District, became a Whig lieutenant colonel and took part in Andrew Williamson's campaign against the Cherokees in 1776 and in various actions in 1779. William Arthur was one of the principal Whigs of Saxe Gotha Township, Orangeburg District; he represented Saxe Gotha in the Provincial Congress, served in the state senate during the Revolution, and shared in the victorious deliberations of the Jacksonborough Legislature.

Examination of data on the Regulators as a group affords a general picture of the movement. A different, and no less enlightening, perspective is gained by an examination of the individual careers of a few typical Regulators. James Andrews, Sr., was typical of the small planters who made up the rank and file of the Regulator movement.

Andrews, an early settler in the region, lived on Morrison's (or Morris) Creek in the Little River–Cedar Creek hotbed of Regulators. A plat of 150 acres was surveyed for him on Little River in 1752, and another of 300 acres was laid out for him near Morrison's Creek in 1765. Except for his participation in the Regulation, Andrews' life seems to have been almost without public incident. His name appears from time to time in minor actions in Fairfield County court records after the Revolutionary War. In 1790 he was enumerated in the federal census. At his death in 1798 Andrews was essentially the same modest though solid and respectable property holder that he had been in the Regulator era. He lived on a plantation of 300 acres that had passed from Isaac Porcher to Joseph Kirkland (an ex-Regulator) to Andrews. He owned no slaves but possessed four horses, fifteen head of cattle, fifty hogs, household and kitchen furniture, farm implements, and three featherbeds. Andrews was survived by his wife, Priscilla, and ten children, to each of whom (except his executors, Mathew and Edward) he bequeathed 1^s sterling in cash. Small planter James Andrews, Sr., was deeply involved in the Regulator movement. Two of his sons (Enoch and James, Jr.) joined him in it, and one of his daughters (Mary) married into the McGraw family of Regulators.[43]

Andrew Baskin (or Baskins) was typical of those Regulators who were young and relatively unimportant small planters at the time of the Regulation but who later rose into leading man status, a rise probably begun by active participation in the Regulator movement. The Scotch-Irish Baskin was born in Ireland about 1730. Pausing for a time in Augusta County on the Virginia frontier, he moved about 1755 to the Flat Rock Creek section northeast of Camden in the South Carolina Back Country, and in 1761 he was living on the west side of Little Lynches River not far from Flat Rock Creek. Baskin was an active Whig during the Revolutionary War. Besides supplying provisions for Whig partisans in 1780 and 1781, Baskin himself served in the Whig militia in 1779 and 1780 under ex-Regulator Colonel John Marshall, who was probably related to Baskin's bride of 1759, Mary Marshall.

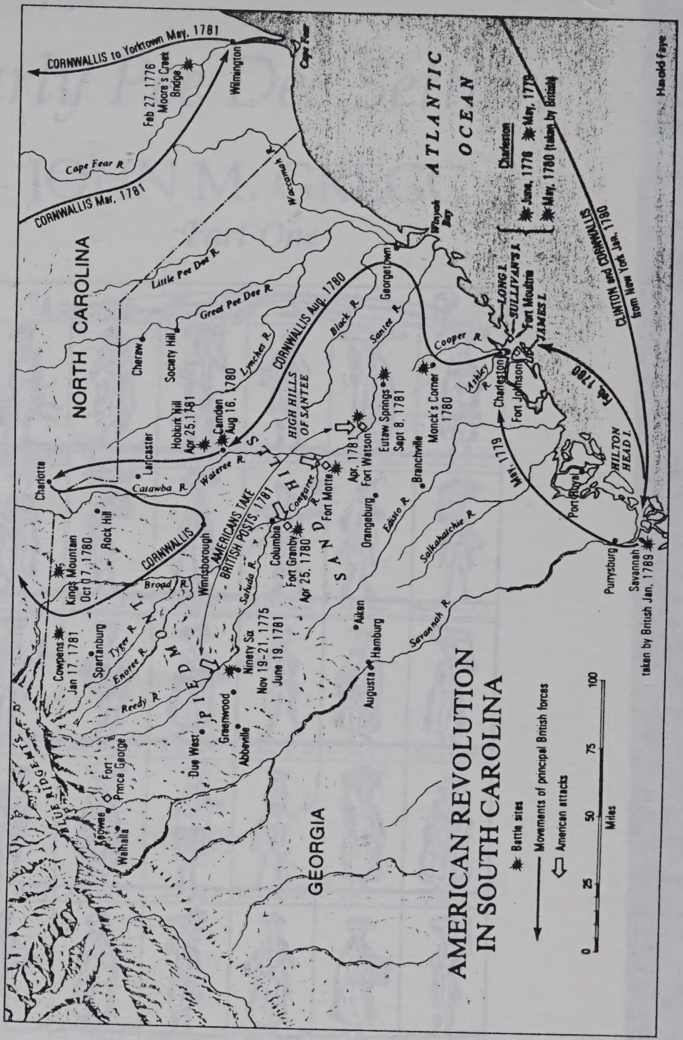
After the war Baskin emerged as one of the leading men of his section. When Lancaster County was formed in 1785, he was appointed one of its justices of the peace. During the 1780's and 1790's his name appears frequently in the county records as a grand juror and in other connections. Like most men of affairs, Baskin had

leaders in the back country would have to be arrested, and he sent out squads of men from his headquarters at Ninety Six to search the houses of loyalists. During September, Drayton's Whig followers faced a force of Tories led by Colonel Thomas Fletchall on the Saluda. They came to terms without fighting, but fighting broke out later in the autumn.

The first battle of the Revolution in which blood was shed in South Carolina occurred November 19–21, 1775, at Ninety Six, a strategic outpost in the Up Country nine miles south of the present city of Greenwood. Whigs and Tories were about evenly divided in the region, and tension between them was acute. Tories had captured a wagon train of ammunition being taken to the Cherokees as part of their hunting allowance on orders of the Council of Safety; this supply was deemed essential to keep the Indians at peace with the colonists. The Council of Safety ordered Major Andrew Williamson to recapture the gunpowder in possession of the Tories. Before Williamson could mobilize an adequate force, he learned that more than 1,800 Tories under the command of Patrick Cunningham and Joseph Robinson were marching on Ninety Six.

Only a small brick jail at Ninety Six was available for defense, and it would not serve for the 562 troopers whom Williamson had recruited. Consequently, Williamson built a makeshift fortification across the creek from the jail in a field owned by John Savage. Williamson had one advantage over the Tories: he had three small swivel guns which he mounted so as to sweep a wide area. For three days the two forces exchanged sporadic firing until finally, on the morning of Wednesday, November 22, both factions agreed to a truce and the fighting ended. One Whig lay dead. The Tories admitted to one man dead, but the Whigs claimed several more. Thus ended the first bloodshed by South Carolinians in a war that would increase in bitterness as the years went on.

Whigs continued the attack on Tories in the Up Country for a few weeks in December 1775, in what they called the "Snow Campaign." Desite the truce that Williamson had agreed to, the Council of Safety ordered Colonel Richard Richardson to mobilize the Camden militia, reinforced by militiamen from North


AMERICAN REVOLUTION IN SOUTH CAROLINA
Battle sites
Movements of principal British forces
American attacks
0
25
50
75
100
Miles
Harold Faye
ATLANTIC OCEAN
NORTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
PIEDMONT
SAND HILLS
HIGH HILLS OF SANTEE
BLUE RIDGE MTS.
CORNWALLIS to Yorktown May, 1781
CORNWALLIS Mar. 1781
CORNWALLIS Aug. 1780
CORNWALLIS
CLINTON and CORNWALLIS from New York Jan. 1780
Feb. 1780
May, 1779
AMERICANS TAKE BRITISH POSTS, 1781
Wilmington
Feb 27, 1776 Moore's Creek Bridge
Cape Fear
Cape Fear R.
Waccamaw R.
Winyah Bay
Little Pee Dee R.
Great Pee Dee R.
Lynches R.
Black R.
Santee R.
Cooper R.
Ashley R.
Wateree R.
Catawba R.
Congaree R.
Broad R.
Saluda R.
Tyger R.
Enoree R.
Reedy R.
Edisto R.
Salkehatchie R.
Savannah R.
Charlotte
Cheraw
Society Hill
Lancaster
Hobkirk Hill Apr 25, 1781
Camden Aug 16, 1780
Georgetown
Fort Motte Apr. 1781
Fort Watson
Eutaw Springs Sept 8, 1781
Monck's Corner 1780
Branchville
Orangeburg
Rock Hill
Kings Mountain Oct 7, 1780
Winnsboro
Columbia
Fort Granby Apr 25, 1780
Cowpens Jan 17, 1781
Spartanburg
Ninety Six Nov 19-21, 1775 June 19, 1781
Greenwood
Abbeville
Due West
Fort Prince George
Keowee
Walhalla
Aiken
Augusta
Hamburg
Charleston
June, 1776
May, 1779
May, 1780 (taken by British)
LONG I.
SULLIVAN'S I.
Fort Moultrie
JAMES I.
Fort Johnson
Port Royal
HILTON HEAD I.
Purrysburg
Savannah taken by British Jan. 1789

THE STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF WISCONSIN
sHs
1846

The Welsh of the Peedee (Yadkin)
were Baptists.

Our Dials were Anglicans,
at least at first

Dial

&
Griffith

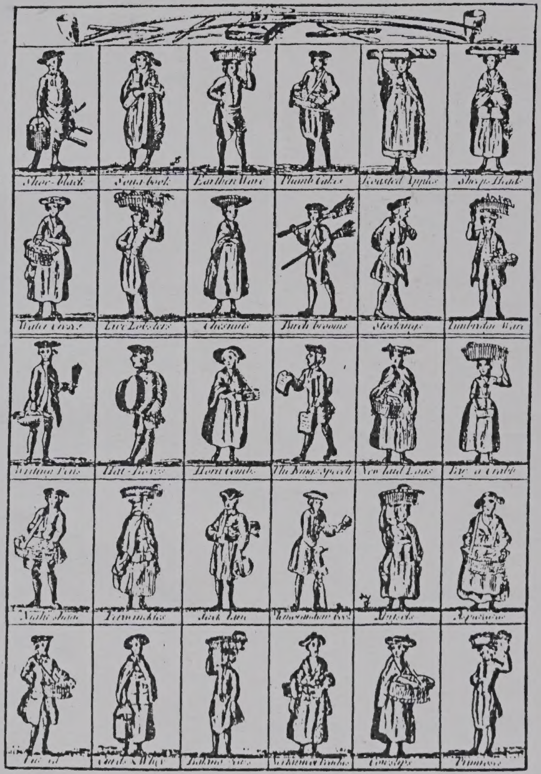
These Dials
are ours.

Probably not ~~[illegible]~~ Griffith clan.

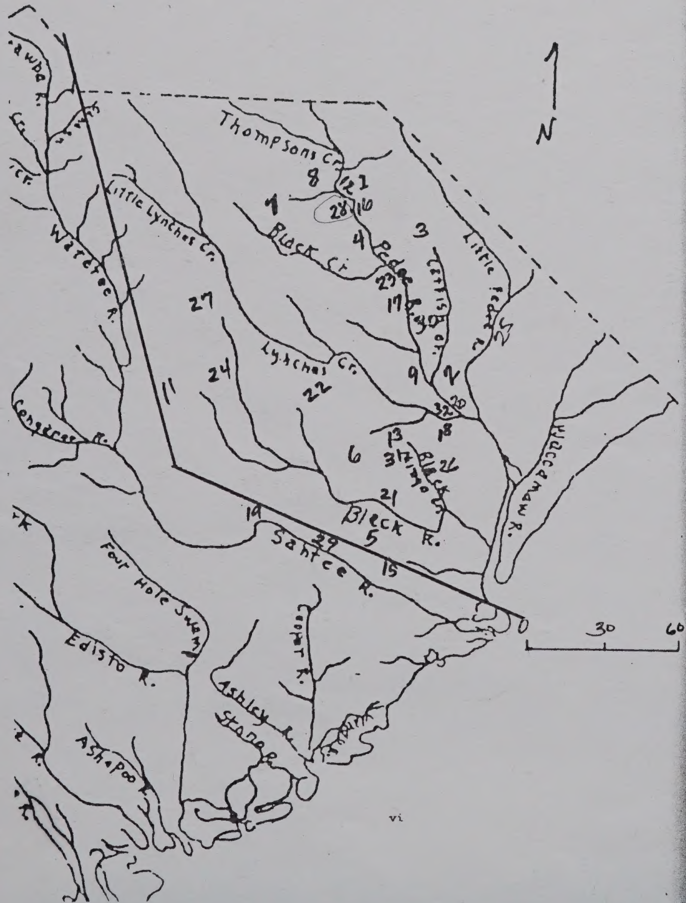
Early Pee Dee Settlers

JOHN M. GREGG

Part One



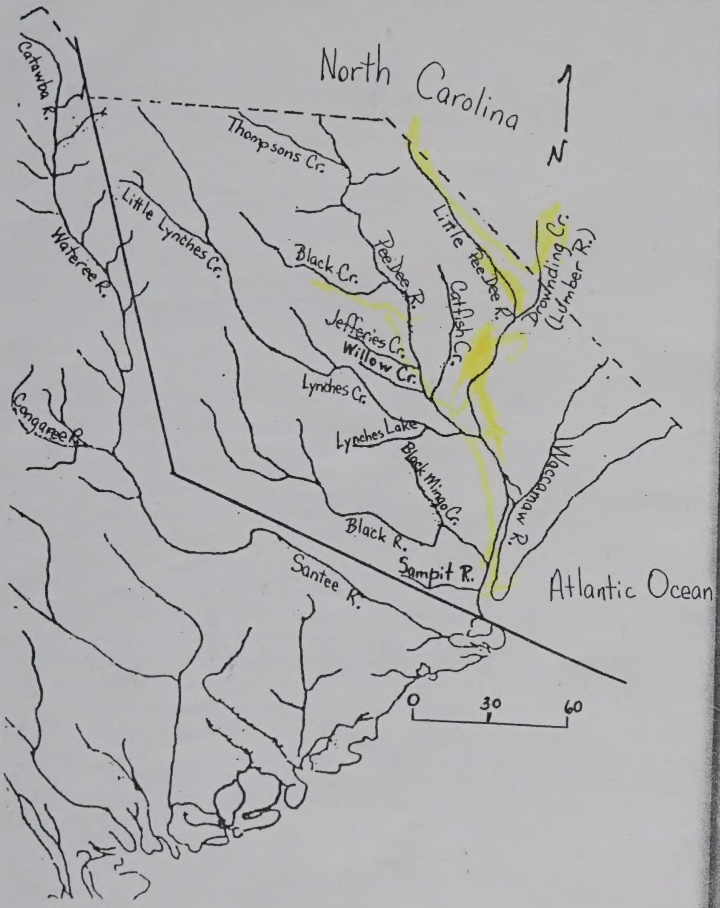
Heritage Books, Inc.

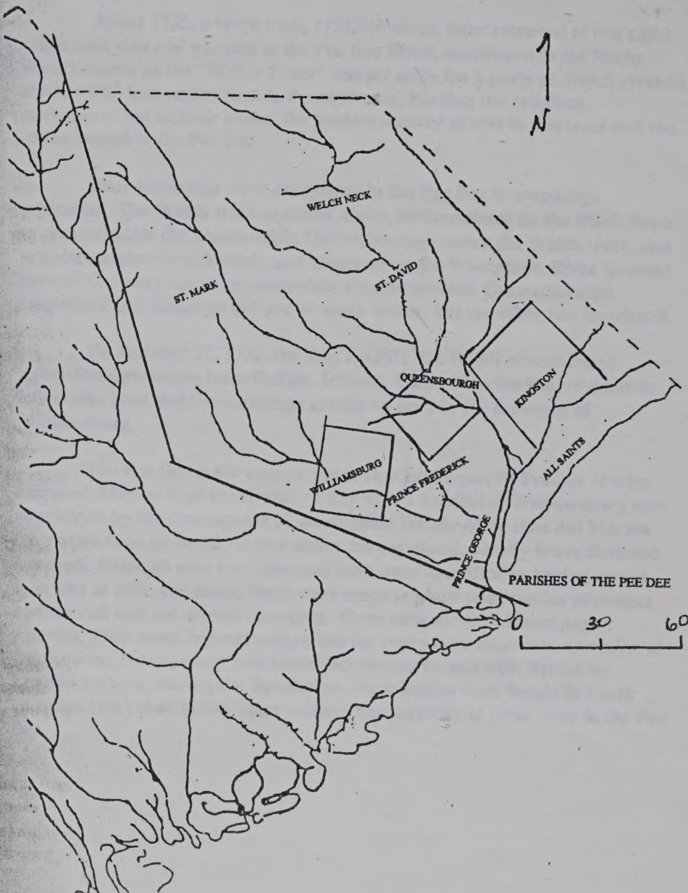

N
awba R.
Thompsons Cr.
Little Lynches Cr.
Wateree R.
Black Cr.
Pedee R.
Catfish Cr.
Little Pedee R.
Lynches Cr.
Congaree R.
Black R.
Santee R.
Waccamaw R.
Four Hole Swamp
Edisto R.
Cooper R.
Ashley R.
Stono R.
Ashepoo R.
0
30
60

Locations in the Pee Dee

During the Colonial Period

1. Beauty Spot
2. Britton's Neck
3. Buck Swamp
4. Cashaway
5. Cedar Cr. (Williamsburg)
6. Cedar Swamp
7. Cedar Cr. (St. David's)
8. Cheraw
9. Dewitt's Bluff
10. Hayes Swamp
11. High Hills
12. Hunt's Bluff
13. Indiantown
14. Irishtown
15. Lenud's Ferry
16. Long Bluff
17. Mars Bluff
18. Muddy Creek
19. Nelson's Ferry
20. Port's Ferry
21. Potato Ferry
22. Pudden Swamp
23. Red Bluff
24. Salem
25. Sandy Bluff
26. Shepard's Ferry
27. Shiloh
28. Society Hill
29. Whittee Creek
30. Wiggin's Landing
31. Willtown
32. Witherspoon's Ferry


North Carolina
N
Catawba R.
Thompsons Cr.
Little Lynches Cr.
Wateree R.
Black Cr.
Pee Dee R.
Little Pee Dee R.
Drownding Cr. (Lumber R.)
Catfish Cr.
Jefferies Cr.
Willow Cr.
Lynches Cr.
Congaree R.
Lynches Lake
Black Mingo Cr.
Waccamaw R.
Black R.
Sampit R.
Santee R.
Atlantic Ocean
0
30
60


N
WELCH NECK
ST. MARK
ST. DAVID
QUEENSBOURGH
KINGSTON
WILLIAMSBURG
PRINCE FREDERICK
ALL SAINTS
PRINCE GEORGE
0
30
60

PARISHES OF THE PEE DEE

INTRODUCTION

The Pee Dee Basin covers the eastern part of South Carolina and is drained by that long, muddy river which originates in the mountains of North Carolina and traverses a large portion of both states. The river is currently called The Great Pee Dee in South Carolina and the Yadkin in North Carolina. It provided a natural highway into the interior of the state, enabling settlers to penetrate quickly and deeply. Two other large streams, the Black and the Waccamaw, cross the region, joining the Pee Dee a short distance from the sea. The three converge at Winyah Bay and are the most navigable rivers in the state. Several others contribute to this drainage system and provide navigation to smaller boats for short distances.

The Pee Dee area covers nearly one third of South Carolina. The natural boundaries are the Santee River on the south and the Wateree on the west. To the north and east, it is bounded by North Carolina and the Atlantic Ocean. This description covers more area than is today considered "The Pee Dee" but fits the area opened to settlement by the colonial government in 1700 at which time there was only one known European settler in the area. Before this time, only a few Indian traders had entered the locality.

The native Indians were not extensively ensconced. Only a few small tribes frequented the area regularly. Perhaps they were smarter than the European settlers who suffered greatly from the heat, malaria, and other insect borne disease. In any event, the Indians were not a big problem to the settlers of the Pee Dee.

Settlement was slow at first. George Hunter, Surveyor General, stated on a map compiled in 1730 that there were not more than five families north of the Santee. However, he numbers the militia company of Georgetown at 170. There appears to be fewer than twenty taxpayers in The Pee Dee in 1720, those mostly in or near George Town. Reverend John Fordyce's estimate of population in 1738 is 2600 total, including 400 Anglicans, 800 "dissenters of all sorts", "papists none", "heathens and infidels" about 1400.

The first settlements were mainly around Winyah Bay and gradually spread along the Black, Pee Dee, Sampit, and Waccamaw Rivers until the 1730's, at which time the settlers by-passed most of the region near the coast in favor of the higher ground farther inland.

French Huguenot settlements had earlier been established on the south side of Santee River at Jamestown and St. Stephens. Since only ten miles separate the Black and Santee Rivers, a good portion of the earliest Pee Dee settlers were these who began to spill over to the north bank.

The number of settlers greatly increased as a result of several factors. The colonial legislature, fearful of an uprising by the ever increasing population of slaves, passed the The Township Act which provided for land and supplies to Protestant settlers. Townships were laid out as a buffer to the Indians which were an occasional problem in the western part of the state. Several bounties were offered during the years following, including payment of passage and additional land grants. Free land and other social factors soon prompted a brisk migration.

The events that cause the first influx into the Pee Dee were the requirement in Ireland that everyone pay tithes to the Church of England, a large increase in land rents, the sacramental test for qualification of office holders, and general economic conditions in Ireland. These led to a large number of immigrants from the North of Ireland that slowed only with the restrictions imposed by England a short time before the out break of the rebellion. These are often referred to as Irish in colonial records, but being mainly of Scots descent, they are generally referred to as "Scotch Irish". In 1732, Williamsburg township was established on the upper reaches of Black River for these immigrants.

It is interesting to note that the Black and Santee are only ten to fifteen miles apart in the area designated for the settlement of these immigrants from Ireland. The Huguenots were already settled on the south side of the Santee. I am sure that this proximity contributed greatly to the early mixing of these ethnic groups. In just a few years, they were intermarrying and worshipping together.

About 1735, a large tract, (173,840 acres, later extended to run eight miles each side and parallel to the Pee Dee River, northward to the Rocky River) known as the "Welch Tract" was set aside for a party of Welch (Welsh) settlers who had settled first in Pennsylvania. Finding the religious atmosphere not to their liking, the leaders secured grants in this tract and the group moved to the Pee Dee.

Four townships were designated in the Pee Dee to encourage settlement. The Welch tract as stated above, Williamsburg on the Black River to accommodate the Scotch-Irish, Queensborough below the Welch tract, also to accommodate Scotch-Irish, and Kingston on the Waccamaw River (present town of Conway) was to accommodate English settlers. Queensborough languished and Kingston did not do much better, but the other two flourished.

On October 27, 1732, the ship HAPPY RETURN disembarked eighty-five passengers from Belfast, Ireland. These were the first of many to follow who paid their own passage to take up land in the township of Williamsburg.

The Pee Dee is the area in which that super-patriot Francis Marion operated. Marion kept the British at bay with a handful of Williamsburg men augmented by the descendants of the original Welsh. At no time did Marion have more than six hundred men under his command, usually fewer than one hundred. Although over two thousand have been identified as having served with him at different times, there were crops to plant and families to protect and the call was not always answered. These men served without pay or supplies. They were, indeed, heroes, but for every hero there was a heroine at home caring for the crops and sometimes having to deal with British or Loyalist raiders. During the Revolution, more battles were fought in South Carolina (158) than in any other colony. The majority of these were in the Pee Dee.

Notes: NIECE OF PATRICK GRIER #3722.

✓ GRIFFIN, JAMES ID: 5294
Spouse: ELIZABETH [--?--]
Children: ANNE.
Date in Pee Dee: 1745
Location: PRINCE FREDERICK PARISH
Source(s): RBPPFW.

✓ GRIFFIN, JOHN ID: 3048
Date in Pee Dee: 1742 Last Date: 1754
Location: PRINCE FREDERICK PARISH
Source(s): MOORE, RBPPFW.
Notes: SON OF JOSEPH #3627. DOB 8 OCTOBER 1719.

✓ GRIFFIN, JOSEPH ID: 3627
Spouse: JOYCE [--?--]
Children: JOHN.
Date in Pee Dee: 1742 Last Date: 1763
Location: PRINCE FREDERICK PARISH
Source(s): MOORE V.3, RBPPFW.
Notes: PROBABLY HERE AS EARLY AS 1719.

✓ GRIFFITH, JANE ID: 3285
Spouse: [--?--] MOSTYN * Huguenots (Kingston? See map)
Date in Pee Dee: 1733
Location: WACCAMAW (this is toward SE on [illegible] map) [illegible] Kingston near Conway)
Source(s): MOORE V.1.

✓ GRIFFITH, JOHN ID: 1818
Date in Pee Dee: 1768
Location: ST. DAVID'S PARISH
Source(s): GREGG, JVSDP.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AS SERGEANT WITH CAPTAIN PLEDGER'S COMPANY.
Revolutionary War service: PRIVATE IN MARION'S BRIGADE.

✓ GRIFFITH, JOSEPH ID: 2124
Date in Pee Dee: 1782

* No Mostyns in book. Copied Moa zon in case

Source(s): GREGG P.408.
Revolutionary War service: CAPTAIN IN MARION'S BRIGADE

✓ GRIFFITH, MICHAEL ID: 1943
Date in Pee Dee: 1759 Last Date: 1769
Location: ST. DAVID'S PARISH
Source(s): GREGG, JVSDP.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AS PRIVATE IN CAPTAIN GEORGE HICK'S COMPANY.

GRIMES, JAMES ID: 2125
Date in Pee Dee: 1780
Source(s): GREGG P.408.
Revolutionary War service: PRIVATE IN IRBY'S COMPANY.

GRIMES, JOHN JR ID: 5637
Date in Pee Dee: 1759
Location: ST. DAVID'S PARISH
Source(s): MUSTER ROLL.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AS PRIVATE WITH LIDE'S COMPANY.

GRIMES, JOHN SR. ID: 5636
Date in Pee Dee: 1759
Location: ST. DAVID'S PARISH
Source(s): MUSTER ROLL.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AS PRIVATE WITH LIDE'S COMPANY.

GRIMES, WILLIAM ID: 3438
Date in Pee Dee: 1759
Location: ST. MARK'S PARISH
Source(s): MOORE V.3, BODDIE.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

GROOM, WILLIAM ID: 5259
Spouse: JUDITH [--?--]
Children: SUSANNAH.
Date in Pee Dee: 1743

These Dials are our ancestors!

DEXTER, JOHN ID: 298
Spouse: MARY BUCKELLS
Date in Pee Dee: 1741 Last Date: 1746
Location: PRINCE FREDERICK PARISH
Source(s): COOK, RBPPFW, MOORE.
Notes: MARRIED 14 FEBRUARY 1747 AT PARISH OF PRINCE FREDERICK WINYAW.

✓ **DIAL, JOHN** ID: 300
(Son of Thos Jr.)
Date in Pee Dee: 1782
Location: CHERAWS DISTRICT
Source(s): COOK, BODDIE.
Revolutionary War service: PRIVATE MARION'S BRIGADE.

✓ **DIAL, SARAH** ID: 4550
Spouse: JOHN FRIERSON
Children: AARON, MOSES, JOHN, THOMAS, MARY, CATHERINE.
Date in Pee Dee: 1741
Source(s): RBPPFW.

✓ **DIAL, THOMAS** ID: 4549
Spouse: KATHERINE MCGINNEY
Children: SARAH, MARY, KATHERINE, THOMAS.
Date in Pee Dee: 1737 Last Date: 1759
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): BODDIE, RBPPFW.
Notes: SPELLED DYAL IN PARISH RECORDS. SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR. MARRIED 25 APRIL 1738.

DICK, GEORGE ID: 301
Spouse: ALLEIN MARY
Date in Pee Dee: 1735 Last Date: 1743
Location: PRINCE GEORGE PARISH ON BLACK RIVER.
Source(s): COOK, RBPPFW, MOORE V.1.
Notes: MARRIED 12 NOVEMBER 1743 AT PARISH OF PRINCE FREDERICK WINYAW.

DICK, JENNETT ID: 3361
Spouse: [--?--] PACKER

Date in Pee Dee: 1760 Last Date: 1766
Location: PRINCE FREDERICK PARISH
Source(s): MOORE V.3.
Notes: DAUGHTER OF JOHN #303.

DICK, JOHN ID: 303
Spouse: JANE (JEAN) MCCORMACK
Children: ROBERT, JOHN, WILLIAM, ELIZABETH (LEVISTON), JENNET (PACKER), JANE, MARGARET (SCOTT), MARY (RAVNELS), SUSANNA (WIRTER).
Date in Pee Dee: 1737 Last Date: 1749 DIED
Origin: NORTHERN IRELAND
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): COOK, BODDIE, MOORE.
Notes: BODDIE SAYS MARY MARRIED RUNNELS.

DICK, JOHN ID: 3814
Date in Pee Dee: 1765
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): MOORE V.3.
Notes: INHERITED LAND CALLED RATTLESNAKE GULLY. SON OF JOHN #303.

DICK, MARGARET ID: 3817
Spouse: JOHN SCOTT
Date in Pee Dee: 1765
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): MOORE V.3.
Notes: DAUGHTER OF JOHN #303.

DICK, MARY ID: 3818
Spouse: [--?--] RAVNELS
Date in Pee Dee: 1765
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): MOORE V.3.
Notes: DAUGHTER OF JOHN #303.

DICK, MARY ID: 4318
Children: MARY.

Spouse: MARGARET [--?--]
Children: ANNE, ALICE.
Date in Pee Dee: 1728   Last Date: 1736
Location: PRINCE GEORGE WINYAW PARISH
Source(s): COOK, RBPPFW, ROGERS.
Notes: FIRST PASTOR OF CHURCH OF ENGLAND IN GEORGETOWN (PARISH OF PRINCE FREDERICK WINYAW). OPENED A SCHOOL IN CHARLESTON.

ID: 5361
MORTON, HESTER
Spouse: JONATHAN CHRISTMAS
Date in Pee Dee: 1741
Location: PRINCE FREDERICK PARISH
Source(s): RBPPFW.

ID: 3018
MOTTE, JACOB
Spouse: ANNE PICKERING (WIDOW)
Date in Pee Dee: 1743
Location: GEORGETOWN
Source(s): MOORE, CLEMENS.
Notes: MARRIED 19 JUNE 1763 AT CHARLESTON.

ID: 4968
MOTTE, STEPHEN
Date in Pee Dee: 1759
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): BODDIE.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.

ID: 2764
MOULTRIE, JOHN
Spouse: ELIZABETH MATTHEWS (WIDOW)
Date in Pee Dee: 1740   Last Date: 1765
Location: PRINCE GEORGE WINYAW PARISH
Source(s): ROGERS, CLEMENS.
Notes: MARRIED 6 JULY 1748 AT CHARLESTON.

ID: 4918
MOUZON, ELIZABETH
Children: LOUIS, JAMES, PETER, SAMUEL, HENRY, ELIZABETH, ANN.
Date in Pee Dee: 1748   Last Date: 1748 DIED

Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): BODDIE.

ID: 892
MOUZON, HENRY
Date in Pee Dee: 1780
Location: PRINCE GEORGE WINYAW
Source(s): COOK, BODDIE, ROGERS.
Notes: PROBABLY SON OF HENRY #4923. MADE FIRST SCALE MA
OF NORTH AND SOUTH CAROLINA.
Revolutionary War service: CAPTAIN IN MARION'S BRIGADE.

ID: 4923
MOUZON, HENRY
Spouse: ANN [--?--]
Children: HENRY, ANN, ESTHER, JANE, SARAH, SUSANNAH ELIZABETH, MARY ANN.
Date in Pee Dee: 1737   Last Date: 1749
Location: WILLIAMSBURG
Source(s): BODDIE.
Notes: SON OF ELIZABETH #4918.

ID: 3112
MOUZON, PETER
Spouse: JUDITH LAURENS
Date in Pee Dee: 1755
Location: CRAVEN COUNTY
Source(s): MOORE, BODDIE.
Notes: SON OF ELIZABETH 4918.

MULDROW, SEE MCMULDROW, MCMULDROUGH

ID: 5685
MULEASTER, JOHN
Date in Pee Dee: 1759
Location: ST. DAVID'S PARISH
Source(s): MUSTER ROLL.
Notes: SERVED IN FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR AS PRIVATE IN PLEDGER'S COMPANY.

ID: 2202
MUNNERLYN, JAMES
Date in Pee Dee: 1782
Source(s): GREGG P. 411, BODDIE.

From: A General History of the Baptist Denomination in America.. – David Benedict (1848)

W1 SHS- BX 6231 B4

SECOND COMPANY, ON THE PEDEE RIVER, 1737.

In the year 1737, the following baptist members of the *Welsh Tract* church, which was then in the Province of Pennsylvania, but now in the State of Delaware, arrived here, viz.: James James, Esq., and wife and three sons, Philip, who was their minister, Abel, Daniel, and their wives; Daniel Devonald and wife, Thomas Evans and wife, one other of the same name and his wife, John Jones and wife, three of the Harrys, Thomas, David, and John and his wife, Samuel Wilds and wife, Samuel Evans and wife, Griffith Jones and wife, David and Thomas Jones and their wives. These thirty members, with their children and households, settled at a place called *Catfish*, on Pedee River, but they soon removed about fifty miles higher up the same river, where they made a permanent settlement, and where they all, except James James, Esq., who died at Catfish, were embodied into a church, January, 1738.

James James, Esq., was the most distinguished of this company of emigrants, for he was the head of the party, and his son Philip became the pastor of the church. Of him, I can learn no more than that he died at Catfish. His son Philip, the first pastor of the Welsh Neck church, was born near Pennepeck, Pennsylvania, in 1701; he was ordained over the church in 1743, by Messrs. Chanler and Simmons, and died in 1753.

This company were all either native Welchmen or were the descendants of emigrants from that country, who had resided a while in Pennsylvania and Delaware before they emigrated to this southern location.

This was a substantial company of baptist professors, and laid a foundation for a permanent and highly respectable community, which branched out in different directions, and naturally gathered around it the new comers of the country, who were attracted to them by affinities of national character and language.

Rev. John Brown succeeded Mr. James in the pastoral office. He was born near Burlington, New Jersey, in 1714, but was brought up at Frankfort, near Philadelphia. He came to Pedee about the time the above-mentioned company emigrated hither, where he was baptized and called to the ministry, and where he was ordained, May 7, 1750, but for some reasons he continued not long in the care of the church. He preached in different places around until his death, and for aught that appears, supported a character becoming his profession.

Rev. Joshua Edwards was next pastor of this church. He was born Feb'y, 1703, in Pembrokeshire, South Wales, from which place he emigrated to *Welsh Tract*, in Delaware, where he continued almost 30 years, and then removed to South Carolina, and had the care of this church about six years.

Rev. Robert Williams succeeded Mr. Edwards. He was born at Northampton, N. C., in 1717, and was ordained at Welsh Neck, in 1752; but, by some means, he continued but a short time in the pastoral office here. He died April 8th, 1788. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Evan Pugh, who gave him the following character:

> "He was kind to the poor, and remarkably so to the afflicted; a man of excellent natural parts, and a minister who preached the gospel to the edification and comfort of souls, as many have testified to me; and, to crown all, a sincere christian," &c.

WELSH NECK CHURCH.

SECOND COMPANY, ON THE PEDEE RIVER, 1737.

In the year 1737, the following baptist members of the *Welsh Tract* churc which was then in the Province of Pennsylvania, but now in the State of D aware, arrived here, viz.: James James, Esq., and wife and three sons, Ph who was their minister, Abel, Daniel, and their wives; Daniel Devonald, wife, Thomas Evans and wife, one other of the same name and his wife, Jones and wife, three of the Harrys, Thomas, David, and John and his g Samuel Wilds and wife, Samuel Evans and wife, Griffith Jones and wife, vid and Thomas Jones and their wives. These thirty members, with t children and households, settled at a place called Catfish, on Pedee Rive they soon removed about fifty miles higher up the same river, where they m a permanent settlement, and where they all, except James James, Esq., died at Catfish, were embodied into a church, January, 1738.

James James, Esq., was the most distinguished of this company of emigra for he was the head of the party, and his son Philip became the pastor o church. Of him, I can learn no more than that he died at Catfish. His Philip, the first pastor of the Welsh Neck church, was born near Pennep Pennsylvania, in 1701; he was ordained over the church in 1743, by Mes Chanler and Simmons, and died in 1753.

This company were all either native Welshmen, or were the descendants emigrants from that country, who had tarried awhile in Pennsylvania Delaware before they emigrated to this southern location.

This was a substantial company of baptist professors, and laid a foundat for a permanent and highly respectable community, which branched out in ferent directions, and naturally gathered around it the new comers of the co try, who were attracted to them by affinities of national character and langu

Rev. John Brown succeeded Mr. James in the pastoral office. He was b near Burlington, New Jersey, in 1714, but was brought up at Frankfort, n Philadelphia. He came to Pedee about the time the above-mentioned comp emigrated hither, where he was baptized and called to the ministry, and wh he was ordained, May 7, 1750, but for some reasons he continued not long the care of the church. He preached in different places around until his de and for aught that appears, supported a character becoming his profession.

Rev. Joshua Edwards was next pastor of this church. He was born Fe 1703, in Pembrokeshire, South Wales, from which place he emigrated *Welsh Tract*, in Delaware, where he continued almost 20 years, and then moved to South Carolina, and had the care of this church about six years.

Rev. Robert Williams succeeded Mr. Edwards. He was born at Northam ton, N. C., in 1717, and was ordained at Welsh Neck, in 1752; but, by so means, he continued but a short time in the pastoral office here. He d April 30, 1768. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Evan Pugh, gave him the following character:

"He was kind to the poor, and remarkably so to the afflicted; a man of excellent na

(Contains some info re the Welsh colony in Craven Co, upper Pee Dee)
(No Griffiths mentioned as of 1737, except Griffith John, as land grantees, but if they used patronymics as they did in Wales at the time, his children may have taken that surname)

Major James Lide Coker
(1837-1918)

F277 P3 C7 (1988?) SHS WI

A long book – only this section.
A fertile area where poorer people gathered themselves. The Dials were at first on Black River area shifting west a few miles & were Anglicans at first.

RAMBLES
IN
THE PEE DEE BASIN
SOUTH CAROLINA

By
HARVEY TOLIVER COOK
Professor Emeritus, Furman University

VOL. I.

COLUMBIA, S. C.
THE STATE COMPANY
1926

governor to each of the 12 members of the council, 72,000 acres in all, and the council at the next meeting, not to be outdone in that species of generosity, voted the same amount to the governor. Natives never made the government of South Carolina a house of merchandise. On Jeffries Creek, on the west side of the river, the first to get grants were one Bonolas and Frances Verambaut with one Sanders. Verambaut lived in Charles Town, dyed silk and prospered. 1,100 acres in this tract, which the Pagetts bought and 500 in Irish-town in Berkeley County were turned into cash, when he went back to the old world. Thomas Greenwood got a grant for the place he had improved on Jeffries Creek by claiming that he was there long before the Welsh came.

Mars Bluff and Toby's Creek are referred to in early deeds as places already well known. The Bluff became an important place as soon as a road was made leading up and down the river. Samuel Axson was one of the first on or near the Bluff, but his land was soon in the hands of Edmund Atkins, who secured about 800 acres a mile above the Bluff with Abraham Satur of Charles Town, above him and Richard Purcell below him. Flay and Malachi Murphy were above him. Opposite the Bluff on the eastern side was a tract of 300 with two others north of it, containing over 1000 acres, which belonged also to the Atkins. Toby's Creek flows through these; Solomon Middleton may have been related by marriage to John Atkins, as their lands on another river were adjoining. This tract was next to Satur and other Middletons on Toby's Creek. Thomas Groom was on the eastern side, resting on Atkins tracts. The Middletons lived on the Pee Dee, John Atkins, an Indian agent, Edmund did not.

The next bluff near the present railroad crossing, called Sandy Bluff, attracted a number of enterprising settlers that were to figure largely in the development of the country. John Crawford, William, George and John Sanders, Gideon Gibson, and J. Keighly. Rev. Mr. Turbefield was also present in the community, whose importance will secure it further notice. Mention has already been made of the ascent of the river in 1737 by the Welsh colony. As they passed by the mouth of Black Creek, ten miles above Mars Bluff they found large tracts already occupied by Alexander Skene, Edward Satur, both of the low country, Joseph Law and James Moody and a larger acreage at Cashaway ferry 7 miles higher up. In 1736 Charles Wright had the higher parts of "Causeway Neck," now Byrd's Island, surveyed and adjoining him at the ferry was Samuel Master's tract. About two miles up stream on Muddy Creek, Col. Henry Fox and south of him Col. Thomas Hume had grants for a large body of land. Charles Irby was a later owner of the Hume tract, Col. Fox was an eminent lawyer in Charles Town. North of him was Thomas Groom's tract. Opposite these three land grabbers on the Darlington side were two other tracts laid out on Christmas day in 1736 for Bartholomew Ball, son of Elias Ball, and Thomas Heywood, the former being the only one of this company who retained the land for his descendants.

The Welsh passed on to upper Pee Dee and from 5 miles above Cheraw to three miles below Cashaway ferry they settled on the margin of the winding Pee Dee 57 miles in length. The central point of their colony was Long Bluff opposite Society Hill on the eastern side. It was first called James' Neck after the leader of the colony and then Welsh Neck, 147 miles by water above

Georgetown, 30 above Cashaway. As this colony was barely planted in this decade, the time limit has not been observed in the following investments of the men who secured grants of land: Thomas Evans, Abel Evans, Mary Evans, Philip James, John James, David Lewis, Philip Douglass, Daniel McDaniel, James Rogers were on the Welsh Neck. Thomas Evans of Plumfield, or Plumgarden, bought on both sides of the river. The name Plumfield still adheres to a plantation in the western side, once owned by Governor Williams. A little higher up the river were the lands of David James, Daniel Dousnal, Joab Edwards, William DeLoach, Thomas Evans, Sr., David Jones, Joshua Evans, John Rowell and somewhere near them were David Harry, Evan Harry, John Harry, Thomas Harry, William Einon, Daniel James, Abel James, William Tarrel, Griffith John, Thomas James, Samson Thomas, Philip James, James James, Capt. William James, Owen David, William Screven, Wm. Smith, Ben Rogers, Joseph Jolly; on Naked Creek, Richard Barrow, Samuel Hollingsworth, Samuel Greenwood.

Evan Vaughan got a warrant for land opposite the great Cheraws and Samuel Sarrence two miles below 'Charraw's old Town,' also a tract on the eastern side with Walter Downs, David Roach and Mrs. Judith Lewis as neighbors; five miles above Cheraw James Gillespie, John Brown, James Price, John Ellery, James Read, formed another group of settlers near the line of the Province; on three creeks John Newberry, Hasker Newberry, John Singleton, Daniel LaRoche, Andrew Slann, Thomas Ellerby. On the lower Muddy Creek around the Fox-Hume-Groom lands were John Newberry, Tilman Kolb, Jacob Kolb, John Cattell, John Mixon, John Singleton, near Abraham Colsons.

On the western side of the river numerous farms were run out and improved. Beginning at Pidgeon Creek, now Buckholdt's, the owners were Jacob Buckholdt, Peter Roblyn, Thomas Evans, William Evans, Daniel Roach, Henry Roach, Edward Boykin, John Cunningham, Nathaniel Evans, Samuel Wiggins, James Baber, John Evans, Thomas Ellerby, Robert Williams, James Beaver, Thomas Herrington, Ben Wall, Giles Powers, John Bowdry. Nathaniel Evans owned the land between Cornelius Reine and Thomas Ellerby. He probably never lived on it as he was buying about this time several tracts on the Catfish. Mary Evans, Francis Young, John Thompson, James Jones, Isaac Chanler, Thomas Bowen, John Rowell, Daniel Monahan had contiguous farms on the right bank also; William Evans, Hardy Council, Robert Inman, John Westfield, Simon Parsons, formed another group on the same side of the river.

At Cashaway ferry, Johannes Kolb, a Hollander, was content to settle on Causeway Neck, now Byrd's Island. The Kolb home is marked on a plat north of the loop but south of Sugar Loaf. The neck of land made by this loop in the river (marked Kolb's Neck on the Darlington side on some maps) was crowded with early settlers: Edward Lovell over against the ferry, John Perkins, William Cary, Joseph Jolly, Moses Crosby, Joseph Alison, John Ouldfield near the mouth of Hurricane Creek, John Keithy north of these encroached upon Bartholomew Ball's place and north of that land were John Brown, Abraham Colson, Penelope Davis (the wife of a Welshman who by neglecting to take out his deed lost his home) Gideon Ellis, Anthony Pouncey, John Purvis and Isaac Nichols.

On Black Creek Malachi Murphy, John McIver, Thomas Freeman, Abraham Paul were among the first grantees of land. On Thompson Creek William Johnston, Martin Johnston, Edward Sharpston, George Dubbs, John Purris, Edmund Kite, William Boatwright, John Rusting. On Cedar Creek John Jones, Samuel Sarrancy, William Hughes. On Red Bluff three miles below Cashaway John Moiden, Daniel Mooney; at Beauty Spot James Law, Anthony Simmons, and Gideon Gibson; on Duck Pond and John Hitchcock on Mars Bluff.

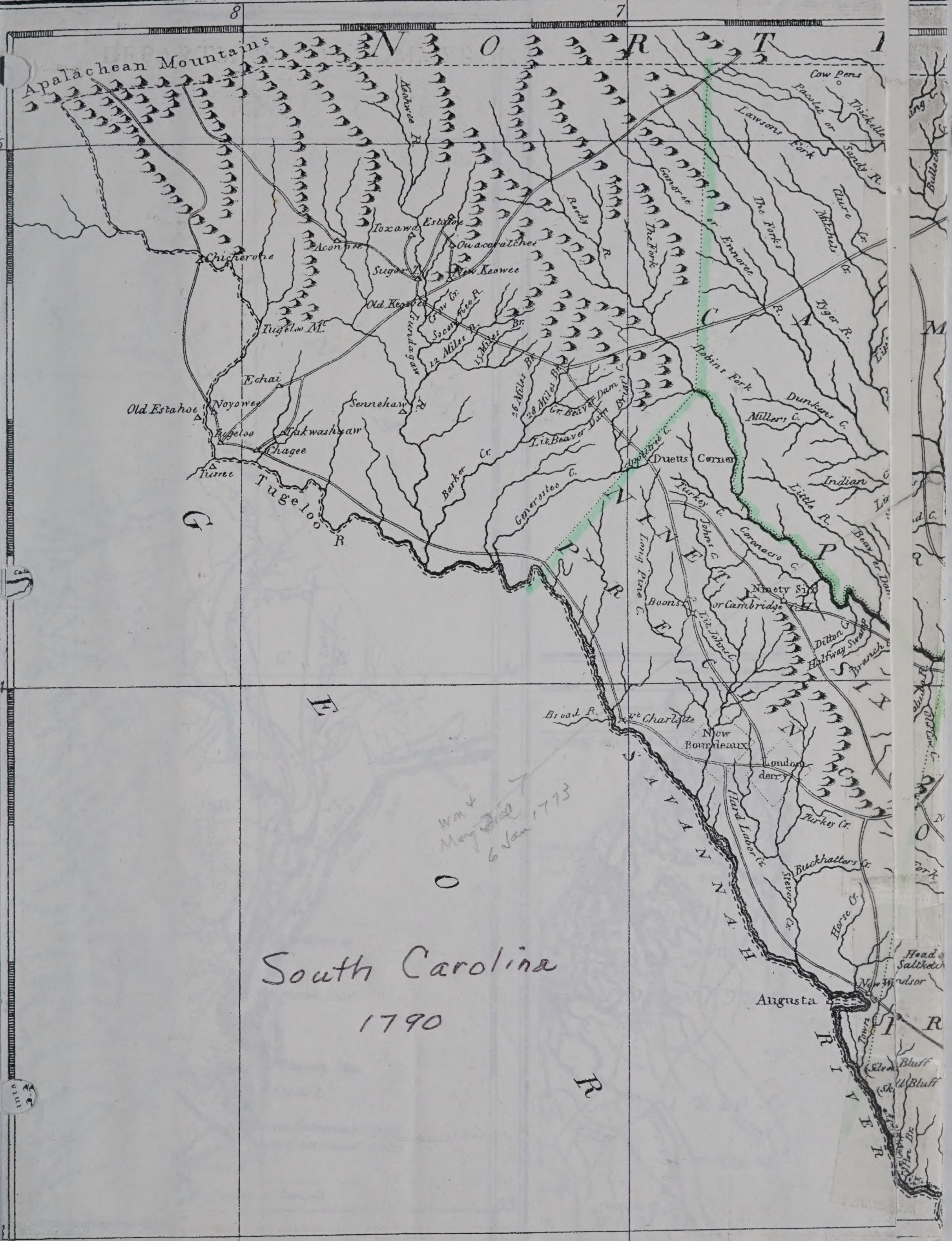
There were no large tracts granted in this period in the upper Pee Dee. 1000 acres was granted to one man but in the main the tracts were moderate in size averaging about 250 acres. The cause of this was the foresight of the Welsh which shut out the non-resident moneyed men who were not of Welsh extraction. This prudential arrangement had sound reasons for it. They had the benefit of the experience at Williamsburg where the immigrant for whom the township was laid out, had to yield to the non-residents in the choice of the best lands. The larger tracts on the Pee Dee and its tributaries were granted to Thomas Broughton, Lt. Gov., John Roberts, James Hammerton, Receiver General, who had more than a barony on the Waccamaw and Pee Dee, James Abercrombie, also on both streams, Joseph Wragg and Samuel Wragg, each three or four thousand acres. Robert Wright, Chief Justice, large tracts on Lynch's Creek and Pee Dee, Benjamin Whitaker, Judge of Admirality, Alexander Skene who had more than a barony, Thomas Monck, Nathaniel Broughton, Walter Good, 4000, Isaac Amyand, clerk of the Assembly, John Roberts got a whole barony and it passed into other hands and remained intact for years. Robert Hume, a lawyer of Charles Town, was perhaps the largest landowner above

the Santee. He could offer a barony for sale and feel no discomfort in reckoning the diminished remainder. He died in 1739 and after a widowhood of many years, Mrs. Hume married the Provost Marshal, Roger Pinckney. James Gordon, a lawyer of Georgetown, was one of the landowners, quite energetic in his business of buying real estate at various places near the town of Queensborough, in the junction of the Lynch and the Pee Dee and on both sides of the river, was cut off in a few years with his fellow land owner Robert Hume, both of them leaving their lands to whom they knew not.

These pioneers in the woods had hardships of their own. But they were not subject to the 'Blue Laws' enacted at Charles Town in these early years, in reference to blasphemy, profaneness, bastardy, observance of the Lord's Day, and marriage, while wife or husband was still living.

For example: "Any person shall by writing, printing, teaching or advised speaking, deny one of the persons of the Holy Trinity to be God, or shall assert or maintain there are more Gods than one, or shall deny the Christian religion to be true, or the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament to be of divine authority, and shall, upon indictment or information in any of the courts of record within this part of the province, be thereof lawfully convicted by the oath of two or more credible witnesses, for the first offence shall be adjudged incapable and disabled in law to have or enjoy any office, to be member of the assembly or have or enjoy any employment, ecclesiastical, civil or military. If in office, it shall be void.

For the second offence, he would be disabled to sue, prosecute, plead or use any action or information in any courts of law or equity or to be guardian of any child or executor or administrator, or capable of any legacy


8
7
Apalachean Mountains
NORTH
Cow Pens
Pacolet or
Thickelle
Lawsons Fork
Sandy R.
Keowee R.
Ganoree or Ennoree R.
Reedy R.
The Fork
The Forks
Clarke Cr.
Mitchels Cr.
Tyger R.
Toxawa
Estatoe
Aconnee
Owacoratchee
Sugar T.
New Keowee
Old Keowee
Chicherohe
Tugeloo M.
Isundagaw
Crow Cr.
Soconnee R.
12 Miles R.
15 Miles Br.
26 Miles Br.
28 Miles Br.
Gr. Beaver Dam
Briars C.
Lit. Beaver Dam
Echai
Old Estahoe
Noyowee
Tugeloo
Takwashaw
Sennekaw
Chagee
Tussee
Tugeloo R
Barker Cr.
Generostee C.
Appletree C.
Duetts Corner
Robins Fork
Millers C.
Dunkans C.
Indian
Little R.
Beaver Dam
Turkey C.
Johns C.
Coronacro C.
Long Pine C.
Boons
Ninety Six
or Cambridge C.H.
Lit. Johns C.
Dilton C.
Halfway Swamp
Branch
CAROLINA
NINETY SIX
P
DISTRICT
G
E
O
R
GEORGIA
Broad R.
Ft. Charlotte
New Bourdeaux
London derry
Hard Labor C.
Turkey Cr.
Buckhalters Cr.
Stevens Cr.
Horse Cr.
SAVANNAH
RIVER
Augusta
New Windsor
Head of Saltketcher
Town
Silver Bluff
Bluff
Bullock
M

Wm & Mary Dial 7
6 Jan 1773

South Carolina
1790

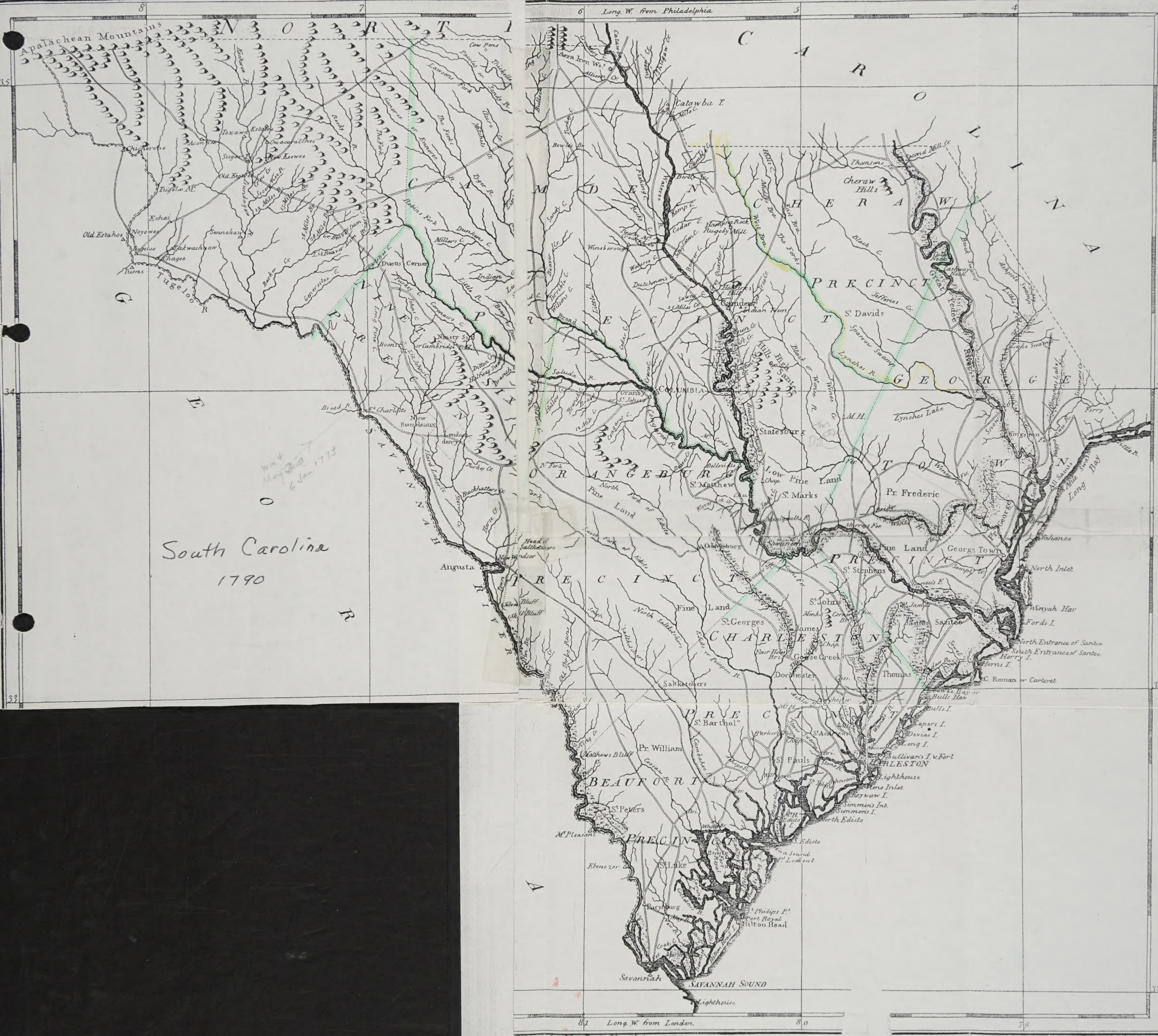
On Black Creek Malachi Murphy, John McIver, Thomas Freeman, Abraham Paul were among the first grantees of land. On Thompson Creek William Johnston, Martin Johnston, Edward Sharpston, George Dubbs, John Purris, Edmund Kite, William Boatwright, John Rusting. On Cedar Creek John Jones, Samuel Sarrancy, William Hughes. On Red Bluff three miles below Cashaway John Moiden, Daniel Mooney; at Beauty Spot James Law, Anthony Simmons, and Gideon Gibson; on Duck Pond and John Hitchcock on Mars Bluff.

There were no large tracts granted in this period in the upper Pee Dee. 1000 acres was granted to one man but in the main the tracts were moderate in size averaging about 250 acres. The cause of this was the foresight of the Welsh which shut out the non-resident moneyed men who were not of Welsh extraction. This prudential arrangement had sound reasons for it. They had the benefit of the experience at Williamsburg where the immigrant for whom the township was laid out, had to yield to the non-residents in the choice of the best lands. The larger tracts on the Pee Dee and its tributaries were granted to Thomas Broughton, Lt. Gov., John Roberts, James Hammerton, Receiver General, who had more than a barony on the Waccamaw and Pee Dee, James Abercrombie, also on both streams, Joseph Wragg and Samuel Wragg, each three or four thousand acres. Robert Wright, Chief Justice, large tracts on Lynch's Creek and Pee Dee, Benjamin Whitaker, Judge of Admirality, Alexander Skene who had more than a barony, Thomas Monck, Nathaniel Broughton, Walter Good, 4000, Isaac Amyand, clerk of the Assembly, John Roberts got a whole barony and it passed into other hands and remained intact for years. Robert Hume, a lawyer of Charles Town, was perhaps the largest landowner above the Santee. He could offer a barony for sale and feel no discomfort in reckoning the diminished remainder. He died in 1739 and after a widowhood of many years, Mrs. Hume married the Provost Marshal, Roger Pinckney. James Gordon, a lawyer of Georgetown, was one of the landowners, quite energetic in his business of buying real estate at various places near the town of Queensborough, in the junction of the Lynch and the Pee Dee and on both sides of the river, was cut off in a few years with his fellow land owner Robert Hume, both of them leaving their lands to whom they knew not.

These pioneers in the woods had hardships of their own. But they were not subject to the 'Blue Laws' enacted at Charles Town in these early years, in reference to blasphemy, profaneness, bastardy, observance of the Lord's Day, and marriage, while wife or husband was still living.

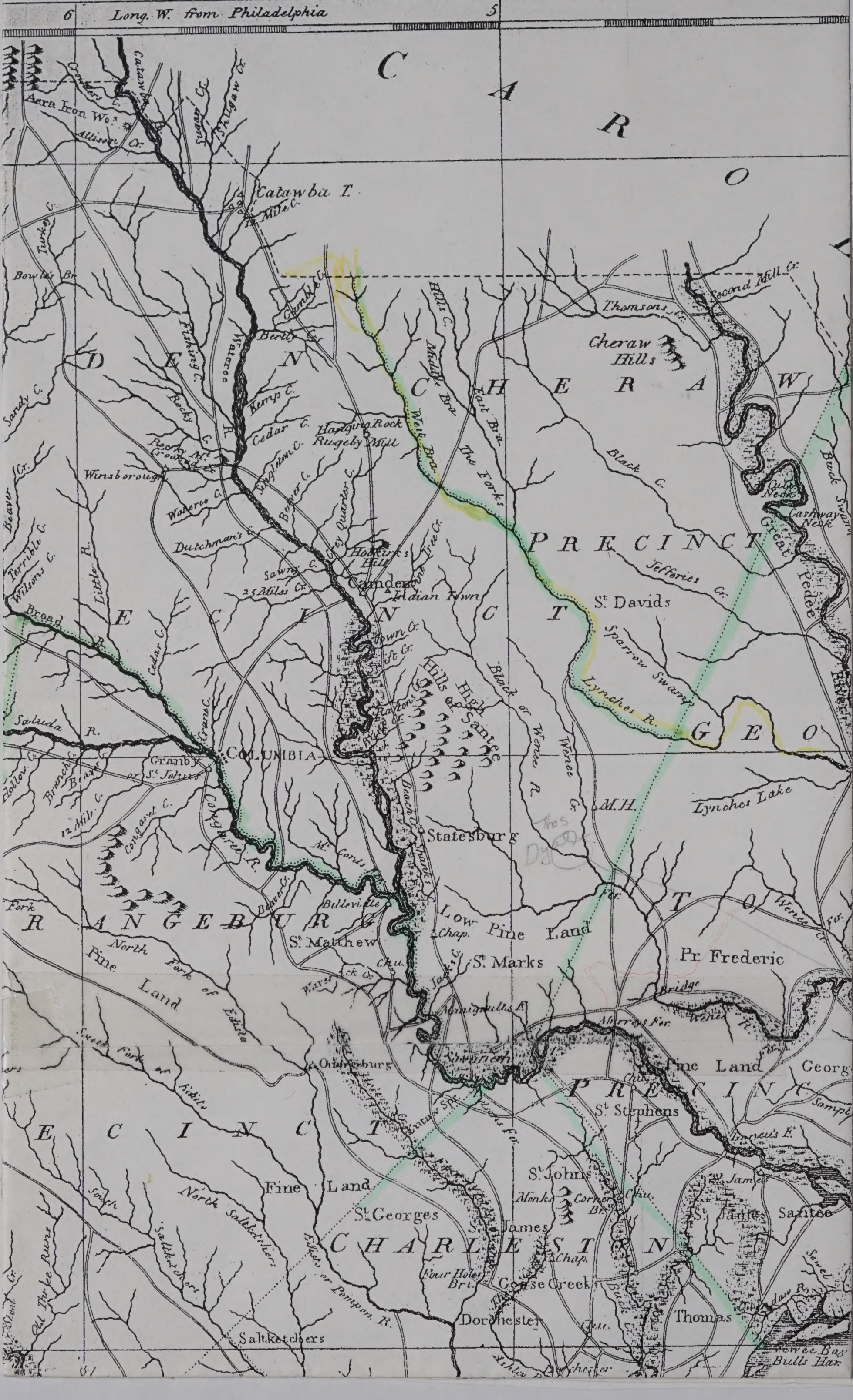
For example: "Any person shall by writing, printing, teaching or advised speaking, deny one of the persons of the Holy Trinity to be God, or shall assert or maintain there are more Gods than one, or shall deny the Christian religion to be true, or the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament to be of divine authority, and shall, upon indictment or information in any of the courts of record within this part of the province, be thereof lawfully convicted by the oath of two or more credible witnesses, for the first offence shall be adjudged incapable and disabled in law to have or enjoy any office, to be member of the assembly or have or enjoy any employment, ecclesiastical, civil or military. If in office, it shall be void.

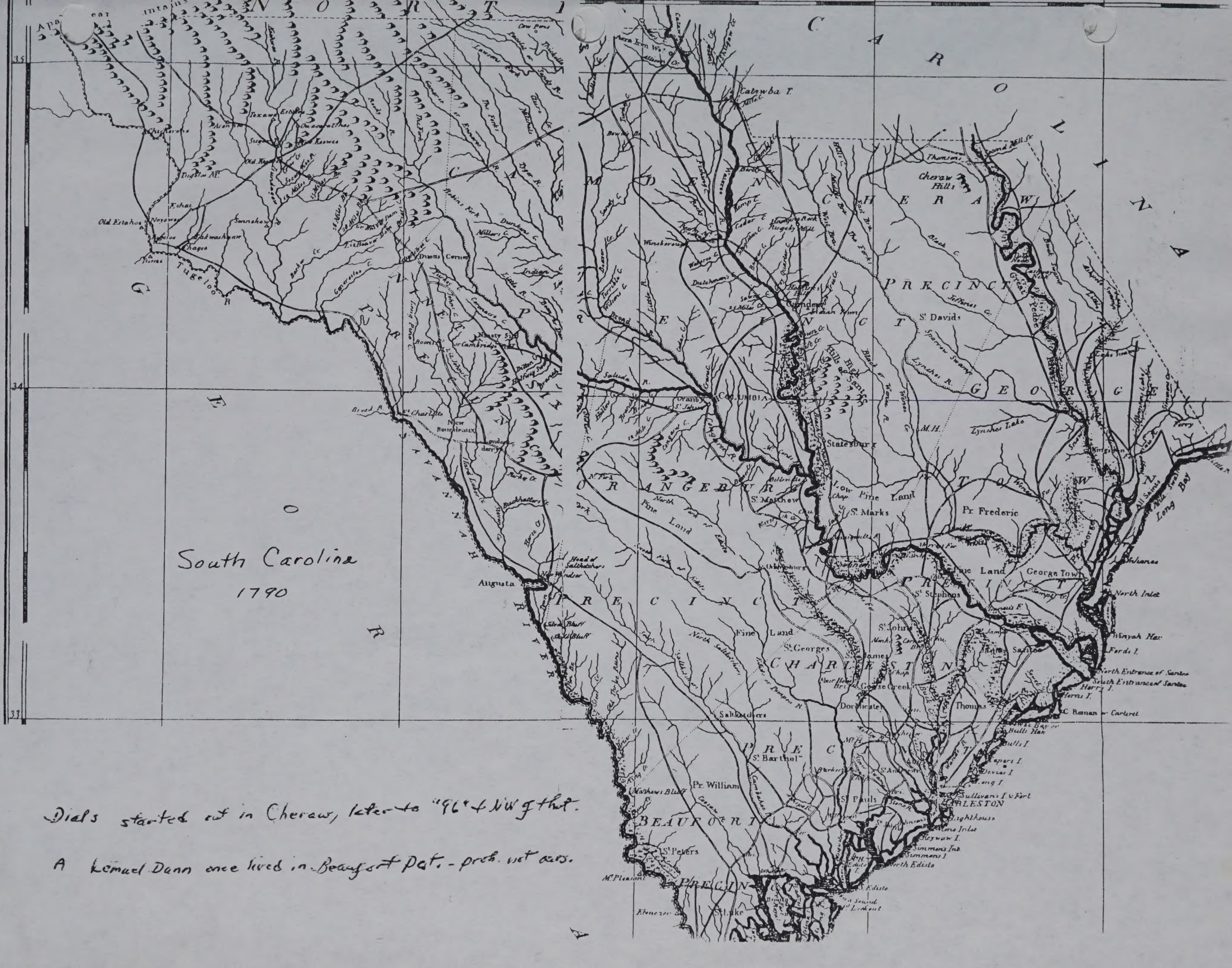
For the second offence, he would be disabled to sue, prosecute, plead or use any action or information in any courts of law or equity or to be guardian of any child or executor or administrator, or capable of any legacy


Long. W. from Philadelphia
NORTH CAROLINA
Apalachean Mountains
GEORGIA
SAVANNAH RIVER
Catawba T.
Cheraw Hills
CHERAW PRECINCT
St. Davids
CAMDEN PRECINCT
Camden
Winsborough
Columbia
Granby
Statesburg
NINETY SIX PRECINCT
Ninety Six or Cambridge
Duetts Corner
New Bourdeaux
Augusta
New Windsor
ORANGEBURG PRECINCT
Orangeburg
St. Matthew
Low Pine Land
St. Marks
Pr. Frederic
GEORGE TOWN PRECINCT
George Town
Kingston
Long Bay
North Inlet
Winyah Har
North Entrance of Santee
South Entrance of Santee
C. Roman or Carteret
St. Stephens
St. Johns
St. Georges
CHARLESTON PRECINCT
Goose Creek
Dorchester
Thomas
St. Barthol.
St. Andrews
St. Pauls
Charleston
Sullivan's I. & Fort
Lighthouse
Stono Inlet
North Edisto
S. Edisto
Pr. William
BEAUFORT PRECINCT
St. Peters
St. Luke
Mt. Pleasant
Ebenezer
Purysburg
Beaufort
Port Royal
St. Philips Pt.
Hilton Head
Savannah
SAVANNAH SOUND
Lighthouse
Long. W. from London

South Carolina
1790

Wm & Mary Bull 7
6 Jan 1773

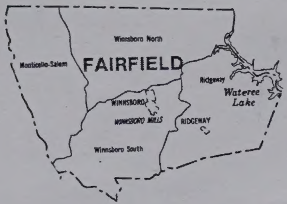

6
Long. W. from Philadelphia
5
C A R O
D E N C E C I N C T
C H E R A W P R E C I N C T
G E O T O W N
R A N G E B U R G
P R E C I N C T
E C I N C T
C H A R L E S T O N
Acra Iron Wos
Allisons Cr.
Catawba R.
Sugar Cr.
Shugaw Cr.
Crowders C.
Catawba T.
12 Mile C.
Turkey C.
Bowles Br.
Gumble Cr.
Fishing C.
Wateree
Berly Cr.
Kemp C.
Rocky C.
Cedar C.
Sandy C.
Rocky Mt.
Winsborough
Wateree C.
Dutchman's C.
Singleton C.
Beaver C.
Hanging Rock
Rugeby Mill
West Bra.
Hills C.
Middle Bra.
East Bra.
The Forks
Grey Quarter C.
Hobkirks Hill
Sawney C.
25 Miles Cr.
Camden
Indian Town
Beaver Cr.
Terrible C.
Wilsons C.
Little R.
Broad R.
Cedar C.
Town C.
Swift Cr.
Raftons C.
Hills of High Santee
Black or Wenee R.
Wenee C.
Saluda R.
Gravs C.
COLUMBIA
Granby
Hollow C.
Branch C.
Beaver or St. Johns
12 Mile C.
Congaree C.
Congaree R.
Beach C.
Statesburg
Mt. Conts
Beaver Cr.
Billeville
Low Pine Land
Chap.
St. Matthew
St. Marks
Chu.
North Fork of Edisto
Pine Land
Fork
Waver Lick Cr.
Jacks C.
Manigaults F.
Santee
Thos
Dy
Thomsons Cr.
Second Mill Cr.
Cheraw Hills
Black C.
Gully Neck
Cashway Neck
Great Pedee River
Buck Swamp
Jefferies Cr.
St. Davids
Sparrow Swamp
Lynches R.
Lynches Lake
M.H.
Fer.
Wenee Cr.
Pr. Frederic
Bridge
Wenee R.
Murrays Fer.
Pine Land
Georg
Chu.
St. Stephens
Sampit
Brunets F.
Jame
St. James Santee
South Fork of Edisto
Orangeburg
Eutaw Spr.
Nelsons Fer.
Fine Land
St. Johns
Monks Corner
Br.
Chu.
St. Georges
St. James
Chap.
North Saltketchers
South Saltketchers
Old Three Runs
Dead Cr.
Edisto or Pompon R.
Four Holes Bri.
Goose Creek
Dorchester
Cooper R.
Chu.
St. Thomas
Sewee Bay
Bulls Har.
Sewel
Saltketchers
Ashley R.
Dorchester

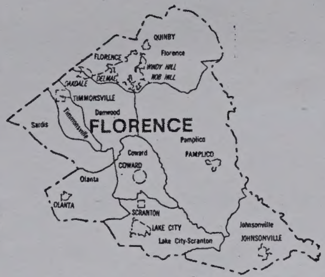

North Carolina
Georgia
Savannah River
Cheraw Precinct
Camden Precinct
Orangeburg Precinct
Charleston Precinct
Beaufort Precinct
George Town Precinct
Columbia
Camden
Statesburg
Augusta
Charleston
George Town
Cheraw Hills
Catawba T.
St. Davids
Pr. Frederic
St. Matthew
St. Marks
St. Stephens
St. Johns
St. Georges
Dorchester
St. Barthol.
Pr. William
St. Pauls
St. Peters
St. Luke
New Bourdeaux
Londonderry
Ninety Six
Tugeloo R.
Broad R.
Saluda R.
Lynches R.
Black R.
Santee
Winyah Bar
North Inlet
Long Bay
Sullivans I. & Fort
Lighthouse
North Edisto
33
34
35

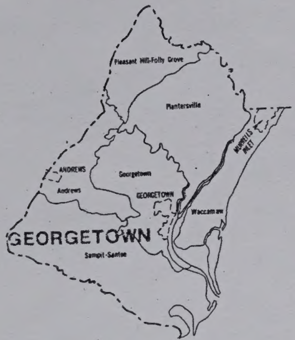
South Carolina
1790

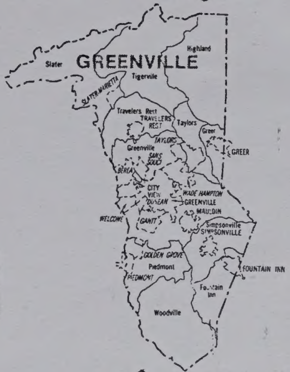
Dials started out in Cheraw, later to "96" & NW of that.

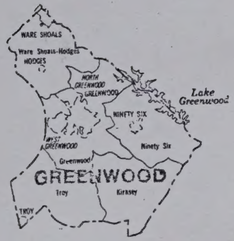
A Lemuel Dunn once lived in Beaufort Pct. - prob. not ours.

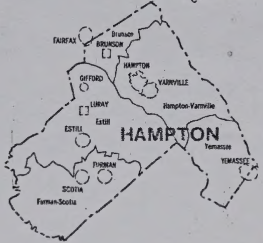

FAIRFIELD
Winnsboro North
Monticello-Salem
Ridgeway
Wateree Lake
WINNSBORO
WINNSBORO MILLS
RIDGEWAY
Winnsboro South

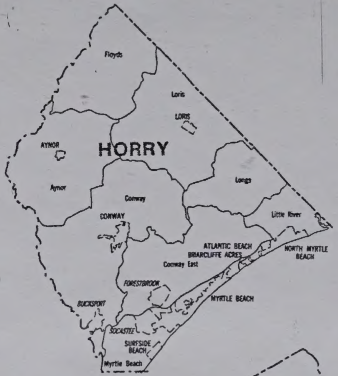

QUINBY
Florence
FLORENCE
WINDY HILL
ROB HILL
DELMAE
OAKDALE
TIMMONSVILLE
Timmonsville
Sardis
Darwood
FLORENCE
Pamplico
PAMPLICO
Coward
COWARD
Olanta
OLANTA
SCRANTON
LAKE CITY
Lake City-Scranton
Johnsonville
JOHNSONVILLE

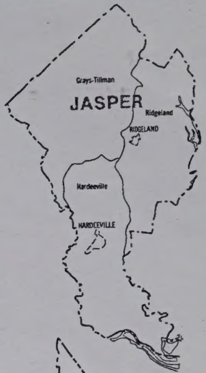

Pleasant Hill-Folly Grove
Plantersville
MURRELLS INLET
ANDREWS
Andrews
Georgetown
GEORGETOWN
Waccamaw
GEORGETOWN
Sampit-Santee

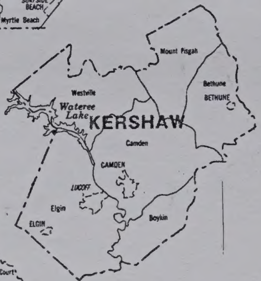

Highland
Slater
GREENVILLE
Tigerville
SLATER-MARIETTA
Travelers Rest
TRAVELERS REST
Taylors
Greer
TAYLORS
Greenville
GREER
SANS SOUCI
BEREA
CITY VIEW
DUNEAN
WADE HAMPTON
GREENVILLE
MAULDIN
WELCOME
GANTT
Simpsonville
SIMPSONVILLE
GOLDEN GROVE
Piedmont
PIEDMONT
FOUNTAIN INN
Fountain Inn
Woodville

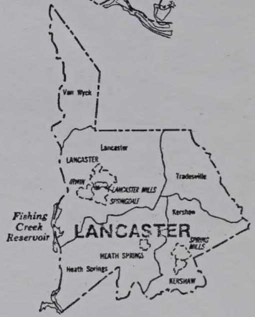

WARE SHOALS
Ware Shoals-Hodges
HODGES
NORTH GREENWOOD
GREENWOOD
Lake Greenwood
NINETY SIX
WEST GREENWOOD
Ninety Six
Greenwood
GREENWOOD
Troy
Kirksey
TROY

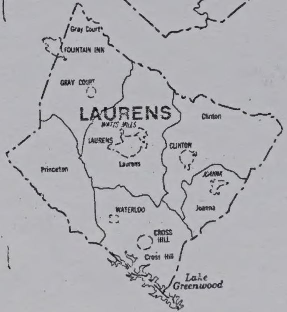

FAIRFAX
Brunson
BRUNSON
HAMPTON
GIFFORD
VARNVILLE
LURAY
Hampton-Varnville
Estill
ESTILL
HAMPTON
Yemassee
YEMASSEE
FURMAN
SCOTIA
Furman-Scotia

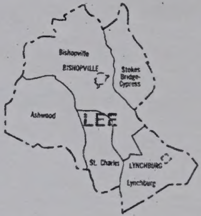

Floyds
Loris
LORIS
AYNOR
HORRY
Aynor
Longs
Conway
CONWAY
Little River
ATLANTIC BEACH
BRIARCLIFFE ACRES
NORTH MYRTLE BEACH
Conway East
FORESTBROOK
MYRTLE BEACH
BUCKSPORT
SOCASTEE
SURFSIDE BEACH
Myrtle Beach

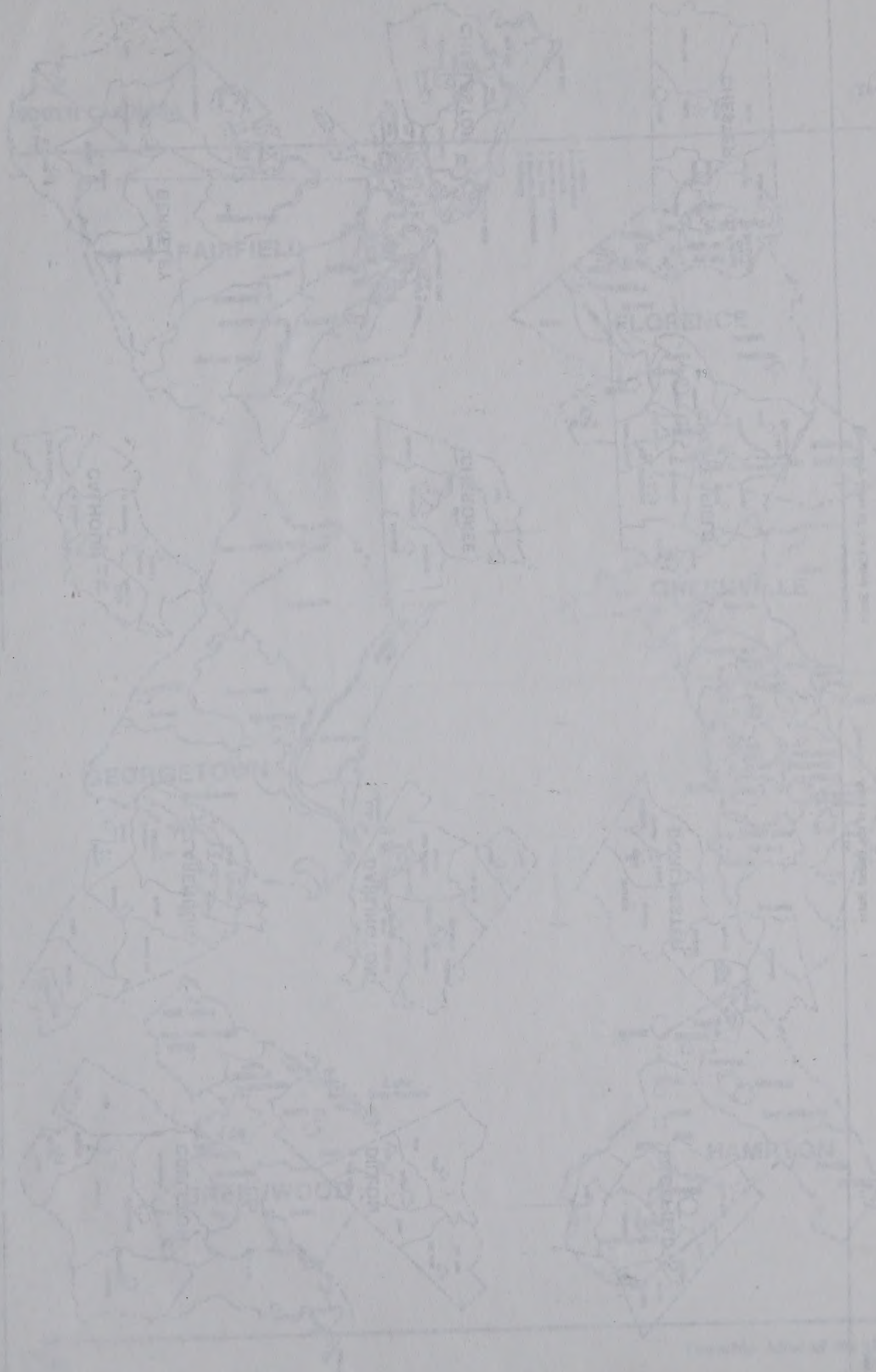

Grays-Tillman
JASPER
Ridgeland
RIDGELAND
Hardeeville
HARDEEVILLE

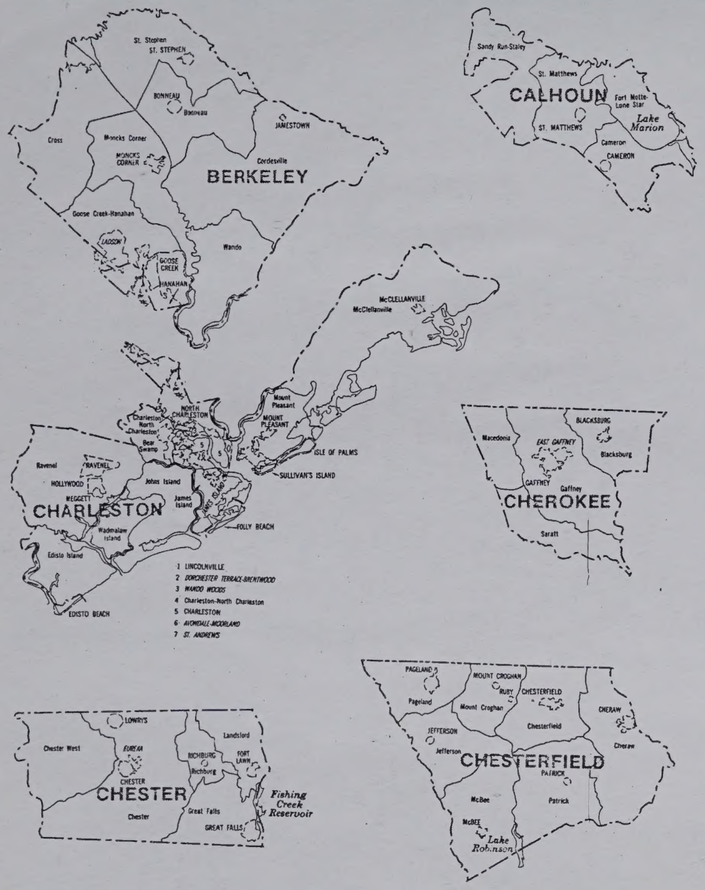

Mount Pisgah
Bethune
BETHUNE
Westville
Wateree Lake
KERSHAW
Camden
CAMDEN
LUGOFF
Elgin
ELGIN
Boykin

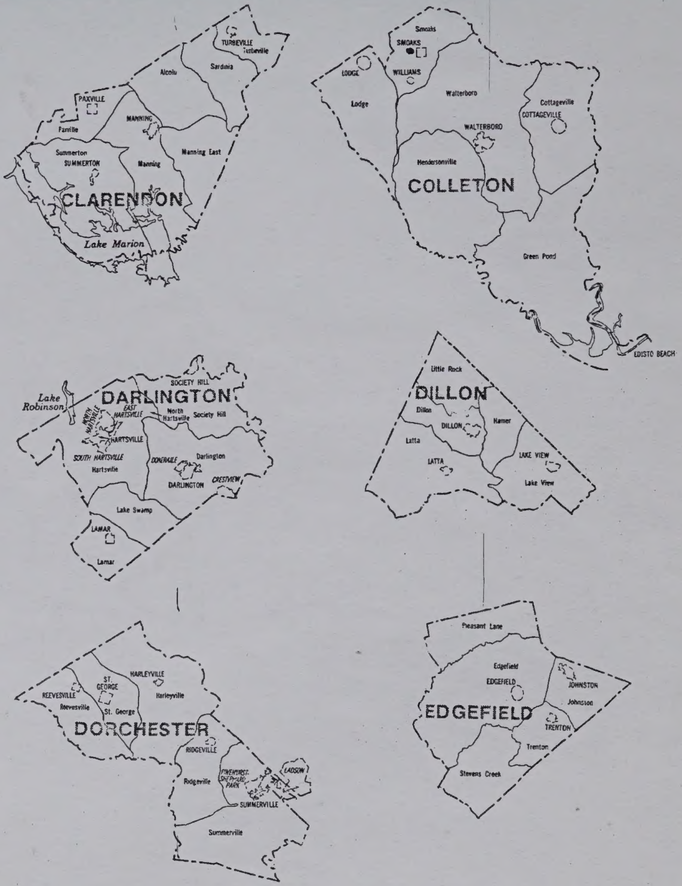

Van Wyck
Lancaster
LANCASTER
IRWIN
LANCASTER MILLS
SPRINGDALE
Tradesville
Kershaw
Fishing Creek Reservoir
LANCASTER
SPRING MILLS
HEATH SPRINGS
Heath Springs
KERSHAW

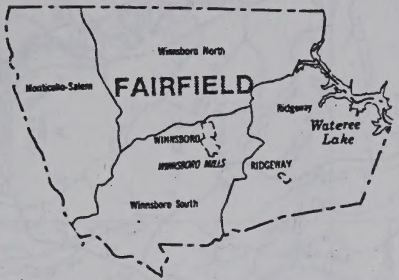

Gray Court
FOUNTAIN INN
GRAY COURT
LAURENS
Clinton
WATTS MILLS
LAURENS
CLINTON
Laurens
Princeton
JOANNA
Joanna
WATERLOO
CROSS HILL
Cross Hill
Lake Greenwood

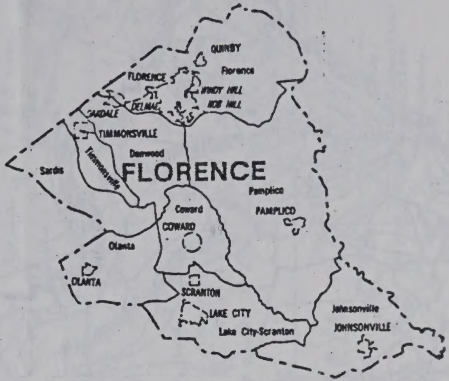

Bishopville
BISHOPVILLE
Stokes Bridge-Cypress
Ashwood
LEE
St. Charles
LYNCHBURG
Lynchburg

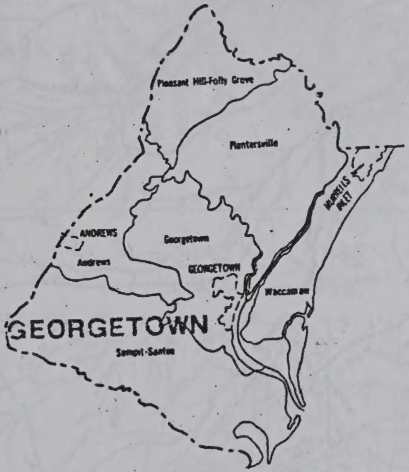

FAIRFIELD
CHESTERFIELD
FLORENCE
CALHOUN
CHEROKEE
GREENVILLE
GEORGETOWN
DORCHESTER
GREENWOOD
DILLON
HAMPTON

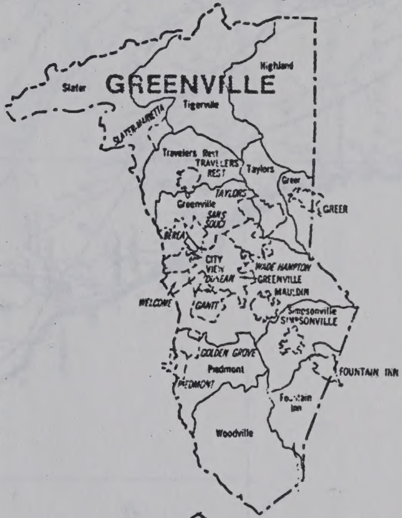

BERKELEY
St. Stephen
ST. STEPHEN
BONNEAU
Bonneau
JAMESTOWN
Cross
Moncks Corner
MONCKS CORNER
Cordesville
Goose Creek-Hanahan
LADSON
GOOSE CREEK
HANAHAN
Wando
CALHOUN
Sandy Run-Staley
St. Matthews
ST. MATTHEWS
Fort Motte-Lone Star
Lake Marion
Cameron
CAMERON
CHARLESTON
McCLELLANVILLE
McClellanville
NORTH CHARLESTON
Charleston-North Charleston
Bear Swamp
Mount Pleasant
MOUNT PLEASANT
ISLE OF PALMS
SULLIVAN'S ISLAND
Ravenel
RAVENEL
HOLLYWOOD
MEGGETT
Johns Island
James Island
JAMES ISLAND
FOLLY BEACH
Wadmalaw Island
Edisto Island
EDISTO BEACH
1 LINCOLNVILLE
2 DORCHESTER TERRACE-BRENTWOOD
3 WANDO WOODS
4 Charleston-North Charleston
5 CHARLESTON
6 AVONDALE-MOORLAND
7 ST. ANDREWS
CHEROKEE
Macedonia
EAST GAFFNEY
BLACKSBURG
Blacksburg
GAFFNEY
Gaffney
Saratt
CHESTER
LOWRYS
Chester West
EUREKA
CHESTER
Chester
RICHBURG
Richburg
Landsford
FORT LAWN
Great Falls
GREAT FALLS
Fishing Creek Reservoir
CHESTERFIELD
PAGELAND
Pageland
MOUNT CROGHAN
RUBY
Mount Croghan
CHESTERFIELD
Chesterfield
CHERAW
Cheraw
JEFFERSON
Jefferson
PATRICK
McBee
Patrick
McBEE
Lake Robinson

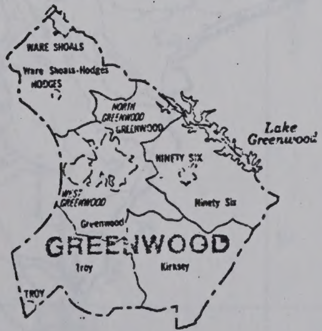

CLARENDON
TURBEVILLE
Turbeville
Sardinia
Alcolu
PAXVILLE
Paxville
MANNING
Manning East
Summerton
SUMMERTON
Manning
Lake Marion
COLLETON
Smoaks
SMOAKS
LODGE
WILLIAMS
Lodge
Walterboro
Cottageville
COTTAGEVILLE
WALTERBORO
Hendersonville
Green Pond
EDISTO BEACH
DARLINGTON
SOCIETY HILL
Lake Robinson
NORTH HARTSVILLE
EAST HARTSVILLE
North Hartsville
Society Hill
HARTSVILLE
SOUTH HARTSVILLE
Hartsville
DOVERAILE
Darlington
DARLINGTON
CRESTVIEW
Lake Swamp
LAMAR
Lamar
DILLON
Little Rock
Dillon
DILLON
Hamer
Latta
LATTA
LAKE VIEW
Lake View
DORCHESTER
HARLEYVILLE
ST. GEORGE
REEVESVILLE
Reevesville
St. George
Harleyville
RIDGEVILLE
Ridgeville
PINEHURST-SHEPHERD PARK
LADSON
SUMMERVILLE
Summerville
EDGEFIELD
Pleasant Lane
Edgefield
EDGEFIELD
JOHNSTON
Johnston
TRENTON
Trenton
Stevens Creek

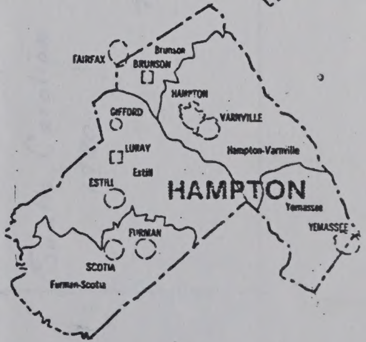

Winnsboro North
Monticello-Salem
FAIRFIELD
Ridgeway
Wateree Lake
WINNSBORO
WINNSBORO MILLS
RIDGEWAY
Winnsboro South

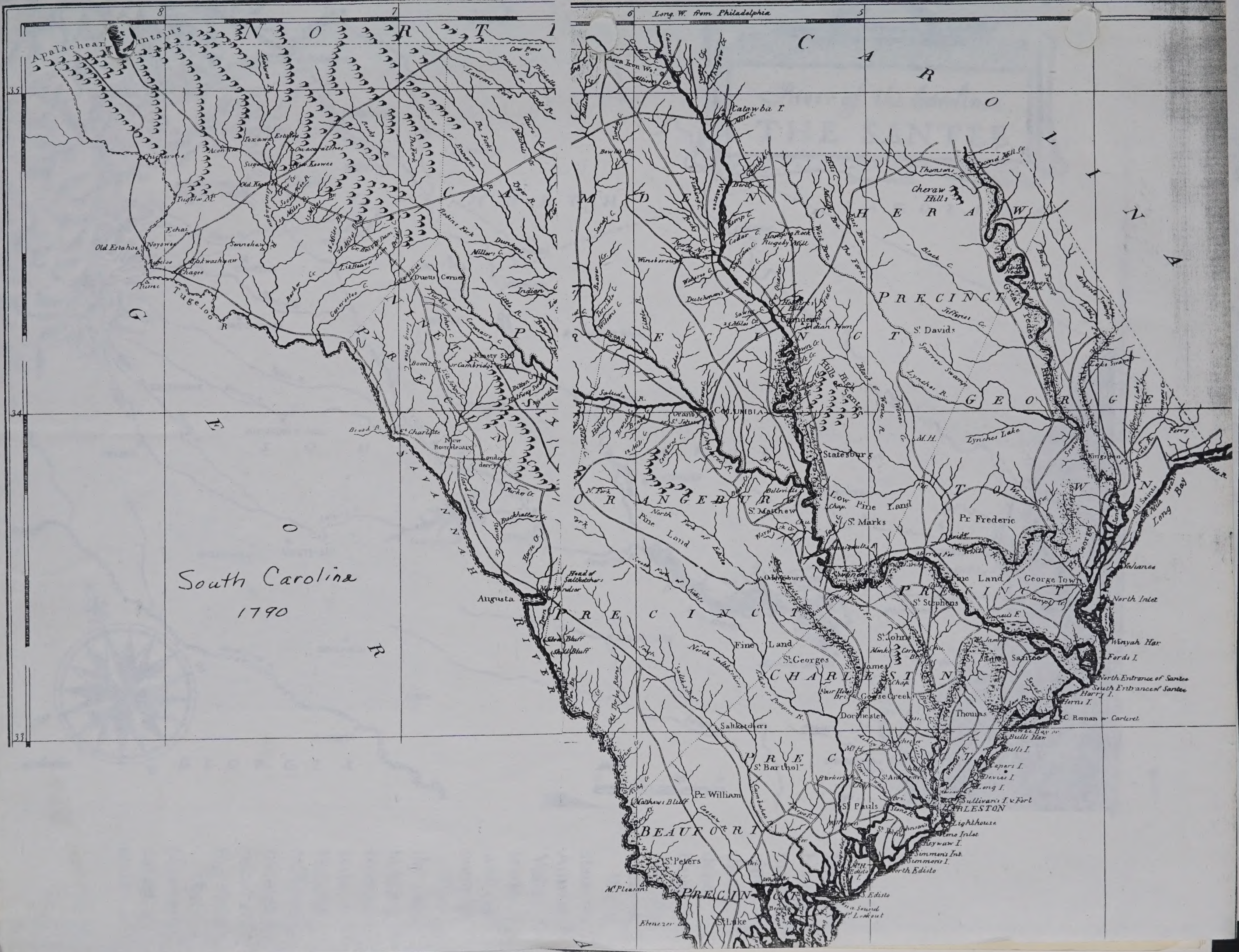

QUINBY
Florence
FLORENCE
WINDY HILL
HOB HILL
DELMAE
SARDALE
TIMMONSVILLE
Darwood
Sardis
Timmonsville
FLORENCE
Pamplico
Coward
PAMPLICO
COWARD
Olanta
OLANTA
SCRANTON
LAKE CITY
Lake City-Scranton
Johnsonville
JOHNSONVILLE


Pleasant Hill-Folly Grove
Plantersville
MURRELLS INLET
ANDREWS
Georgetown
Andrews
GEORGETOWN
Waccamaw
GEORGETOWN
Sampit-Santee

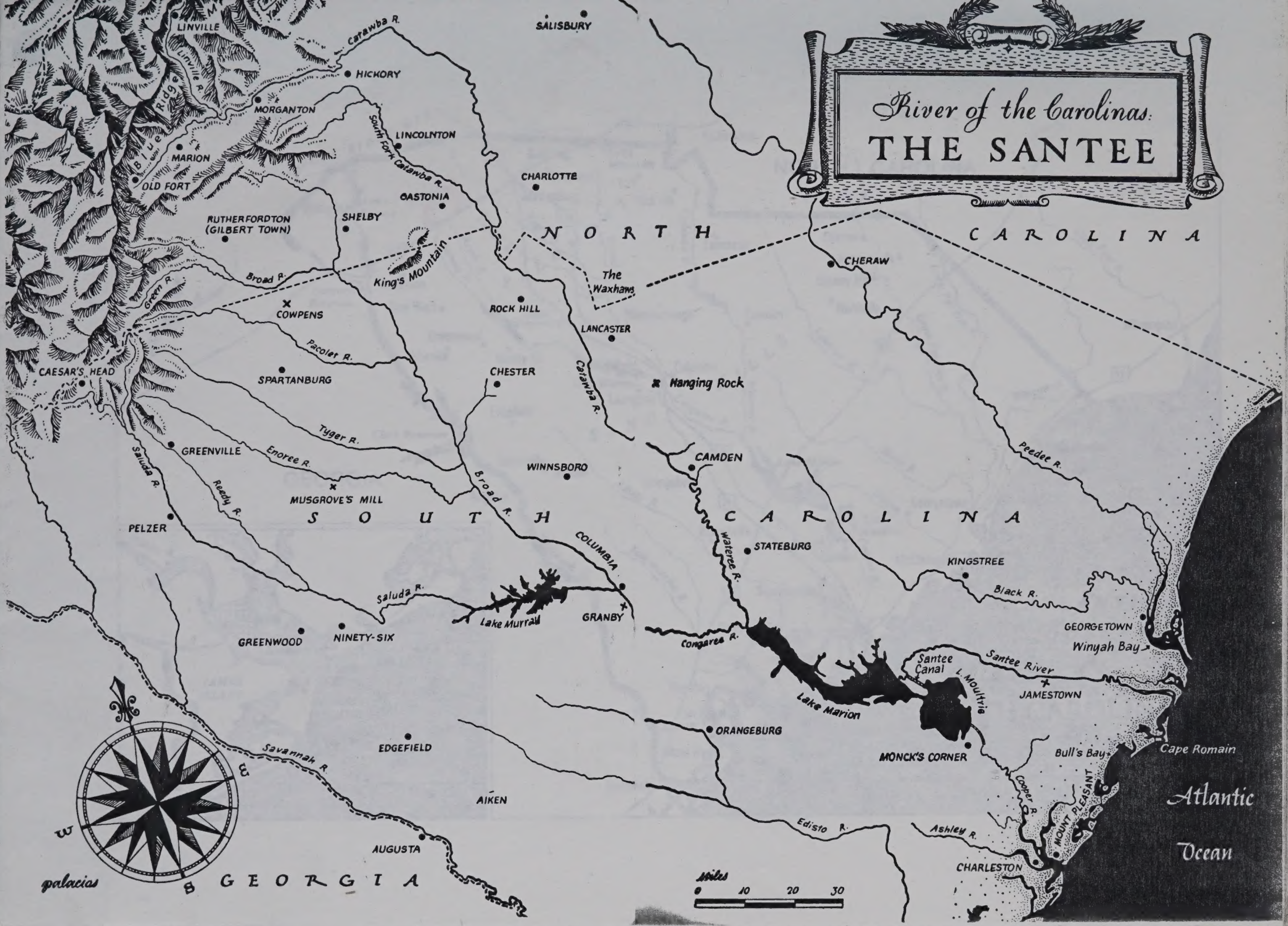

Highland
Slater
GREENVILLE
Tigerville
SLATER-MARIETTA
Travelers Rest
TRAVELERS REST
Taylors
Greer
TAYLORS
GREER
Greenville
SANS SOUCI
BEREA
CITY VIEW
DUNEAN
WADE HAMPTON
GREENVILLE
MAULDIN
WELCOME
GANTT
Simpsonville
SIMPSONVILLE
GOLDEN GROVE
Piedmont
PIEDMONT
FOUNTAIN INN
Fountain Inn
Woodville


WARE SHOALS
Ware Shoals-Hodges
HODGES
NORTH GREENWOOD
GREENWOOD
Lake Greenwood
NINETY SIX
WEST GREENWOOD
Ninety Six
Greenwood
GREENWOOD
Troy
Kirksey
TROY


FAIRFAX
Brunson
BRUNSON
HAMPTON
GIFFORD
VARNVILLE
LURAY
Hampton-Varnville
Estill
ESTILL
HAMPTON
Yemassee
YEMASSEE
FURMAN
SCOTIA
Furman-Scotia


Long. W. from Philadelphia
8
7
6
5
35
34
33
NORTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
Apalachean Mountains
Chickerose
Toxawa
Estatoe
Oucacoratchee
Sugar
New Keowee
Old Keowee
Tugeloo Mt.
Echai
Old Estahoe
Noyowee
Tugeloo
Chagee
Tugeloo R.
Seneca R.
Saluda R.
Broad R.
Tyger R.
Enoree R.
Pacolet
Little R.
Ninety Six
or Cambridge
Duetts Corner
Boonsb.
St. Charlotte
New Bordeaux
Londonderry
Augusta
New Windsor
Head of Saltketchers
Silver Bluff
Shell Bluff
SAVANNAH RIVER
NINETY SIX PRECINCT
CAMDEN PRECINCT
CHERAW PRECINCT
GEORGE TOWN PRECINCT
ORANGEBURG PRECINCT
CHARLESTON PRECINCT
BEAUFORT PRECINCT
Catawba T.
Camden
Winsborough
Hanging Rock
Rugeley Mill
Cheraw Hills
Great Pedee
Black C.
Lynches R.
St. Davids
Hills High Santee
Granby
or St. Johns
COLUMBIA
Congaree R.
Wateree
Statesburg
Lynches Lake
Kingston
Ferry
Long Bay
Pine Land
Pr. Frederic
St. Matthew
St. Marks
Orangeburg
North Fork of Edisto
Santee
St. Stephens
George Town
North Inlet
Winyah Har.
Fords I.
North Entrance of Santee
South Entrance of Santee
Harry I.
Horns I.
C. Roman or Carteret
Bulls Har.
Bulls I.
Capers I.
Long I.
Sullivan's I. & Fort
CHARLESTON
Lighthouse
Stono Inlet
North Edisto
S. Edisto
St. Johns
St. James
St. Georges
Goose Creek
Dorchester
St. Thomas
St. Andrews
St. Pauls
Saltketchers
St. Barthol.
Pr. William
Matthews Bluff
St. Peters
Mt. Pleasant
Ebenezer
St. Luke
Port Royal

South Carolina
1790



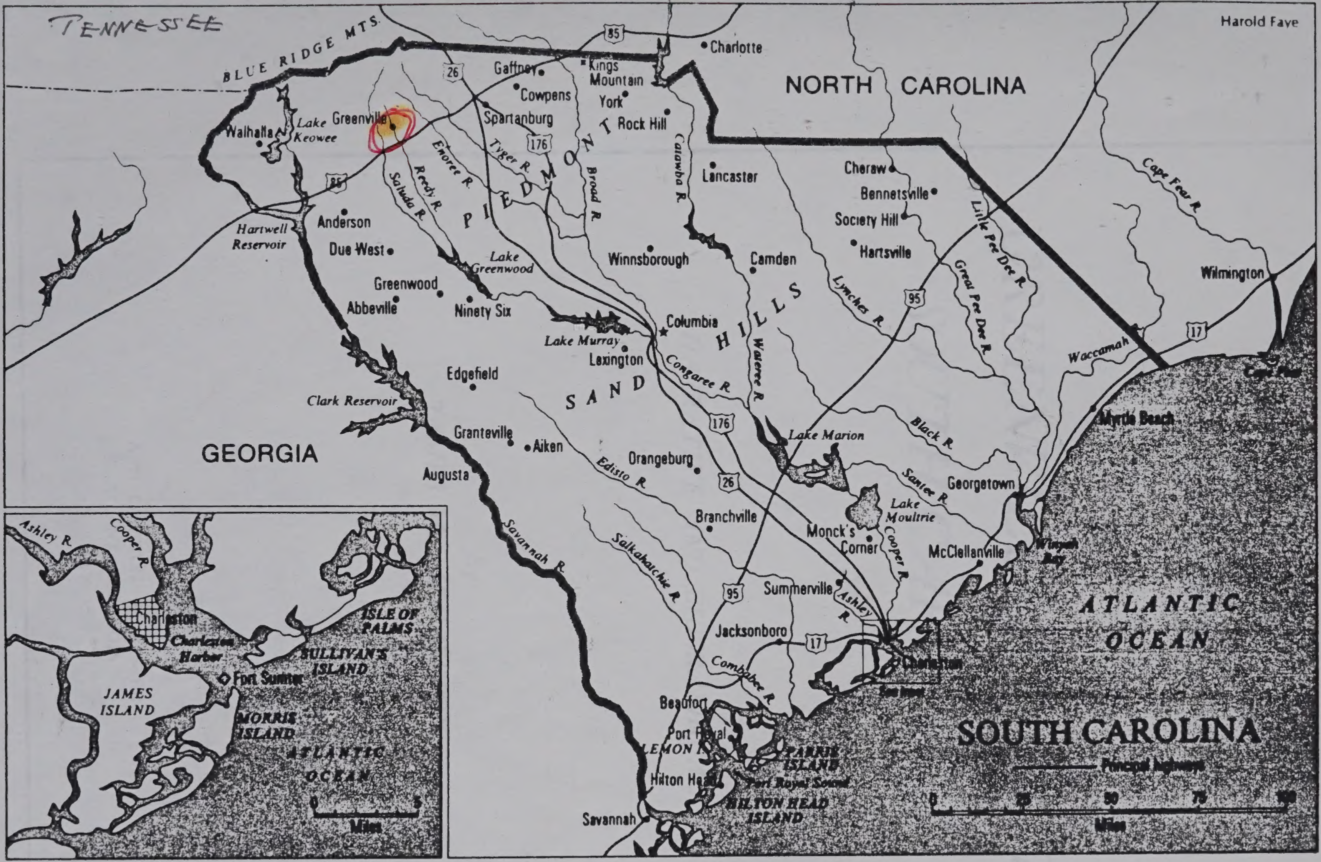
River of the Carolinas:
THE SANTEE

LINVILLE
Catawba R.
SALISBURY
HICKORY
Linville R.
Blue Ridge
MORGANTON
LINCOLNTON
South Fork Catawba R.
MARION
OLD FORT
CHARLOTTE
GASTONIA
RUTHERFORDTON (GILBERT TOWN)
SHELBY
NORTH CAROLINA
CHERAW
King's Mountain
Broad R.
Green R.
The Waxhams
COWPENS
ROCK HILL
LANCASTER
Pacolet R.
CAESAR'S HEAD
SPARTANBURG
CHESTER
Catawba R.
Hanging Rock
Tyger R.
GREENVILLE
Enoree R.
Saluda R.
CAMDEN
Peedee R.
WINNSBORO
Reedy R.
MUSGROVE'S MILL
Broad R.
PELZER
SOUTH CAROLINA
COLUMBIA
Wateree R.
STATEBURG
KINGSTREE
Black R.
Saluda R.
Lake Murray
GRANBY
GEORGETOWN
Winyah Bay
GREENWOOD
NINETY-SIX
Congaree R.
Santee Canal
Santee River
L. Moultrie
JAMESTOWN
Lake Marion
ORANGEBURG
MONCK'S CORNER
Bull's Bay
Cape Romain
EDGEFIELD
Savannah R.
Cooper R.
MOUNT PLEASANT
Atlantic Ocean
AIKEN
Edisto R.
Ashley R.
CHARLESTON
AUGUSTA
palacias
GEORGIA
Miles 0 10 20 30
N E S W

IN 1807
history
the histo
ciples o
through
dence,
beyond.
And der
every or
We th
state ma
America
Valley I
tended l
was righ
complet
The I
the purs
holding
Northwe
states to
Federal
building
through
tional re
ing Fath
The r
between
called a
mains u

Richd Pearis at Greenville – from Cherokee Indian Trader

Catawba R | Yadkin R (Pee Dee)


TENNESSEE
BLUE RIDGE MTS.
NORTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
SOUTH CAROLINA
PIEDMONT
SAND HILLS
Charlotte
Gaffney
Kings Mountain
Cowpens
York
Rock Hill
Spartanburg
Greenville
Lake Keowee
Walhalla
Anderson
Hartwell Reservoir
Due West
Greenwood
Abbeville
Ninety Six
Lake Greenwood
Winnsborough
Lancaster
Camden
Cheraw
Bennettsville
Society Hill
Hartsville
Columbia
Lake Murray
Lexington
Edgefield
Clark Reservoir
Granteville
Aiken
Augusta
Orangeburg
Branchville
Lake Marion
Lake Moultrie
Monck's Corner
Georgetown
McClellanville
Myrtle Beach
Wilmington
Cape Fear
Summerville
Jacksonboro
Charleston
Beaufort
Port Royal
LEMON I.
PARRIS ISLAND
Port Royal Sound
Hilton Head
HILTON HEAD ISLAND
Savannah
Enoree R.
Tyger R.
Reedy R.
Saluda R.
Broad R.
Catawba R.
Lynches R.
Little Pee Dee R.
Great Pee Dee R.
Cape Fear R.
Waccamah
Wateree R.
Congaree R.
Black R.
Santee R.
Cooper R.
Ashley R.
Edisto R.
Salkahatchie R.
Combahee R.
Savannah R.
Winyah Bay
Sea Isles
ATLANTIC OCEAN
85
26
176
95
17
Principal highways
0 25 50 75 100
Miles
Ashley R.
Cooper R.
Charleston
Charleston Harbor
Fort Sumter
JAMES ISLAND
MORRIS ISLAND
ISLE OF PALMS
SULLIVAN'S ISLAND
ATLANTIC OCEAN
0 5
Miles

Harold Faye

IN 1807
history
the histo
ciples o
through
dence,
beyond.
And der
every or
We th
state ma
America
Valley
tended l
was righ
complet
The I
the purs
holding
Northwe
states to
Federal
building
through
tional re
ing Fath
The r
between
called a
mains u

History
of
GREENVILLE COUNTY
SOUTH CAROLINA

NARRATIVE AND BIOGRAPHICAL

By
JAMES M. RICHARDSON

F277
G6R52
(1980)

A. H. CAWSTON—PUBLISHER
ATLANTA, GEORGIA
1930

Richard Pearis, his family, or his associates are mentioned on most pages of the enclosed. See especially page 47 for the mistreatment of his wife & children by the "patriots" and page 50 for his career as a British Colonel after that horrible incident. Remember also that most of the unflattering comments as to reasons he was against Regulators, scheming on behalf of Tory cause, or just plain acquisitiveness are colored by the memoirs of his enemy, W. H. Drayton, who wrote a slanted version of the history of the Revolutionary war in SC on which later historians are based. These rich Charleston "Patriots" were mean to the people, — one reason the war was so bloody & divided in SC!

CHAPTER IV.

THE FIRST CHEROKEE WAR

THE effect of the Cherokee treaty of 1755, followed by the defeat of General Braddock in Virginia, was to bring an influx of new settlers upon the frontiers of South Carolina, as has been previously discussed. But unfortunately, due to the blundering tactics of Governor Lyttleton of South Carolina, these newcomers were soon faced with the same dangers from which they had fled—hostile Indians upon their frontiers. Early in the conflict, the Cherokees joined forces with Great Britain and her American colonies, against the French and their Indian allies. And after the British reverses in Virginia, the Cherokees dispatched a number of warriors there to reinforce their hard-pressed allies. In 1758, Fort Duquesne fell before a combined attack of the English, Virginians and Indians, the Indians being led, it is said, by Captain Richard Pearis, afterward a resident of present day Greenville County; and with the removal of this great French stronghold, the southern colonies began to breathe freely again. The Cherokees, seeing that they were no longer needed, set out upon their return to Carolina, but on their homeward journey they incurred the wrath of a few Virginia settlers who fired upon them. Being greatly enraged, the warriors hurried to their Carolina homes and reported the ill treatment which had been accorded them. The young men of the Nation were for immediate and indiscriminate war upon the whites, but the leaders endeavored to restrain them from committing any overt acts till a conference with the governor at Charles Town could be arranged. However, a number of the young Indians, without the sanction of their head-men, raided the frontier settlements of present Spartanburg, Laurens and Abbeville Counties, killing a number of the inhabitants.

When it became known in the Cherokee nation that the wishes of the head-men had been disregarded, there was great alarm among the Indian people, and a deputation of 32 of the leading chiefs, led by Occonostota, was immediately started to Charles Town, where it was hoped a settlement of the difficulties could be effected. The Cherokees had always been on terms of the closest friendship with the Carolinians, and they greatly desired that this friendly relationship continue. But unfortunately, James Glen, who fully understood the Indians, was no longer governor; instead William Henry Lyttleton, a hot-head, who had his own ideas of how to handle the situation, now held that position. So after traveling for more than 200 miles upon their mission of peace, the Indian envoys were not even permitted to lay their petition before the governor. Instead, they were bluntly told that the governor did not care to hear them, and that he was even then about to march upon their people with an army. The Indians were assured, however, that they would be permitted to return to their own country since they had come on a friendly mission; but they were advised that the safest way for the return would be with the troops.

Within a few days after the coming of the chieftains, fully confident that the governor would receive them in the same spirit of friendship which had prompted their mission, these chosen leaders of a proud people, found themselves in the humiliating position of returning to their country, virtual prisoners in the hands of avowed enemies. Till the Congarees (Columbia) was reached they were permitted to march with the army, but upon leaving this encampment they were all made prisoners, and carried back to Keowee under heavy guard. Such treatment was inconceivable to the Indian mind, except it come at the hand of an enemy. In friendship, and on a mission of peace, their chiefs had journeyed to the seat of the white man's government, and they were brought back in chains and lodged in prison. Could such conduct be condoned? Never in the eyes of the proud Cherokee race! An unpardonable injury had been done them, and nothing short of bloodshed could propitiate that wrong.

Governor Lyttleton was as ignorant of the methods of Indian warfare as he was of the savage's ethics of life. The expedition had been hurriedly undertaken, and his troops were ill supplied with food, clothing and ammunition to withstand an Indian attack in that remote region. Many of the soldiers, realizing the incompetency of their leadership, soon began to show their discontent, and the governor, fearing mutiny, hurried messengers to Atta Kulla Kulla, the leading chief of all the Cherokees, requesting his immediate presence at Fort Prince George. Upon the arrival of this old chief, Governor Lyttleton, making as great a show of strength as possible, told him that he had brought his army into the Indian country to make war upon the red men if 24 of their number (this being the number of whites killed in the recent raid) were not immediately delivered up to be dealt with as might seem best. Atta Kulla Kulla proposed that three of the imprisoned chiefs, including Occonostota, be liberated to assist him in finding 24 of the young men who had taken part in the massacre. The suggestion was taken, and three of the Indian prisoners were released. But on the following day, after two of the guilty young men had been brought in, Atta Kulla Kulla set out upon his journey home. He had not proceeded far, however, when he was overtaken by a messenger from the governor requesting his return. Accordingly, the old warrior retraced his steps and again presented himself at the camp of Governor Lyttleton, where he frankly stated that additional time must be given if any more of the raiders were to be captured. The governor having already realized his mistake, and knowing that his army could not be held together longer, proposed a treaty by which 22 of the chiefs, then held prisoners, should be retained as hostages till an equal number of Indians were delivered in compliance with the original demand. This was acceded to by Atta Kulla Kulla, and such an agreement was reduced to writing and formally signed by Governor Lyttleton for the colony, and six Indian chiefs in behalf of the Cherokees. This done, the army was withdrawn.

Although the treaty was signed by the Cherokees, they never seemed to hold themselves bound by its terms, and no effort was made to deliver up any portion of the 22 Indians demanded. Occonostota continued to smart because of the treatment accorded him and his friends who had gone to Charles Town, and set himself to the task of releasing the hostages still confined in Fort Prince George. After gathering his warriors, he delivered an assault upon the fort, but little impression could be made. Seeing that he could not hope to accomplish his purposes in this manner, he used deception to draw Captain Cotymore from the fort, and no sooner was he outside its protecting walls than he was shot down by Indians previously placed in ambush for that purpose. As a consequence of this Indian treachery, orders were given in the fort to put the hostages in irons, but they resisted, and the garrison fell upon them and butchered them all in a most horrible manner.

The Cherokee issue had been unwisely handled from its inception, and this last act was a fatal blunder. There was hardly an Indian in the Nation who had not lost a relative in the massacre of the hostages, and now a cry for the blood of their enemies "to propitiate the spirits of their dead brothers" went up over the entire Cherokee country. With the hatchet, scalping knife and torch in hand, the savages rushed down upon the frontier settlements, leaving death and destruction in their wake. Men, women and children fell innocent sacrifices everywhere to the inefficient rule of Governor Lyttleton. Some escaped the tomahawk by fleeing to the woods only to die there of hunger, while others were taken prisoners to be subjected to inexpressible hardships and tortures. The frontiersmen, being unable to defend themselves, hurried messenger after messenger to Charles Town imploring aid, while the savages each day added new victims to their harvest of blood. But an epidemic of smallpox was sweeping over the coast country and no help could be furnished, and these unhappy people were left to contend with the savage scourge as best they could. Small forts and block-houses were hastily constructed along the entire Cherokee frontier, and into these crude fortifications the sorely beset settlers crowded with their movable property, where they remained in a state of defense, till the fury of their enemies exhausted itself in the systematic destruction of their unprotected homes, provisions and fields. At this time, the present Greenville County, still being Indian territory, bristled with these places of defense all along her eastern and southern boundaries, where are now found Spartanburg and Laurens Counties.

After a time, Virginia and North Carolina came to the rescue of the South Carolinians by sending down seven troops of rangers which were joined in a short time by Colonel Montgomery with a small force of British regulars. Montgomery, assuming command, marched into the Cherokee country where he inflicted heavy losses on the Indians. But he was recalled to the northern provinces within a short time, and again the Carolina frontier was left exposed to the savage attacks. A provincial regiment was then raised and put under command of Colonel Middleton. Among the officers of this regiment, who later gained prominence in South Carolina military and political history, were Henry Laurens, William Moultrie, Francis Marion, Isaac Huger and Andrew Pickens. This force united with a regiment of British regulars under Colonel Grant, who had been sent to Carolina when it seemed that the Indian trouble there was becoming so serious as to endanger the British cause in America. The command of the united forces was entrusted to Colonel Grant, who, now at the head of 2,600 men, pushed rapidly into the wilderness of the Cherokee country, utterly destroying the homes, granaries and growing crops of the Indians, who fled before the approaching army into the mountains, where they often attacked from ambush, but without inflicting sufficient losses upon the advancing forces to seriously impede their progress. This expedition was known as the Grant Indian war; and it brought the Cherokees into complete submission, thus ending the first conflict of arms between the Cherokees and South Carolina.

Note.—The agreement between Governor Lyttleton and the Cherokees with reference to holding the hostage chiefs, and the treaty which terminated the Grant campaign were both reduced to writing, and are on file in the office of the Historical Commission at Columbia. It is with regret that copies are not incorporated here, but space will not permit.

CHAPTER V.

PRE-REVOLUTIONARY SETTLERS ON GREENVILLE COUNTY LANDS

THE Cherokee Indian trouble having already been satisfactorily settled, the treaty of Paris, concluded in 1763, left the South Carolina frontier free to pursue a life of industry for the first time since it began to receive the Virginia, Pennsylvania, and New York settlers. Long years of war and pillage had greatly retarded its development, but a new life was now opening for the up-country. A vast extent of virgin territory, claimed by Carolina under the treaty of Governor Glen, and confirmed in her by the Cherokees after Grant's Indian war, offered many advantages to those people residing further north. Here, where ideal weather conditions prevailed the whole year through, and rich lands could be purchased for a song, the residents of western Virginia, Pennsylvania and New York saw opportunities innumerable, and soon started a steady stream of emigration into Piedmont South Carolina.

It was not till 1777 that present-day Greenville County was acquired from the Indians, but it is evident that a number of white people took up their abode here during the period after the French and Indian war, when so many pioneers were establishing themselves upon adjoining lands. Never had Greenville County as of today, been used by the Indians for the location of their permanent towns, practically all of these being in present Pickens and Oconee Counties, hence there seemed to be little objection to white men living there. Under treaties with Great Britain, the Cherokees were not permitted to sell their lands to individuals, but there is evidence that they disregarded this provision of their agreement and sold extensively to at least one man (Richard Pearis) and perhaps others, while they permitted many to become "squatters" in their country.

The best known of all pre-Revolutionary settlers in Greenville County was, of course, Richard Pearis (Paris), who took up his residence on the site of present Greenville City, between the years 1766 and 1768. Pearis was an Irishman of some education and pronounced ability, who settled in Frederick County, Virginia, prior to 1750. He later established himself on Long Island of the Holston river as an Indian trader, and was at one time associated with Nathaniel (afterward General) Gist. Governor Dinwiddie of Virginia, recognizing his ability, commissioned him a lieutenant of Virginia Provincials in 1755 and soon afterward he became a captain in command of a company of Cherokees and Catawbas in an expedition under Major Lewis against the Shawnee towns west of the Ohio. He served gallantly throughout the French and Indian war and is said to have been the first man to enter Fort Duquesne, being captain of a band of Cherokee warriors (probably from South Carolina). In commendation of his services in the war, he was publicly thanked and given the post of agent for Southern Indians with headquarters at Fort Pitt. But after filling this position for a short time, he decided to move to South Carolina and take up his residence among the Cherokees, since his wife was a Cherokee woman. Some authorities, however, say that he was ordered south where he might be "more centrically located to gather the Cherokees in the event of an Indian outbreak." But later events in his life tend to show that his real motive in going into the Indian country was to gain their confidence through his wife and then rob them of their lands.

Pearis established his trading post and erected a corn mill near the present location of Camperdown mill, at what was then called "Great Plains", and was soon engaged in a lucrative business with the Indians. His holdings of land were extended year by year in every direction, till at the outbreak of the Revolutionary war, he is said to have claimed title to ten miles square. But he never, at any time, held legal title to any lands, for as has already been said, the Indians by their treaties had agreed to sell no lands to individuals, and he could therefore have acquired only a sort of permissive use of his holdings. Just how he probably acquired these broad acres is revealed in a letter written to the Cherokee people by John Stuart, superintendent of Indian affairs, in 1775, which reads in part: "I am very sorry of the little regard paid to my advice, and your own interest, respecting your land which you compliment away to every white man who asks for it. You have been constantly told and admonished by me, not to treat or bargain for your land with any person but me. . . . You are constantly listening to Richard Pearis, who cheats you of your lands." From Pearis comes the name of "Paris Mountain", which beautiful and pleasant summer resort of Greenvillians today was included within his holdings. Later, in the days of the Revolution, Richard Pearis was a prominent Tory, and his activities as such will be discussed later.

About the time Richard Pearis took up his residence at Great Plains, a Colonel Hite, with his family, moved down from Virginia and established himself on the Enoree river near where that stream is now crossed by the old Spartanburg road. There are records extant showing that he was in possession of at least 1,300 acres. Tradition says that Captain Pearis and Colonel Hite were friends while still in Virginia, and that this friendship continued for many years after the two had settled in South Carolina. A son of Colonel Hite, it is said, was engaged to be married to Pearis' daughter, which romance was ended by the death of young Hite at the hands of the Indians during the early days of the Revolution. The Hite family adhered to the cause of the Whigs in the war of the Revolution, and the Colonel, his wife and at least one of his sons (the one engaged to the daughter of Pearis) were killed in a bloody Indian raid during the summer of 1776.

Among the very early settlers in what is now Greenville County, was Nathaniel Austin, who came down from Virginia about 1761 or 1762 and settled on Gilders creek, a few miles northeast of the town of Simpsonville. He was an Englishman, having emigrated from that country to Virginia only a few years before coming to South Carolina. It is said that he held a commission from King George III as high constable. J. Thomas Austin, a great-grandson of the original settler, it will be recalled by the older residents, was prominent in public affairs of the county for many years during the latter part of the last century, being a member of the celebrated "Wallace House." Family tradition has it that a daughter of Nathaniel

Austin was killed by Indians some years prior to the Revolution, and that several years later a brother of the murdered girl succeeded in slaying one of the Indians who had been concerned in her death. However, the killing of this young lady probably took place in 1776, during the raid in which several members of the Hite family lost their lives, as there is no record of any Indian massacres in this section between the time the Austin family came to South Carolina and that date. Nathaniel Austin and all of his children were ardent supporters of the Patriot cause in the Revolution.

There is evidence that a family by the name of Gilder resided near the home of the Austins; and it is said that one of the Gilder girls was a witness to the slaying of Miss Austin, a friend and neighbor, with whom she was out walking when the Indians swept down upon the little settlement. It is no doubt from this family that Gilder creek derives its name.

In the northeastern part of the county several families are thought to have resided prior to the Revolution. Among these were the Gowen, Howard, Fisher and Dill families. Major Buck Gowen and Captain Howard, members of two of these families, won distinction during the Revolution as daring leaders of small forces operating in semi-guerilla style against the Tories of upper Spartanburg and Greenville Counties. Near the present Gowensville settlement (named in honor of Major Buck Gowen) Gowen's fort was located in Greenville County. Further south and not far from Greer, was Wood's fort, which was also in Greenville County. Both of these fortifications are known to have existed during the Revolution, and some authorities fix their construction date as of the Indian massacres during the French and Indian war. If these forts existed at that early date, no doubt there were several families residing near them.

Near Piedmont, on Grove creek, it is thought that Alexander Cameron, Indian agent, and much despised Tory of later days, maintained "cowpens", although he did not live there. The Cameron place was granted to Henry Pendleton, a Carolinian of prominence, from whom Pendleton District and the town of Pendleton derived their names, in 1784, following the acquisition of the county from the Cherokees. And in this immediate vicinity, there were doubtless a number of settlers, for the "Golden Grove" seems to have been a choice location when the county was later opened to regular settlements.

At this late day, in the absence of any records, it is impossible to ascertain the names of many of the pre-Revolutionary settlers, but evidence which comes down through descriptions and plats from early land grants warrants the statement that some white men were to be found in practically every section of the county. Roads led in almost every direction, and some of these were evidently of the "public" variety. There was one leading from Pearis' plantation to Ninety-Six and Augusta, and another along the approximate route of the present Old Spartanburg road through Colonel Hite's plantation "to the Settlements" in present Spartanburg County.

Living near these early Greenville County settlers, in what is now Spartanburg County, were a number of people whose later lives were so closely identified with Greenville County and its development that brief reference to them here would not be out of place. Residing two or three miles northeast of the town of Greer was a family whose name in after years became famous the South over. This was none other than Anthony Hampton, great-grandfather of Governor Wade Hampton of "red shirt" days. Anthony Hampton and several members of his family were killed in the Indian massacre of 1776. Another was Judge Baylis Earle of the Landrum section of Spartanburg. The descendants of Judge Baylis Earle and his brother, Colonel John Earle, who resided near him, but just over the state line in North Carolina, have been prominent in the political, social, business and professional life of Greenville County from its organization down to the present. Another resident of Spartanburg County of this period, was Colonel John Thomas, who later led the expedition against the Cherokees which terminated in a treaty under which Greenville County was ceded to Carolina. Just north of Duncan, in the Nazareth church settlement, lived a considerable community of Scotch-Irish people who had come down from Pennsylvania some time before the French and Indian war. Among these were the Pedens, Alexanders, Mortons, Morrows and Nesbitts, who, after the Revolution, moved to lower Greenville County and established Fairview Presbyterian church in 1786.

As the country grew in population, it became evident to the frontiersmen that a stable government must be established if prosperity and happiness were to be enjoyed by the people. The war just concluded had thrown upon these regions a host of idlers, who sought to live by their wits. No courts had yet been established in the back country, and no law enforcement officers were stationed nearer than Charles Town, with which communication was anything but rapid. Because of this state, these idle people, seeing that it would be an easy matter to live upon the industry of their neighbors, soon banded themselves together to prey upon the community. Horse stealing and cattle "rustling" became fine arts; and murder and rapine were daily occurrences. But petition after petition directed to the Governor and Assembly by the law-abiding people were ignored till, by the year 1767, that portion of the colony lying between the Saluda and Broad found itself in a deplorable state.

The law-abiding people of the up-country, knowing that something must be done to curb such outlawry if they were to continue living there, decided to take the law into their own hands. A semi-military organization was formed, and it set about ridding the country of the marauding bands infesting it. This self-constituted "law and order league" was known as the Regulators. But however commendable might have been the purpose of the Regulators, many inexcusable acts of rowdyism and oppression were committed in the name of the organization; and opposition to its activities soon began to be heard from many who had no more sympathy for lawlessness than did the most rabid Regulator. Feeling ran high and the entire back country soon found itself divided into two armed camps. The authorities in Charles Town became alarmed and sought to quell the disturbance by proceeding against the Regulators. In pursuance of this policy, one Scoville (or Scofield) was sent into the district lying between the Saluda and Broad with instructions to break up that organization. But he proved to be a man of low character, and in executing his commission, he adopted very harsh and extreme measures with numbers of the better classes among the people, involving multitudes in great distress. Those who opposed the Regulators were soon termed Schophalites, and so intense was the

feeling engendered between the two followings that every resident of the frontiers eventually found himself classed as a member of one or the other faction. Richard Pearis was an outspoken adherent of the Schophalite cause, whether from honest convictions that the Regulators were too freely resorting to "Lynch law", or because he secretly sympathized with and supported the lawless element is not known; but his conduct during the Revolution leads one to suspect the latter as his real motive.

Scoville was soon withdrawn, but the bitterness engendered among the people by his activities lingered for many years, and became a strong contributing factor in the internecine warfare which was so savagely prosecuted in upper South Carolina during all the years of the Revolution. But the determined attitude of the Regulators seems to have impressed the authorities with the justice of their cause, for no sooner was Scoville out of the country than remedial legislation was undertaken. The machinery of government moved slowly, but in 1769 a bill was passed establishing courts at six locations outside Charles Town. One of these was at Ninety-Six. These new courts were given very limited jurisdiction, but the up-country felt that it was now being recognized by the government and this had a pacific influence on the inhabitants there. Conditions immediately began to improve, and by 1770 comparative quiet had been restored.

64

This Robert "Paris" was Richard's brother (At first I thought it was a son.)

CHAPTER XI.

EARLY POLITICAL LIFE

For the first 25 or 30 years of the county's life the names of three men stand out more conspicuously than any others in her political affairs. These are Samuel Earle, Elias Earle, and Lemuel J. Alston.

Samuel Earle was one of the first settlers in the new county, having secured a grant of "400 acres on both sides of Reedy river, northwest of the ancient boundary, including the improvements formerly claimed by Robert Paris". Whether or not these were lands formerly held by Richard Pearis, and the description in the Earle deed erroneously referred to him as "Robert", is unknown. There is no record of any Robert Paris ever having resided in Greenville, but the spelling of the name is here "Paris" while Richard always used the spelling "Pearis". Could it be possible that there was a Robert Paris, and that Paris mountain derives its name from him and not Richard Pearis, as is so generally thought? Possibly, but not at all probable. Samuel Earle was the son of Judge Baylis Earle, who settled in the northern part of Spartanburg County in 1773, having emigrated from either Westmoreland or Frederick County, Virginia, where Samuel was born to himself and his wife, Mary Prince, daughter of John Prince of Prince's fort fame, on November 28, 1760.

Although under 17 years of age at the time, Samuel Earle entered the forces of the Patriots on May 20, 1777, under the direct command of General (then Major) Andrew Pickens, and continued active till the close of the war, at which time he held a commission as captain. After the war, as Deputy Provost Marshal, he is said to have served the first writ ever made returnable to old Cambridge, or Ninety-Six. He was elected from Greenville County to the State Convention which framed the first State Constitution, and was also a member of the State Convention which adopted the Constitution of the United States. In 1795 he became a member of Congress from the Congressional District of which Greenville was a part, being the first Congressman from that district after the adoption of the Federal Constitution, and succeeding General Andrew Pickens, who up to that time had been the representative under the old "Articles of Confederation."

Of him Governor B. F. Perry writes:

> "Mr. Earle was a man of high and pure character, and I don't think his honor and integrity were ever questioned throughout his long life. . . . No one in the upper country knew so well as he did the Revolutionary history of the state, and the early settlement of the back country, as it was termed. . . . He knew all the prominent men of those times, and did not hesitate to sketch their characters as they appeared to him. . . . He spoke well of General Robert Cunningham. . . . He said, though Tories, Cunningham and his two brothers, John and Patrick, were gentlemen of honor and integrity. They had unfortunately taken the wrong side, as so many honest and intelligent men did."

and take up his residence among the Cherokees, since his wife was a Cherokee woman. Some authorities, however, say that he was ordered south where he might be "more centrically located to gather the Cherokees in the event of an Indian outbreak." But later events in his life tend to show that his real motive in going into the Indian country was to gain their confidence through his wife and then rob them of their lands.

Pearis established his trading post and erected a corn mill near the present location of Camperdown mill, at what was then called "Great Plains", and was soon engaged in a lucrative business with the Indians. His holdings of land were extended year by year in every direction, till at the outbreak of the Revolutionary war, he is said to have claimed title to ten miles square. But he never, at any time, held legal title to any lands, for as has already been said, the Indians by their treaties had agreed to sell no lands to individuals, and he could therefore have acquired only a sort of permissive use of his holdings. Just how he probably acquired these broad acres is revealed in a letter written to the Cherokee people by John Stuart, superintendent of Indian affairs, in 1775, which reads in part: "I am very sorry of the little regard paid to my advice, and your own interest, respecting your land which you compliment away to every white man who asks for it. You have been constantly told and admonished by me, not to treat or bargain for your land with any person but me. . . . You are constantly listening to Richard Pearis, who cheats you of your lands." From Pearis comes the name of "Paris Mountain", which beautiful and pleasant summer resort of Greenvillians today was included within his holdings. Later, in the days of the Revolution, Richard Pearis was a prominent Tory, and his activities as such will be discussed later.

About the time Richard Pearis took up his residence at Great Plains, a Colonel Hite, with his family, moved down from Virginia and established himself on the Enoree river near where that stream is now crossed by the old Spartanburg road. There are records extant showing that he was in possession of at least 1,300 acres. Tradition says that Captain Pearis and Colonel Hite were friends while still in Virginia, and that this friendship continued for many years after the two had settled in South Carolina. A son of Colonel Hite, it is said, was engaged to be married to Pearis' daughter, which romance was ended by the death of young Hite at the hands of the Indians during the early days of the Revolution. The Hite family adhered to the cause of the Whigs in the war of the Revolution, and the Colonel, his wife and at least one of his sons (the one engaged to the daughter of Pearis) were killed in a bloody Indian raid during the summer of 1776.

Among the very early settlers in what is now Greenville County, was Nathaniel Austin, who came down from Virginia about 1761 or 1762 and settled on Gilders creek, a few miles northeast of the town of Simpsonville. He was an Englishman, having emigrated from that country to Virginia only a few years before coming to South Carolina. It is said that he held a commission from King George III as high constable. J. Thomas Austin, a great-grandson of the original settler, it will be recalled by the older residents, was prominent in public affairs of the county for many years during the latter part of the last century, being a member of the celebrated "Wallace House." Family tradition has it that a daughter of Nathaniel

Pearis

Re: Pearis

WI SHS F 272 M18
(1897-1969 Reprint)

Ashpoo Island
Sound
COLLETON
COUNTY

THE HISTORY

OF

SOUTH CAROLINA

UNDER THE

PROPRIETARY GOVERNMENT

1670-1719

BY

EDWARD McCRADY

A MEMBER OF THE BAR OF CHARLESTON, S.C., AND VICE-PRESIDENT
OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTH CAROLINA

NEW YORK / RUSSELL & RUSSELL

1969 / 1897

The object of these pages is to show that author David E Johnston in *A History of the Middle New River Settlements, etc* was mistaken in his claim that our Pearis family was descended from the Huguenot Alexander Pearis of South Carolina. (pg 444 & other, his book) ment in Charles Town, while those accustomed to rural pursuits settled in Craven County on the Santee, and some on Cooper River and at Goose Creek, and industriously set to work clearing and cultivating the ground. The larger portion of these settled on the south side of the Santee, where a town or tract was laid out and called "James Town."[1] This portion of the country hence obtained the name of French Santee. Lawson found about fifty families settled on the banks of the Santee. In 1687 six hundred French Protestants were sent to America through the Royal bounty, and most of these, it is said, located in Carolina;[2] but this can scarcely be so, for the Huguenots, including all arrivals, did not reach that number.[3] Randolph enclosed to the Lords of Trade in his letter of

---

Michau, *Neufville*, *Prioleau*, *Peronneau*, Perdriau, *Porcher*, *Postell*, *Peyre*, *Poyas*, *Ravenel*, Royes, *Simons*, Sarazin, St. Julien, Serre, *Tresvant*. In the eighty years since Dr. Ramsay wrote, some of these families have died out or disappeared. The names of those still living are italicized.

[1] The tract of land was called "James Town," but no town or village was founded.

[2] *The Huguenots* (Samuel Smiles), 435.

[3] The following table was furnished Edward Randolph by Peter Girard. See *Hist. Sketches of So. Ca.* (Rivers), Appendix, 447: —

	PEOPLE
The number of the French Protestant Refugees of the French Church of Charles Town is	195
The quantity of the French Protestants of the French Church of Goose Creek is	31
The quantity of the French Protestants of y^e Eastern branch of Cooper River is	101
The number and quantity of the French Church of Santee is .	111
Total of the French Protestants to this day in Carolina .	438

to the French idiom. The original orthography was resumed by the emigrant to Carolina, a wealthy merchant, who, upon the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, escaped, and came to Carolina with a cargo of £1000 sterling, — the foundation of a large fortune which he afterwards made in the trade to Barbadoes and the other West Indies. Howe's *Hist. Presb. Ch.*, 102.

March 16, 1698–99, an estimate of the number of these people as at that time 438.

The Rev. William Screven, a native of Somerset, England, emigrated to America in 1681, and settled at Kittery, in the province of Maine. He was an Anabaptist, and as such his religious views were not in harmony with the "Standing Order" of that province; whereupon he was presented and fined by the County Court "for not frequenting the publique meeting according to Law on the Lords days." The fine was remitted, however, as it appeared that he usually attended "Mr. Mowdy's meetings on the Lords days." He was nevertheless esteemed as a citizen and was rapidly advanced to positions of trust; but his zeal in behalf of his opinions determined him to devote himself to the ministry and to the formation of a Baptist Church in Kittery. Going to Boston, he was ordained on the 11th of January, 1682, and upon his return organized a Baptist Church; but in doing so he met with great opposition from the provincial authorities, was summoned before the County Court at York, examined as to his views upon infant baptism, and thereupon was adjudged guilty of blasphemy, fined, and prohibited from having any private exercises at his own house or elsewhere upon the Lord's Day, either in Kittery or any other place within the limits of the province. Disregarding this injunction, Mr. Screven was "convicted of contempt of his Majestys authority by refusing to submit himself to the sentence of the former court," required to give bond for his good behavior in the future, and committed to jail until he did so. He was released, however, upon his promise to depart out of the province within a very short time. On the 25th of September, 1682, a covenant was entered into and signed, and a "Baptist company" organized, for removal to some other place. They do

The early settlers followed the river courses, and planted themselves upon their banks. There were probably two causes inducing this: the rivers presented the only means of transportation in the absence of roads, and the way also of escape from the Indians. The innumerable creeks, branches, and inlets from the sea, which intersect the low country, presented abundance of room for many years to allow river front to almost every plantation. Then followed the filling up of the islands and peninsulas, the settlements still, however, continuing within easy access to water. The banks of the Ashley were first settled under Sayle, the western bank most thickly. The Cooper River was next followed, and a settlement made upon Goose Creek, its first considerable branch, and also on the east between that river and the Wando. The destruction of Lord Cardross's colony put a stop for many years to any settlement at Port Royal; but the sea islands, those now known as James, John's, and Edisto islands, were soon peopled. The French refugees had pushed up the Cooper, as we have seen, until they had reached the Santee. A map made in 1715[1] shows that the population of South Carolina was still confined almost entirely between the Santee on the northeast and the Edisto on the southwest. Generally speaking, the old English colonists and the Barbadians, who together composed the Church of England people, were settled in Charles Town and upon the Cooper and Ashley rivers; the French Huguenots on the Santee; and English dissenters who had come out with Blake and Axtell upon the Edisto. There were, however, Independents, Baptists, Quakers, and Huguenots in the town.

Berkeley County was thus for the Church of England, Colleton was strongly imbued with dissent, and Craven, while Calvinistic in its tenets, was without hostility to the church. The colonists had crossed the seas and changed their climate, but not their minds; they had brought with them their Old World thoughts, opinions, and prejudices. Indeed, was it not on account of these, and that they might have liberty to enjoy them, that many had deserted their homes and sought refuge in the wild woods of America? All were more or less earnest in their religious convictions and sentiments, and clung to them as matters of vital consequence even while neglecting to be ruled in their lives by the principles they professed. In this small community of less than 6000 there were churchmen from England and Barbadoes, Independents from England, Old and New, Baptists from Maine, and Huguenots from France and Switzerland; all zealous of their peculiar religious tenets and many, if not most, with the tenacity of bigotry and fanaticism. Carolina was a Church of England province under its charter, and the Fundamental Constitutions, while offering the greatest religious freedom, provided only that God was acknowledged and publicly and solemnly worshipped, still provided for the establishment and maintenance of that church. Every one that came to the colony came with full notice of these provisions. Yet the Proprietors

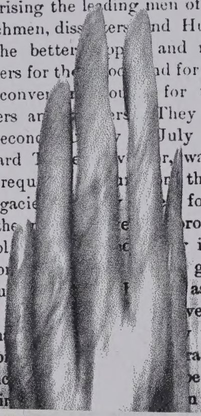
---

Moore, Strode, Thompson, Walter, and Woodward. Sayle, the first Governor, was from Bermuda. From Jamaica came Amory, Parker, Parris, Pinckney, and Whaley; from Antigua, Lucas, Motte, and Percy; from St. Christopher, Rawlins and Lowndes; from the Leeward Islands, Sir Nathaniel Johnson, the Governor; and from the Bahamas, Nicholas Trott, the Chief Justice. Some of these were probably but temporarily on the islands; some had been long-established residents.

This list has been compiled, with the assistance of Langdon Cheves, Esq., from various sources, including *Emigrants to America, 1600-1700* (Hotten).

[1] *Year Book City of Charleston* (Courtenay), 1886. Copied from an original map of principal part of North America, in the library of Thomas Addis Emmet, M.D., of New York.

tent of the donors, and to receive the said legacies, if tendered, nor to demand the same in case of refusal to pay the same, so that for want of some person or persons or body politick or corporate proper for the lodging the said legacies therein the same are not applied according to the pious and charitable intention of the testators or donors. Be it therefore enacted," etc.



The commissioners appointed under this act were the Hon. Colonel Edward Tynte, Esq., Governor, Colonel Thomas Broughton, Esq., Landgrave Joseph Morton, Mr. William Gibbon, Colonel George Logan, Richard Berresford, Esq., Arthur Middleton, Esq., Captain John Abraham Motte, Colonel Hugh Grange, Ralph Izard, Esq., Lieutenant Colonel Alexander Parris, Esq., Lewis Pasquereau, Dr. Gideon Johnson, Dr. Francis Le Jau, Mr. Alexander Wood, and Nicholas Trott, Esq. These commissioners, comprising the leading men of all parties in the province, churchmen, diss[illegible]ers [illegible]nd Huguenots, were incorporated for the better [illegible] and maintenance of masters or teachers for th[illegible] for the erecting of schoolhouses and conve[illegible] for the accommodation of the masters a[illegible] They were to meet annually on the secon[illegible] July to choose officers. Colonel Edward T[illegible]r, was made the first President and requ[illegible] the first meeting. All gifts or legacie[illegible] for the use of a free school for the[illegible]ropriated by the act for the school[illegible] it. The commissioners were author[illegible] grant from the Proprietors or pu[illegible] as they should think necessary. [illegible]ver to appoint a fit person to be m[illegible] the name and stile of Præcepto[illegible]rammar and other arts and scienc[illegible]e master of the school was requir[illegible]n of the Church of England,

and conform to the same, and should be capable to teach the learned languages, that is to say, the Latin and Greek tongues and also the useful parts of mathematics. The commissioners were to prescribe such orders, rules, statutes, and ordinances for the order, rule, and good government of the school and of the masters and teachers as should seem meet and convenient to them.

The other acts passed at this time were measures of ordinary administration.

Governor Tynte died soon after, and by the instructions which he had brought it had been provided, as we have just seen, that in such an event the deputies of the Proprietors were to choose one of their number to be Governor until another should be appointed by the Proprietors. It happened that at this time there were but three deputies in the province; to wit, Robert Gibbes, Colonel Thomas Broughton, and one Fortescue Turbeville. The last-named person had just come out as the deputy of the Duke of Beaufort,[1] and had been commissioned also to take probate of wills, and to grant letters of administration.[2] Upon the meeting of these for the purpose of choosing a Governor, there had been a recess taken from the morning until the afternoon, when it was declared that Robert Gibbes was chosen and was proclaimed Governor. Strangely, it happened that Turbeville also died suddenly, and upon his death it was discovered that at the morning session Turbeville had voted for Colonel Broughton, but during the recess had been induced by bribery to change his vote to Gibbes. Upon this Broughton claimed the government, alleging Turbeville's primary and uncorrupted vote in his favor. To this Gibbes would not yield. Each persisted in his claim, and thereupon ensued a most discreditable controversy, ending

---

[1] *Coll. Hist. Soc. of So. Ca.*, vol. I, 156.

[2] *Ibid.*, 178.

take your pick
(trouble with
the new scanner
at WIJKS!)

488 HISTORY OF SOUTH CAROLINA

tent of the donors, and to receive the said legacies, if tendered, nor to demand the same in case of refusal to pay the same, so that for want of some person or persons or body politick or corporate proper for the lodging the said legacies therein the same are not applied according to the pious and charitable intention of the testators or donors. Be it therefore enacted," etc.

The commissioners appointed under this act were the Hon. Colonel Edward Tynte, Esq., Governor, Colonel Thomas Broughton, Esq., Landgrave Joseph Morton, Mr. William Gibbon, Colonel George Logan, Richard Berresford, Esq., Arthur Middleton, Esq., Captain John Abraham Motte, Colonel Hugh Grange, Ralph Izard, Esq., Lieutenant Colonel Alexander Parris, Esq., Lewis Pasquereau, Dr. Gideon Johnson, Dr. Francis Le Jau, Mr. Alexander Wood, and Nicholas Trott, Esq. These commissioners, comprising the leading men of all parties in the province, churchmen, dissenters, and Huguenots, were incorporated for the better support and maintenance of masters or teachers for the school, and for the erecting of schoolhouses and convenient houses for the accommodation of the masters and teachers. They were to meet annually on the second Tuesday in July to choose officers. Colonel Edward Tynte, Governor, was made the first President and required to summon the first meeting. All gifts or legacies formerly given for the use of a free school for the province were appropriated by the act for the school to be founded under it. The commissioners were authorized to take up by grant from the Proprietors or purchase as much land as they should think necessary. They were given power to appoint a fit person to be master of the school by the name and stile of Præceptor and Teacher of Grammar and other arts and sciences. The person to be master of the school was required to be of the religion of the Church of England,

UNDER THE PROPRIETARY GOVERNMENT 489

and conform to the same, and should be capable to teach the learned languages, that is to say, the Latin and Greek tongues and also the useful parts of mathematics. The commissioners were to prescribe such orders, rules, statutes, and ordinances for the order, rule, and good government of the school and of the masters and teachers as should seem meet and convenient to them.

The other acts passed at this time were measures of ordinary administration.

Governor Tynte died soon after, and by the instructions which he had brought it had been provided, as we have just seen, that in such an event the deputies of the Proprietors were to choose one of their number to be Governor until another should be appointed by the Proprietors. It happened that at this time there were but three deputies in the province; to wit, Robert Gibbes, Colonel Thomas Broughton, and one Fortescue Turbeville. The last-named person had just come out as the deputy of the Duke of Beaufort,[1] and had been commissioned also to take probate of wills, and to grant letters of administration.[2] Upon the meeting of these for the purpose of choosing a Governor, there had been a recess taken from the morning until the afternoon, when it was declared that Robert Gibbes was chosen and was proclaimed Governor. Strangely, it happened that Turbeville also died suddenly, and upon his death it was discovered that at the morning session Turbeville had voted for Colonel Broughton, but during the recess had been induced by bribery to change his vote to Gibbes. Upon this Broughton claimed the government, alleging Turbeville's primary and uncorrupted vote in his favor. To this Gibbes would not yield. Each persisted in his claim, and thereupon ensued a most discreditable controversy, ending

[1] *Coll. Hist. Soc. of So. Ca.*, vol. I, 156.

[2] *Ibid.*, 178.

years since the destruction, by the Spaniards, of Stuart Town, Lord Cardross's attempted settlement at Port Royal. But in the quarter of a century since, the country had filled up, and it was now deemed prudent to make another effort to establish a town upon that magnificent harbor. This was the foundation of a settlement which became the wealthiest, most aristocratic, and cultivated town of its size in America; a town which, though small in number of inhabitants, produced statesmen, scholars, soldiers, sailors, and divines whose names and whose fame are known throughout the country.

During Governor Tynte's brief administration, an act had been passed, as we have seen, to establish a free school. Under Gibbes's rule, the matter was pressed, and, with the assistance of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, the project was carried out. The missionaries of the society and many other gentlemen of the province, to whom the want of schools had been a source of great solicitude, addressed the society upon the subject. They described the deplorable condition of the rising generation for want of sufficient education, and lamented the decay of piety and morals as the inevitable consequence of leaving the young to their own pursuits and to the influence of evil example. The spiritual as well as temporal interests of the people were declared to be at stake, as an uneducated community was but a

---

the spot where Ribault had settled and left his colony in 1562. "Fort Charles," Ribault's settlement, was on "Parris Island," not on "Port Royal Island." The points are at least five miles apart. See *Hist. Sketches* (Rivers), 25, and note; and Mill's *Atlas of So. Ca.*

Professor Whitney is also mistaken as to the settlement of the third town, "Georgetown." That town was not settled, as he states, about the same time as Beaufort. It was not settled until nearly twenty years after; nor is Georgetown referred to as Winyaw. "Prince George's Winyaw" is the name of the parish, not of the town.

small remove from the habits and feelings of savages. The society recognized the force of the appeal, and in the year 1711, they sent out the Rev. William Guy, A.M., who was placed in charge of the school, and who at the same time was appointed assistant minister of St. Philip's Church. Mr. Guy was a native of England and in Deacon's orders. He was ordained by Dr. Compton, Bishop of London, January 18, 1711. With Mr. Guy, the society sent out also the Rev. Benjamin Dennis, as a schoolmaster for St. James, Goose Creek. Two schools were thus established in 1711.[1]

The congregation of St. Philip's Church had so increased, — despite the parochial troubles with the ministers, Marston and Marsden, and notwithstanding the character given them by Dr. Gideon Johnson in his private correspondence, — that not only was there a necessity for an assistant minister, but it became necessary to build a new church, both because of the decay of the old building and because the church was too small for the population.[2] The preamble to the act for building the church states that several persons were desirous to have a new church built of brick in Charles Town, to be the parish church there, and a tower or steeple and a ring of bells therein, together with a cemetery or churchyard to be enclosed with a brick wall, for the burial of Christian people; and that charitable and well-disposed persons would contribute towards the building a church, if commissioners were authorized and appointed to receive and take care of all such moneys as should be given for the purpose. Whereupon, the Rev. Gideon Johnson, Colonel William Rhett, Colonel Alexander Parris, Messrs. William Gibbons, John Bee, and Jacob Satur were appointed commissioners for the purpose, and for receiving sub-

---

[1] [illegible] Hist. [illegible]

CHAPTER XXII

1712

THE Hon. Charles Craven at length assumed the government, — some time in the early part of the year 1712. Since the days of Joseph West, says Rivers, no man more wise, pure, and capable, or more beloved by the people, had been appointed to govern Carolina.[1] Nothing had yet been heard from Colonel Barnwell since he had set out upon his expedition.

When the Assembly met on the 2d of April,[2] the new Governor in his "speech," as the address upon opening that body was now termed, observed that, having lived some time among them, knowing that the Lords Proprietors had nominated him as Governor, an opportunity had been afforded of diligent inquiry into the state of the province to learn wherein its true interest lay, which none of his predecessors had had at heart more than himself. He recommended them to do everything that might secure the province both from foreign and domestic in-

---

[1] *Hist. Sketches of So. Ca.* (Rivers), 251, 252.

[2] The members of this House of Commons, so worthy of remembrance for its excellent work, were as follows: Colonel William Rhett, Speaker; Colonel Alexander Parris, Henry Wigginton, Esq., Thomas Nairne, Esq., Mr. Manly Williams, Mr. John Morgan, Mr. William Gibbon, Mr. Jacob Eve, Henry Noble, Esq., Captain Benjamin Quelch, Captain Peter Staner, Mr. John Oldfield, Mr. William Fuller, Captain Arthur Hall, Mr. John Raven, Mr. Samuel Wragg, Mr. Benjamin Godin, Mr. Jacob Beamor, Captain Lorcey, and Mr. Henroydah English. *Commons Journal* (MS.).

came of age and took his seat. On the 8th of November, 1711, at a meeting at the Duke of Beaufort's house, at which, however, his Grace was not present but was represented by Mr. Manly, upon a motion to proceed to the election of another Palatine in the room of William Lord Craven, deceased, a letter was read from Lord Carteret, proposing the Duke of Beaufort, which was unanimously agreed to, and the Duke became the seventh Palatine of Carolina.[1]

---

[1] *Coll. Hist. Soc. of So. Ca.*, vol. I, 183.

CHAPTER XXVI

1717–18

BEFORE sending Captain Rogers and his small fleet to New Providence, the King had issued a proclamation promising pardon to all pirates who should surrender themselves within twelve months. This proclamation was published throughout Carolina. On the 3d of December, 1717, Governor Johnson sent in a message to the Commons upon the subject.

"His Majesty," he said, "being pleased to issue out his Royal Proclamation extending his pardon to all pirates that shall lay hold on the same, and surrendering themselves according to the time limited in said proclamation; and we having several of our inhabitants that unwarily and without due consideration have engaged in that ill course of life and are now resident at the Bahama Islands, and other places adjacent, I think it a duty incumbent on me, with all speed to send his Majesty's proclamation thither to let our people see that they may return hither again in safety to us, if in time they embrace his Majesty's royal favor; therefore some proper person must be thought of to carry this proclamation to them; and Col. Parris being willing to undertake the same (who is very well known to all the inhabitants of this Province) if you can spare him from the Public business; I shall give him my instructions accordingly."[1]

---

[1] Commons Journal. S. C. Hughson, Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies, 2 series, V, VI, VII, 67. In the following account of the operations of

There is no record that Colonel Parris ever went to the Bahamas with the King's proclamation, or of the acceptance of its offers by any of the inhabitants of Carolina, who had so "unwarily" engaged in that ill course of life; nor is there any record of the numbers who had left the province for that purpose. There is no reason to believe that there were many. Governor Johnson speaks of them as "several," which may be any small number more than two; but there were not enough to arouse sufficient interest to induce further action in regard to the matter of their pardon. The author of the essay upon the subject to which we have had repeated occasion to refer is mistaken in supposing that Governor Johnson referred to Carolinians in his communication to the Proprietors, in which he complains that the proclamation of peace had worked no good effect upon the pirates, as they shortly returned to their evil courses. The Governor was, in this letter, speaking of the pirates generally; there is no allusion in this paper to any from Carolina. In a community in which there were constantly new-comers, adventurers from all parts of Europe and America, it would have been strange if there had not been some ready to join in the wild life of the buccaneers, which had, until so recently, been encouraged by the powers that were now attempting to suppress them. There were no doubt some such, as observed in the introductory chapter, but the title of the essay to which we have referred, to wit, *The Carolina Pirates and Colonial Commerce*, is misleading. Pirates infested the coast of Carolina; but they were in no sense Carolina pirates. Of the forty-five who constituted the

---

the pirates on the Carolina coast, the resistance of the colony and their ultimate defeat, the facts are taken generally from this most exhaustive study of the subject by Mr. Hughson, and his statement often followed with but little change in phraseology.

party taken in 1699, there were Englishmen, Frenchmen, Portuguese, and Indians, but no Carolinians; among the thirty-eight pirates seized and brought into Charles Town for trial 1716–18, there were but three who claimed to have been formerly inhabitants of the province. Upon their trials one of these was acquitted; two were among the convicted. Judging from the citizenship of those who were taken and tried, and most of whom were executed, it would have been more in consonance with the facts to have spoken of them as British pirates on the coast of Carolina. They came from England, Scotland, Ireland, and the West Indies.

Captain Rogers arrived at New Providence in July, 1718, and took possession of the colony for the Crown. He found a large number of pirates there, most of whom surrendered and took the oath. But one, Charles Vane, refused to do so. He pursued a more desperate course. When he heard that Rogers had arrived off the bar, he wrote him a letter offering to surrender, on the condition that he would be permitted to dispose of what spoil he had in the manner that suited himself. Receiving no assurances, he determined to escape. In crossing the bar, he was met by two of Rogers's vessels, with whom he exchanged shots, and, after several exciting adventures, succeeded in getting safely to sea with ninety men, in a sloop belonging to one of his officers named Yeates, and made for the Carolina coast, where he engaged in several piratical exploits. While the action of the British authorities did much to relieve the West Indies, it greatly aggravated the situation in Carolina, at the instance of the colonists of which the expedition had mainly been undertaken. Finding themselves driven out from New Providence and the Bahamas generally, the pirates established themselves on the North Carolina coast; and, before many months had passed, they swarmed into the Cape Fear and Pamlico rivers in greater numbers than the government of that weak colony could possibly oppose.[1]

While Rogers was on his voyage to New Providence, early in June, Edward Thatch,[2] who, under the sobriquet of "Black Beard," had spread terror along the entire North American coast, suddenly appeared off Charles Town with a powerful equipment, and began a series of most flagrant outrages. It is said that he had come in under the King's proclamation in January, and surrendered to Governor Eden of North Carolina; but the temptations of the old free life proving too strong, before the end of the winter he again fitted out from North Carolina, and was once more harrying the coast, and capturing vessels of all nations. It was during one of these cruises that he visited the Bay of Honduras, where he met Stede Bonnet, late of Barbadoes, and the two returned to Carolina together, taking numerous prizes by the way. From the captured vessels he recruited his force so that by the time he reached the South Carolina coast he was in command of a fleet consisting of a ship of more than forty guns, and three attendant sloops, on board of which were above 400 men.

On the 18th of June, 1718, Governor Johnson writes to the Proprietors: "About fourteen days since, four sail appeared in sight of the town, immediately took the pilot boat which was stationed on the bar, and in a few days took eight or nine outward-bound vessels with several of the best inhabitants of Charles Town on board."[3] Among the passengers thus taken was Samuel Wragg, a member determined, therefore, to take command himself of this enterprise and to lead the fleet against the pirates in person at the earliest possible moment. This course of the Governor infused confidence, and in a few days 300 volunteers were on board the vessels awaiting orders to sail. But a serious delay was still to be met. The masters of the impressed vessels made no objection to giving their personal services to the colony, but their owners were to be considered, and they now entered a formal protest, strongly representing that some security should be given by the government to indemnify them for injury or capture of their vessels by the pirates. Hughson states that Governor Johnson recognized the justice of their plea and immediately convened an extra session of the Assembly and laid the case before it, and that the Assembly without delay voted a bill to secure the ship-owners against all losses and expenses.[1] No such act can, however, be found; and as the journals of the Assembly for this year are missing, no record of it has been preserved. However settled, these proceedings delayed the expedition for about a week; but in the meantime scout-boats had been stationed along the shore of the islands, at the entrance of the harbor, to resist any attempt on the part of the enemy to land, and at the same time an embargo was laid on all shipping.

---

[1] S. C. Hughson, *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies*, 2 series, V, VI, VII, 66.

[2] Also spelled "Teach," but Hughson, whom we closely follow in this account, adopts the spelling in the text.

[3] *Coll. Hist. Soc. of So. Ca.*, [illegible] II, [illegible].

While the Governor was thus busily engaged endeavoring to organize this expedition, the captured pirates, it appears, had found some friends in the town who had created disturbances under cover of which to effect their release, and that Bonnet and Herriot had actually escaped.[2]

---

[1] Hughson, *Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies*, V. VI, VII, 115.

[2] Mr. Thomas Hepworth, who assisted the Attorney General in the prosecution, refers to such disturbances; but, save this passing remark, there is no other allusion in the accounts of the times to any such trouble. *Tryals of Major Stede Bonnet*, 11; *State Trials*, vol. XIV, 1248.

Ramsay states that Bonnet escaped in the disguise of a woman's clothing,[1] which would have been no matter of surprise considering the looseness of his confinement. Pell, the boatswain, refused to fly with Bonnet and Herriot. The escape was made on the 25th of October.

Governor Johnson immediately issued a proclamation offering a reward of £700 for the capture of the fugitive, sent "hue and cry" and expresses by land and water throughout the whole province, and dispatched several boats with armed men in pursuit. Bonnet, it appears, had effected his escape in a canoe with an Indian and a negro. In this small craft he put to sea, in the hope, probably, of joining Moody's vessel, of the presence of which off the bar he was no doubt informed, or of reaching again the *Cape Fear;* but it happened that on that day the pirate vessel supposed to have been Moody's was far away — indeed, it was off Cape Henry, engaged in the capture of the ship *Eagle Galley*.[2] Bonnet was entirely without provisions, the weather was tempestuous, and he was forced to return to Sullivan's Island. There he hid for some days.

In the meanwhile, amidst the excitement and confusion of Bonnet's escape, and of the preparation of the expedition against the other pirates on the coast, the court which had been provided for by the act of the 18th of October met and organized on the 28th; and while the Governor was getting ready to put to sea against Moody, as he supposed, the court proceeded to the trial of the rest of Bonnet's crew. Nicholas Trott, Judge of Vice Admiralty and Chief Justice of the province, presided, with George Logan, Alexander Parris, Philip Dawes, George Chicken, Benjamin de La Conseillere, Samuel Dean, Ed-

---

[1] *Hist. of So. Ca.*, 204, note.

[2] *So. Ca. Adm. Ct. Rec. Book*, A and B.

Assembly now called themselves, following the precedent established in England by Parliament upon the abdication of James, ordered the proclamation torn from the Marshal's hands, and issued a proclamation in their own names, which directed all officers, civil and military, to hold their offices and employments until further orders from them. Finding that Governor Johnson would not come into their movement, they resolved to have a Governor of their own choosing, and Colonel James Moore, who was commander-in-chief of the militia in the late Indian War, but had lately been removed for his active opposition to the authority of the Proprietors, was chosen.

On Monday, the 21st of December, 1719, Governor Johnson, having been informed that the Convention intended to proclaim their Governor in the King's name, came to town and wrote circular letters to his Council to meet him; but they did not respond. The Governor had previously had a conference with Colonel Parris, the commanding officer of the militia of the town, upon whose support he relied, and because of the advice he had received from Havana, had ordered the town companies to be reviewed on this day, the 21st. Finding, however, that the members of the Convention had availed themselves of this opportunity, and had determined upon that day to proclaim their Governor, when the people should come together with arms in their hands, he had, on the Saturday before, countermanded the order for the review, and had given particular orders to Colonel Parris that he should not suffer a drum to be beat in the town. The Governor understood that he had assurances from Colonel Parris that his orders should be obeyed. He was greatly surprised, therefore, when, upon coming into town early on Monday morning, he found the militia drawn up in the market-place, with colors flying at the forts and on

all the ships in the harbor, and the people, with great solemnity, preparing for proclaiming their Governor.

Upon this, Governor Johnson, amiable as he was, lost his temper and with it his dignity. Advancing to Colonel Parris, he asked how he durst appear in arms contrary to his orders? and commanded him in the King's name to disperse his men. Colonel Parris answered he was obeying the orders of the Convention, and the Governor approaching, he ordered his men to present their muskets and bade him stand off at his peril. Governor Johnson hoped that some of the gentlemen would have joined him, but the defection was so general that there was hardly a man not in arms, and only one of his Council came near him. This was Mr. Lloyd, and he, it afterward appeared, was sent by the Convention party, under the guise of friendship, to be on hand to prevent any hot action to which the Governor might be provoked. Two days afterwards Mr. Lloyd was sworn into the new Council. Even Trott and Rhett, in this extremity, forsook the Governor and kept at a distance, the silent and inactive spectators of the ruin of the cause of the Proprietors they had done so much to promote.

The members of the Convention now appeared and marched to the Fort, and there proclaimed James Moore Governor of the province, in the name of the King, amidst the acclamations of the populace.

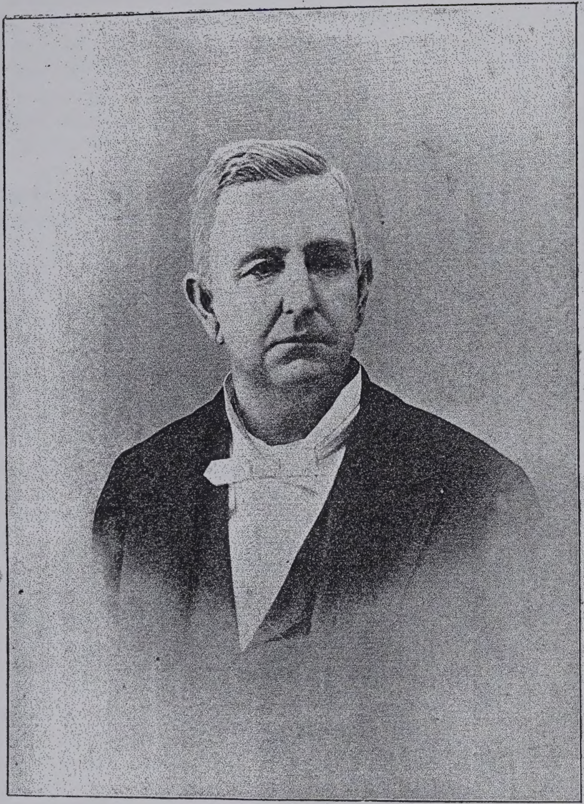
Upon their return, they proceeded to the election of twelve councillors, after the manner of the Royal Government. Of these Sir Hovenden Walker was made President.[1] The government thus established consisted of a

---

[1] Sir Hovenden Walker had been an admiral in the British service and had commanded the naval part of the unsuccessful expedition sent out by St. John (Bolingbroke) in 1711 for the conquest of Canada. *England in the Eighteenth Century* (Lecky), vol. I, 115. He had been Deputy Governor of North Carolina. *Colonial Records of No. Ca.*, vol. I, 529. This is his only public appearance in South Carolina.

I'm sorry these copies are hard to read but they do prove that Alexander Parris is not our ancestor, though he seems to have been a fine blueblooded man.

Comms on Richd Paris



Very truly yours,

J. B. O. Landrum.

E 263 S7 L2 -V15

COLONIAL AND REVOLUTIONARY
HISTORY
OF
UPPER SOUTH CAROLINA,

EMBRACING FOR THE MOST PART THE PRIMITIVE AND
COLONIAL HISTORY OF THE TERRITORY COMPRISING
THE ORIGINAL COUNTY OF SPARTANBURG
WITH A GENERAL REVIEW OF THE ENTIRE
MILITARY OPERATIONS IN THE
UPPER PORTION OF SOUTH CAROLINA
AND PORTIONS OF
NORTH CAROLINA.

ohn elton 'Neall

BY

DR. J. B. O. LANDRUM.

WISCONSIN
HISTORICAL
SOCIETY

1897:
SHANNON & CO., PRINTERS AND BINDERS,
Greenville, S. C.

Re: Capt. (Col) Richard Paris

opposition to the voice of America. He stated further, that Mr. Tennant and himself had made progress through the disturbed parts of the country "to explain to the people at large, the nature of the unhappy disputes between the American colonies and Great Britain;" that thousands had heard and believed them. He stated emphatically the terms upon which the peace and safety of the country might be enjoyed. He declared that it should be his duty to march against and attack, as public enemies, all and every person in arms in that part of the country in opposition to the measures of Congress. This plain, outspoken official declaration, backed as it was by a large body of troops, some of whom were Provincials, made an impression upon the malcontents in Fletchall's camp and caused them to pause. Hence, after consultation, they sent a deputation to Mr. Drayton's camp, near Ninety-Six Court House, to confer with him. Soon after, Colonel Fletchall and other malcontent leaders also arrived in his camp with full powers to treat and conclude terms of pacification. Before Mr. Drayton could, however, treat of this matter, it became necessary that he should understand precisely how far he was actually authorized, by the Council of Safety, to act on so important an occasion. Satisfying himself on this point, he proceeded to carry his plan into execution with Colonel Fletchall and the other leaders. Articles of treaty were drawn up and signed on the 16th day of September, 1775. (See original articles, Drayton's Memoirs, vol. i, page 399). After this treaty, by which the peace and harmony of the up-country appeared to be restored upon a just and honorable basis, Colonel Fletchall and the rest of his deputies returned to their camp beyond the Saluda River, where the treaty, which had just been concluded, was made known. Some of the principal leaders who had remained in camp, became wrathy and declared that they would not abide by what had been done. As Mr. Drayton had before predicted, they were divided among themselves. The whole camp, therefore, broke up, except Robert Cunningham and about sixty of his followers, who declared that they were not included and would not be bound by the terms of the treaty. When Mr. Drayton heard of this he wrote to Cunningham, which brought a reply from him, dated at Page's Creek, October 6th, in which he stated he would not abide by the instrument of peace. He accused Mr. Drayton of making the bargain to suit himself, and of taking advantage of men half scared out of their senses, at the sight of liberty caps and sound of cannon, "as seeing and hearing had generally more influence with some men than reason."

Cunningham and his men did not remain in their camp very long. They soon dispersed, as they were obliged to submit to the necessity of the case.

The affairs of the up-country being adjusted by Mr. Drayton, he had no further use for military support. He discharged the troops under his command, then about eleven hundred strong, with thanks. Major Williamson was ordered to transmit suitable returns to the Council of Safety, of money and rations disbursed, etc. In making his return, October 16th, Major Williamson closed with the following complimentary words: "And it is but justice to those patriotic troops who had come forth at their country's call, to say, that during the whole time this army lay encamped near Ninety-Six Court House, they were patient under all the difficulties and deprivations they experienced. During most of the time, their huts and dwellings were penetrated by heavy rains, but discontent was not seen among them, for, satisfied with the cause in which they were engaged and with the leaders who commanded them, they submitted to such military regulations as the occasion required. In the camp good order was preserved and without it the advanced posts were duly and regularly stationed and relieved."

The mission of Mr. Drayton and Mr. Tennant to the people between the Broad and Saluda rivers now closed and happily, in a different manner from what many at first supposed. By a preconcerted plan, Mr. Drayton had arranged through Mr. Richard Paris to assemble the warriors from the Cherokee Nation at Congaree Store. This store was just below old Granby, on the west side of the Congaree River, and not far from the city of Columbia. Mr. Drayton met the warriors on the 25th of September and explained to them in a talk, suitable to the occasion, the nature of the dispute between Great Britain and America. He exhorted them to hold fast to the chain of peace and friendship with the people of the colony, assuring them that they should receive such supplies of ammunition and other articles, both for pleasure and comfort, as could be spared by the Provincial Congress and Council of Safety. He made them presents suitable to the occasion, after which they took leave and returned home apparently satisfied.

In the distribution of presents, Mr. Drayton endeavored to impress upon the Indians the importance of patience and economy under existing circumstances. He pulled his coat off and presented it to them and said, "for my part in this unhappy time, I will be content to wear an Osnaburg split shirt." These split shirts were worn much in the up-country at this time. They were split or opened in front and ornamented, and like a summer coat, were worn, says a writer, over their dress. Mr. Drayton thought proper to adapt his dress to the customs of the people he was among, and when he returned to Charlestown, which he did in a short time, he occasionally wore the split shirt merely to introduce it to the people where merchandise was scarce and economy was important.

CHAPTER X.

CAPTAIN ROBERT CUNNINGHAM ARRESTED AND CARRIED TO CHARLESTOWN AND INCARCERATED. CAPTURE OF ONE THOUSAND POUNDS OF POWDER BY PATRICK CUNNINGHAM WHILE ON ITS WAY TO THE CHEROKEE NATION.—KING'S MEN MARCHING AGAINST MAJORS WILLIAMSON AND MASON WHO ARE BESEIGED IN STOCKADE FORTS AT NINETY-SIX.—TERMS OF CAPITULATION AGREED UPON.

THE fact was stated in the former chapter that Captain Robert Cunningham and his followers refused to abide by or consider themselves included in the treaty as made between Mr. Drayton on one side, and Fletchall, Ford, Greer and other leaders of the King's men, on the other.

Robert Cunningham still expressing himself as being in open opposition to the Provincial authority, was arrested in pursuance of the orders of Major Andrew Williamson, who remained in command of the Ninety-Six District after the departure of Mr. Drayton and Mr. Tennant. This arrest was grounded on an affidavit made by Captain John Caldwell, of the rangers, before Richard Rapley, Esq., of Ninety-Six, on the 23d of October, 1775, charging the said Cunningham with the use of seditious words. Had Cunningham kept still, the troubles which we relate in this chapter would have been averted at least for a time. He was sent to Charlestown where he appeared before the Provincial Congress. The affidavit being read to him, he was thereupon questioned by the president of the body. Cunningham said, that he could not deny that he had made expressions somewhat like those mentioned in Captain Caldwell's affidavit, which had just been read to him; that he believed that Captain Caldwell had not perjured himself; and though he did not consider himself bound by the late treaty at Ninety-Six, yet, had constantly behaved himself as peaceably as any man; and although he had opinions, he had expressed them only when asked. After this explanation of himself, Cunningham was committed to jail in Charlestown in pursuance of an order from the Congress, by a warrant under the hand and seal of the president of that body. Thomas Grimball was at that time sheriff at Charlestown. He was directed "to afford to the said Robert Cunningham every reasonable and neccessary accommodation at the public charge; but that he should not suffer the said Cunningham to converse or correspond with any person whatsoever; nor was he to have the use of pen, ink or paper, unless by express leave of Congress, or authority derived from them.

The arrest and imprisonment of Robert Cunningham appears to have been a mistake, as it caused another insurrection in Ninety-Six District. The people of the up-country were greatly incensed, or at least some, who were in sympathy with the Royal authority, but were willing to submit to the powers that be.

When Mr. Drayton gave a talk to the Cherokee chiefs at the Congaree store, already alluded to, he promised to send them powder and lead as the situation of the colony's funds would permit. On the 4th of October, 1775, a vote passed the Council of Safety to supply the Cherokee Nation with one thousand pounds of powder and two two thousand pounds of lead. Accordingly, a wagon was dispatched with it as a present to the Cherokees, under the escort of a subaltern officer of the rangers and twenty privates.

The arrest of Robert Cunningham aroused his brother, Patrick Cunningham, who, gathering a body of friends composed of about sixty, pursued his brother Robert, with the expectation of recapturing him. Failing to overtake him, they turned their attention to the powder which was on its way to the Indians. They succeeded in taking it at Mine Creek, between the Ridge and Ninety-Six Court House, on the 3d day of November, 1775, causing the guard to surrender, and the ammunition to be immediately seized and carried off. A report was thereupon industriously circulated that the powder was sent to inflame the Indians to rise upon and massacre all those who refused to sign the document of the association. Captain Richard Pearis, who had forsaken the patriot cause and joined the insurgents or King's men because he had not been noticed in the late appointments and promotions in the military arrangements of the Provincial Congress, not only circulated this report, but averred in an affidavit, that the ammunition taken by Patrick Cunningham was for that purpose. He abused outrageously Mr. Drayton, at whose hands he expected promotion, and to lessen his consequence among the people, he urged that the recent meeting with the Cherokee warriors at the Congaree Store, which he was instrumental in bringing about, was for the purpose of cutting off all who were considered as disaffected persons or King's men.

Such reports as these, of course, exasperated the ignorant multitude and roused them to commit acts which placed them in open arms against the country.

Major Williamson went in pursuit of the Loyalists who had captured the powder, but was compelled to retreat before superior numbers. The Insurgent or Loyalist element was speedily swelled in numbers, while Williamson's militia came in very slowly. Although the insurgent forces were rapidly increasing, Williamson could not be made to believe that they would dare to attack him. He continued in camp, laboring under this impression until about the 18th of November, when he received information that the insurgents were in full march upon him and had already crossed the Saluda River at Island Ford, in order to attack him. At this time, Major Williamson was joined by Major Mayson who had been in the neighborhood of Island Ford with thirty-seven rangers. Major Williamson wanted to march at once

This letter reiterated the former demands to surrender, allowing only one hour for an answer. To this Majors Williamson and Mayson replied that they were determined never to resign their arms. This was transmitted by Captain Bowie. In two hours he returned with the original demand, accompanied by Captain Patrick Cunningham. Williamson met them about fifty yards in front of the fort and after some conference, Cunningham went with them into the fort. Here they entered into a discussion as to the claims and rights of each party, after which, it was decided that a conference should take place the next morning. Accordingly, at the appointed hour, Majors Williamson and Mayson and Captains Williamson and Bowie met Major Robinson and Captains Cunningham, McLauren and Pearis. It was agreed that hostilities should immediately cease; that the garrison should be marched out of the fort and their swivels given up. By a secret understanding, those swivels were to be restored privately in a day or two; that the fort should be destroyed flat without damaging the house therein; that the differences should be submitted to Lord William Campbell, the Governor, on the part of the insurgents and to the Council of Safety on the part of Major Williamson and those under his command; that each party should send its messengers to their superiors and be allowed twenty days to return; that Major Robinson should withdraw his men over the Saluda River and there disperse them as he pleaseth or keep them embodied until His Excellency's orders be known; that no person should, in the meantime, be molested in returning home; that should reinforcements arrive they should be bound by the treaty; that all prisoners be immediately set at liberty; that the fortifications be leveled, and the well, which had been dug in the fort, be filled up.

✓

Such was the end of an affair which might have produced the most alarming consequences. It is said, however, with such an army as Major Robinson commanded, he could not have made much more out of it, as it was

Only "battle" Loyalists won - Rebs did not keep their word on terms of cessation of hostilities

composed of undisciplined and discordant elements. It was made up of inferior leaders among the old insurgents, of a class of people who from ignorance, believed Paris' affidavit with respect to the purpose for which the powder was sent to the Indians. Many of the insurgents joined from timidity, seeing that party so rapidly increase in a short space of time. None of those who had signed the treaty at Ninety-Six took part in this insurrection, except McLauren, although history records the fact that Colonel Fletchall gave private encouragement to this bold attempt of the insurgents (or *Tories* as they should be more properly called) to upturn the existing Provincial authority.

✓ The casualties were very slight in this beseigement. Of Major Williamson's party, only one man was killed and twelve wounded. On the other side, several were killed and about twenty wounded. The insurgents could not have been very courageous in the affair since they failed to attack this stockade fort, the construction of which only consumed three hours. The account which we find says, that during the whole time of the firing, they continued almost out of gun shot range, except those who were stationed in the brick jail at Ninety-Six. These alone annoyed the troops of Major Williamson, while the others, as we have said, kept themselves posted behind logs, fences, and other securities, and this accounts for the small execution which was affected upon them during a firing of small arms and swivels for three days.

Says a writer of this affair: "Major Williamson's men had suffered great hardships during the time they had been cooped up in this temporary fortress, being obliged to lay by their arms during the nights, to be ready against surprise, and their tour of duty being frequent and heavy; and particularly experiencing the total want of water from Sunday morning to Tuesday afternoon. However, during this severe trial, not only of courage but constitutional energy, they did not murmur; but while some fought the beseigers, fatigue parties were

Slight casualties - Rebs 1K 12W
Loyalists "several"K 20W

and attack the insurgents, but yielded to the judgment of Major Mayson, who advised him to retreat to the cleared ground of Colonel Savages' plantation. This was separated from Ninety-Six Court House and goal by a ravine and spring supplying the inhabitants with water, affording a place where they might erect breastworks and from whence they might use their swivels to advantage. They also thought they would be more likely to receive reinforcements at this place. Colonel Thomson was already on the way to them with his rangers. According to this agreement Major Williamson took up his line of march and arrived at the proposed ground about daybreak on Sunday, the 19th of November, with troops, live stock, provisions and baggage.

A square of about one hundred and eighty-five yards was taken in and fortified as well as time and means would allow. The men worked unceasingly for about three hours and a temporary stockade fort was made of fence rails, straw and beeves' hides, with such other materials as they could put their hands on. The defenses extended from a barn and store to some outhouses, and at a distance of about two hundred and fifty yards from the jail.

Williamson and his men had hardly enclosed themselves in this rustic fortification when the insurgents appeared with drums beating and colors flying and taking possession of the court house and jail, they advanced troops and completely invested the stockade fort of Major Williamson's forces. Immediately upon their arrival, Major Williamson dispatched an officer with a flag to know what their intention was. Major Robinson and Captain Patrick Cunningham, who appeared to be the leaders, refused to have a conference with any one but the commanding officers. Major Mayson and Captain Bowie were then sent to them. They met the insurgent leaders—Robinson, Cunningham and Evan McLauren—on half-way ground between the two bodies of troops. The parties had about fifteen minutes conversation. Major Mayson and Captain Bowie returned and reported to Major Williamson that the insurgents demanded his immediate surrender and disbanding, hinting, at the same time, that it would be necessary for the men to keep inside of the fort for safety. Just at this time, two of Williamson's men near the front were seized by the insurgents, upon which Major Williamson gave orders to rescue them. A general firing took place from the fort with swivels and small arms, which was answered by the insurgents with rifles and muskets from behind trees, houses, logs, stumps and fences. For two hours and a half the firing was incessant on both sides and continued at intervals until night. The garrison, including fifty-five officers, consisted of five hundred and sixty-two. (See Drayton's Memoirs, vol. ii, page 150.)

During the night the fort kept up a firing, lest the insurgents in the darkness should endeavor to creep near and fire the fort. On the next day (Monday) the firing was commenced and continued as had been kept up the evening before. The beseigers constructed something which they called *mantelets* for the purpose of approaching the fort to set it on fire, but not being able to advance them in their front so as to hide their approach, they were destroyed. The firing only slackened with the day, Monday; it was revived and continued on Tuesday and lasted all day until about sundown, when the insurgents displayed a white flag from the jail building and called a parley. To this, an answer was given that if they wished to send an officer or messenger he would be received with perfect safety. Some time during the night a messenger was seen approaching the fort carrying a lighted candle as a protection, charged with a letter from Major Robinson, directed to Colonel Mayson, who was Lieutenant-Colonel of the Ninety-Six regiment of militia, of which Williamson was then acting as Major. But the Council of Safety had placed Major Williamson in command on this occasion, as he was more influential in that part of the country.

digging a well; and at length, after penetrating through a very tenacious clay soil forty feet deep, water was obtained, which relieved the necessities of the garrison. In addition to these difficulties; they had nearly exhausted all their powder; for of 200 pounds weight which they had at the commencement of the firing, only thirty pounds weight remained, except what each man had in his powder horn."

The small quantity of powder which remained was only known to Major Williamson and one other person. This was the principal cause why the fort surrendered, for Major Williamson expressly states in his official report (see Drayton's Memoirs, vol. ii, page 2), on the 25th of November, that he had in the fort thirty-eight barrels of flour, four live beeves, and very good water from the well which he had dug, and but for powder he could have maintained his post for a considerable time.

CHAPTER XI.

THE FAMOUS SNOW CAMPAIGN.

THE recent success of the insurgents in the seige of Williamson's fort at Ninety-Six had emboldened them to continue their opposition to the Provincial authority. The time had arrived, however, when either the Provincial or Royal authority must predominate in South Carolina. The Council of Safety, under the authority of the Provincial Congress, had determined from the first to take no backward steps. The people must be made to understand and recognize the existing authority. Up to this time the steps taken by the Council of Safety to resist oppression, redress wrongs and enlist the people on the side of liberty, had been prudent and cautious. Mr. Drayton and Mr. Tennant had visited Ninety-Six District and by eloquent and persuasive arguments had pointed out to the people the nature of the controversy between America and Great Britain. We have seen the results in former chapters. There was no longer any necessity for this sort of work. The time had now come when the people must be taught the lesson of the fable of the man who found a boy upon one of his trees stealing apples. The Tories or Insurgents in this fable represent the character of the young "sauce box," who did not respect the rights of the old man (South Carolina). The Council of Safety determined to "fetch him" down. Up to this time this body had only been throwing "tufts of grass." This had only intended to increase the obstinacy of the insurgent elements and make them laugh, as it were. Now it became necessary "to see what virtue there is in stones." In other words, the discordant elements of the up-country had to be taught the moral of this fable "if good words and gentle means will not reclaim the wicked, they must be dealt with in a more severe manner."

While Major Williamson was beseiged by the insurgents at Ninety-Six, Colonel Richardson had commenced his march against them in pursuance of orders he had received from the Provincial Congress, and in doing so, he was directing his course towards the middle or upper part of Colonel Fletchall's regimental district, which embraced, before divided into three, the country between the Broad and Saluda Rivers.* But as soon as he heard of Major Williamson at Ninety-Six, he changed his route. He appears to have started from Charlestown, and by forced marches reached the Congaree River about the 27th of November, 1775. At this time his command consisted of about one thousand men. Col. John Thomas, Sr., was however, with his newly organized Spartan Regiment, pressing forward, the account says from the northwestern portion of the colony (now Spartanburg County) to meet him.

At his camp on the Congaree, Colonel Richardson wrote to the Council of Safety, giving them an account of the situation in the up-country. He states in his letter that the insurgents were much elated by their success at Ninety-Six; that his men desired to be led against them and would not be satisfied unless they were allowed "to finally subdue and to effectually put down the opposition." In this letter he warned Congress that it was a matter of necessity to silence the discontents of the back country and that although in doing so, the expense would be great, still the crisis at hand demanded prompt and decisive action.

Colonel Thomson, who belonged to Colonel Richardson's command, also wrote to the Council of Safety as follows: "Several of the officers and men declare that they will never take up arms again unless they have liberty to subdue America, as they observe that those who are not for America are undoubtedly against it."

Colonel Richardson remained in his camp on the Congaree until about the 30th of November, for the purpose of conveying his wagons and baggage across that river and also for the purpose of collecting the various bodies of militia that were marching to him. When he was ready to march his army consisted of about fifteen hundred. Before leaving his camp his officers held a council of war and decided that they were not bound by the recent treaty of cessation of arms at Ninety-Six. The army marched to the Saluda River, and crossed the same into Dutch Fork (between Broad and Saluda Rivers). On the 2d of December, it encamped at McLauren's store, fifteen miles from Saluda River. At this camp several of Fletchall's disaffected captains were brought in as prisoners, among whom were John Mayfield, William Hunt and others. Colonel Richardson's command was here joined by Colonel Thomas' Spartan regiment, with two hundred men; Colonel Neel two hundred (Colonel Neel came from the "new acquisition" territory of South Carolina); Colonel Lyles one hundred and fifty men—which, together with Colonel Thomas' regiment of rangers, increased Colonel Richardson's command to about two thousand and five hundred. This did not include the command of Colonel Polk from North Carolina, which consisted of six hundred men, and which were in full march to join Colonel Richardson's forces. At this time, it is said, the insurgents were hovering about with little confidence in their leaders, not more perhaps than four hunded of them were assembled in arm, and of these, constant desertions were taking place, leaving their number so small that they retrograded towards the sources of the Saluda River and the Cherokee Nation.

On the 4th of December the Council of Safety wrote a letter to Colonel Richardson desiring him to publish a declaration inviting the insurgents "to lay down their arms" and to promise "the strictest neutrality," and upon doing this to grant terms of mercy and protection." Before this request was received from the Council of Safety, however, Colonel Rich-

---

* See map.

ardson, anticipating their wishes, issued the following declaration:

"SOUTH CAROLINA:—

Whereas, on the 3d day of November last past, Patrick Cunningham, Henry O'Neal, Hugh Brown, David Reise, Nathaniel Howard, Henry Green, and sundry other persons did, in Ninety-Six District, raise a dangerous insurrection and commotion, and did, near Mine Creek in said district, feloniously take and carry away a quantity of ammunition, the property of the public, and in contempt of public authority; and did also with further and by force of arms on the 19th, 20th and 21st days of said month of November, at Ninety-Six, in the district aforesaid, attack, beseige, kill and wound a number of good people of this colony, and in manifest violation of peace and good order, and breach of a solemn treaty, entered into on the 16th day of September, made and concluded between the Hon. William Henry Drayton on the one part and Col. Thomas Fletchall and others on the other part, thereby becoming guilty of the attrocious crimes of robbery, murder and breach of peace.

To satisfy public justice, in the first punishment of all which crimes and offenses as far as the nature of the same will admit, I am now come to these parts in the name and behalf of the colony, to demand of the inhabitants the delivering up of the bodies of all principal offenders herein, together with the said ammunition, and full restitution for the ravages committed, and also the arms and ammunition of all the aidors and abettors of these robbers, murderers and disturbers of the peace and good order as aforesaid. And in case of neglect or refusal for the space of five days, I shall be under the necessity of taking such steps as will be found disagreeable; but which I shall certainly put in execution for the public good.

Given under my hand this the 8th day of December, 1775.

RICHARD RICHARDSON."

In consequence of this declaration numbers came in and delivered up their arms and received the promised protection. This, however, did not include capital offenders. No leaders were surrendered by the insurgents. Colonel Richardson conducted himself with prudence and humanity towards those who came in to surrender themselves, dismissing them with soft words and kind admonitions. "The army," says a writer, "still advancing and increasing in numbers, struck terror into the insurgents and the disaffected, and they constantly retreated, keeping about twenty miles in advance of Colonel Richardson's army. They now perceived that they had been deceived by their leaders as to the strength and means of the Provincial Congress and the Council of Safety; while at the same time, they found no promises or assistance to be relied upon as coming from Lord William Campbell." "Weak as a rope of sand," says Ramsay, "they could neither face the invading army nor fall upon any measures for maintaining themselves in the land of their fathers. At one time they would take heart and threaten to stand and give battle; but so soon as the army commenced its march upon them, cowardly councils and guilty consciences obliged them to turn and retreat. In this manner the operations were principally carried on; a steady pursuit, detachments taken prisoners and sometimes recovering portions of ammunition which Patrick Cunningham had taken; being mostly the services in which they were engaged." (See letter from Colonel Richardson to Colonel John Laurens, Gibbs' Documentary History, 1764-1776, page 241).

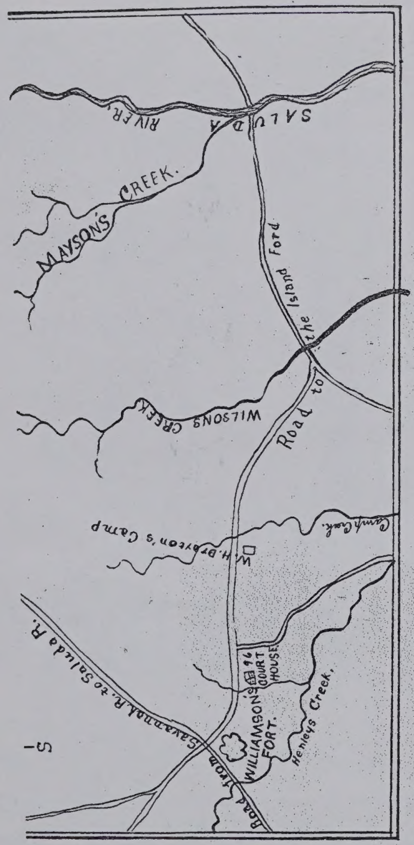
1775

By December 12th Colonel Richardson's army numbered three thousand men, and account says they penetrated the interior as far as the great survey (the Cherokee boundary line) on Duncan's Creek (in Laurens County). They had now several prisoners which, as Colonel Richardson to the Council of Safety said, were "of the first magnitude." Among these were Colonel Thomas Fletchall, Captains Richard Pearis, Jacob Frey, George Shuburg and John McWilliams. The last named was the person who constructed the mantelets which they endeavored to use against the stockade fort at Ninety-Six. These were sent to Charlestown under a suitable guard commanded by Captain Richard Richardson, Jr.* ✓

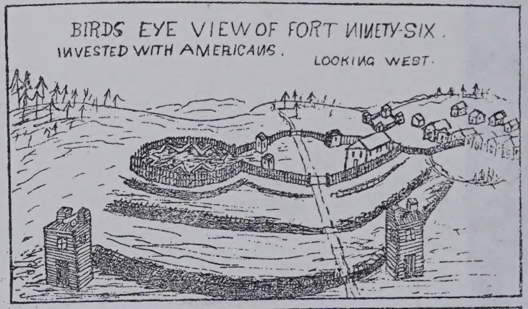
---

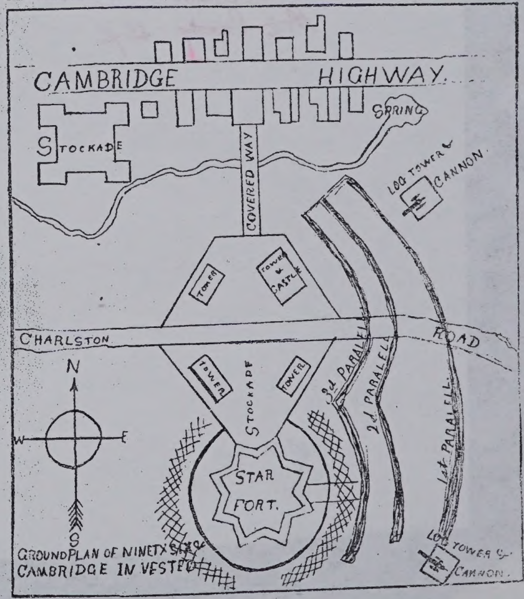
*Captain Richardson was the husband of Mrs. Dorcas Richardson, one of the heroines of Mrs. Ellet's "Women of the Revolution." Her residence was in Clarendon. She was the daughter of a prominent Irish gentleman whose name was Captain John Nelson, who married a Miss Browning, of South Carolina. A ferry over the Santee River, established and kept by them, is still known as Nelson's Ferry. Their

Was Pearis captured in Snow Campaign or before? ans; Before it by 12 Dec

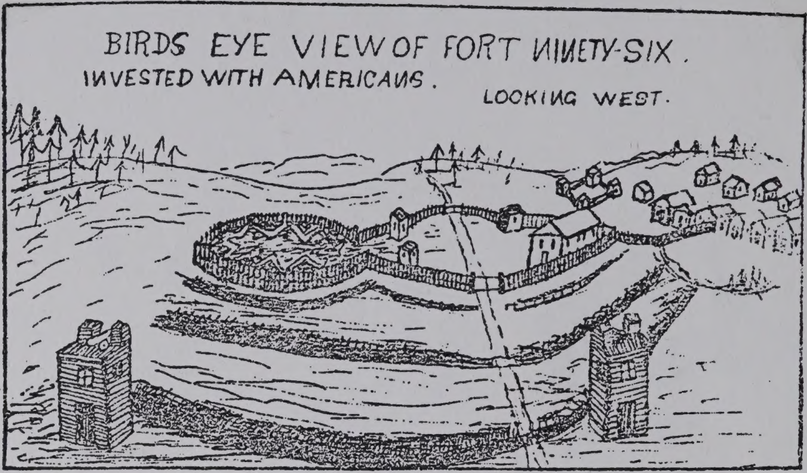

SALUDA RIVER
MAYSON'S CREEK
Road to the Island Ford
WILSONS CREEK
W.H. Drayton's Camp
96 COURT HOUSE
WILLIAMSON'S FORT
Henleys Creek
Road from Savannah R. to Saluda R.

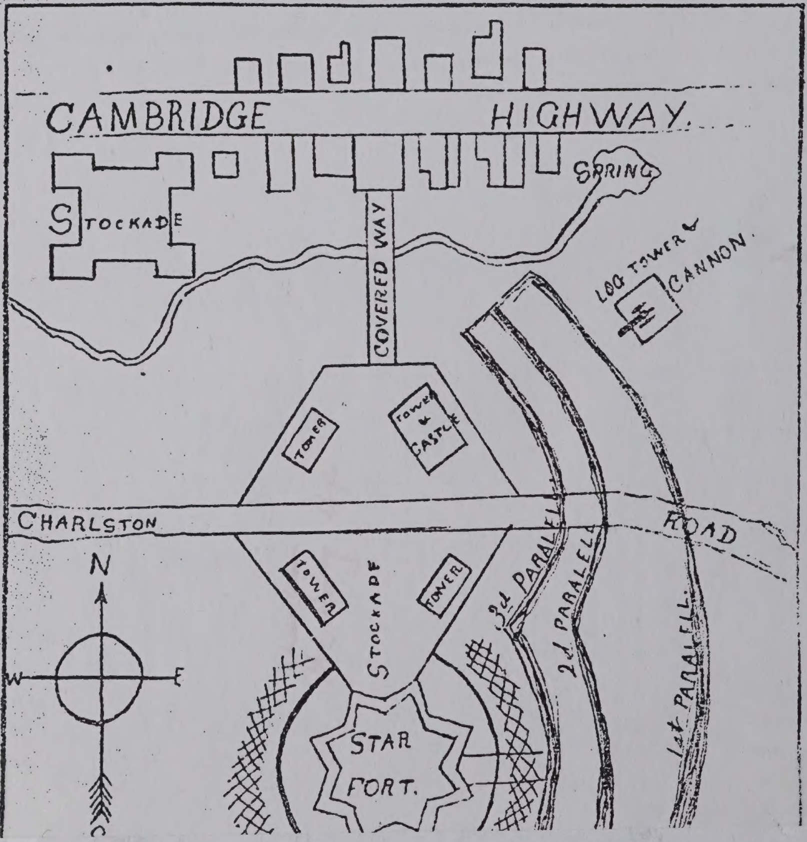
Map of 96 Court House and surrounding country showing roads, streams &c., together with Williamson's Fort.
"This map is copied from one found in Drayton's Memoirs."


BIRDS EYE VIEW OF FORT NINETY-SIX.
INVESTED WITH AMERICANS.
LOOKING WEST.


CAMBRIDGE HIGHWAY
SPRING
STOCKADE
COVERED WAY
LOG TOWER & CANNON
TOWER
TOWER & CASTLE
CHARLSTON ROAD
TOWER
STOCKADE
TOWER
3d PARALELL
2d PARALELL
1st PARALELL
N
W
E
S
STAR FORT.
LOG TOWER & CANNON.

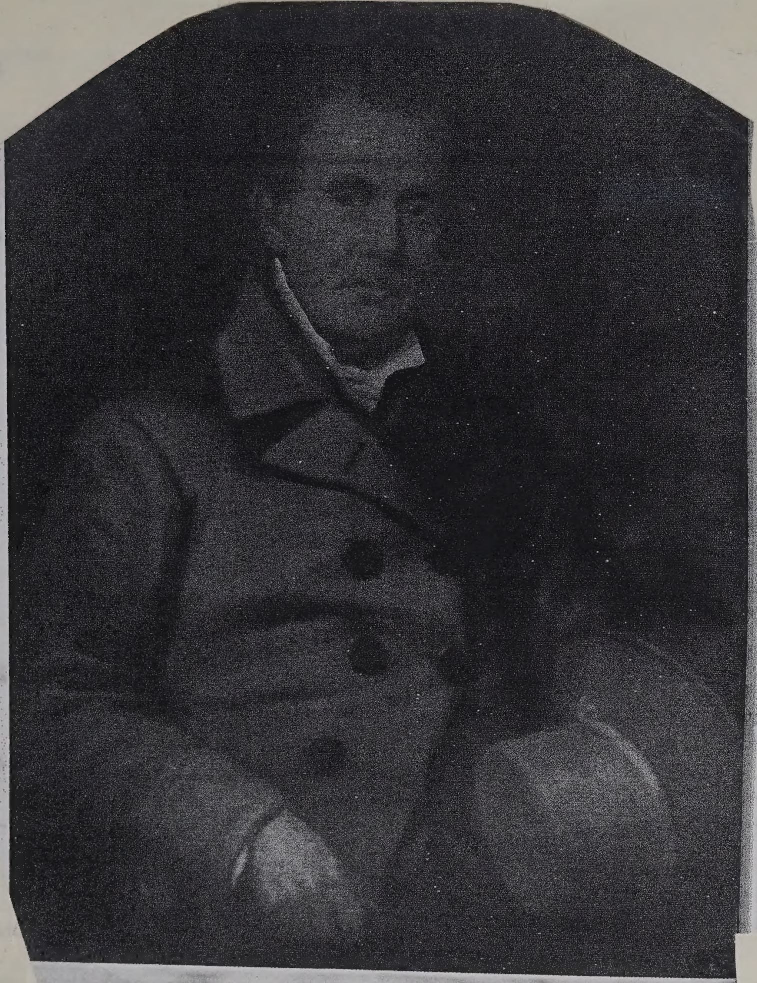
GROUNDPLAN OF NINETY SIX & CAMBRIDGE INVESTED


BIRDS EYE VIEW OF FORT NINETY-SIX.
INVESTED WITH AMERICANS.
LOOKING WEST.


CAMBRIDGE HIGHWAY.
STOCKADE
SPRING
COVERED WAY
LOG TOWER & CANNON.
TOWER
TOWER & CASTLE
CHARLSTON ROAD
TOWER
STOCKADE
TOWER
3d PARALELL
2d PARALELL
1st PARALELL
STAR FORT.
N
W
E

WI SHS # F273 M37 S62 (1992)

(Note: Vardy McBee's father was one of the officers in the "Snow Campaign" who destroyed Richard Pearis's plantation, but in the long run he, also, but after the war, lost his home due to the machinations of rich Charlestonians. This contains nice descriptions of the Greenville area when Captain Pearis dwelt there. Vadry, himself, managed to invest there & the city grew. rjz)



VARDRY McBEE
By William Garl Browne Jr.
Painted in Greenville, S.C. in 1854.
Owned by Judge Wm. Moultrie Guerry of Norfolk, Va.

VARDRY McBEE

1775 - 1864

MAN OF REASON IN AN AGE OF EXTREMES

ROY McBEE SMITH

This man purchased Col Richard Pearis's former plantation – now Greenville S.C.

CHAPTER 6

PIONEER TRACE TO CAROLINA

The first Vardry McBee and his brothers Mathias and James sold their plantations in Halifax County and by 1766 joined the tide of emigration moving southwestward.[1] A thousand wagons had been counted the year before going through the colony of North Carolina.

The McBees followed the Catawba Traders' Path to the cluster of cabins called Salisbury,* where they left that trail and moved through the next cluster, which in a few years would be named Charlotte for King George III's blonde queen. For a few miles farther south, to the settlement known as the Waxhaws, the trail was passable for teams of oxen. Below the Waxhaws, the trail was not as good, and progress was slower. There were settlements along the Catawba River, but they grew thinner as the McBees moved due west thirty miles and crossed the Broad River at the Cherokee Ford.

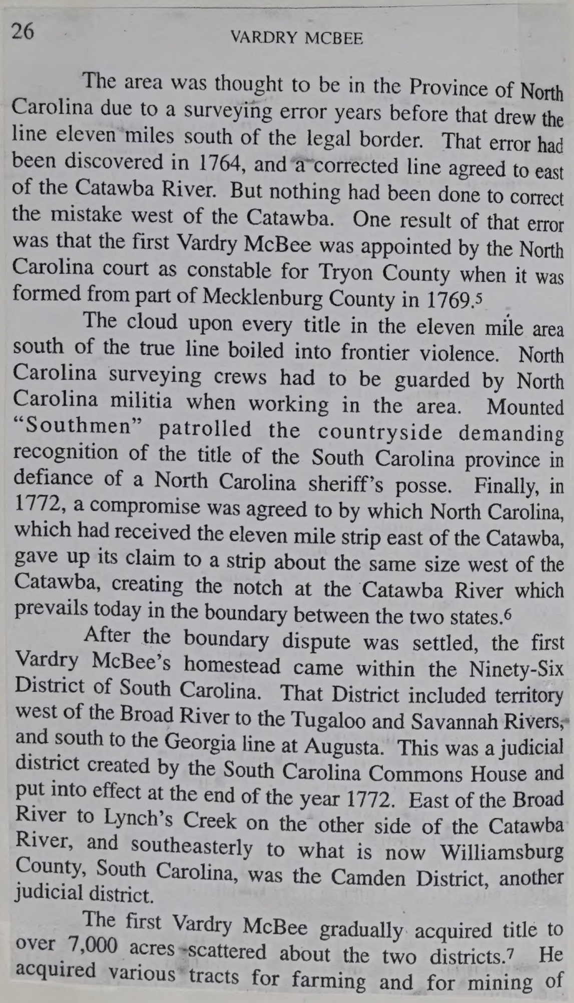
In the rich meadows[2] and redlands between the Broad and Pacolet Rivers, they ended their two hundred mile journey. Elijah Clarke and the Poole family had come to that area from Virginia as early as 1755 and joined a settlement started before that by John Grindal on the Pacolet River, known as "Grindal Shoals."

The gently rolling hills abounded in pine and hardwood forests, which could be easily cleared because the trees were large and far apart, with deep grass or pea vines beneath them. The river basins were fertile and covered with a growth of cane. Game was plentiful. Herds of deer and buffalo roamed the countryside, and wild turkeys flew up from the brush. The clear streams teamed with perch, catfish, and suckers. The McBee axes rang through the thickets, and soon cornfields, pastures, and orchards pushed back the forests.

The first Vardry McBee settled on the north fork of Thicketty Creek.[3] Thicketty Creek drained the fifteen square mile area between the Pacolet and Broad Rivers. His first acquisition of 300 acres included the limestone quarries and springs at what would much later become the town limits of Gaffney, South Carolina. This tract was three miles from the stockade and blockhouse built by settlers in 1758 for refuge from Indian attacks and known as Fort Thicketty.[4] He built his homestead on a road which led westward ten miles to a cluster of cow pens owned by a man named Hannah, and eastward twenty miles, crossing the Cherokee Ford of Broad River, to King's Mountain. His additional acquisition of 350 acres on the North Fork of Thicketty Creek near its crossing of Dare's Ferry Road, even today is considered the finest tract of land in Cherokee County for its rich, flat, bottom land.

---

*The first Vardry McBee's brother, Mathias McBee, settled in North Carolina. His brother Samuel did not emigrate to the area in South Carolina which is now Spartanburg, Cherokee, York, and Union counties. Hereafter in this book when Samuel, Mathias, and Matthew McBee are referred to, the reference is to the first Vardry McBee's sons, not his brothers.



The area was thought to be in the Province of North Carolina due to a surveying error years before that drew the line eleven miles south of the legal border. That error had been discovered in 1764, and a corrected line agreed to east of the Catawba River. But nothing had been done to correct the mistake west of the Catawba. One result of that error was that the first Vardry McBee was appointed by the North Carolina court as constable for Tryon County when it was formed from part of Mecklenburg County in 1769.[5]

The cloud upon every title in the eleven mile area south of the true line boiled into frontier violence. North Carolina surveying crews had to be guarded by North Carolina militia when working in the area. Mounted "Southmen" patrolled the countryside demanding recognition of the title of the South Carolina province in defiance of a North Carolina sheriff's posse. Finally, in 1772, a compromise was agreed to by which North Carolina, which had received the eleven mile strip east of the Catawba, gave up its claim to a strip about the same size west of the Catawba, creating the notch at the Catawba River which prevails today in the boundary between the two states.[6]

After the boundary dispute was settled, the first Vardry McBee's homestead came within the Ninety-Six District of South Carolina. That District included territory west of the Broad River to the Tugaloo and Savannah Rivers, and south to the Georgia line at Augusta. This was a judicial district created by the South Carolina Commons House and put into effect at the end of the year 1772. East of the Broad River to Lynch's Creek on the other side of the Catawba River, and southeasterly to what is now Williamsburg County, South Carolina, was the Camden District, another judicial district.

The first Vardry McBee gradually acquired title to over 7,000 acres scattered about the two districts.[7] He acquired various tracts for farming and for mining of

Picture of Thicketty Fort and
in Pearis Family book

CHAPTER 7

WAR IN THE PIEDMONT

The frontier world he was born into that summer was tense with fear and danger. He heard the skirts of his mother and sisters brush across the floor, the sound of their voices, the hum of the spinning wheel and knocking of the churn, but there was also the hushed knock on the door, the rush of boots across the floor, the hurried voices of his father and brothers, and the gallop of horses in the night. With the smells of baking bread and cooking vegetables were the smells of leather and gun powder.

The Council of Safety which had been appointed in Charles Town five days before the second Vardry McBee's birth, sent riders to the up country to appeal for support of the Revolution. They were given the unrealistic authority to use force if persuasion failed. Many settlers retorted that nothing from the coast was truthful. They said the turmoil was over a piddling tax on tea, which would cost far less than raising troops. Many were afraid the King would revoke their land grants, and that the Cherokees would be unleashed upon them.

But the elder Vardry McBee had business and personal associations with merchants and leaders in Charles

Town and considered many of them to be men of principle, since he saw that they had fared well economically under British rule. A beef was barbecued on Lawson's Fork Creek near the McBee homestead on August 21, 1775, and a regiment of sorts was formed which elected him Captain of Horse. As partisan volunteers, the men chose their leaders, reserved the right to vote on the activities of the regiment, refused training, and acknowledged that its members could go home whenever there were domestic concerns or crops to tend. Each expected himself and the other members to fight fiercely and boldly when there was a chance to win, and to disappear with speed when defeat appeared certain. If they disapproved of a leader's tactics or objectives, they joined another group. At one time or another the same man served in Colonel Thomas's, Brandon's, Roebuck's, or Steen's regiment. Their democratic independence made them the most assertive, innovative, and aggressive soldiers of the Revolution. Their officers were expected to lead by example more than word of command. Once engaged in battle, every man considered himself an officer and acted upon his own judgment. Under the circumstances, their method of fighting was effective if not scientific. Later, when the low country leaders were ready to give up the cause as lost and submit to the British General Clinton, Captain Vardry McBee and these militiamen of the back country refused to quit and forced a continuance of the war.[1]

In November 1775, Captain Vardry McBee's regiment crossed the Indian line into what is now Greenville County to join the forces of Colonel Richard Richardson against the King's men who were inciting the Cherokees to join them. It began to snow and continued for thirty hours to a depth of two feet. The men of the Spartan Regiment had only their saddle blankets for shelter. In the heavy snow the King's men were surrounded by their enemy before they were aware of the Americans' presence. On Christmas Day, the

Americans left the Indian country with a hundred prisoners.

Around the hearths for years to come, the boy Vardry heard the rough-hewn voices of bearded men tell of "The Snow Campaign" and having been "at the Snow Camps."

In July 1776, the Cherokees swept over the frontier into the Thicketty area, burning homes and massacring entire families. Hannah McBee and her daughters fled with the year old Vardry to Thicketty Fort three miles away. Captain Vardry McBee's regiment joined militia from North Carolina to wipe out the Indian villages and destroy the stockade of the Tory, Richard Pearis, at the Reedy River Falls, at the center of the present city of Greenville, South Carolina. For a time the frontier was quiet, and the men returned uneasily to their farms.

The infant Vardry grew, learning to sit up, and then to crawl across the floor. The gristle grew into bone, and his father chuckled about his legs getting longer. His mother could croon to him, and he soon knew the sunlight and the gray dawn, and the blue haze of miniature Thicketty Mountain on the horizon.

Then a British army sailed for the South and the Spartan Regiment went to the defense of Charles Town, unsuccessfully. On May 12, 1780, Charles Town fell, and General Lincoln and his army were taken prisoners. Most South Carolina leaders accepted final defeat as inevitable, and agreed to the status of prisoners of war on parole, in order to protect the families and property of their men and themselves. Samuel McBee joined General Francis Marion's militia on the Santee, to reorganize and resist, striking from the woods, drawing quick blood, and fading back into the woods before the British recovered. It was the British who gave Marion the label "Swamp Fox."

A few bands of unparoled militia escaped to the back country, where Colonel Thomas Sumter began to regroup to fight back. The King sent two of his most aggressive officers

to oppose him, the Earl of Cornwallis and Lieutenant-Colonel Banastre Tarleton.

Driving his cavalry 154 miles into the back country in fifty-four hours, Tarleton overtook Colonel Buford's troops at the Waxhaws and butchered 113 of them after they had thrown down their arms and surrendered. The massacre enraged the back country, led most leaders to reject their parole, and made Tarleton a target on the frontier.

That summer was known as the "The Dark Summer." Outspoken Tories who had escaped from the Province during American victories came back under Cornwallis's wing. Sumter had to evade not only the King's regulars but also Tory militia that gathered behind him. But Captain Vardry McBee's regiment and other back country patriots rallied about the giant Sumter, who was over six feet tall, weighed two hundred pounds, and loved a fight.

Young Vardry's fifteen year old brother, Silas, enlisted in his father's company on June 10, 1780, at a rally at Bullock's Creek Church in the present York County.

Now the British sent Lieutenant Colonel Patrick Ferguson to the back country. It was said that no man of his rank and years had ever attained more military distinction. He had been commissioned when he was but fifteen years old, had served in wars in Flanders and Germany, was regarded as the best marksman living, and was a master of military tactics and ordnance. King George III had honored him for his invention of a breech-loaded precision rifle. His mission was to rally the back country to British allegiance and to train those recruits to fight against the rebels.

Into Colonel Ferguson's camp on the South Pacolet River walked the fifteen year old boy Silas McBee, with the demand to speak personally with the Colonel. He said his mission was for his mother, who demanded return of a fine horse which some Tories had taken from the McBee plantation.[2] But his real assignment was to determine the speculators of Charleston.

When the Ninety-Six District was divided into counties in 1785, with one called Spartan, a court was finally established there. Before that, parties and their witnesses had to go to Ninety-Six for judicial relief, and before that, all the way to Charles Town.[5] In 1787, Thomas Williamson sold Baylis Earle and the other commissioners a two acre tract from his plantation, for five shillings, to build the Spartan Courthouse. Captain Vardry's old commander, Colonel John Thomas Jr., was appointed Clerk of Court. It took some time for the court to catch on in this back country. One of its first judgments was to fine a man "who called on God to damn the grand jurors."

Captain Vardry, ignoring the Quaker heritage of the Echols side of the family, was waiting for the gavel of the Spartan Court to fall, to begin litigation upon debts that were due him. Money being worthless, he sued in trover and attachment, or for conversion, for repossession of the property purchased from his trading post and not paid for.

Credit was gone, and the Captain could not continue his frontier merchandising. Not only that, a new state law prevented him from collecting any money due him until 1786, and after 1786 only a fifth of a debt could be sued for annually. Also, a property tender law was passed, forcing creditors to accept until 1787 any property that debtors might offer in lieu of money, at two-thirds the value set by assessors. The assessors conspired, and debtors began to bring blind horses, yokes of oxen, crippled cows, and other worthless goods to force the settlement of their debts.

The legislature repealed the legal tender of its paper money and offered redemption of the original issue at one four thousandth.

Nature compounded the woe by making the year 1785 a disastrous crop year.

A debtor, though willing to sell part of his land to pay

his bills, found he must pay four times the value. Never were so many planters ruined or forced to sell at extraordinary sacrifices.[6]

In 1786, Captain Vardry sold 392 acres on Poplar Creek in what is now York County. Yet in that year of distress Vardry Jr. attended the field school conducted by Mr. Gaper, an "excellent but slightly deranged teacher" the Captain had brought from Charleston. Mr. Gaper's school lasted all day, six days a week, with an hour or two at noon for lunch and play time. Vardry Jr. made good progress in reading, writing, spelling, and arithmetic. Mr. Gaper taught him for about a year, all the formal education Vardry Jr. would receive, except for a few months when he was twenty-two.[7]

In 1789, Captain Vardry sold 280 acres on Certains Creek in what is now York County, and then 468 acres on the Broad River. Then, 2,557 of his acres in the present York County were sold by the Sheriff for the payment of his mortgages.

The Captain's final collapse came when land-baron Francis Bremar, of Charleston, took over even the limestone springs and the McBee quarries. Bremar allowed Captain Vardry to continue to "farm" the limestone for Bremar's contracts, on highly profitable terms to Bremar.

The Captain could no longer afford Mr. Gaper's teaching, and Vardry Jr., age twelve, was put to work farming and raising limestone in the quarry, until he was eighteen years old.

The Captain was broken. He made some journeys into east Tennessee about this time, where he had relatives, and tried to establish a wagon trade to that area. Vardry Jr. went with the Captain on trips into North Carolina and the upper part of South Carolina, including to the western area now named the Greenville District, where the Captain pointed out the Reedy River Falls. That was the location of

Richard Pearis' stockade and mill that the Captain and his Spartan Regiment had destroyed at the beginning of the war. Most of the area around the falls, and the fine house on the hill, was owned by the wealthy man who had come there from the Thicketty area - Lemuel Alston.

No state saw more war, or suffered more from war, than did South Carolina during the military phase of the American Revolution.[8]

Historian, Duncan Wallace, wrote: "On account of South Carolina's having been the seat of far more devastating and widespread war than any other state, agriculture was crippled by the destruction of equipment, the neglect of fields, and the disorganization of labor."

In Charleston, Henry Laurens sent food in 1786 to keep Edward Rutledge's slaves from starving.

The official report of each state of its debts in 1789 shows South Carolina's to be greater than any other. Massachusetts and Virginia's debt was only half as much as South Carolina's. South Carolina, said Wallace, was bleeding at every pore. A Charleston ordinance fixed the price of bread on a sliding scale, adjusted to the price of flour. General Moultrie - shortly after he had finished his term as Governor of the state - was seized and lodged in the Charleston jail, because he could not pay the notes he had signed during the war to get provisions for his soldiers.

Vardry McBee Jr., with the blunt judgment of youth, held his father to be a poor manager of his affairs and was critical of him for mortgaging his lands and never recovering. Many years later, he said of his father: "He was fond of social company and confiding in his nature, with habits not improved by his military life." This led, said Vardry McBee Jr., to the Captain's "utter ruin in fortune."[9]

The author grew fond of Captain Vardry McBee through the years of the French and Indian and Cherokee Wars, and as he built his homestead on the Thicketty, and drove his wagons to Charles Town and Augusta. He was tough, and he could kill when defense demanded it, but he refused to be cruel or ruthless.[10] And, what veteran of King's Mountain or the Cowpens was "improved by his military life," as Vardry Jr. would have had it?

pp 102-3

A hundred miles southwest from Lincolnton, in the verdant foothills of the Blue Ridge Mountains, a large South Carolina landowner had for some years been watching the opening prospects of the Western Territories and had concluded that the prospects for development of his property in and near the village of Greenville were not bright.

That landowner was Lemuel James Alston whose mother and stepfather had settled in 1784 at Grindal Shoals, on Pacolet River, five miles southwest from the McBee homestead. Alston had graduated from William and Mary College in Williamsburg, Virginia, and settled in Greenville about 1785. In 1788, Alston he bought the former property of Richard Pearis and, with his other purchases on the crystal waters of the Reedy River, finally owned 11,028 acres. The village of Greenville was laid out on his estate and a plat made of fifty-two lots, comprising four blocks on each side of Main Street, from the river to the present Washington Street. He worked his lands and built a beautiful residence on a hill about six hundred yards west of the main street. Alston cultivated several thousand acres of land. His home was the center of the social life of early Greenville and its surrounding plantations. The Joseph Alstons and others from the low country had been his "paying guests" for several summers and autumns. In 1806, he was elected to Congress, defeating Elias Earle* who was running for re-election. In 1810, Elias Earle came back, and defeated Alston for re-election to Congress.[1]

Alston published his desire to sell, but for more than four years no one in the district, or among his acquaintances in the state, showed interest. The continuous planting of cotton had exhausted the phosphorous, potash and nitrogen in the soil of his plantation.

In Lincolnton, Vardry McBee learned of Alston's decision to sell and recalled visiting the area as a boy and hearing his father speak of it. He knew Alston, his stepfather John Henderson, and their other relatives at Grindal Shoals. Vardry McBee questioned those in Lincoln County who had more current information of the Greenville area. From the map he saw that it lay in the thoroughfare to the West and in the path of Tennessee and Kentucky drovers on the way to Charleston and Augusta, which could furnish Greenville farmers a market for corn, fodder, and other foodstuffs. That Western trade would also require mercantile establishments and mechanic shops. He recalled the rushing Reedy River Falls and other water courses in the area and knew that Greenville possessed water power sufficient to operate any machinery known at the time. Finally, he wrote to Colonel Alston and made plans to travel to Greenville to review Alston's holdings in more detail.

The journey was across country he had known growing up. He passed by the diminutive cone of Thicketty, which hardly qualified as a mountain, though its symmetry was pleasing. Passing the village of Spartanburg by five miles, the road crossed a rise, and the mountains came into view twenty-five miles off. To his right appeared Paris Mountain, to his left the Saluda range, and close by Glassy Mountain he could see the Saluda Gap. On the right, Hogback Mountain faded into the distance.[2]

---

*Elias Earle's grandfather, the first Baylis Earle, settled in 1763 in what is now Spartanburg County, on land adjoining Vardry McBee's uncle, James McBee, on the North Pacolet River. Crittenden, p. 10. Also Holcomb, p. 89.

Arriving in the village, he rode into the wide main road which ran along the crest of a ridge, and saw Colonel Alston's white mansion on a parallel hill west of the main road, at the end of an avenue formed by sycamore trees. He rode the length of the main road down a steep hill to the Reedy River Falls and watched the operation of a primitive and dilapidated grist mill.

Along the way, he observed that the courthouse in the middle of a would-be village square was a two story log building. The village was pretty and rural. The streets were covered with green grass, and handsome trees were growing along them. There were not many good houses, and the buildings were mostly of logs. Although there were several shops and other small buildings, it was not the seat of much business. He learned that, in past years, the courts sat only twice a year and often finished the session in two or three days. The general mercantile business founded in 1805 by Captain Jeremiah Cleveland was one of the small shops on the main road.[3] Vardry McBee and Captain Cleveland very likely knew each other. Their fathers had fought side by side at King's Mountain. There were "perhaps a hundred inhabitants" of the village.[4]

Having looked over the village and talked with Captain Cleveland and other residents, Vardry McBee rode up the avenue to Prospect Hill to meet with Colonel Alston. He was received hospitably and, for what remained of the day, they discussed their youth in the Thicketty community, then the Colonel's holdings, and then reviewed deeds and plats of the property. Vardry McBee must have noted the large family Bible on the table in the "keeping"* room but did not know that the Colonel had not bought it until he became a candidate for Congress and displayed it to make a good impression on visitors.[5]

In the next few days, Vardry McBee rode over the 11,000 acres and near Paris Mountain eight miles away, then into the northern part of the district, in view of the impressive prominence of Table Rock and, in the distance, Caesar's Head. He admired the magnificence of the scenery and was impressed by the wilderness of the country.

He knew that even before the village existed many residents of Charleston and the low country had discovered the pure, healthful, and invigorating climate of the area, and its view of the Blue Ridge mountains. They came to spend the summer months each year, some on plantations they purchased, and some as "paying guests" of friends. Joseph Alston had brought Theodosia and their son, Aaron Burr Alston, there for years as "paying guests" and built a summer house there about 1810.[6] But no one had yet fully recognized the opportunity to provide special accommodations for the purpose of attracting visitors. Colonel Alston's mansion could be the first hotel or summer resort in this "Switzerland of Carolina"[7] if Vardry McBee could find the proper person to manage it.

He rode the course of the Reedy River southward, and upon returning to the Colonel's house, discussed the possible purchase. No commitment was made, and he left for the trip back to Lincolnton, advising Colonel Alston that he would correspond if he decided to pursue the matter.

In Lincolnton, he discussed the purchase with his

---

*Drawing room.

Pg 130

Jeremiah Cleveland never wore a coat in the summer except when he went to church, and even then he seldom wore stockings. Colonel Toney was somewhat of a dandy, and more particular in his dress, wearing silk stockings and a calico morning coat or hunting shirt. All the stores sold whiskey, and a lady going in to shop ran the risk of meeting a drunken ruffian cursing and swilling from his whiskey bottle.

On sales days or public occasions the people from out in the country and mountains would ride into the village, get drunk and fight in the streets.* Wagons camped on the public square, and their owners built fires to cook their suppers. Deep into the night there were noises and cursing in the streets. The girls and women came with the men and there were often as many women in the square as there were men.[14]

But with the increase of visitors from the low country who had been accustomed to wealth, intellectual life, and refinement, the crassness of the frontier began to pass away, and the culture of the low country began to make its impression upon the village.

A young poet, visiting Greenville during 1823, wrote of the

> (M)ajestic Saluda Mountains whose summits pierced the clouds, the shadowy valleys, the quietly flowing Reedy River, and the grand old Table Rock - saying nothing of the quiet little town imbedded, as it were, among the green hills; for, from a distance with its white cottages, it looked like a pearl set in a cluster of emeralds.[15]

---

*There was a foot log across Reedy River at the foot of Main Street hill. Crittenden, p.35.

Vardry McBee was president of the Greenville Agricultural Society and for years was awarded the premium for the best managed farm in the district.[21] He helped organize that society in 1824.

There were two bookstores in Greenville by 1830, a Ladies' Library Society organized by 1826, and a Thespian Society organized by Colonel Charles W. D'Oyley by 1836. The *Greenville Republican* published its first newspaper July 12, 1826. It engaged Colonel D'Oyley as editor.[22] From its offices upstairs over a store in front of the courthouse, Colonel D'Oyley issued the newspaper every Wednesday morning.

Visitors from the low country filled the Mansion House in Greenville in the summer months. It charged $4.50 a week for one adult and $2.50 for keeping one horse. The Greenville Bath House at Reedy River furnished hot and cold baths and showers at $1.00 a month, or a single warm bath for 25¢, or a shower at 6 1/2¢.

In 1830, the village population was 600; there were nine stores, three tailor's shops, three milliner's shops, two carriage manufacturers, four blacksmith's shops, one baker, one silversmith shop, one cabinet maker's shop, one shoemaker shop, one paint shop, two tin shops, and one printing office. There were Vardry McBee's two grist mills, his sawmill, iron works, saddlery, tan yards, brick yard, and cotton mill.[23]

The village was crowded with young people from Charleston, Augusta and Savannah, who were happy to be away from the sand flies, gnats and mosquitoes and free of the dreaded fevers of the low country. Admirers of nature could see Glassy Mountain to the east, glittering in the sunshine, the Saluda Mountains and Blue Ridge to the north and west, and from high places in the village, the majestic stone face of Table Rock to the northwest. Paris* Mountain could be seen from every part of the village.

Every week in summer there were dances and parties. Even in the winter there were parties and balls. It was the fashion for the young men to walk their ladies to the Reedy River Falls on moonlit nights. By going down a path through clumps of mimosas, willows, and Camperdown elms, they could reach the old "enchanted tree" with its rock seat just large enough for two. Across the pond stood the brick flour mill built by Vardry McBee in 1817, near the spot where Richard Pearis had built his mill when it was Indian territory, and which Captain Vardry McBee and the Spartan Regiment destroyed in their raid of 1780.

Fishing parties were popular, and young men and ladies were often seen on their way with fishing tackle and poles to fish in the Reedy River.[24]

There were picnics at Table Rock twenty miles away, or at Paris Mountain only eight miles from the village. Fourth of July celebrations were held on top of Table Rock, a thousand feet high and half a mile long, with a spring of pure water on top which flowed down from a waterfall into an icy pool. On top were blueberry bushes and cedar trees. Many courtships were associated with visits to Table Rock. A summer hotel was built near the rock during the 1820's.

Three lines of stagecoaches each furnished transportation into the village three times a week. One was from Asheville, another from Augusta, and the third from Columbia. In approaching the village, the drivers sounded bugles giving notice of their arrival.** If a traveler left

---

*Named for Richard Pearis before research established his spelling of his name.

**By a code they signaled to the innkeepers the number of passengers aboard.

Unionists found in the village, a provocation which influenced Vardry McBee's decision to be a Union candidate for the state convention.

Across from the courthouse was the Mansion House where he had visited with the eloquent United States Senator Robert Y. Hayne, the Hugers, the constantly drinking James Petigru, and the diminutive Joel R. Poinsett. Judge Baylis Earle had fallen dead in its lobby in 1844.[2] Banquets had been given there for the magnetic John C. Calhoun, so wrong in most of the things he stood for, in Vardry McBee's opinion.

Across the river was the hill upon which Furman University was located, and just below it, on the river, were his mills, on the site of Pearis's stockade and corn mill, which his father and the Spartan Regiment destroyed in the Revolution. There were the rushing waterfalls which had made it inevitable to Vardry McBee in 1815 that a city would rise around them.

To the far right, across the river on the road to Pendleton, near its intersection of the road to Augusta, the family had watched as Pinkney departed on the train to Columbia to attend the legislature. That was before Vardry McBee completed the stone depot in December of 1853.

On out Pendleton Road was Luther's house, where Susan and her children were still asleep, with Luther's death still disturbing their dreams.

"South Carolina – A Synoptic History for Laymen" – by Lewis P Jones
Sandlapper Press – Columbia SC – 1971

ministration, they nevertheless disliked having to countenance or to seem to countenance or endorse rebellion and revolution. The board managed eventually to exemplify British "muddling through" at its best, successfully appeasing the Proprietors (by buying them out in 1729 after the dust had settled), gratifying the colony, and finally, in due season, sending over a royal governor. Here lies British genius.

The royal government that lasted until the American Revolution was not markedly different, and most precedents for it had already been established. In this government, the Commons House of Assembly gradually increased its importance and role. Suffrage went to free whites who professed Christianity and owned at least 50 acres of land, or paid 20 shillings tax. To serve in Commons, a man had to own 500 acres and 10 slaves, or have 1,000 pounds sterling in real estate. The Council, appointed by the Crown, usually consisted of about 12 men, at first leading local merchants and planters. It wore several hats: as an upper house, as the council or cabinet for the governor, and also as Court of Probate and Court of Chancery. By charter, the Council enjoyed equality with the Commons House, but in practice the Commons successfully asserted their superiority. By the mid-1750s, the Council had undergone a definite decline in influence and power.

The Proprietors had sometimes appointed natives as governors, some of whom proved to be notably bad. The Crown sent its governors ... most were men of character and ability, many being already identified with the colony. They had considerable power, even in the face of the growing role of the Commons House.

Particularly significant was the position of lieutenant governor: a South Carolinian who served in the absence of governors. Since there were often long interims when no governor was present in person, this prestigious position was considerably more important than the title implies and carried a great deal of respect. Some would say that the most distinguished colonial citizen of Carolina was William Bull, who served as lieutenant governor and acting governor on a number of occasions and, in effect, governed the colony a good many years.

The first royal governor appointed was Britain's most experienced colonial administrator—Sir Francis Nicholson, here from 1721 to 1725 after serving in New York, Virginia, Nova Scotia and Maryland. A conscientious man who sought to know his job in every place to which he was assigned, he labored to advance the causes closest to his heart: the Anglican Church and education. Sincere and able, he was always hurt by his blind devotion to the Church of England, his bitter personal quarrels and his high temper. A bachelor, he unsuccessfully courted a girl in Virginia. When she jilted him, His Excellency threatened that if she should ever marry another, he would cut the throats of the bridegroom, the officiating minister and the justice of the peace who issued the license. His usefulness was limited by his terrible temper; an Indian who once saw him in a fit of rage remarked that he believed he had been "born drunk." At his death, he left his estate to an agency he had fervently supported—the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

Under the new royal government, colonists felt that they had two problems: economic and military. In 1721, the population was still only 19,600, of whom only 6,800 were white. Most lived very close to the coast. The large and growing exports of rice, tar and pitch, and deerskins seemed to indicate prosperity. But the English mercantilistic laws compelled all the rice to go to England—which did not want it as much as did Portugal and Spain. The naval stores industry also depended strictly on government bounty (or subsidies), and Parliament was threatening to remove this boon.

The military
because of a huge
ticularly the large
These tribesmen w
titioners of ba
politics, playing
French and Englis
another. With Fren
of Ft. Toulouse o
River, many of th
were under French
addition, the South
ance with the Ch
matically antagonize

Key figure in the
to establish a sou

English-Indian relations was the very colorful and able John Barnwell. An Irishman who had arrived here in 1701, Barnwell held a number of positions in the colonial government. After his crucial role in the Indian war of 1711 and 1712, he was known as "Tuscarora Jack." He also participated in the Yemassee War. As South Carolina agent in London in 1720 (a position not unlike that of ambassador, or lobbyist), he was consulted about the new royal government then being established and recommended: first, a ring of outlying forts to stretch from the mouth of the Altamaha River to the Tennessee River in the Cherokee country; and second, a group of townships to be established with new European or English settlers out on the frontier. Something of the latter came later and was to be a major factor in South Carolina history—an organized frontier movement. As for the forts, although the Board of Trade ap-
ouncil
only
super-
Alta-
.
isans,
inex-
outs.
came
When
k of
ough
aist-
press
orge,
for
eted

These pages shed light on what conditions in S.C. were like for our ancestor, Chief Factor of the Indian trade, ~~and~~ William Hatton, father-in-law of Richard Peris

South Carolina - a Synoptic History for Laymen – Lewis P. Jones 1971

in 1721. Planted on land long claimed by Spain, its unhealthy locale provided the worst duty imaginable for what Barnwell called "a hundred invalids," the first regular British troops ever assigned to South Carolina. This force was withdrawn to Port Royal in 1727.

In the 1720s the old problem of regulating Indian trade was finally resolved successfully. A resume is in order. In 1707, traders had begun operating under government supervision: well intended, the plan had not succeeded. In 1716, a new law ended the private trading and created a government monopoly over the trade to be conducted by agents (or factors) sent to the tribes to do all trading at established posts, or "factories." In 1719, a new system—part private, part public—was tried. Finally, in 1725, Gov. Nicholson and the Assembly worked out a solution much like that which had been tried first in 1707.

The business returned to private traders who were supervised by a single Indian commissioner (the first being George Chicken), a very important official who traveled much and also appointed special agents who lived with the Indian tribes and saw that traders adhered to the government code or guidelines. The system lasted throughout the colonial period, and South Carolina dominated this tremendous business in this large corner of the empire—a business which saw hundreds of thousands of deerskins leaving the area. Licenses and instructions were issued at Charles Town; agents gave bond for good behavior; no trouble-causing credit was extended to the Indians; and trade was restricted to certain towns.

The term "Indian trader" encompassed two quite different kinds of operators. One, the "principal trader," was often a man of education and standing attracted to the trade by love of adventure and hope of fortune—or driven to the woods for fear of imprisonment for debt, perhaps. Such an entrepreneur made his arrangements in Charles Town, hired pack horses, and maintained several trading posts where he swapped merchandise to the Indians for skins and hides.

This term "Indian trader" also applied to the pack horseman. Illiterate and irresponsible, many of these were considered outcasts and often were fugitives from justice. As a class, they were generally lacking in decency and morality. Although they were objects of scorn to the more genteel colonists, they were nevertheless men of skill and courage—and also very important to the economy of the colony.

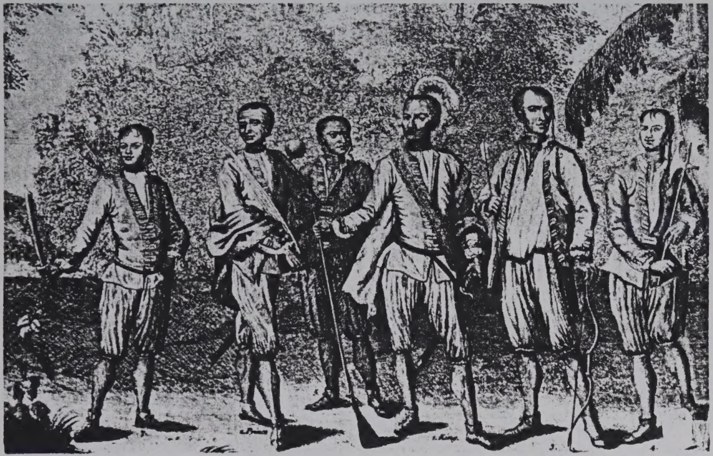
Although the Spanish were annoying on the frontiers in the Indian country, the real threat came from the French, rooted in the Mississippi Valley where they had founded New Orleans in 1718 and where they sought to maintain a "containment policy" toward the English, using the Creeks as their containment tools. The English—that is, the South Carolinians—still sought to stay friendly with both Cherokees and Creeks. The latter were promised that English settlements would not go west of the Savannah. If the Carolinians had had to pick, however, they would have preferred the nearer Cherokees over the more dangerous Creeks; if they could be so astute, though, they would have preferred to be allied with both, but not disposed to fret if their allies warred with each other, thereby weakening and debilitating both potential dangers simultaneously. It was a shrewd game, but—as Dr. D. D. Wallace put it in one of his many flashes of brilliant insight and value judgments—it was a policy as barren in diplomacy as in morals.

✓ In 1727, with better trade policies and controls in effect, a large gathering of chiefs was held in Charles Town with much smoking of peace pipes—a summit conference that was designed to avert any repetition of the 1715 Yemassee tragedy. Col. Charlesworth Glover then made a diplomatic swing around the Creek circuit, spending a year convincing them that they could get precious little merchandise from the Spanish (for whom they had contempt) or even from the French (whose bluster they resented). There perhaps was wisdom in his daring advice not to send troops to impress the Creeks, for "it is trade that must govern these people." South Carolina seemed finally to be establishing harmony with the Creeks to the west and southwest.

Meanwhile, in the late 1720s, the Cherokees now threatened to get off the English reservation and yield to pressures of the French. The day was saved for the English by fortuitous events which involved an intriguing spirit who was either a genius or crackpot (or maybe both): Sir Alexander Cuming.

One can wonder what modern communications media could do with the exploits of this Scottish baronet who dabbled in alchemy, spent 30 years in prison for debt and constantly generated grandiose schemes. (One, for example, envisioned paying off the English debt by settling 30,000 Jewish families in the Cherokee Mountains.) During 1729 and 1730, this Member of the Royal Society visited South Carolina on a purely unofficial trip. Before returning home, he decided to make an excursion into the back country. As far as the Congarees, he was led by Indian Commissioner George Chicken and a surveyor, but they were too slow for him and the intrepid baronet soon hurried on out to Keowee, "capital town" of the Cherokees in the northwestern part of present South Carolina (on the border of modern Pickens and Oconee counties). Apparently the amateur scientist planned to gather minerals and herbs—"the natural curiosities."

Suddenly his odyssey became diplomatic and political. Learning of deteriorating English-Cherokee relations and rumors of French intrigue, along with disaffection among the all-important Cherokees, Sir Alexander appeared dramatically, fully armed, among the Indians gathered in the Town House at Keowee—a gross breach of Indian decorum and protocol. Determined to overwhelm the Indians single-handedly and restore loyalty



—Photo courtesy South Caroliniana Library

In 1730 Sir Alexander Cuming, self-proclaimed "King of the Cherokees," returned to London and presented two Cherokee chiefs and five warriors to George II.

to their Charles Town alliance, the colorful Cuming must have been as eloquent as persuasive; when he ended his oration, the natives were on bended knees and drinking to the health of George II. The most violent thunderstorm in the memory of living Cherokees seemed to underscore divine concern in the diplomacy and goal of the Scottish baronet. The hypnotized Indians presented him with a crown (a yellow possum's hair wig), eagle tails, a few scalps and some symbols of friendship. This stem-winding, emotional evangelist then moved off to other Cherokee towns, arranged a general council of the three divisions of the Cherokees and so managed and manipulated affairs that one chief was crowned "emperor." Not surprisingly, the new potentate might be ranked as Anglophile.

The diplomatic coup could have ended there—but not for a man like Sir Alexander. As he headed back to Charles Town (presumably wearing his crown of the yellow possum), he went not alone but in the company of two chiefs and five warriors—off to see George II to whom they found themselves now so devoted. Eighteenth-century English society rolled out the red carpet for their exotic guests, who proved to be quite the hit of the social season, being wined and dined in London as well as presented at court.

The itinerant diplomats did well for themselves. The English told them that they could live where they pleased and that white men were not to live or plant near their towns. The Indians in turn agreed to reject non-English whites who came into their area; if they recaptured runaway slaves, they were to be rewarded; and the Cherokees agreed to trade only with the English. Only one flaw marred the journey and the sweeping settlement. The Board of Trade declined to confirm Cuming's powers as overlord or viceroy, which the Cherokees had previously granted.

Before sailing for home, the seven Indians gave a dignified reply to their hosts in quite diplomatic language. In it they noted respect for their English "brothers," indicating that they thought of themselves basically as allies and certainly not as underlings or satellites. They gave no indication that they thought control of any of their lands had been changed. For 20 years they were thus to be peacefully associated with his Royal Britanic Majesty, whom seven of their number had seen in the flesh.

As for Sir Alexander, the later career of the self-proclaimed "King of the Cherokees" was to be miserable, much of it with him "confined as a debtor to the limits of the Fleet." He died, a poor brother of Charterhouse in 1775. But he had created conditions in which the colony was able to prosper, expand and spread considerably in the 1730 to 1760 era.

III, Prince of Orange—was laid out 20 miles square and drew Irish Presbyterians with a guarantee of freedom of religion. (It never became an Anglican parish.) The spot selected for settlement was "the King's Tree" nearly at the head of navigation on the Black River. In 1734, this most successful of townships (today one of the state's lowest-income counties) was exporting corn and soon was shipping indigo out via Georgetown, a "port of embarkation" laid out also in the 1730s. By 1746 the white population of Williamsburg was about 650.

Amelia, on the west bank of the Congaree-Santee, athwart the Cherokee Path, was a land of plantations by 1760 (and organized as St. Matthews Parish in 1768). Adjacent Orangeburg grew swiftly, with 250 German-Swiss arriving from Rotterdam in 1735 and settling on unusually good land where the population grew to 800 by 1759. The most important resident was Rev. John Ulrich Giessendanner, who preached in both German and English. A silversmith in Charles Town before going to the Edisto area, he brought a housekeeper over and married her. Eventually (1750) he became Anglican, ministering to Orangeburg until his death in 1761.

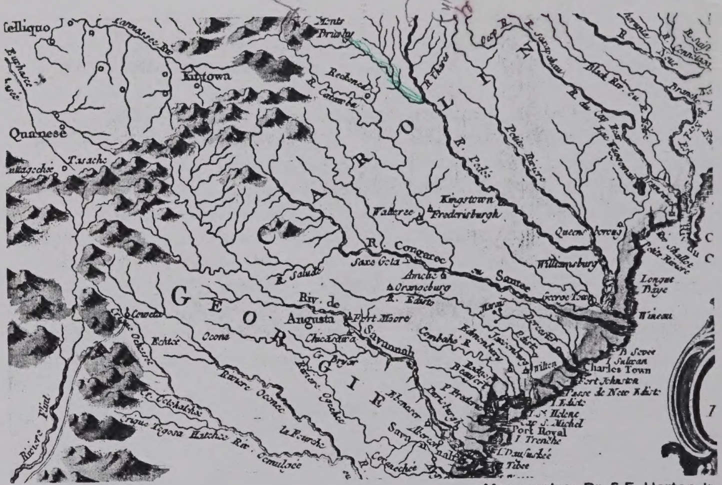
Saxe Gotha also attracted Germans into the upper Congaree valley, where Thomas Brown operated a famous store near "Congarees Old Fort," a rough little post going back to 1717, where by 1748 about 200 inhabitants were thanking the Assembly for rescuing them from their depressed condition in Germany. By 1762, enough of these had spilled over into the "Dutch Fork" area (between the Saluda and Broad) to support a store there.

New Windsor, the most thinly settled township, did not thrive—perhaps it was too near to Augusta (The A.E.C. would come later.) Queensborough on the Pee Dee, also did not have an inspiring success—perhaps it was too remote. Kingston was opened in 1735, but also had to wait till later to flourish; level and poorly drained, maybe handicapped by too many grants to non-residents, it contained 400 settlers by 1757—often a rough element in what was later to be Horry. Fredericksburg, laid off in 1737 around modern Camden, also grew slowly—partially due to the hostility of the nearby Catawbas—but a settlement began at Pine Tree Hill around the store of Joseph Kershaw, founded about 1758 as a branch of a Charles Town mercantile house, with other stores soon started at Cheraw Hill on the Pee Dee and one at Granby, near the forks of the Congarees (in modern Cayce).

One additional group appeared below the fall line and made a considerable mark on South Carolina history: the Welsh Baptists from Newcastle, Delaware, who migrated into the thriving "Welsh Neck" the great bend of the Pee Dee around Society Hill, where a settlement of from 3,000 to 4,000 by 1757 was exporting grain, flour and indigo. (These did not constitute a "township" in the same sense as these others.) A compact religious group,

Catawba

Pee Dee



—Map courtesy Dr. S.F. Horton Jr.

Early pioneers in Carolina attached great importance to the rivers, which they traveled upon and settled near. Note the accentuated rivers in this 1757 French map.

they were mostly small settlers, but relatively early they began to become considerable slaveholders.

In the 1740s, another group appeared apart from the planned townships: settlers in the "rich land" (and hence the later county name) along the river bottoms on the north bank of the Congaree. Their numbers had not grown greatly by the end of the decade, however.

On up the Saluda, during this frontier expansion, there were several schemes for large land grants and the largest land speculation in colonial South Carolina. These plans and petitions occupied officials for a number of years beginning about 1737. One of the more intriguing schemes was one involving Solomon da Costa, Francis Salvador and other London Jews who had associated themselves together with the idea of planting a large colony of their poor here. It never materialized.

The net result of the township scheme was perhaps disappointing to Gov. Robert Johnson. Too many non-residents took up these lands eventually. Some of the settlers were too early disappointed. The parishes planned were not all formed. The proper promised representation in the Commons was not forthcoming—with much resulting irritation and friction later. Even so, the project did speed up settlement and probably made more likely the even larger influx of settlers who began to pour into the Piedmont Back Country in the 1750s. If Gov. Johnson was accurate, these who came in the 1730s were quite hardy people—qualified frontiersmen—who feared the Lord and had a marked distaste for both Indians and Episcopalians.

One deterring factor which seemed to intimidate newcomers was rumors of numerous diseases. In his promotional pamphlet which depicts the "nobel castles" in Carolina, Jean Purry had sought to cope with this, brushing it aside because "if people are sick ther 'tis generally an effect of their bad conduct." He conceded that the area was almost "wholly coverd with large pine trees (very cold in their nature)" and hence "when the vapours which they have attracted and retained come to be dispersed by a northerly wind, you feel a cold almost as sharp as in Europe. So that in one day you will find a considerable change of air." This, however, was only one danger whereas "the debauchery made by punch, strong Maderia wines and the eating of unripe fruits, is the real source of sickness there" but those affected "never fail of pouring out curses on the country, rather than on their own carelessness or excess." The optimistic Purry did express concern about "a sort of gnats, which they call Muscatoes" a problem "easily remidied by opening the windows about sun-setting and shutting them again a little before the close of the twilight." As to the widespread rumors of the rattlesnakes being so numerous that "there is no going into the woods without danger of life," he retorted that "this is an error as ill-grounded as the most part of the other reports spread abroad to the disadvantage of this New World."

In the 1740s and 1750s, the colony was blessed to have James Glen as governor (1743-1756).

Glen was a young, "unpecunious but ambitions Scot" who according to some tongue-waggers had gotten his post simply because his sister was Sir Robert Walpole's mistress and his wife was the illegitimate daughter of an earl who was president of the Privy Council. Maybe more important (and consolingly more respectable) was his close friendship with some of the trustees of Georgia—a fact which did not prevent a row between Glen and James Oglethorpe who, in 1737, was given the unified military command of the Southern frontier and thereby denied to Glen an annual salary of 1,000 pounds heretofore paid to governors as commander-in-chief of forces stationed in South Carolina.

While Glen remained in England after his appointment to squabble and quibble for several years over this lost gubernatorial income which was beyond the reach of the Commons House in Carolina, William Bull presided over South Carolina as acting chief executive (1737-1743)—a service he performed frequently and ably when the official British viceroy was not on the scene in person. During this interim, the energy of this capable lieutenant-governor went largely into strengthening the colony for a possible invasion from Florida as the two mother countries drifted toward war—which finally broke out in 1739. (This was the War of Jenkins' Ear, which merged into the larger War of Austrian Succession—1740-1748—a European fracas with its American sideshow known here as King George's War.)

Bull also was plagued by restless Creeks and Cherokees, who were allegedly disturbed and restless unnecessarily. The disturber deserves disproportionate space here. In 1743, English traders among the Creeks incited the Indians to capture "one Priber, a foreigner," who had come from among the Cherokees and who was allegedly a French agent or, worse still, a Jesuit.

Actually he was neither. He was Christian Gottlieb Priber, a German Utopian mystic and adventurer, described by Col. Oglethorpe as "a very extraordinary kind of a Creature" who spoke "almost all languages fluently, particularly English, Dutch, French, Latin and Indian" and who planned to establish a town at the foot of the mountains as "a City of Refuge for all Criminals, Debtors, and Slaves, who would fly thither from Justice or their Masters." In the "South Carolina Gazette" (Aug. 15, 1743) appeared a letter from a Georgian about the proposed town (named Paradise) which he considered "extremely wicked, yet . . . it is a Pity so much Wit is applied to so bad Purposes."

Priber, "a man of politeness and gentility," pondered his backwoods Utopia long before leaving his native Saxony, believing as did many that ideals of a terrestial paradise could best be found among American natives, those "noble savages." (Sir Thomas More portrayed the discoverer of his Utopia as a companion of Amerigo Vespucci.) Equalitarianism—pushed in its extreme to a form of communism—was the guise in which the 18th century envisioned the democratic state.

Perhaps inspired by the Cherokee tourists who accompanied Sir Alexander Cuming to England in 1730, Priber arrived in Charles Town about 1734, but the polished gentleman with the magnetic personality soon was deep in Cherokee country, indistinguishable from his hosts, showing no condescension toward them, and teaching them much: that they were equal to any other people, that they should not cede their lands, that Europeans were trespassers, and that the English were the most threatening of the immigrants. Pragmatically, he taught the natives how to use weights and measures to protect themselves against cheating Indian traders.

Dreaming of a "confederation" of Southern Indians (undoubtedly "Dixie" with war whoops and tom-toms creates an awesome spectre), he reorganized the tribesmen, indoctrinating them to adopt such titles as "His imperial majesty's principal secretary of state." In the foothills he was planning his "Kingdom of Paradise"—with the emphasis in society on equality—civil, political and economic, with all goods to be held in common and children to be reared as wards of the state.

It is not surprising that alarmed English traders promoted his arrest, along with his manuscript of a book on his plans and a dictionary of the

Cherokee language. In 1743, this rather unique dreamer was thus carried off to Ft. Frederica in Georgia, to be treated as a political prisoner of rank and importance but to die in his cell there after several years. As his biographer put it, he probably deserved a better fate, and certainly one better than the oblivion which shrouds this Utopian from the frontier—a humanitarian philosopher, linguist, scholar and friend of both Indians and peace. Ruder people enjoy fame.

Meanwhile the government back in Charles Town was again thickly involved in diplomatic and military problems. These issues now tested severely the statesmanship of William Bull, stand-in for Glen from 1737 until that worthy's arrival in 1743. Bull, son of Stephen Bull who had also been influential in the 17th century, was versatile. A wealthy rice planter, he was amateur historian, musician, gardener and botanist. He liked to entertain lavishly at Ashley Hall, his guests including James Oglethorpe and John Wesley. The Methodist founder depicted "Colonel Bull's seat" as "the pleasantest place I have yet seen in America; the orchard and garden being full of most of those sorts of trees and plants and flowers which are esteemed in England, but which the laziness of the Americans seldom suffers them to raise." Bull was very ambitious that his family be a political dynasty—and it truly was.

In public affairs, the lieutenant-governor was prudent. Knowing that power was shifting to the Commons House of Assembly, he cultivated ties there—especially through his protege the speaker, Charles Pinckney—while conscientiously also representing the royal prerogative. During this era, in 1740, the Assembly adopted a complex slave code for control of "the peculiar institution"—as response to the not-too-large but alarming "Stono Revolt" of the previous year.

In 1739 the expected war with Spain erupted with an expedition under James Oglethorpe sent toward St. Augustine. Despite devastating epidemics of smallpox in 1738 and yellow fever in 1739, South Carolina supplied him with more aid than did England. The Carolinians soon soured on their Georgia leader, however. When he reached Florida, instead of attacking St. Augustine, he marched almost aimlessly around the colony (and these were pre-motel days) capturing small outposts; when he did finally lay siege, he positioned his troops poorly and their morale failed. The navy then took its turn to blunder by letting Spanish ships through the blockade to resupply St. Augustine. Finally the invaders from the north withdrew (just as tourists there still must). Even the Spanish were surprised. The Carolinians were said to have been so disgusted with Oglethorpe that "they cannot hear the name of Col. Oglethorpe, but they fall into such a rage as sets the very dogs a barking."

South Carolina and Georgia were now presumably wide open to Spanish attack. The blow fell in July 1742, when a large Spanish fleet arrived off St. Simon's Island and landed an invasion force of 3,000 men. Repulsed, they panicked and re-embarked. Part of their panic stemmed from the belief that massive aid was coming from South Carolina, with one Georgia preacher's holding that there was no deliverance equal to it outside of the Old Testament. Gov. Bull had been engaged in massive defensive preparations, especially in the Port Royal area. Carolina zeal was spurred by rumors that the Spaniards planned to stir up the slaves. Tales of other and bigger invasions proved groundless.

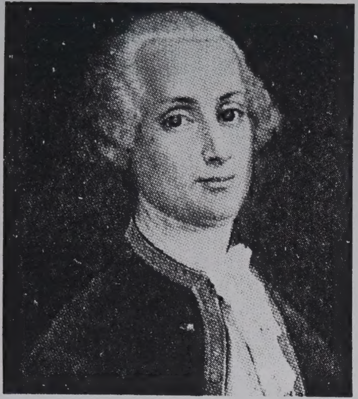
The first frontier movement (the townships) had taken place in the 1730s; the second frontier lunge occured in the 1750s and 1760s, coincidental with major difficulties in English-Indian relations, a thorny topic which gripped the colony from about 1740 to 1762 (and which will be related later). These episodes are the highlights of the administration of Gov. Glen, who finally arrived to take over his duties in 1743.

The new frontiersmen did not come in groups to new townships (except for a few in the 1760s), but largely drifted southward from Pennsylvania and Virginia, small family groups arriving by horse (and not too often by wagon). The migration was considerable. In 1730, there was only an occasional hunter or fur trader in the "back parts"; in 1776, it was estimated that 82,942 persons (or 79 per cent of the colony's white population) lived west of the 1730 frontier. Most of the newcomers were Germans (sometimes called "Dutch") and Scotch-Irish. One contemporary described these migrants as "a mixed Medley from all Countries, and the off Scouring of America." Genteel was not the word for them.

Leading the way were the Germans, and coming behind them were the Scotch-Irish—really Calvinist Scots who had been transplanted to northern Ireland early in the 17th century, moved to the Philadelphia area in the early 18th century, and then started westward, only to bump into the mountains beyond which lurked the French in the Ohio Valley. Like water retarded by a dam, the flood of settlers began spreading out against the dam. Many went southward—some settling for awhile and then again pulling up stakes and moving on down the Great Philadelphia Wagon Road—735 miles long and "the most heavily traveled road in all America"—to the Shenandoah Valley, to the Yadkin Valley in North Carolina, and on to Pine Tree Hill (Camden) where they fanned out over the Piedmont.

The Scotch-Irish liked neighbors—but not too close. They preferred to settle along a creek rather than a river. Here, floods were not so bad, one could cross them more easily, the bottomlands were fertile, and usually there were springs in the hillsides (and wells were rare). Such newcomers usually came between November and May, to be ready for spring planting.

One reputable scholar depicts these Ulstermen as "undisciplined, emotional, courageous, aggressive,



This copy of an 18th-century miniature of James Glen, governor of South Carolina from 1743 to 1756, is owned by Glen Drayton Grimke of Charleston.

lina hats," probably made from deerskin. The versatility of this product can be sensed from an advertisement in the "South Carolina Gazette" in 1738: "This is to give Notice, that Mary Robinson Widow of Th Robinson deceased, still carries on his Trade in the same House, viz Mr. Laurens's House Number (3) near the New-Market, she has ready made Buck and Doe skin Breeches, either natural or black, purple and Cloth Colours, likewise white Leather, a choice of fine Wool. She also dresses Deer Skins with or without the Hairs, dyes, washes and mends Buck-skin Breeches."

The trade was as important to the Indians as to the English—but with less happy results. When the white man had appeared on the scene, the tribes had been self-sufficient, but they gradually became more and more dependent on him and copied him—especially in the use of clothing, firearms and liquor. As these came to seem indispensable, the Indian lost his freedom since he was utterly dependent on the white trader for these items. When guns needed replacement, when ammunition was exhausted, when clothes were worn out, only the English trader could solve the problem. And although the Indians were not angelic before the Europeans' arrival, their morals declined as they came increasingly "into contact with vicious traders, outcasts, escaped criminals, and runaway Negro slaves. Rum was the Indian's special curse, for unlike most whites, the Indian drank until he had become stupefied."

After his initial failure with the tribesmen, in 1750 Glen adopted a new broad Indian policy, writing George Clinton that he hoped for "a general Comprehensive Plan of uniting altogether all the Indians upon the Continent," and by being "all Friends with the English they may be in perfect friendship with one another." This reflected Glen's growing respect for the Indians and also his growing humanitarian regard for their welfare. Henceforth he was to argue that the white man must buy the Indians' land before settling upon it. In 1760, after his governorship and when the province was at war with the Cherokees, he opposed the war because he thought the mother country should be civilizing the Indians, not fighting them. He pointedly asked: "We call them Savages, have we been at any pains to civilize them?"

English-Cherokee relations varied spasmodically. After Sir Alexander Cuming's diplomacy (1730), calm prevailed for a few years. The natives were also weakened by great misfortunes: About 1738, half of the Cherokee population died in one year from smallpox (said to have been contracted from Charles Town slaves). The Cherokees interpreted this as divine punishment for the immorality of young people and hence prescribed a cure through religious rites. (Doubly miserable, they considered smallpox scars a disfigurement, some even being driven to suicide by such scars.)

Also leading to a population decline among the Cherokees were intermittent wars among themselves, much to the fear and concern of the colonial government. For two bloody years (1751 to 1752), the Creeks and Cherokees had warred with each other, during which time there had also been bloodshed, occasional embargoes and friction with the English. Glen often was caught in the middle, trying to restrain vindictive hawks in the Assembly while seeking a better basis for peace and stability with the Indians. After some murderous duplicity by the Creeks, Gov. Glen finally threatened that large group in the West with a complete trade embargo—a threat which was meaningful because of the increasing native dependence on traders.

Meanwhile, the Cherokees showed irritation with English Carolinians and began shifting to establish trade ties with the English Virginians. In their game of power politics, they subtly hinted that they might do even more of this, a turn of events which prompted Gov. Glen to write in fury to the Virginia governor, Robert Dinwiddie, observing that South Carolina-Cherokee friendship was essential to all English in the Southeast if French invasion were to be held off, and warning the Virginia leader "not to intermeddle with our Indians."

The long-flickering Cherokee-Creek clashes were finally ended in 1753 with Gov. Glen playing the role of diplomatic intermediary. Important in this process was the July 1753 conference: one of those scenes of pageantry which delighted the governor, with a large number of Cherokee dignitaries gathered in the Council chamber at Charles Town. (The building was new, and stood at the corner of modern Broad and Meeting streets.)

In dealing with the Cherokees, Glen was far from being in complete control of the situation and failed to get them all "back on the reservation." He was facing increasing difficulties because of factions within the Cherokee group—between the more powerful and independent-minded Chota leaders from the Overhills (from modern Tennessee, around the Indian town of Chota) and the less powerful but more pro-English Keowee faction from the Lower Towns (western South Carolina).

Old Hop, or Connecorte ("First Beloved Man of the Cherokees, Uku of Chota, Emperor of the Cherokee

Nation"), did not attend the Charles Town conference, but Little Carpenter, or Attakullakulla (Second Man of the Cherokees), led the delegation. The Chota group was pleasant but firm, showing considerable intransigence to Glen, preferring to be free of any European nation, and quite willing to play Virginia off against South Carolina, and France against England. Perhaps above all, they sought "to pull the Lower Towns out of the Carolina orbit." Facing these facts, Glen made the best of his weak position. For the moment, Creek-Cherokee clashes had ended, but the peace achieved was, at best, a restless and fragile one.

The usual complaints about the conduct of traders had marred the conference, with the natives charging that the English traders had "cut their yardsticks." Glen's solution: a promise to provide them with iron yardsticks to be kept by the chiefs.

To counteract the growing and menacing influence of the much more independent Overhill leaders from Chota, Glen now revived the idea of building a fort in Cherokee country ostensibly to protect the Indians from their enemies. By building it near the Lower Towns, he hoped to keep the friendship of both the Lower and Middle Cherokees—and perhaps even wean them away from Chota domination.

Little Carpenter suggested that forts on the French frontier would also be welcome and tactfully suggested that such would help keep the Cherokees friendly to the English. Also he probably welcomed them because they would help keep Indian rivals at a distance. In addition, they would lend prestige, and the officers stationed there might help regulate and restrain dishonest English traders. The Cherokee delegation thus gave a green light to the construction.

The policy of establishing forts to extend the English power to strategic points in the southern Indian nations was probably the most significant aspect of Gov. Glen's stewardship. Such grand strategy was not new, having been advocated in 1708 by the great Indian agent, Thomas Nairne, and in 1721 by John Barnwell, intrepid veteran of many Indian campaigns. The Commons House always seemed enthusiastic to endorse Glen's policy but reluctant to appropriate the funds to carry it out—and especially reluctant about building a fort all the way over in the Overhill country.

The conference concluded with harmonious bowing and scraping. After much smoking of pipes, Gov. Glen loaded up his visiting statesmen with gifts and personally accompanied them on their homeward way as far as the Congarees—each chief receiving a scarlet suit, a ruffled shirt, a laced hat, stockings, garters, buckles and a set of buttons. Old Hop, the only surviving Cherokee who could claim to have seen His Britannic Majesty in the flesh (when he went with Cuming in 1730), was sent a "perspective glass," a stereopticon with pictures of England and Europe. (Admittedly, some writers say it was just a mirror.) The Cherokees were perhaps quite cocky as they headed back up the Keowee trail toward the hills, since at the sessions it had been the English who had done most of the beseeching.

In October 1753, Glen set forth with 60 soldiers to build the promised post for the Cherokees. Picking up 50 laborers at Ninety Six, he proceeded to Keowee where again grand ceremonies and firing of volleys marked the occasion—probably much to the prideful delight of the pragmatic Glen. The Cherokees sold Carolina the site for the fort and also a right-of-way back for 60 miles for a road and free passage to the Long Canes settlements. (One might wish that Glen had helped to make access arrangements for Berlin in 1945.) Then the Raven abruptly proposed the cession of *all* Cherokee lands, thereby placing them under the protection of Carolina. Perhaps this stemmed not from generosity or even friendship but from a realistic goal of thereby preventing their total ouster from their property, but Glen suggested that the Cherokees would be on firmer ground if they made the cession to the Crown rather than to Carolina. Nothing came of this proposal at the time, but two years later (1755) this proved to be virtually the agreement made in the Treaty of Saluda.

Glen then proceeded with the construction of Ft. Prince George—named for the then Prince of Wales—which was to be a major British outpost in Carolina, 100 yards east of the Keowee River at the place of a ford crossing to Keowee Town. (The site was flooded by the Keowee hydroelectric project in 1968.) One might think of it as Milepost Zero on the Keowee Path, or Keowee Trail, which stretched 300 miles to its other terminus somewhere around East Bay Street. (From this route came such names as Eighteen Mile Creek, which was 18 miles from Keowee at the point where the trail crossed this particular creek; the same system provided the unique name for the settlement with the numerical name, Ninety Six.)

The fort—which proved to be poorly constructed and which was allegedly built in 22 days—was 200 feet square, made of earth and wood, with a ditch around it. A storehouse, guardhouse and log barracks were inside. No commander here ever imagined he was safe in an impregnable fortress, but Glen returned to the east in December 1753, leaving behind the Union Jack flying over a garrison of 16 men and one sergeant and also leaving certain added prestige for the people of Keowee and the Lower Towns. The leaders at Chota over the hills were less pleased. Nevertheless, according to John Alden, if Glen had accomplished nothing more than this construction of Ft. Prince George, his administration would have been a most notable one in colonial history. But it still did not guarantee Glen's dreams for dramatic expansion of British influence to the Mississippi. The Keowee is a long way from the Father of Waters.

The new fort brought only brief peace and little confidence along the border. Tragic massacres of

Gov. Glen was replaced by his successor, William Henry Lyttelton in June 1756. The new arrival, at the time age 31 and a rather able scholar, was a "short, slim man with expensive epicurean tastes and more political influence than any other governor in the history of the colony." But ties to virtually everybody in the contemporary English "Who's Who" hardly impressed or intimidated the "bipeds of the forest" with whom he was soon in collision. In addition he demonstrated unmatched genius for irritating the colonial bigwigs.

The new governor's first act was to disband Glen's expedition of provincials who, at the time of Lyttelton's arrival, were already en route to the Overhill country to build a fort there—led by Glen himself, accompanied by William Gerard De Brahm, a well-known engineer, and Dr. Alexander Garden, a Charleston physician interested in a botanical research trip. (It was he for whom the gardenia was named.) With the rug pulled out from under him, Glen reluctantly returned from Ninety Six to Charles Town. Lyttelton nevertheless did get the Overhill fort (Loudoun) built at the close of 1756.

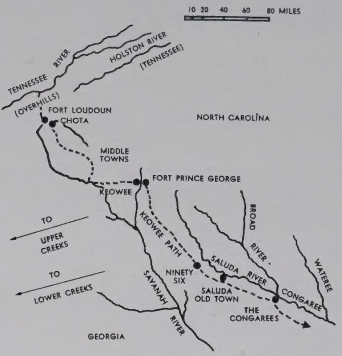
In the mid-1750s, an undeclared war was flickering like summer lightning throughout the frontier. Indian irritation was enhanced by the continuing disorderly behavior of the English traders who constantly alienated them. It ultimately led to a most ugly war.

Although as intriguing as, and more complex than, a TV serial, the narrative of this involved imbroglio cannot be fully told in limited space. Near the Little Saluda River, some Cherokees were ambushed and murdered. Protests were sent to Charles Town, with the Indians blaming renegade whites. Soon, two white settlers were brutally killed. Marauding Indians were increasingly engaged in horse stealing along the Virginia border, where a Virginian who called them "Brothers" met the retort, "No, no—no Brothers. English damned Rogues." Gov. Lyttelton's pleas to the Overhill leaders to impose restraints were simply met by more scalpings. Even William Richardson, Presbyterian missionary, retreated from hostile Chota and fled to Keowee. Here also, "save for the members of the Keowee ball team who tried to get him to use his magic on their behalf, his message of Christian love fell on barren ground."

Most of the friction originated with the Overhill group, with the Lower Towns in the Keowee area remaining reasonably friendly and conciliatory until 1759—with that harmony sadly undone when three young English officers from Ft. Prince George assaulted three Indian women in their homes. As the eye-for-an-eye turmoil spread swiftly and frightfully beyond the control of elderly chiefs, Gov. Lyttelton started mustering 1,400 militiamen.

Statesmanship and good discipline could even yet have averted tragedy. Thirty-one Indians, including some leaders, accepted the risk of going deep into English territory in behalf of peace and started to Charles Town in October 1759, to try to conciliate matters and to defuse the situation. Despite the dignified statements of these Indians, the governor refused to talk to them, but did offer them safe conduct back home—only to arrest them treacherously at the Congarees. From there they were hauled westward to Ft. Prince George and there all 31 were locked in a room designed for six. The governor, leading an army of 1,299 men, had headed the imposing but threatening expedition which captured and transported the Cherokee "peace delegation." The young former English ambassador to Portugal who now served as governor could share the blame with older Council members who had given him poor advice.

CHEROKEE COUNTRY 1740-1762



At the fort, the governor ordered 24 of the most prominent of his unwilling guests held as hostages until such time as the Indians delivered to him 24 natives responsible for the earlier murders of 24 whites. His Excellency then returned to Charles Town. Matters were hardly secure, especially with his colonial troops deserting in panic in the face of both smallpox and measles epidemics. They left behind the weak fort which contained a small room crowded with important hostages for an exchange unlikely to be made by a most sullen and now-aroused Cherokee nation.

Gradually the horrors of Indian war multiplied along the Saluda, Rabourn's Creek, Bush River, Long Canes, the Reedy and other backcountry valleys. A massacre at Long Canes took off over 50 whites butchered in one fell swoop, including John C. Calhoun's paternal grandmother.

Full-scale conflict to be known thereafter as the Cherokee War erupted, beginning at Ft. Prince George in 1760 when an unpopular English lieutenant there was wounded—an event which resulted in a bloody retaliation that involved the killing in cold blood of all the Indian hostages held on order of the governor, with the deed committed with savage barbarity and brutality. No longer was there a Cherokee peace faction: they all instantly became hawks. Both sides promptly showed themselves devoid of mercy; for example, at the Ninety Six stockade, the besieged whites scalped Indians and fed their bodies to their dogs.

Facing a grave smallpox epidemic, financial problems, and

Cherokees on the warpath, the colonial government—led by Lt. Gov. William Bull Jr., following Lyttelton's promotion to the governorship of Jamaica—applied to Gen. Jeffrey Amherst, then in New York, for British regulars to supplement hard-pressed colonials in what was becoming big war. About 1,200 Redcoats arrived in April 1760, under Col. Archibald Montgomery. Storming westward, they sacked and burned Little Keowee, Estatoe, Sugar Town and other villages as they successfully relieved Ft. Prince George. From there they invaded the mountains as far as the Middle Towns, only to be repulsed (but not overwhelmed) near present Franklin, North Carolina. Blithely holding that he had accomplished his mission, Col. Montgomery now headed off to Canada to rejoin Amherst but left some Royal Scots behind as a local defense of the colony. His assessment of the situation was more optimistic than accurate. South Carolinians were thoroughly irked with the British for not having finished the job, Eliza Lucas Pinckney saying that Montgomery had only "exasperated the Indians to more cruel revenge."

The English garrison over at Ft. Loudoun among the Overhills was now isolated, but the Cherokees grudgingly agreed that this force might evacuate and retire to Ft. Prince George provided they left all their munitions behind. After the Indians found that these troops had hidden some munitions and taken more with them, they ambushed the retiring garrison and took the entire group prisoners. Their fate was sad. With this, the whole war was reopened.

In 1761 the British again responded to an SOS from Carolina and sent 1,600 men with Col. James Grant, an able man but one * so contentious that he managed to get into a feud with nearly all of his Carolina associates and into a duel with Thomas Middleton. With the province militia joining him, Grant led 1,150 men to Ft. Prince George and then proceeded across the mountains, burning not only a number of Cherokee towns and villages but also so many crops that the Indians were brought to the verge of starvation and reduced to eating roots, berries and horses.

After his destructive march in Sherman-like fashion, Grant returned eastward to Ft. Prince George. The Indians then sued for peace and found Gov. Bull reasonable, humane and pragmatic. He had long argued for a policy of moderation and negotiation, preferring at most limited war even if the colony had to agree to "terms that perhaps may not be thought suitable, according to the Rules of Honour, observed among Europeans." The Assembly disagreed, certain that the only thing "that will have any Effect to bring these Savages to a firm and lasting Peace is to destroy as many of their People as we can." The dilemma of "limited war" versus the danger of "total victory" is not a new one.

The treaty which Bull made restored prisoners, reestablished the trade, granted the right to England to build forts anywhere, and provided certain procedures for handling criminals. More significant, a boundary was finally established between English and Indian country (partially the present Greenville-Spartanburg county line, and then southwestwardly, east of Anderson). Thus in 1761 South Carolina seceded from the French and Indian War (which lasted formally until 1763) and ended its own nasty conflict which began from small beginnings and which could have been averted by more sober heads less disposed to overreach themselves and not determined to take full opportunity of every piddling advantage.

At least, from the Carolina view, the subduing of the Cherokees at long last cleared the way for the safer settlement of the back country. If so, it paid off, because in the next few years the Scotch-Irish poured into the Piedmont in floods.

* Earlier, ca 1758 at Fort Pitt, George Teter's brother Samuel is said to have fought under Col. Grant, before Gen Forbes arrived.

The Upper Part of Greenville County, South Carolina

(This omits Pearis)

By

Mann Batson

115/CAN

FAMILY HISTO
35 N WE
SALT LAKE CI

DATE MICROFILMED
FEB 7 1996
ITEM # 1
PROJECT and ROLL # X LIB 7-102 3890
G. S. CALL # 1698189

CHAPTER

I

The Upper Part of Greenville County: Governmental and Geographic

The first permanent settlement in South Carolina was at Charleston in 1670. Settlers made their way into the back country much more rapidly than representation, benefits and services ordinarily provided by the government. Law enforcement, court services, convenient facilities for transacting legal business, and internal improvements were centered in Charleston. As more people moved into the upper part of the state, the General Assembly, controlled by the lowcountry, reluctantly took some actions to meet the needs of the people of the upcountry.

A CHRONOLOGY

1769 —The Old Ninety-Six Judicial District was formed.

1777 —The Treaty of Dewitts Corner was signed. In this treaty the Indians abandoned the Greenville area.

1784 — The South Carolina Legislature opened the Indian land for settlement with a land office in Pendleton. Colonel John Thomas and commissioners prepared to survey the territory.

1785 —Ninety-Six District was divided into six districts (counties) including Abbeville.

1786, March 22 — Greenville (County) was separated from Abbeville. Greenville was entitled to have a court with its first justices: John Ford, Ambrose Blackburn, James

Blassingame, Thomas Jenkins, Lemuel James Alston, Isaac Morgan, Obediah Hooker, Henry M. Wood.

1787 — Court was held in various places in Greenville District with records.

1788 — Greenville sent three delegates, Lemuel J. Alston, Samuel Earle, and John Thomas, Jr., to act on the Federal Constitution. The election was held at Alston's home.

1789 — Greenville District was first given representation in the South Carolina Legislature: James Harrison, senator; Lemuel J. Alston and Robert Maxwell, representatives.

1790 — Delegates from Greenville helped frame the South Carolina Constitution: Samuel Earle, Robert Maxwell, John Thomas, Jr., and James Tarrant.

1791 — Washington District was created. It was made up of Greenville and Pendleton Counties. Court was held at Pickensville. Washington District existed until 1799.

1793 — Commissioners were appointed to select a place for a permanent county seat for Greenville District. The commissioners were: Henry M. Wood, Larkin Tarrant, John Thomas, Jr., and James Harrison Barrett.

1794 — Wrangling caused the appointment of another commission.

1797 — These commissioners selected a spot at the falls of Reedy River on the land of Lemuel J. Alston for the location of the public buildings.

THE ORIGINAL LAND AND INHABITANTS

Prior to alteration by the white settlers, the woodlands in the upper portion of South Carolina were carpeted with grass. The wild pea vine grew as high as a horse's back, and wild strawberries were so plentiful that they would color the horse's hoof. The trees were large and stood so far apart one could see a great distance. The grasses and pea vines prevented the development of scrubby undergrowth.

The original inhabitants were Cherokee Indians, a prominent Indian tribe. They lived in numerous villages, cultivated many patches, harvested thousands of bushels of corn, and eventually had their own alphabet. Over a vast area extending from Minnesota to Florida, they trapped and killed many deer. Hides were shipped to all parts of the world through Charleston. It is said that some of these hides were used to clothe the army of Napoleon as it conquered the powers of Europe.

The homes built by the Indians were fairly comfortable, as strange as that might seem. Usually they were sixteen feet wide and sixty or seventy feet long, excluding the hot house. The hot house was a small room adjoining the main house where a fire was kept at all times during the winter. The walls of the hot house or the entire house were made by placing a number of stakes in the ground and weaving saplings between them. After this was completed, the sides were plastered with clay, making a good wall. The roof was of poles and bark.

The Cherokee Indians were susceptible to the diseases of the white man. Smallpox invaded their tribes, killing large numbers. Many who survived committed suicide when they saw the pockmarks on their faces.

Most of the Indians left this area about the 1780s. However, as recently as one hundred and twenty years ago, they could be seen traveling across this section.

Many implements and weapons of the red man have been picked up over the entire county. One area that has produced many relics is near the junction of the South Saluda and Oolenoy Rivers. At this point many weights or chunky stones, hide-scrapers, arrowheads, pottery and pipes have been found, proving that the Indians once lived, hunted, and fought there.

Mr. Hal Mayfield owned many relics that he had found on the family farm located on the South Saluda River. It was easy to pick up hundreds of pieces of pottery after the bottoms were plowed each year. His collection included weights, chunky stones, tobacco rougheners, arrowheads, spearheads, hide-scrapers, tomahawk heads, and pipes.

" 'In the settlement of the country, three distinct classes were forerunners of the civilization that was to follow: the hunters and trappers, the traders, and the cow drivers. There were also adventurous spirits and hardy adventurers who would penetrate the wilds of the Indian domain accommodating themselves to the usage of Indian life and living with them upon friendly terms. First in the line of settlement came the hunters and trappers. With their improved firearms for hunting, they made themselves very useful to their hosts, the simple denizens of the forest. Often they lived with them for years and intermarried with their women. Instances have been recorded where white men who had been lost to civilization and to all intercourse with their own race for thirty or forty years have been found among Indian tribes. Doubtless this was the case in the first settlement of Greenville and the Western counties of South Carolina. . . .

" 'After the hunters came the traders, carrying on horseback through the paths and trails of the unbroken forest the trinkets and commodities suited to the wants and tastes of their wilder brothers, and for which they received in return loads of valuable furs and skins.

" 'In 1732,' says Dr. Ramsey, in his history of South Carolina, 'there were received in Charleston 230,000 deer skins from the Cherokee nation alone, while it enjoyed a profitable trade of the same kind with other tribes living not so remote. . . .

" 'After the traders were the cattlemen, who taking up their abode among the Indians, availed themselves without price, of the limitless stretches of pasture lands to establish the profitable business of raising cattle for which an easy market was found' " (S.S. Crittenden, *The Greenville Century Book).*

The upper part "teemed with wild life. Bears and panthers, deer and wildcats roamed at large. The deadly rattlesnake lurked in waiting for its victim. Down to the outbreak of the Revolution, herds of buffaloes grazed in the grassy prairie regions. And if the last of these disappeared beyond the mountains by 1775 their deep worn trails leading to favored licks and ranges persisted for many years afterwards, as was the case with piles of bones of the slaughtered animals, whose tongues, hides and flesh were all held more desirable both by Indians and by white hunters" (D. Huger Bascot, *The S.C. Upcountry at the End of the Eighteenth Century*).

The cane flourished best in the valleys, on certain rich soils on lower grounds near the streams, but was also frequently found growing luxuriantly on the tops of the highest hills.

"The cane growth of the country soon became the standard by which the earlier settlers estimated the value of the land. If it grew no higher than five feet, or the height of a man's head, the soil was deemed ordinary; but a growth of twenty or thirty feet indicated the highest degree of fertility. Hence, all the early settlements of the upper country were planted on, or near, the rich hillsides of rivers and creeks" (Logan, p. 11, *History of the Upper Country of S.C.*). "The great cane brakes of Saluda were then almost impenetrable from the richness of the soil, and rankness of the growth. The first corn planted on the Saluda bottoms was by digging up the cane roots with a mattock" (Crittenden, p. 23).

Land transactions from the State of South Carolina to Benjamin Clark and from Benjamin Clark to Benjamin Merritt point out that the Indians had lived on the land located on the North Fork of Saluda River in the vicinity of Merrittsville and the North Saluda Reservoir. The tract or parcel of land transferred included the old Town House, so specified in the grant. Town houses were social and ceremonial centers for Cherokee villages.

Once Greenville District was opened up, a major responsibility of the government was distribution of vacant land. The position of Commissioner of Locations was established for this purpose and John Thomas, Sr., was named to this office. John Thomas, Sr., had been very active in the Revolution. He had served as commander of the Spartan Regiment until age became an impediment. The command then passed to one of his sons, John Thomas, Jr. After the war was over, father and son moved to Greenville District, where the older man established his homestead on the Tyger River. This same property passed into the hands of Judge Thomas Edwards, a Revolutionary War veteran, and later to Judge Belton O'Neall, for whom O'Neall township is named. The house built by one of these gentlemen can be seen today on the east side of Highway 101 just north of Lake Cunningham Fire Station near the Tyger River.

Another major undertaking of the government was determining the location of the county seat and providing the necessary buildings in which to conduct the business of government. A commission made up of Henry M. Wood, Larkin Tarrant, John Thomas, Jr., and James Harrison Barrett recommended in December, 1793, a site at the west end of Paris Mountain near the present location of Reedy River Church. "Dissatisfaction" arose among the inhabitants of Greenville County and another commission was appointed. Members were Reverend James Tarrant, John McBeth, Peter Sarter, Isaac Green, Paul Abner, Samuel Walker, William Anderson, Robert Nelson, Martin Adams,

Thomas Edwards

Thomas Edwards was in the area and offered entertainment to travelers and drovers shortly after 1800. His place was located at the intersection of Highway 414 and Highway 25.

Hodges Place

"It was a distance of twenty-four miles from Greenville, that we reached the house of Colonel Hodges, half inn and half farm house according to the custom of these parts; the keepers of such houses being almost all dignified with military titles, as Captain, Major, Colonel and even General, and in some instances they are also Judges. The former are pure militia titles, which when once enjoyed by ever so short a service, continue through life" (J.S. Buckingham, Esq., *The Slave States of America*).

Colonel Wilson Barton

Just above Hodges was a stopping place for travelers owned and operated by Colonel Wilson Barton prior to his departure to Texas.

"The Basin Spring Tract of Land formerly occupied by Colonel Wilson Barton, as a farm and stand for the entertainment of travelers and stock drivers" (*SP*, Aug. 10, 1854).

The Mountain House

"The Mountain House is only eight miles from the village [Greenville]. It is situated on top of Paris Mountain, commanding an extensive view of the surrounding country, including Georgia and North Carolina. The house is kept by Mr. Jordan P. Poole, and will be found a delightful place in July and August. Its elevation is five or six hundred feet above adjoining country. There is a good road to the top of the mountain" (*SP*, June 16, 1853).

In September, 1856 Dr. Randall Croft in passing wrote : "This mountain [Paris], about eight miles from Greenville village, has a hotel on its summit, kept by our worthy citizen, Dr. Hillhouse, who is kind and assiduous in his attention to his guests."

In January, 1893 the following ad appeared: "That valuable property, known as the Paris Mountain Hotel, will be sold at public outcry on next salesday, Monday, February 6th. This hotel has twenty-two sleeping rooms, besides the kitchen, dining room and other public rooms, all of which are fully furnished and the building is supplied with water and electric bells. There are 125 acres of land attached to the hotel, and good stables, servants' houses, laundry and other outhouses, all of which are advertised for sale on the day named."

Named for Richd Pearis

Paris Mountain House

"The subscriber has leased this establishment from the proprietor, Dr. J.P. Hillhouse, and will have it open for the reception of guests about the 25th inst. It is beautifully located upon the summit of Paris Mountain at an elevation of more than 1,000 feet above the surrounding country, having an exhilarating mountain atmosphere, and commanding from the piazza an unbroken view of Glassy Mountain, the Tyger, Enoree, and Saluda Mountains, Table Rock, Caesar's Head, the Blue Ridge and various mountains in Georgia. It also overlooks Greenville Village and the greater portions of Greenville and Pickens Districts.

"It is accessible by safe and easy road, and is situated within one mile of the main road leading from Greenville to Asheville, being within eight miles of Greenville, ten miles of Chick Springs and eighteen miles of Table Rock and Caesar's Head.

"A hack will run daily to Greenville Village. A liberal share of public favor is respectfully solicited. JORDAN A. POOLE" (*SP*, May 12, 1853).

Look Out For The Flag

"Mr. Elliott Johnson, manager of the Hotel Altamont, will in a few days raise a flag pole 76 feet high. A large Palmetto Flag twelve by twenty-one feet will float from it.

"Paris Mountain has an altitude of 2,054 feet above the level of the sea, seventy-six feet added gives 2,130 as the

these he was killed and scalped, thus becoming the first victim of the most bloody massacre ever suffered by the Carolinians at the hands of the Cherokees. The place of his death was on the Estotoe river in present Pickens County, in a narrow pass between two mountains. After killing the young man, the Indians proceeded to the residence of Richard Pearis, where the daughter of Pearis, recognizing "the raven locks of her lover" in the bloody scalp displayed by the savages, knew only too well what were their intentions. In an effort to save the family of her lover from the sad fate which had already befallen him, she set out on foot to warn the Hite family of its impending danger. But whether this dusky maid of the forests reached her destination and had her warning disregarded, or was overtaken by the Indians and brought back before she had delivered her message, is unknown. At any rate, the Hite family was visited by the Indians and paid a fearful toll.

When information reached the frontier that the Indians had taken up the tomahawk, there was great alarm among those adhering to the Patriot cause. Quickly they set about strengthening the crude forts and block houses which had been constructed along the Indian boundary during the troublous days of the French and Indian war, and into these rough fortifications many of them fled, taking as much as possible of their portable property with them. Still there were others who remained at their homes—some because no fort was within reach, and others because they thought the Indians would pass them by on account of past friendships. But it was only among those who had espoused the cause of the province that a feeling of impending danger existed, for secret messengers had previously advised the Tories that they would be safe from attack, if their loyalty to the King were shown by the erection of peeled poles, wrapped around with white cloth, before their homes. This emblem, or badge of loyalty to the King, was referred to as "the passover" and was to be a sign to the Indians to leave that household undisturbed. Sad to relate, many were the passovers erected among the frontiersmen.

Since the commencement of the war, Cameron and his Tory friends had neglected no opportunity to poison the minds of the Indians against the Whigs, and in July, 1776, the savages marched to the attack. After killing young Hite, they proceeded to the Pearis plantation where they were joined by a number of Tories. Then they moved on to the home of the sorely distressed Hite family, where Colonel Hite and a number of his children were killed, and his wife taken captive. From here a number of the savages moved southward, into what is now Laurens County, killing Miss Austin of the Gilder creek section on their way; but the major portion of the red invaders turned toward the north and into the territory which is now Spartanburg County. The Indians going toward the south probably joined a larger body which had gone out from the Indian towns down through present Anderson, Abbeville, and Greenwood Counties. Having effected a union, these Indians joined forces with a body of Tories which was moving to the attack of Lindley's fort, located near the mouth of Rabun creek in the present county of Laurens. Here a large number of the residents of that section had taken refuge, hoping the better to defend themselves against the enemy. Upon reaching the fort, however, the savages and their Tory allies, painted as Indians, were repulsed, since a portion of the regiment of Colonel Williams had moved there and was awaiting their coming.

The body of Indians turning northward from the Hite home next visited the Hampton plantation. Here Mr. Hampton, his wife, his son, Preston, who had recently returned from his mission to the Cherokee country, and a grandson (infant child of James Harrison), were killed and their home burned. Another grandson, John Bynum, was captured and carried away into the Indian country, where he was held prisoner for several months. The Hampton family here suffering so heavily at the hands of the savages, was the same which produced the immortal Wade. His grandfather, also named Wade, was at the time with the army of North Carolina. James Harrison, father of the slain child, later moved to the "Great Cane Brake" in Greenville County and became the head of that large and illustrious family, living today throughout all the upper counties of the state. In later years, B. F. Perry of Greenville was to engage in a duel with a descendant of the captured grandson, John Bynum.

Now the savages, having taken up the tomahawk in earnest, were not to be stayed in their bloody course. Wherever the whites could be found they were murdered in cold blood, the "passover" itself being small protection. Captain Ford, a well-known Tory, was killed as he sat in his yard under the peeled pole which he had raised for the protection of himself and family, and two of his daughters were taken captive. Among others killed were Mr. John Miller and a Mr. Orr. These two, together with a Mr. Leach, were returning from Poole's Iron Works (near the present city of Spartanburg) to their homes in the Gowensville section of today, when, as they crossed a crude bridge over Middle Tyger river, several Indians sprang from their place of hiding under the bridge and struck them down. Mr. Leach escaped with his life by feigning death. The Hannon family, residing near the present town of Landrum, was visited, and Mr. Hannon, several of his older children, and a baby were killed. Another victim was a Mr. Bishop then residing near present Shiloh church in Spartanburg County. He was killed and three of his children carried away. Later these children were recovered by a brother-in-law, Mr. Davy Lewis, ancestor of the Wingo families of the Gowensville section of Greenville County. In fact, so many were the atrocities committed and so savage was the Indian in his attack as he swept from one to another of the frontier settlements, that abject terror seized the inhabitants. Those who had not been killed or captured fled the country or found protection in the border forts, leaving their homes to be plundered and burned, and their growing crops destroyed.

And while matters were in this sad state, a Captain Howard, who resided within the Indian country, a few miles northwest of the present Gowensville settlement, was able to organize a small company of men from among the number, who like himself, had taken refuge in the old Block House. This old fort is still standing, having been converted into a residence, and may be seen in traveling north from Landrum to Tryon along the old road connecting these two towns. It is said that the Greenville-Spartanburg County line, as well as the North Carolina-South Carolina line, pass through it. Among those taking part in this expedition was Captain (later Colonel) John Earle, the illustrious ancestor of so many present-day Greenville County c[illegible]ns. Equipping themselves as best they could from the meager resources [illegible]his little band of resolute men, led by a sturdy moun-

CHAPTER VII.

INDIAN MASSACRE OF 1776

AFTER the flare-up of 1775 had subsided, a majority of the frontier settlers were doubtless friendly to the Patriot cause, but their proximity to the Indian country kept them from taking an active part in the war. They knew that Alexander Cameron, deputy superintendent of Indian affairs under the Crown, had taken up his residence among the Cherokees and was exerting every effort to secure the assistance of the Indians in behalf of the British. And they also knew that the success of his plans would bring the Indians down upon them in all the fury of a savage massacre; and should this happen, they desired to be free from military obligations which might call them away from their frontier homes.

During the early summer of 1776, the frontiersmen began to feel that all was not well in the Cherokee country. Rumors to the effect that the Indians had chosen the side of the King and were making preparations for a raid upon the settlements drifted in. And knowing that something must be done at once if the Indians were to be induced to remain neutral, the settlers in present Greenville and Spartanburg Counties thought it well to send emissaries into the towns of the Cherokee country to urge those deluded people to continue the friendship which had existed between them and the whites since the close of the French and Indian war. Among those to go were Captain Edward Hampton and his brother, Preston, who resided a few miles east of the Indian boundary, four or five miles northeast of the present town of Greer.

number of the savages moved southward, into what is now Laurens County, killing Miss Austin of the Gilder creek section on their way; but the major portion of the red invaders turned toward the north and into the territory which is now Spartanburg County. The Indians going toward the south probably joined a larger body which had gone out from the Indian towns down through present Anderson, Abbeville, and Greenwood Counties. Having effected a union, these Indians joined forces with a body of Tories which was moving to the attack of Lindley's fort, located near the mouth of Rabun creek in the present county of Laurens. Here a large number of the residents of that section had taken refuge, hoping the better to defend themselves against the enemy. Upon reaching the fort, however, the savages and their Tory allies, painted as Indians, were repulsed, since a portion of the regiment of Colonel Williams had moved there and was awaiting their coming.

History of Greenville County, South Carolina

Chapter I.

BEFORE THE WHITE MAN

Tradition says that Ferdinand DeSoto was the first white man to set foot upon the soil of the great South Carolina Piedmont. Here he reports finding precious metals. But if his heart was attuned to appreciate the grandeur of nature he discovered other things than gold; for many of those who followed speak in glowing terms regarding the beauty of the Appalachian foot-hills during that early period.

James Adair, an Indian trader, who had traveled much for his day, says of the Carolina mountains and the great expanse lying at their feet: "From the historical description of the Alps and a personal view of the Cherokee mountains, I conclude the Alps are much inferior to several of those mountains in height and rockiness. The upper part of South Carolina, we repeat, is full of interesting scenery; her mountains present every variety of the wild, abrupt, sublime, beautiful, grand, and awful. Her rivers offer numerous cascades, placid surfaces, foaming torrents, and deep waters; the climate is the most delightful in the world, the Montpelier of the United States (as the amiable Abbi Corri, Ambassador of the King of Portugal, observed when he visited the State), the seat of Hygeia herself."

Of a period somewhat earlier than that in which Adair wrote, Landrum, in his Colonial and Revolutionary History of Upper South Carolina, relying upon other writers, says: "The face of our country (referring to Piedmont, South Carolina, at the time white men discovered it) was a region of romance, interspersed here and there with forests, prairies, and great canebrakes which lined not only the valleys and streams, but stretched over the evergreen surface of the country for miles. The woodlands were carpeted with grass, and the wild pea vine grew, it is said, as high as a horse's back, while flowers of every description were seen growing all around. The forests were imposing, the trees were large and stood so wide apart that deer and buffalo could be seen at a long distance."

Later, but while the up-country of South Carolina still retained its primeval beauty, Governor James Glen wrote of it, "I should be afraid to indulge the liberty of copying (referring to the Indian descriptions) lest I should be thought drawing a picture or painting a landscape."

And through the towering forests, and across the great open plains of the up-country of this early day, there roamed great herds of buffaloes, elk, and deer; while back in the recesses of the mountains and among the great canebrakes of the larger streams were to be found the bear, wolf, wildcat, and panther in great numbers. Everywhere the fleet-footed fox, both red and grey, was in evidence; and about the streams were innumerable beavers, otters, and muskrats. Wild turkeys, often weighing as much as fifty pounds each, it is said, were too numerous even for them to be made objects of pursuit.

Into this country of transcendent beauty, where luxuriant grasses and flowers grew everywhere, abounding in game of every kind, the first settlers came to find the land in undisputed possession of the Cherokee Indians. Long before Carolina was known to history, her great piedmont and mountain section was occupied by the Creek Indian. Living beyond the Ohio were the Cherokees, a nation of hardy warriors of the Iroquoian stock, who came down from the Great Lakes region. Growing in numbers, the Cherokees began to look with envious eyes toward the marvelous hunting grounds of the Creeks stretching below them, and becoming strong, they moved over the mountains and pushed the weaker Creeks before them till they were soon in undisputed possession of all the mountains and foot-hills of the present States of Tennessee, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia.

The Catawbas emigrated South about the year 1582, supposedly from Canada, and established themselves in the north central part of South Carolina, upon the territory of the Old Cheraws. Both the Cherokees and the Catawbas were powerful nations, and conflict between them was inevitable. They met upon the east bank of the Broad river, and there ensued one of the most terrible battles ever fought upon the soil of South Carolina. Neither gained a victory, but each, realizing the strength of the other, after fighting from sun to sun, with a loss of 1,600 warriors on both sides, decided there were lands enough for both. So a treaty of peace was entered into, by the terms of which (and they were faithfully kept) the Catawbas were to remain on the east side of the Catawba, and the Cherokees were to confine themselves to the west of the Broad, while the territory between these two rivers was to become a common hunting ground for the two peoples. And as a consequence of this treaty, that portion of South Carolina now forming the counties of York, Chester, Fairfield and Richland thereafter contained no permanent Indian settlements.

The Cherokees, who inhabited the up-country when the Carolinians first knew it, did not differ greatly in appearance and habits from the other Indians of the colony. However, dwelling in a colder climate, they lived more generally in huts than did those nearer the coast, and confined themselves to hunting rather than fishing. Being hut dwellers and having few navigable rivers on which they could easily move from place to place, the Cherokees were less nomadic than most Indians, and as a consequence they had a deeper love for their homelands than did the others. This attachment for the hill country of their ancestors caused them to become formidable foes when the whites sought to drive them out in later years. It is said by some of the early writers that the Cherokees were the most intelligent, as well as the most numerous of any Indian tribe in South Carolina. They were never defeated by another Indian people.

The Cherokee Nation was divided into three distinct settlements, known as the upper, middle and lower. That portion of the tribe in South Carolina was of the lower settlement, and lived principally in towns located along the Savannah, Tugaloo, Seneca and Keowee rivers. There is positive evidence, however, of their having lived in very nearly all sections of the piedmont region. But when the white man first knew them, their principal towns were all located in what are now Oconee and Pickens Counties, while the balance of their land was used as hunting grounds. Of their towns, Keowee is the best known. It was located some 12 miles west of the present town of Pickens. Other towns were Estatoe, Quacoretchie, Toxawaw, Aconnee, Sugar Town, Toogoola, Tussee, Old Estatohe, and Tururaw.

But regardless of the fact that the Cherokees were a numerous and warlike people, residing in a country easily defended, the early settlers found them to be kind-hearted and friendly toward the whites. In fact these Indians never gave a moment's concern to the traders and cattlemen, who came and went at will in their country, till near the middle of the eighteenth century when they were being grossly deceived, and defrauded of their lands by the Carolina government.

Around the Cherokees and their early contact with the whites many beautiful romances have been woven. Chief among these is that beautiful little story of Cateechee and Allen Francis. Who, hearing the story, has not felt his heart thrill in admiration for this brave little Indian girl, who with no thought for her own life, raced from Keowee to Ninety-Six, across trackless forests to warn her lover of an intended attack by the Indians? Many versions have appeared in print, but that from the pen of Mrs. Louise A. Vandiver, in her recent History of Anderson County, is very striking. In part it is:

"It is said that long ago a young Englishman named Allen Francis taught an Indian School at Keowee. Among his pupils was Cateechee, a Choctaw maid, captive of Kuruga, a Cherokee Chief. In her own tongue her name was Issaqueena. Both words mean deer's head. The two fell in love with each other, and when Allen left the Indian settlement it was with a promise to return for his dusky sweetheart at some future day. He went to Fort Cambridge and established himself there in a trading business with his father and brother.

"One night Cateechee overheard Kuruga and his warriors planning an attack on Fort Cambridge, intending to massacre all the white people living there.

"The girl determined to save her lover. After the Indians were asleep she stole away to go to the fort, 96 miles from Keowee, and warn the white people of their danger. When morning came she was missed, and the Cherokees, suspecting her errand, started in pursuit.

"As she ran, a succession of mountain streams crossed her path, and she named them as she sped on, comforting herself with the sound of the number of miles she had thrown behind her. At nightfall, footsore and exhausted, she told her tale. When, a little later the Indians reached the place, the fort was garrisoned, and the attack repulsed.

"Naturally Cateechee remained among the people whom she had saved, and she and Francis were married. For several years they lived among the people of the little town, then called Ninety-Six in memory of her race with death over ninety-six miles of forest."

From this point the story continues, telling how the lovers were later captured by the infuriated Kuruga and carried back to Keowee, where after being held for a time, they made their escape and hid in a stump from which comes the name "Stump-House Mountain" in present Oconee County.

A beautiful little story it is, but nothing more, as the facts clearly show. Till 1759 the Cherokees were friends of the whites and committed no massacres. Yet long before this Ninety-Six and all the creeks and rivers between Keowee and that settlement had been named. In 1730 George Hunter made a map of the Cherokee country on which appears the name of Ninety-Six and all of the numerically named creeks between there and Keowee. He says these names were given by early Indian traders. There were no settlers in that part of the country till after 1738, when the site of Ninety-Six was granted to Thomas Brown, and no fort was built there till the time of the Revolution.

But as Mrs. Vandiver says: "At any rate it is a pretty legend, and if the annals of a people or a land be shorn of legend and tradition, none but the Gradgrind family will ever read its history." This is true. We want our facts embellished with somewhat of fiction, and to meet this desire the historian often forgets to say what is fact and what legend, with the result that in future years we find ourselves trying to disprove such stories as Washington and the cherry tree, which was so beautifully told by Parson Weems.

CHAPTER II.

TRADERS, HUNTERS AND CATTLE MEN

RECORDED history tells us of no one who resided in the Piedmont, even temporarily, before the establishment of the first permanent settlement at Charles Town in 1670. However, there is little doubt that it was only a few years after the settlement in Charles Town when white men began to push back from the coast into the up-country and on into the mountainous sections, where they established themselves as traders among the Cherokee Indians. In 1707 John Archdale, in his publication "A Fertile and Pleasant Province of Carolina", tells us that Charles Town then traded "near one thousand miles into the Continent." Anthony Park, one of the early settlers of what is now Newberry County, traveled several hundred miles into the Indian country, going west of the Alleghany mountains. In 1758 he recounted that in his journeyings he encountered a number of white men, chiefly Scotch and Irish, who told him that they had lived among the Indians as traders for more than 20 years, a few for 40 and 50 years, and one whose abode there had been for 60 years.

In advance of the regular settlers of the up-country two classes of whites were to be found. One was the Indian trader and the other "the cow drivers" or cattle men. The traders built posts at strategic points in the Indian nation and engaged in the exchange of guns, ammunition, rum and trinkets for the valuable furs and skins gathered by the savages. This was a profitable business for the traders because the Indians had no idea of the value of either his goods or those of the white man, and was easily cheated. The cow drivers selected desirable grazing lands and there herded cattle and horses in great numbers. They built "cowpens" where they collected and domesticated their cattle and horses for market. It being necessary for the cattle and horse men to have great open spaces for their ranges, this class of settlers was consequently found in more remote sections than was the trader. But in later days it was about these early "cowpens" that many of the towns and cities grew.

Having decided upon a suitable location, the trader or cattle man went to work, with the assistance of the Indians, and soon built for himself a dwelling house. Next was constructed a store house for the trader and "cowpens" for the cattle men. And after thus having established himself, the next act of the white man was to take an Indian maid for his wife, selecting, if possible, a daughter of some local chief. Of the primitive life of these pioneer settlers Logan, in his History of Upper South Carolina, says: "And it must not be taken for granted that because the bold adventurer, thus associated himself with the barbarian, that he was therefore cut off from any of the necessaries of life, or even from many of its luxuries. Under the care of his thrifty wife, his crib was usually well stored with corn, the yard swarmed with poultry and the common pastures with his swine, horses and cattle. Cherokee

women of intelligence made the best housekeepers on the continent; in their habits and persons, they were as cleanly as purity itself. The everyday life of the trader in the Nation was one of primitive and most delightful freedom and simplicity. No hollow-hearted etiquette, no grinding social customs, trammeled or annoyed him; he dressed as best suited him, and conformed to nothing except as his own taste dictated."

So profitable was the Indian trade that before the close of the eighteenth century it had become the most lucrative business in all Carolina. About every Cherokee town was to be found one or more trading posts, each doing an enormous annual business. The Indians, being naturally great hunters, were organized by these traders into efficient hunting units and periodically sent out into the game retreats, during the hunting season, well mounted, and fully supplied with rifles and ammunition. And from these hunting expeditions they usually returned bearing great quantities of deer, buffalo and bear skins, taken from their kill. These skins were readily exchanged for the goods of the traders, but upon a basis far below their value. And to add to the profits of the trader and stimulate hunting among the Indians, during the summer, when hunting could not be engaged in, the trading posts made advances to the red men to be liquidated during the following season. The savages being like children—always looking at the present with no thought for the future—were soon in a state of virtual slavery; but little did the trader care for the condition of his Indian neighbor so long as his profits continued to climb.

During the fall and winter, when hunting was in progress, the trader gathered his skins, cured them after the Indian fashion, and then packed them ready for transport to Charles Town when late spring and summer were at hand. Of course there were then no highways, as we know such, leading from these northern wildernesses to the coast; but the "pack-horse trains" furnished a satisfactory means of transportation for these primitive people. These "trains" consisted of from 10 to 50 or 100 horses moving in a body along one of the Indian trails or paths, guarded against attack from robbers or hostile Indians. On its return journey, the "train" bore goods to stock the trading posts, so there was always the much desired "two-way haul." And in the early fall these "pack-horse train" routes were used by the "cow-pen men" to drive their horses and cattle to market; hence there was almost continuous communication between the back country and the coast settlements. The route used by these "trains" was almost exclusively the romantic "Keowee Trail" which comes down to us in song and story.

Till 1716 trade with the Cherokee Nation was conducted solely under the auspices of individual enterprise; but now, partly for the sake of its enormous profits, and partly for the purpose of having better control of the Indians, in view of the public safety, the provincial government assumed the direction of all its affairs, and conducted them ever after, as a great public monopoly. But almost from the beginning there existed great abuses in the trade, since the rapid profits from it had drawn into the Indian nation many irresponsible men of the most despicable character. Even as early as 1707 so great had grown these abuses that the assembly, for the protection of the Indians and the honest traders, enacted a law providing for a board of commissioners to manage and direct everything relating to the Indian traffic. By this board, all traders were compelled to take out licenses, and post heavy bonds guaranteeing their compliance with such regulations as might be prescribed. For a time the board sent responsible agents into the nation to watch over the trade, but after a few years these became corrupt, and the law was permitted to fall into disuse. With its nullification, conditions in the Indian country fast passed from bad to worse, and, sad to relate, one of the most serious evils with which the trade had to contend at this period, was the settling on the border of ignorant, dissolute clergymen, who came pretending to be missionaries of the Cross, but who in reality proved to be grafting parasites, highly skilled in the art of appealing to the baser passions by arraying race against race.

Although trade relations had existed between the Carolinians and Cherokees for many years, and hundreds of traders and cattle men had established themselves throughout the Indian country, no actual treaty, or formal understanding, was entered into prior to 1730. Then Sir Alexander Cummings was sent out from England for the purpose of visiting the Cherokees in an effort to bring about a closer trade relation with that people. Sir Alexander landed in Charles Town, and accompanied by interpreters, he and his party set out for the Cherokee country on March 11, 1730, and following closely the "Keowee Trail", arrived at the Indian town of Keowee on March 25th. The Indians were called into conference and after much "speech-making" on both sides the savages promised everlasting friendship and allegiance to King George and his colony. Cummings, thinking to make the bond of friendship more lasting, invited the Indians to delegate some of their chiefs to accompany him back to England, where they might see and talk to the King, and personally secure from him expressions of his gratitude in knowing that the Cherokees were to remain the firm friends of his people in America. The invitation was accepted and six chieftains, including Atta Kulla Kulla, made the voyage to London, where they were showered with attentions and loaded with gifts. Here a formidable written instrument, full of high-sounding words, was prepared and signed by the Secretary for the Lords Commissioners of Trade and Plantations for the King, and by the marks of the Indian chiefs in behalf of the Cherokees. But regardless of the formalities attending the signing of this instrument, it was nothing more than a written expression of "friendship and good wishes" from each people to the other. It settled no differences, for none existed; and the Indians gave to the whites no greater rights in their country than they had freely exercised for many years.

The interval between 1721 and 1743 was no doubt the most prosperous period of the peltry trade, and the most peaceful in the relations of Carolina and the Cherokee nation. As late as 1731, when the trade had fallen off somewhat, there were collected from all quarters in Charles Town, as many as 225,000 deer skins alone. It is not known how many of these came from the Cherokee nation, but authorities hold that Piedmont Carolina at her best, furnished more deer skins than all other sources combined. And even as late as 1755, when the woods of upper Carolina had been well-nigh depleted of their game supply, it is known that there still came down to Charles Town, from the Cherokee country, in the neighborhood of 25,000 skins annually. From this it can be readily seen that the early traders of upper Carolina played a prominent part in the life of the colony.

But as the years went by and the trade fell off, the better class of traders gradually moved westward, leaving only the scum of a people who were not overly righteous at best. And these unprincipled men were at the bottom of most of the difficulties, which began to disrupt the Cherokee nation about 1743. Formerly each trader had a license for two towns, but about this time two, and even three, Arab-like peddlers began to skulk about a single town, exchanging spirituous liquors and cheating trifles for such skins as the Indian still might gather. From this sad state the transition to out-and-out lawlessness was easy; so by 1750 the entire Piedmont was dominated by outlaws who traveled about the country stealing horses from the cattle men and robbing pack-horse trains. As all officers of the law and courts of justice were located at Charles Town, more than 200 miles away, little could be done to relieve this deplorable condition. But in 1753, the first formal treaty with the Cherokees was signed, and thereafter the Carolinians were in a better position to cope with the situation, as they were given permission, by its terms, to build forts in the Indian nation. Fort Prince George was finished in 1755, and with its garrison to assist legitimate industry, conditions began to improve, and the opening of a new era for upper South Carolina was at hand.

In 1754 trouble arose in Europe between the French and English and this soon spread to America, involving all the colonies in the French and Indian war. General Braddock, having suffered defeat at the hands of the French and their Indian allies early in the conflict, the settlements of western Pennsylvania and Virginia were left fully exposed from the French fort Duquesne. This condition was alarming to many of those living there, and they began to look toward the south for new homes. The war had not yet been felt in the Carolinas, and with comparative quiet now prevailing there, great numbers of these frontiermen from Virginia and Pennsylvania decided to leave all and start their lives anew in the foot-hills of the two Carolinas. And before these newcomers, the last of the old traders and cattle men fled toward the west, for they saw in these sturdy Scotch-Irish immigrants the makings of a new order, and they had no desire to become a part of it.

Prior to the coming of the Virginia and Pennsylvania pioneers, practically all of the whites in upper South Carolina were of the adventurer type, who came with no thought of becoming permanent settlers, or of founding a new civilization. The black sheep of a noble family, the worthless son of a statesman, the religious fanatic, the moral or financial bankrupt, the rejected lover—all of these, and worse—became traders and cattle drivers in the Indian country, where they lived and reared families of half-breeds. If upon these the civilization of the up-country had been built, never would the state have produced the like of her Pickens, her Hamptons and her Calhoun. To the trader and early cattle men, we are deeply indebted, it is true, for they opened the way for the civilization to come, but luckily they were no part of that civilization.

Chapter III.

FORT PRINCE GEORGE BUILT

About the year 1750, the piedmont section of South Carolina began to receive its first permanent settlers. These did not come from the coast, however, but principally from Virginia, Pennsylvania and western New York, moving down the valleys of the Alleghanies, bringing their families and all their portable property with them. They were of the crude pioneer type, having little wealth and education, and living in close touch with nature. Every family supplied itself as best it could from the soil and forests. For the most part, these new settlers were Scotch-Irish, and adhered to the Presbyterian faith in religion. Some, however, were of the sturdy Quaker stock. But in contrast to these simple hard-working frontiersmen were the dwellers of the low country, who, by this time, had a well-formed social system, and established religion (Episcopal) and a great deal of accumulated wealth, with many families of culture and refinement. And in order to understand the sectional differences which have played such a prominent part in the social, political, and economic life of South Carolina, one must bear in mind the different types of people making up the citizenship of the up-state and the coastal section.

With the coming of the French and Indian war in 1754, both the French and the English were anxious to secure the aid of the various Indian tribes. The Cherokees had always been friends and allies of the English, but the French had never lost an opportunity to court their favor, so they now sent emissaries among them, with costly presents, who spoke in glowing terms of the advantages to be obtained by a French alliance. But the Cherokees were satisfied with existing conditions and hastened to assure the Carolinians that they would remain true to their pledge of friendship with the English. They expressed fears, however, of the French making an attack upon the colony by marching through their country. Such a move on the part of the French, they did not feel themselves strong enough to check, and an attack upon the Carolina frontier from their nation, they realized, might cause the English to question their sincerity. For years the government in Charles Town had realized that it was unprepared to withstand an attack upon its frontiers made from the Cherokee country, whether coming from the French or the Indians themselves. Now seemed an opportune time to gain the consent of the Cherokees to build a few forts at strategic points in their nation, so Governor Glen went out from Charles Town in 1755 to enter negotiations with the Cherokees, relative to securing sufficient lands in their territory upon which to build these fortifications.

The Governor and his party were met in one of the lower Indian towns by Atta Kulla Kulla, who, it will be remembered, had gone to England in the Cummings party, and about 500 warriors. Out of this conference came a formal treaty (the first between the Cherokees and Carolinians), by which the colony was given permission to build forts in the Indian country, and in addition it was granted a vast

territory of Indian lands of uncertain boundary. This treaty was reduced to writing and formally signed by Governor Glen for the colony, and Atta Kulla Kulla and other Indian chiefs for the Cherokees. The original is on file in the office of the Historical Commission at Columbia, and should prove interesting to those who delight in using high-sounding words and well-turned phrases to obscure their real meaning. Reading that document now, in the light of later events, one can but think it was the studied purpose of the Carolinians when preparing the instrument, to acquire color of title to a major portion of the Cherokee holdings while leading the trusting savages to think that only fort sites were being granted. If not, why the vagueness of wording? One taking title to land does not trust to such hidden meanings and vague descriptions as are found in this treaty. But regardless of the intention of the Cherokees, and in the face of vigorous protests from their chief, Atta Kulla Kulla, the Carolinians took possession of the major portion of the Indians' rich grazing and hunting lands in South Carolina, claiming it under the treaty. Roughly, this new acquisition comprised the territory now constituting the counties of Edgefield, McCormick, Greenwood, Abbeville, Laurens, Newberry, Union, Spartanburg, York, Cherokee, Chester, Fairfield, Richland, and a portion of Lexington. The Cherokees retained only that portion of the colony embraced within the present counties of Anderson, Greenville, Pickens, and Oconee. After the treaty was entered into, England made haste to erect a fort across the river from the Cherokee town of Keowee, and called it Fort Prince George. Another fortress was built on the Tennessee river and named Fort Loudon.

During the year of the Cherokee compact, General Braddock was defeated and for a time thereafter the French arms were in the ascendency, thus leaving the frontiers of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia exposed to French and Indian attacks from Fort Duquesne on the Ohio. Faced with this danger, great numbers of the settlers there turned southward to join their neighbors and friends who had already moved into upper South Carolina. Colonel Clarke had come from Virginia and settled on Pacolet river, in what is now Spartanburg County in 1750. Here he was now joined by eight or ten families from Pennsylvania, who established themselves on the three forks of Tyger river. They were Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, and within a few years established Nazareth church, out of which grew Fairview of present Greenville County. The names of some of these were Barry, Moore, Anderson, Collins, Thompson, Vernon, Pearson, Jamison, Dodd, Ray and Nichols, all names still common in Greenville and Spartanburg Counties. Patrick Calhoun (ancestor of John C.) settled on Long Cane in present Abbeville County in 1756, finding there two families who had preceded him, one of whom was named Gowdy, and the other Edwards. By 1760 this settlement had grown to a population of near 200. From 1751 to 1754, eight or ten families emigrated from Pennsylvania and settled on Fair Forest creek, in what is now Union County. First among these to come were George Story, James McIlwaine and a Mr. Dugan. Another settlement near the present town of Union was made from Pennsylvania about 1754. Among those constituting this community appear the well-known names of Brandon, Brogan, Jolly, Kennedy, and McJunkin. Settlements were made in present Newberry and Laurens Counties on waters of Enoree river, Kings creek, Gilders creek, Indian

creek, Duncan creek and Tyger river as early as 1749. Others are known to have taken up lands in all other of what are today referred to as Piedmont Counties, except such as were undeniably Cherokee territory. In fact, such a steady stream of immigration flowed in, that by 1759 there were several thousand inhabitants in the up-country.

How these new settlers came, and the manner in which they set about the task of making a home for themselves in this new country, is well described by Dr. William A. Schaper in his valuable work, "Sectionalism in South Carolina" in the following words: "The people came in groups, many driving their stock before them, from the frontiers of Pennsylvania, Virginia and North Carolina. They followed the great valleys and adjoining plateaus that run in a general southwesterly direction, from western Pennsylvania to northern Georgia. These natural highways afforded an easy approach to the uplands of South Carolina, where lands were fertile and far removed from the Indian disturbances of that time. They located first in Waxhaws, in what later became Lancaster District, and on the Cane Lands of Abbeville. From these points, settlement gradually spread over the more accessible tracts toward the mountains. These frontiersmen were mostly Scotch-Irish, a hardy band of frontiersmen who stood guard over the advancing civilization from the Carolinas to Western New York. Only the hunter and trapper, and the Indian trader had preceded them into the wilderness. But unlike their predecessors, they came to stay, at least long enough to see a more settled community arise. . . . The Carolina pioneers brought their families, their rude and scanty store of household goods, their crude implements, seed, and domestic animals, ready for the work of frontier farming. The first task was the building of the log cabin. This was the work of a day or two. With a jug of cider or whiskey to make merry, the pioneer invited his neighbor to lend a helping hand. . . . The furniture was scarce, but the faithful rifle always hung in the chimney corner within easy reach. . . . The great task of the pioneer was the work of clearing and breaking up the land. Each family owned from 50 to 200 or 300 acres. . . . They were almost completely shut in from the outside world. There were no navigable streams to join them with the civilized world or the older settlements. Below them was the middle country—a sandy tract, covered with dense pine forests. . . . In a region where every man must rely on his own strong arm and his rifle for the support and protection of his family, there are no distinctions. It was a strongly democratic society, then, that grew up here, typical of the West. Wealth accumulated very slowly and there were very few slaves until the close of the century. The people enjoyed their rude but wholesome life spent in close touch with nature."

And now had begun the actual settlement of the "back country", as it was then termed. For more than a half century, this great section had been the source of one of the colony's richest natural resources in its peltry trade; but that asset was about to give way for another—its sturdy Scotch-Irish men and women, who were to furnish the future state with some of her most conspicuous leaders in every activity of life.

Chapter IV.

THE FIRST CHEROKEE WAR

The effect of the Cherokee treaty of 1755, followed by the defeat of General Braddock in Virginia, was to bring an influx of new settlers upon the frontiers of South Carolina, as has been previously discussed. But unfortunately, due to the blundering tactics of Governor Lyttleton of South Carolina, these newcomers were soon faced with the same dangers from which they had fled—hostile Indians upon their frontiers. Early in the conflict, the Cherokees joined forces with Great Britain and her American colonies, against the French and their Indian allies. And after the British reverses in Virginia, the Cherokees dispatched a number of warriors there to reinforce their hard-pressed allies. In 1758, Fort Duquesne fell before a combined attack of the English, Virginians and Indians, the Indians being led, it is said, by Captain Richard Pearis, afterward a resident of present day Greenville County; and with the removal of this great French stronghold, the southern colonies began to breathe freely again. The Cherokees, seeing that they were no longer needed, set out upon their return to Carolina, but on their homeward journey they incurred the wrath of a few Virginia settlers who fired upon them. Being greatly enraged, the warriors hurried to their Carolina homes and reported the ill treatment which had been accorded them. The young men of the Nation were for immediate and indiscriminate war upon the whites, but the leaders endeavored to restrain them from committing any overt acts till a conference with the governor at Charles Town could be arranged. However, a number of the young Indians, without the sanction of their head-men, raided the frontier settlements of present Spartanburg, Laurens and Abbeville Counties, killing a number of the inhabitants.

When it became known in the Cherokee nation that the wishes of the head-men had been disregarded, there was great alarm among the Indian people, and a deputation of 32 of the leading chiefs, led by Occonostota, was immediately started to Charles Town, where it was hoped a settlement of the difficulties could be effected. The Cherokees had always been on terms of the closest friendship with the Carolinians, and they greatly desired that this friendly relationship continue. But unfortunately, James Glen, who fully understood the Indians, was no longer governor; instead William Henry Lyttleton, a hot-head, who had his own ideas of how to handle the situation, now held that position. So after traveling for more than 200 miles upon their mission of peace, the Indian envoys were not even permitted to lay their petition before the governor. Instead, they were bluntly told that the governor did not care to hear them, and that he was even then about to march upon their people with an army. The Indians were assured, however, that they would be permitted to return to their own country since they had come on a friendly

mission; but they were advised that the safest way for the return would be with the troops.

Within a few days after the coming of the chieftains, fully confident that the governor would receive them in the same spirit of friendship which had prompted their mission, these chosen leaders of a proud people, found themselves in the humiliating position of returning to their country, virtual prisoners in the hands of avowed enemies. Till the Congarees (Columbia) was reached they were permitted to march with the army, but upon leaving this encampment they were all made prisoners, and carried back to Keowee under heavy guard. Such treatment was inconceivable to the Indian mind, except it come at the hand of an enemy. In friendship, and on a mission of peace, their chiefs had journeyed to the seat of the white man's government, and they were brought back in chains and lodged in prison. Could such conduct be condoned? Never in the eyes of the proud Cherokee race! An unpardonable injury had been done them, and nothing short of bloodshed could propitiate that wrong.

Governor Lyttleton was as ignorant of the methods of Indian warfare as he was of the savage's ethics of life. The expedition had been hurriedly undertaken, and his troops were ill supplied with food, clothing and ammunition to withstand an Indian attack in that remote region. Many of the soldiers, realizing the incompetency of their leadership, soon began to show their discontent, and the governor, fearing mutiny, hurried messengers to Atta Kulla Kulla, the leading chief of all the Cherokees, requesting his immediate presence at Fort Prince George. Upon the arrival of this old chief, Governor Lyttleton, making as great a show of strength as possible, told him that he had brought his army into the Indian country to make war upon the red men if 24 of their number (this being the number of whites killed in the recent raid) were not immediately delivered up to be dealt with as might seem best. Atta Kulla Kulla proposed that three of the imprisoned chiefs, including Occonostota, be liberated to assist him in finding 24 of the young men who had taken part in the massacre. The suggestion was taken, and three of the Indian prisoners were released. But on the following day, after two of the guilty young men had been brought in, Atta Kulla Kulla set out upon his journey home. He had not proceeded far, however, when he was overtaken by a messenger from the governor requesting his return. Accordingly, the old warrior retraced his steps and again presented himself at the camp of Governor Lyttleton, where he frankly stated that additional time must be given if any more of the raiders were to be captured. The governor having already realized his mistake, and knowing that his army could not be held together longer, proposed a treaty by which 22 of the chiefs, then held prisoners, should be retained as hostages till an equal number of Indians were delivered in compliance with the original demand. This was acceded to by Atta Kulla Kulla, and such an agreement was reduced to writing and formally signed by Governor Lyttleton for the colony, and six Indian chiefs in behalf of the Cherokees. This done, the army was withdrawn.

Although the treaty was signed by the Cherokees, they never seemed to hold themselves bound by its terms, and no effort was made to deliver up any portion

of the 22 Indians demanded. Occonostota continued to smart because of the treatment accorded him and his friends who had gone to Charles Town, and set himself to the task of releasing the hostages still confined in Fort Prince George. After gathering his warriors, he delivered an assault upon the fort, but little impression could be made. Seeing that he could not hope to accomplish his purposes in this manner, he used deception to draw Captain Cotymore from the fort, and no sooner was he outside its protecting walls than he was shot down by Indians previously placed in ambush for that purpose. As a consequence of this Indian treachery, orders were given in the fort to put the hostages in irons, but they resisted, and the garrison fell upon them and butchered them all in a most horrible manner.

The Cherokee issue had been unwisely handled from its inception, and this last act was a fatal blunder. There was hardly an Indian in the Nation who had not lost a relative in the massacre of the hostages, and now a cry for the blood of their enemies "to propitiate the spirits of their dead brothers" went up over the entire Cherokee country. With the hatchet, scalping knife and torch in hand, the savages rushed down upon the frontier settlements, leaving death and destruction in their wake. Men, women and children fell innocent sacrifices everywhere to the inefficient rule of Governor Lyttleton. Some escaped the tomahawk by fleeing to the woods only to die there of hunger, while others were taken prisoners to be subjected to inexpressible hardships and tortures. The frontiersmen, being unable to defend themselves, hurried messenger after messenger to Charles Town imploring aid, while the savages each day added new victims to their harvest of blood. But an epidemic of smallpox was sweeping over the coast country and no help could be furnished, and these unhappy people were left to contend with the savage scourge as best they could. Small forts and block-houses were hastily constructed along the entire Cherokee frontier, and into these crude fortifications the sorely beset settlers crowded with their movable property, where they remained in a state of defense, till the fury of their enemies exhausted itself in the systematic destruction of their unprotected homes, provisions and fields. At this time, the present Greenville County, still being Indian territory, bristled with these places of defense all along her eastern and southern boundaries, where are now found Spartanburg and Laurens Counties.

After a time, Virginia and North Carolina came to the rescue of the South Carolinians by sending down seven troops of rangers which were joined in a short time by Colonel Montgomery with a small force of British regulars. Montgomery, assuming command, marched into the Cherokee country where he inflicted heavy losses on the Indians. But he was recalled to the northern provinces within a short time, and again the Carolina frontier was left exposed to the savage attacks. A provincial regiment was then raised and put under command of Colonel Middleton. Among the officers of this regiment, who later gained prominence in South Carolina military and political history, were Henry Laurens, William Moultrie, Francis Marion, Isaac Huger and Andrew Pickens. This force united with a regiment of British regulars under Colonel Grant, who had been sent to Carolina when it seemed that the Indian trouble there was becoming so serious as to endanger the British cause in America. The command of the united forces was entrusted to Colonel Grant, who, now at the head of 2,600 men, pushed rapidly into the wilderness of the Cherokee country, utterly destroying the homes, granaries and growing crops of the Indians, who fled before the approaching army into the mountains, where they often attacked from ambush, but without inflicting sufficient losses upon the advancing forces to seriously impede their progress. This expedition was known as the Grant Indian war; and it brought the Cherokees into complete submission, thus ending the first conflict of arms between the Cherokees and South Carolina.

Note.—The agreement between Governor Lyttleton and the Cherokees with reference to holding the hostage chiefs, and the treaty which terminated the Grant campaign were both reduced to writing, and are on file in the office of the Historical Commission at Columbia. It is with regret that copies are not incorporated here, but space will not permit.

Chapter V.

PRE-REVOLUTIONARY SETTLERS ON GREENVILLE COUNTY LANDS

The Cherokee Indian trouble having already been satisfactorily settled, the treaty of Paris, concluded in 1763, left the South Carolina frontier free to pursue a life of industry for the first time since it began to receive the Virginia, Pennsylvania, and New York settlers. Long years of war and pillage had greatly retarded its development, but a new life was now opening for the up-country. A vast extent of virgin territory, claimed by Carolina under the treaty of Governor Glen, and confirmed in her by the Cherokees after Grant's Indian war, offered many advantages to those people residing further north. Here, where ideal weather conditions prevailed the whole year through, and rich lands could be purchased for a song, the residents of western Virginia, Pennsylvania and New York saw opportunities innumerable, and soon started a steady stream of emigration into Piedmont South Carolina.

It was not till 1777 that present-day Greenville County was acquired from the Indians, but it is evident that a number of white people took up their abode here during the period after the French and Indian war, when so many pioneers were establishing themselves upon adjoining lands. Never had Greenville County as of today, been used by the Indians for the location of their permanent towns, practically all of these being in present Pickens and Oconee Counties, hence there seemed to be little objection to white men living there. Under treaties with Great Britain, the Cherokees were not permitted to sell their lands to individuals, but there is evidence that they disregarded this provision of their agreement and sold extensively to at least one man (Richard Pearis) and perhaps others, while they permitted many to become "squatters" in their country.

The best known of all pre-Revolutionary settlers in Greenville County was, of course, Richard Pearis (Paris), who took up his residence on the site of present Greenville City, between the years 1766 and 1768. Pearis was an Irishman of some education and pronounced ability, who settled in Frederick County, Virginia, prior to 1750. He later established himself on Long Island of the Holston river as an Indian trader, and was at one time associated with Nathaniel (afterward General) Gist. Governor Dinwiddie of Virginia, recognizing his ability, commissioned him a lieutenant of Virginia Provincials in 1755 and soon afterward he became a captain in command of a company of Cherokees and Catawbas in an expedition under Major Lewis against the Shawnee towns west of the Ohio. He served gallantly throughout the French and Indian war and is said to have been the first man to enter Fort Duquesne, being captain of a band of Cherokee warriors (probably from South Carolina). In commendation of his services in the war, he was publicly thanked and given the post of agent for Southern Indians with headquarters at Fort Pitt. But after filling this position for a short time, he decided to move to South Carolina

and take up his residence among the Cherokees, since his wife was a Cherokee woman. Some authorities, however, say that he was ordered south where he might be "more centrically located to gather the Cherokees in the event of an Indian outbreak." But later events in his life tend to show that his real motive in going into the Indian country was to gain their confidence through his wife and then rob them of their lands.

Pearis established his trading post and erected a corn mill near the present location of Camperdown mill, at what was then called "Great Plains", and was soon engaged in a lucrative business with the Indians. His holdings of land were extended year by year in every direction, till at the outbreak of the Revolutionary war, he is said to have claimed title to ten miles square. But he never, at any time, held legal title to any lands, for as has already been said, the Indians by their treaties had agreed to sell no lands to individuals, and he could therefore have acquired only a sort of permissive use of his holdings. Just how he probably acquired these broad acres is revealed in a letter written to the Cherokee people by John Stuart, superintendent of Indian affairs, in 1775, which reads in part: "I am very sorry of the little regard paid to my advice, and your own interest, respecting your land which you compliment away to every white man who asks for it. You have been constantly told and admonished by me, not to treat or bargain for your land with any person but me. . . . You are constantly listening to Richard Pearis, who cheats you of your lands." From Pearis comes the name of "Paris Mountain", which beautiful and pleasant summer resort of Greenvillians today was included within his holdings. Later, in the days of the Revolution, Richard Pearis was a prominent Tory, and his activities as such will be discussed later.

About the time Richard Pearis took up his residence at Great Plains, a Colonel Hite, with his family, moved down from Virginia and established himself on the Enoree river near where that stream is now crossed by the old Spartanburg road. There are records extant showing that he was in possession of at least 1,300 acres. Tradition says that Captain Pearis and Colonel Hite were friends while still in Virginia, and that this friendship continued for many years after the two had settled in South Carolina. A son of Colonel Hite, it is said, was engaged to be married to Pearis' daughter, which romance was ended by the death of young Hite at the hands of the Indians during the early days of the Revolution. The Hite family adhered to the cause of the Whigs in the war of the Revolution, and the Colonel, his wife and at least one of his sons (the one engaged to the daughter of Pearis) were killed in a bloody Indian raid during the summer of 1776.

Among the very early settlers in what is now Greenville County, was Nathaniel Austin, who came down from Virginia about 1761 or 1762 and settled on Gilders creek, a few miles northeast of the town of Simpsonville. He was an Englishman, having emigrated from that country to Virginia only a few years before coming to South Carolina. It is said that he held a commission from King George III as high constable. J. Thomas Austin, a great-grandson of the original settler, it will be recalled by the older residents, was prominent in public affairs of the county for many years during the latter part of the last century, being a member of the celebrated "Wallace House." Family tradition has it that a daughter of Nathaniel

Austin was killed by Indians some years prior to the Revolution, and that several years later a brother of the murdered girl succeeded in slaying one of the Indians who had been concerned in her death. However, the killing of this young lady probably took place in 1776, during the raid in which several members of the Hite family lost their lives, as there is no record of any Indian massacres in this section between the time the Austin family came to South Carolina and that date. Nathaniel Austin and all of his children were ardent supporters of the Patriot cause in the Revolution.

There is evidence that a family by the name of Gilder resided near the home of the Austins; and it is said that one of the Gilder girls was a witness to the slaying of Miss Austin, a friend and neighbor, with whom she was out walking when the Indians swept down upon the little settlement. It is no doubt from this family that Gilder creek derives its name.

In the northeastern part of the county several families are thought to have resided prior to the Revolution. Among these were the Gowen, Howard, Fisher and Dill families. Major Buck Gowen and Captain Howard, members of two of these families, won distinction during the Revolution as daring leaders of small forces operating in semi-guerilla style against the Tories of upper Spartanburg and Greenville Counties. Near the present Gowensville settlement (named in honor of Major Buck Gowen) Gowen's fort was located in Greenville County. Further south and not far from Greer, was Wood's fort, which was also in Greenville County. Both of these fortifications are known to have existed during the Revolution, and some authorities fix their construction date as of the Indian massacres during the French and Indian war. If these forts existed at that early date, no doubt there were several families residing near them.

Near Piedmont, on Grove creek, it is thought that Alexander Cameron, Indian agent, and much despised Tory of later days, maintained "cowpens", although he did not live there. The Cameron place was granted to Henry Pendleton, a Carolinian of prominence, from whom Pendleton District and the town of Pendleton derived their names, in 1784, following the acquisition of the county from the Cherokees. And in this immediate vicinity, there were doubtless a number of settlers, for the "Golden Grove" seems to have been a choice location when the county was later opened to regular settlements.

At this late day, in the absence of any records, it is impossible to ascertain the names of many of the pre-Revolutionary settlers, but evidence which comes down through descriptions and plats from early land grants warrants the statement that some white men were to be found in practically every section of the county. Roads led in almost every direction, and some of these were evidently of the "public" variety. There was one leading from Pearis' plantation to Ninety-Six and Augusta, and another along the approximate route of the present Old Spartanburg road through Colonel Hite's plantation "to the Settlements" in present Spartanburg County.

Living near these early Greenville County settlers, in what is now Spartanburg County, were a number of people whose later lives were so closely identified with Greenville County and its development that brief reference to them here would not be out of place. Residing two or three miles northeast of the town of Greer was a family whose name in after years became famous the South over. This was none other than Anthony Hampton, great-grandfather of Governor Wade Hampton of "red shirt" days. Anthony Hampton and several members of his family were killed in the Indian massacre of 1776. Another was Judge Baylis Earle of the Landrum section of Spartanburg. The descendants of Judge Baylis Earle and his brother, Colonel John Earle, who resided near him, but just over the state line in North Carolina, have been prominent in the political, social, business and professional life of Greenville County from its organization down to the present. Another resident of Spartanburg County of this period, was Colonel John Thomas, who later led the expedition against the Cherokees which terminated in a treaty under which Greenville County was ceded to Carolina. Just north of Duncan, in the Nazareth church settlement, lived a considerable community of Scotch-Irish people who had come down from Pennsylvania some time before the French and Indian war. Among these were the Pedens, Alexanders, Mortons, Morrows and Nesbitts, who, after the Revolution, moved to lower Greenville County and established Fairview Presbyterian church in 1786.

As the country grew in population, it became evident to the frontiersmen that a stable government must be established if prosperity and happiness were to be enjoyed by the people. The war just concluded had thrown upon these regions a host of idlers, who sought to live by their wits. No courts had yet been established in the back country, and no law enforcement officers were stationed nearer than Charles Town, with which communication was anything but rapid. Because of this state, these idle people, seeing that it would be an easy matter to live upon the industry of their neighbors, soon banded themselves together to prey upon the community. Horse stealing and cattle "rustling" became fine arts; and murder and rapine were daily occurrences. But petition after petition directed to the Governor and Assembly by the law-abiding people were ignored till, by the year 1767, that portion of the colony lying between the Saluda and Broad found itself in a deplorable state.

The law-abiding people of the up-country, knowing that something must be done to curb such outlawry if they were to continue living there, decided to take the law into their own hands. A semi-military organization was formed, and it set about ridding the country of the marauding bands infesting it. This self-constituted "law and order league" was known as the Regulators. But however commendable might have been the purpose of the Regulators, many inexcusable acts of rowdyism and oppression were committed in the name of the organization; and opposition to its activities soon began to be heard from many who had no more sympathy for lawlessness than did the most rabid Regulator. Feeling ran high and the entire back country soon found itself divided into two armed camps. The authorities in Charles Town became alarmed and sought to quell the disturbance by proceeding against the Regulators. In pursuance of this policy, one Scoville (or Scofield) was sent into the district lying between the Saluda and Broad with instructions to break up that organization. But he proved to be a man of low character, and in executing his commission, he adopted very harsh and extreme measures with numbers of the better classes among the people, involving multitudes in great distress. Those who opposed the Regulators were soon termed Schophalites, and so intense was the

feeling engendered between the two followings that every resident of the frontiers eventually found himself classed as a member of one or the other faction. Richard Pearis was an outspoken adherent of the Schophalite cause, whether from honest convictions that the Regulators were too freely resorting to "Lynch law", or because he secretly sympathized with and supported the lawless element is not known; but his conduct during the Revolution leads one to suspect the latter as his real motive.

Scoville was soon withdrawn, but the bitterness engendered among the people by his activities lingered for many years, and became a strong contributing factor in the internecine warfare which was so savagely prosecuted in upper South Carolina during all the years of the Revolution. But the determined attitude of the Regulators seems to have impressed the authorities with the justice of their cause, for no sooner was Scoville out of the country than remedial legislation was undertaken. The machinery of government moved slowly, but in 1769 a bill was passed establishing courts at six locations outside Charles Town. One of these was at Ninety-Six. These new courts were given very limited jurisdiction, but the up-country felt that it was now being recognized by the government and this had a pacific influence on the inhabitants there. Conditions immediately began to improve, and by 1770 comparative quiet had been restored.

CHAPTER VI.

THE REVOLUTION BEGINS—BATTLE OF GREAT CANE BRAKE

JUST as the frontiersmen were beginning to compose themselves in the thought that they could now settle back into a life of reasonable tranquility, the bitterness engendered by the issue between the Regulators and Scophelites having somewhat abated, a new cause of disturbance began to loom large upon the horizon. For many months occasional visitors to Charles Town had returned to the up country with news of conflicts between the mother country and various ones of the American colonies over the right of Great Britain to tax them, but little was thought of the matter here on the frontiers. These hard working people had never taken an interest in politics—in fact, the coast country had not permitted them to exercise any of the privileges of citizenship—and they reasoned now that this was no concern of theirs. This state of apathy on the part of such a large proportion of its people was viewed with alarm by the Council of Public Safety, which had now taken the reins of government from the hands of the British governor, and it was decided to dispatch a commission from the seat of government at Charles Town, "to go into the interior parts of this colony at the public expense, there to explain to the people at large, the nature of the unhappy public dispute between Great Britain and the American colonies to quiet their minds, and to enforce the necessity of a general union in order to preserve themselves and their children from slavery."

The commission sent out consisted of William H. Drayton, formerly a Judge of the King's Court, and the Rev. William Tennant, a Presbyterian minister, both of whom were noted for their diplomacy and persuasive manner. These gentlemen left Charles Town early in June, 1775, and proceeded immediately to the Congarees (now Columbia), where they stopped for a few days to confer with representative men from the up country, who had come down at their request. After these informal conferences they moved northward, holding public meetings wherever the people could be assembled together. But the inhabitants were found to be, not only indifferent to the cause of the colony against Great Britain, but in great fear of trouble with the Indians. Already Alexander Cameron was in the Cherokee country inciting the savages to hostilities against the frontiers, and a sharp conflict had actually taken place between a small detachment of Patriots under Colonel William Thomson and a larger number of Indians led by Cameron.

The commissioners now saw that if any cooperation at all was to be had from the frontiersmen, the ever-present menace of an Indian attack must be removed. So negotiations were undertaken with Richard Pearis in an effort to have him bring down some of the Indian head-men for a conference. It was with some trepedition, and contrary to instruction from Charles Town, that Pearis was chosen for this purpose, as his loyalty to the Patriot cause was even then doubted. But he was a man of great influence among the Indians, and having demonstrated his value as a friend to Virginia in the late war with France, Mr. Drayton decided that no effort should

be spared to secure his aid. He thought this show of confidence might be the means of linking him firmly with the friends of Independence.

As a consequence of these negotiations, Pearis appeared at the Congarees on September 25th, 1775, with several chiefs from the Indian Nation. Here they were met by Mr. Drayton. The Indians expressed considerable indignation, and seemed greatly concerned that the colonists had stopped all movements of ammunition to the traders in their country. They had long since put aside the bow and arrow for the use of firearms, and now, not being able to secure ammunition, they had no means of obtaining food, since they still depended upon the fruits of the chase for a livelihood. But Mr. Drayton explained to them, in a talk suited to the occasion, the nature of the dispute between Great Britain and America, and why it had become necessary to discontinue the trade in ammunition. His explanation was satisfactory, and the Indians promised "to hold fast to the chain of peace." Believing that the purpose of the meeting had been accomplished, and that no further danger of an Indian attack existed, Mr. Drayton assured the chiefs of his government's friendship and promised that powder and lead would be sent them at once.

The pacific attitude of the Indians, when made known to the frontiersmen, caused a number of the up country leaders to align themselves with the colonists. Soon it began to appear that the old Scophalite faction was friendly to the King, and this had much weight in carrying the Regulator adherents to the other side. However, Colonel Thomas Fletchall, commander of a regimental district in the up country, announced that he would remain loyal to Britain, and this action left the Patriots between the Saluda and Broad without organization or leadership. But they set to work as best they could to perfect an organization, and in a short time had chosen leaders and were rapidly enrolling the anti-British inhabitants. John Thomas, later a resident of Greenville County, was chosen colonel of the Spartan regiment, an organization which did valiant service in the war to follow. However, a communication from him to Mr. Drayton about this time clearly shows conditions on the frontier still were in a bad state of disorganization.

A portion of the letter from Colonal Thomas is as follows:

Spartan Regiment,
Sept. 11, 1775.

"To the Honorable W. H. Drayton, Esq.:

"May It Please Your Honor:—I this moment received your Honor's favor of the 10th instant, and very fortunately the command of this district was just assembled at my house in order to address the Council of Safety almost on the very purport of your Honor's letter, as we had all the reason in the world (and still have), to believe from good information, that the malignants are forming the most hellish schemes to frustrate the measures of the Continental Congress, and to use all those who are willing to stand by those measures in the most cruel manner. Your Honor will be fully convinced of the truth of this by perusing the papers transmitted herewith, to which I refer your Honor. JOHN THOMAS."

Pursuant to the promise made by Mr. Drayton, the Council of Safety, on October 4th, 1775, voted a supply of ammunition for the Cherokee Nation, and immediately dispatched one thousand pounds of powder and two thousand pounds of lead by ammunition train into the up country. A few days before this, Major Williamson had secured the arrest of Robert Cunningham, of present Laurens County, because of purported "seditious statements" and sent him under arrest to Charles Town. Patrick Cunningham, hoping to effect the release of his brother, Robert, organized a body of his friends and started in pursuit of those conveying him to prison, but was unable to overtake them. However, he met the ammunition train coming up from Charles Town, and feeling much aggrieved because of the manner in which his brother had been treated, he took possession of the ammunition and conveyed it back to the vicinity of Ninety-Six. When this information reached the Council of Safety there was great alarm, for the Indians had been promised the ammunition, and their disappointment in its failure to be delivered, might cause them to fall upon the frontier settlements; so steps were immediately taken to forestall such an event. Mr. Drayton, thinking Pearis still loyal to the province, wrote him a letter requesting him to inform the Indians of what had occurred, and to assure them that the ammunition would soon be recovered and forwarded to them. Colonel Richard Richardson was ordered to proceed with his army from the Congarees, where it was encamped, into the up-country, not only to recapture the ammunition, but to arrest those who had taken part in its seizure.

Major Andrew Williamson, then in command of the few up-country settlers bold enough to take up arms for the Patriot cause, realizing the serious nature of the Cunningham incident, without awaiting orders from headquarters, sent out a detachment of militia from his camp at Hard Labor creek (in what is now Laurens County) in an effort to cut off and capture the Cunningham band as it returned. Cunningham eluded his pursuers, however, and returned safely to his home. But while the Council of Safety at Charles Town and Major Williamson in the up-country were putting forth every possible effort to allay the insurgency and pacify the Indians by recovering and delivering to them the powder and lead taken by Cunningham, Richard Pearis was exerting himself to poison the minds of the frontiersmen against the Patriot cause. Up to this time he seems to have been assuring each side of his friendship, only for the purpose of gaining time to learn which was the stronger and more likely to succeed in the coming conflict. Now it seemed to him that he was safe in choosing. Great Britain must win, and casting his lot with her would mean much to Pearis. As was well known to those who had dealt with him, he had no regard for the truth when its perversion would serve his purpose, so he now resorted to the most infamous lies conceivable to inflame the minds of the people. He even went so far as to sign and circulate an affidavit to the effect that the ammunition being sent to the Indians was intended to be used by them to kill all those of the border settlers who were friendly to the Crown. And since Pearis had been with the Indian chiefs upon the occasion of their visit to the Congarees, his affidavit carried all the earmarks of truth.

Urged on by the malicious treachery of Pearis, the Tories, now greatly augmented by those who believed his assertions to be true, acted quickly. Before Colonel Richardson could reach the frontier, they marched upon Ninety-Six, where Major Williamson and Major Mayson had stationed their small forces. On the 21st of

November, 1775, the Whig and Tory forces came in contact with each other in an open field a few miles north of Ninety-Six. The combat was short, with small damage to either side, but here was shed the first blood of the Revolution on South Carolina soil. Neither side seemed anxious to force the issue, so on November 22nd a mutually satisfactory pact was signed. But of more than passing interest here is the fact that the witnesses to this agreement were Richard Pearis and Andrew Pickens. These two were to meet five years later, perhaps in Greenville County but more likely in Anderson, when Pickens, then a general in command of all the upper divisions of the state, surrendered to Pearis, and then again near the close of the war when the life of Pearis was saved by Pickens at Augusta.

But Colonel Richardson, marching rapidly towards Ninety-Six, gathering reinforcements as he moved, was in no frame of mind to deal leniently with the enemy, so after conferring with Colonel William Thomson, who joined him on November 28th, he decided that he would not respect the terms of the Ninety-Six agreement, but on the other hand would take Pearis and other leading Tories into custody. And it was only a few days till Pearis, "the first citizen of Greenville", found himself a prisoner of war, for on December 16th Colonel Richardson wrote Henry Laurens, President of the Council of Safety, as follows: "I herewith send you the persons of Colonel Thomas Fletchall, Captain Richard Pearis, Jacob Fry, and Captain George Shuburg—these being all adjudged by the officers and people here to be offenders of such a nature that from the active part they have taken, it would be dangerous for me to let either of them go."

With the capture of their principal leaders, most of those remaining hostile to the Patriot cause quietly disbanded and returned to their homes; but there still remained a band of the leading aggressors encamped on Reedy river, four miles within the Indian Nation at "Great Cane Brake," under the leadership of Colonel Patrick Cunningham. It was reported to Colonel Richardson that young Pearis, son of Captain Pearis, and a member of Cunningham's band, had gone to the Indian towns in an effort to secure re-inforcements, so he concluded that "this last hot-bed of Toryism in the district" should be broken up before the recently disbanded Tories thereabouts should have an opportunity to reorganize. He therefore moved his forces up to Hollingsworth's mill, about 25 miles south of "Great Cane Brake", and ordered Colonel Thomson to march against the enemy. Colonel Thomson called for volunteers to join him in this undertaking, which promised to furnish the first real fighting of the entire campaign. Colonels Polk and Lyles and Major Williamson offered their services, and these officers, with 1,300 men composing both infantry and cavalry companies, were chosen.

The detachment under Colonel Thomson set out from Hollingsworth's mill during the early evening of December 21st, and after marching all night came upon the camp of the enemy near daylight of December 22nd. The Tories were taken completely by surprise, as the force of Colonel Thomson had succeeded in almost surrounding their camp before being detected. Seeing that resistance would be useless, they took to flight in a most precipitate manner, abandoning baggage, arms, and ammunition as they fled. Five or six of the Tories were killed, and 125 or 130 captured. Colonel Cunningham escaped, it is said, by mounting the first available horse and riding away bare-back during the confusion. None of Thomson's men were killed, and only one was wounded, this being a young son of Colonel Polk, who was shot through the shoulder. Among those of the Tories captured was the son of Captain Richard Pearis, who a few days before had been reported as being among the Indians seeking aid. However, if he had been to the Indian towns on such a mission he probably did not meet with success, for no Indians were among those captured.

The campaign of Colonel Richardson, known to history as the Snow Campaign on account of a heavy fall of snow which began in the up-country on December 25th and contined for several days, was brought to a successful conclusion with the battle of "Great Cane Brake." And on January 2nd, 1776, after he had returned to his base at the Congarees, Colonel Richardson wrote the Council of Public Safety: "The people are now more convinced than ever of their being wrong. The lenient measures have had a good effect, the spirit and power is gone from them. And I am sure (if not interrupted by designing men) that the country which I had the power to lay waste (and which the people expected) will be happy, and peace and tranquility take the place of ruin and discord. On the rivers, had I burnt, plundered, and destroyed, ten thousand women and children must have been left to perish, a thought shocking to humanity."

The historians disagree as to the location of this concluding battle of the Snow Campaign. Some place it far down Reedy river near the point where it empties into the Saluda, while McCrady shows it on his Revolutionary map as being only three or four miles below the present city of Greenville. But Dr. H. T. Cook, in his *Rambles in the Pee Dee Basin,* places it about 16 miles southeast of Greenville City. A careful consideration of the known facts, gathered from various sources, leads to the conclusion that Dr. Cook is correct, and that the battle of "Great Cane Brake" was fought on what is now Greenville County soil. The early accounts locate it on Reedy river, four miles within the Indian country, and it is known that the Indian boundary line crossed Reedy river near Fork Shoals. At page 1, in Location book "A" in the office of the R.M.C. for Greenville County, appears the record of a grant to General Richard Winn of a tract of land on Reedy river, containing 640 acres and known as "the Great Cane Brake." General Winn acquired the lands in 1784, and he conveyed them to James Harrison by a deed which refers to the plantation as "Great Cane Brake." It will be noted that these descriptions are specific and not general; hence the property conveyed and the description given of it in the deeds must have had some signification to the grantors and grantees. At that time, of course, the site of the battle ground was well known. The Winn lands are located on Reedy river about 15 miles south of the city of Greenville, and some four miles north of Fork Shoals, and consist of lands yet belonging to descendants of James Harrison, being at this time a part of the estate of the late S. E. Harrison.

General Richard Winn, who was a man of prominence in South Carolina, took part in the battle of "Great Cane Brake" as a lieutenant. When the war was over and he held high rank in the military life of the state, perhaps it was the knowledge that at "Great Cane Brake" he fought his first battle which impelled him to become the owner of the battle-field. But his attachment for the site of his boyhood prowess

these he was killed and scalped, thus becoming the first victim of the most bloody massacre ever suffered by the Carolinians at the hands of the Cherokees. The place of his death was on the Estotoe river in present Pickens County, in a narrow pass between two mountains. After killing the young man, the Indians proceeded to the residence of Richard Pearis, where the daughter of Pearis, recognizing "the raven locks of her lover" in the bloody scalp displayed by the savages, knew only too well what were their intentions. In an effort to save the family of her lover from the sad fate which had already befallen him, she set out on foot to warn the Hite family of its impending danger. But whether this dusky maid of the forests reached her destination and had her warning disregarded, or was overtaken by the Indians and brought back before she had delivered her message, is unknown. At any rate, the Hite family was visited by the Indians and paid a fearful toll.

When information reached the frontier that the Indians had taken up the tomahawk, there was great alarm among those adhering to the Patriot cause. Quickly they set about strengthening the crude forts and block houses which had been constructed along the Indian boundary during the troublous days of the French and Indian war, and into these rough fortifications many of them fled, taking as much as possible of their portable property with them. Still there were others who remained at their homes—some because no fort was within reach, and others because they thought the Indians would pass them by on account of past friendships. But it was only among those who had espoused the cause of the province that a feeling of impending danger existed, for secret messengers had previously advised the Tories that they would be safe from attack, if their loyalty to the King were shown by the erection of peeled poles, wrapped around with white cloth, before their homes. This emblem, or badge of loyalty to the King, was referred to as "the passover" and was to be a sign to the Indians to leave that household undisturbed. Sad to relate, many were the passovers erected among the frontiersmen.

Since the commencement of the war, Cameron and his Tory friends had neglected no opportunity to poison the minds of the Indians against the Whigs, and in July, 1776, the savages marched to the attack. After killing young Hite, they proceeded to the Pearis plantation where they were joined by a number of Tories. Then they moved on to the home of the sorely distressed Hite family, where Colonel Hite and a number of his children were killed, and his wife taken captive. From here a number of the savages moved southward, into what is now Laurens County, killing Miss Austin of the Gilder creek section on their way; but the major portion of the red invaders turned toward the north and into the territory which is now Spartanburg County. The Indians going toward the south probably joined a larger body which had gone out from the Indian towns down through present Anderson, Abbeville, and Greenwood Counties. Having effected a union, these Indians joined forces with a body of Tories which was moving to the attack of Lindley's fort, located near the mouth of Rabun creek in the present county of Laurens. Here a large number of the residents of that section had taken refuge, hoping the better to defend themselves against the enemy. Upon reaching the fort, however, the savages and their Tory allies, painted as Indians, were repulsed, since a portion of the regiment of Colonel Williams had moved there and was awaiting their coming.

The body of Indians turning northward from the Hite home next visited the Hampton plantation. Here Mr. Hampton, his wife, his son, Preston, who had recently returned from his mission to the Cherokee country, and a grandson (infant child of James Harrison), were killed and their home burned. Another grandson, John Bynum, was captured and carried away into the Indian country, where he was held prisoner for several months. The Hampton family here suffering so heavily at the hands of the savages, was the same which produced the immortal Wade. His grandfather, also named Wade, was at the time with the army of North Carolina. James Harrison, father of the slain child, later moved to the "Great Cane Brake" in Greenville County and became the head of that large and illustrious family, living today throughout all the upper counties of the state. In later years, B. F. Perry of Greenville was to engage in a duel with a descendant of the captured grandson, John Bynum.

Now the savages, having taken up the tomahawk in earnest, were not to be stayed in their bloody course. Wherever the whites could be found they were murdered in cold blood, the "passover" itself being small protection. Captain Ford, a well-known Tory, was killed as he sat in his yard under the peeled pole which he had raised for the protection of himself and family, and two of his daughters were taken captive. Among others killed were Mr. John Miller and a Mr. Orr. These two, together with a Mr. Leach, were returning from Poole's Iron Works (near the present city of Spartanburg) to their homes in the Gowensville section of today, when, as they crossed a crude bridge over Middle Tyger river, several Indians sprang from their place of hiding under the bridge and struck them down. Mr. Leach escaped with his life by feigning death. The Hannon family, residing near the present town of Landrum, was visited, and Mr. Hannon, several of his older children, and a baby were killed. Another victim was a Mr. Bishop then residing near present Shiloh church in Spartanburg County. He was killed and three of his children carried away. Later these children were recovered by a brother-in-law, Mr. Davy Lewis, ancestor of the Wingo families of the Gowensville section of Greenville County. In fact, so many were the atrocities committed and so savage was the Indian in his attack as he swept from one to another of the frontier settlements, that abject terror seized the inhabitants. Those who had not been killed or captured fled the country or found protection in the border forts, leaving their homes to be plundered and burned, and their growing crops destroyed.

And while matters were in this sad state, a Captain Howard, who resided within the Indian country, a few miles northwest of the present Gowensville settlement, was able to organize a small company of men from among the number, who like himself, had taken refuge in the old Block House. This old fort is still standing, having been converted into a residence, and may be seen in traveling north from Landrum to Tryon along the old road connecting these two towns. It is said that the Greenville-Spartanburg County line, as well as the North Carolina-South Carolina line, pass through it. Among those taking part in this expedition was Captain (later Colonel) John Earle, the illustrious ancestor of so many present-day Greenville County citizens. Equipping themselves as best they could from the meager resources at hand, this little band of resolute men, led by a sturdy moun-

could not have been overly strong, for in just two years after becoming its owner, he sold it to James Harrison "for one black horse." Tradition has it in the community where this engagement took place that after the battle, a number of Tories were hanged; and some of the older residents, whose ancestors have lived there for a century and a half, will today point out one of the trees which family tradition says was used as a scaffold.

Note.—Historians are not agreed as to the date of the conflict between Colonel Thomson and the Indians near Keowee. Some put it as late as the summer of 1776, but Colonel Thomson, writing from his camp "Two miles below Keowee" on August 4, 1775, gives an account of the engagement. However, the Cherokees seem not to have taken offence because of this difficulty, as they continued to negotiate with Mr. Drayton. If this be considered a military engagement, it was here, and not at Ninety-Six, that the first blood of the war was shed. (See page 125 of Gibbs' "Documentary History of the American Revolution from 1764 to 1776.")

CHAPTER VII.

INDIAN MASSACRE OF 1776

After the flare-up of 1775 had subsided, a majority of the frontier settlers were doubtless friendly to the Patriot cause, but their proximity to the Indian country kept them from taking an active part in the war. They knew that Alexander Cameron, deputy superintendent of Indian affairs under the Crown, had taken up his residence among the Cherokees and was exerting every effort to secure the assistance of the Indians in behalf of the British. And they also knew that the success of his plans would bring the Indians down upon them in all the fury of a savage massacre; and should this happen, they desired to be free from military obligations which might call them away from their frontier homes.

During the early summer of 1776, the frontiersmen began to feel that all was not well in the Cherokee country. Rumors to the effect that the Indians had chosen the side of the King and were making preparations for a raid upon the settlements drifted in. And knowing that something must be done at once if the Indians were to be induced to remain neutral, the settlers in present Greenville and Spartanburg Counties thought it well to send emissaries into the towns of the Cherokee country to urge those deluded people to continue the friendship which had existed between them and the whites since the close of the French and Indian war. Among those to go were Captain Edward Hampton and his brother, Preston, who resided a few miles east of the Indian boundary, four or five miles northeast of the present town of Greer. These two young men had often been into the Indian country on trading and hunting expeditions, and had many friends there, so it was thought that they might be able to win back the savages. Another to go into the Cherokee country was a son of Colonel Hite, who lived within present Greenville County near where the Old Spartanburg road crosses Enoree river. By some chroniclers, this young gentleman is referred to as Jacob O'Bannon Hite, but he could not have been Jacob O'Bannon, as will be shown later. But regardless of name, this noble Patriot was a young man of character and culture. At the time, he was a student of the law, about to apply for admission to the bar in Charles Town. It is also said that he was engaged to be married to a daughter of Richard Pearis.

When the two Hampton brothers arrived among the Cherokees, they found that they were too late. Cameron and other British sympathizers had thoroughly poisoned the minds of the red men against their former friends, and now they were in an ugly mood. Everywhere the war dance was in progress and hurried preparations were being made for a raid upon the frontiers. The Hamptons were made prisoners and their horses, guns, and other supplies seized; but by some means (possibly with the assistance of friendly Indians) they made their escape, and hurrying back to their homes on foot, reporting their sad experiences to the people there. Young Hite, traveling into the Cherokee country a few days later than did the Hampton brothers, met a large band of warriors headed toward the white settlements. By

taineer whose descendants still reside in upper Greenville County in great numbers, marched out from the Block House against the Indians then encamped in a mountain gap four or five miles away in North Carolina, under Chief Big Warrior. In their march, they were guided by a friendly Indian, Schuyuka, who led them through a hitherto unknown gap, which enabled them to approach the enemy from the rear. Big Warrior and his men had noticed the activity of the whites and were expecting an attack, but they thought it would come directly up the pass in which they were located—hence the assault from the rear took them completely by surprise.

Captain Howard and his men attacked the Indians fiercely, killing and wounding many of them, but they were greatly outnumbered, and might have been defeated except for the suddenness of the onslaught and the rapidity of their withdrawal. The Indians, however, were in no mood to withstand an organized attack after their orgy of bloodshed and pillage. They had brought their women and children with them and knew that their march back must be slow; and the spirit shown by Captain Howard and his men did not bode well for them, should any great number of Whigs assemble before they were safely on their way home. So they buried their dead there on the mountain side and began a hasty march back toward Pearis' plantation, where they no doubt expected to receive ammunition and Tory reinforcements. This skirmish, unknown to history, but well authenticated in tradition as "the Battle of Round Mountain", gave the frontier settlers their first respite from the most savage Indian massacre they had ever experienced.

The Battle of Round Mountain was fought a short distance east of the present town of Tryon, North Carolina. One of the mountain peaks guarding the pass in which the Indians were encamped is known as "Big Warrior" in honor of their chief. The pass through which Schuyuka led the Patriot soldiers is now "Howard's Gap", named for the brave Captain Howard. The present Spartanburg-Hendersonville highway leads through this gap, and for many years has been known as the Howard Gap road. Tradition says the friendly Indian was later captured by his red brothers and made to suffer a horrible death. It was sought by many to name the county seat of Polk County, North Carolina, Schuyuka, in his honor, but for some reason this was not done. Yet today, beautiful Schuyuka mountain stretches along the border of North Carolina, looking down upon the scene of battle.

At this time Colonel Andrew Williamson was in command of all organized Patriot forces between the Saluda and Broad, and when it became known to him that the Indians were raiding the frontiers, he ordered Colonel Thomas to move against them. However, there was some delay in getting the troops in motion, probably occasioned by the action of the Charles Town authorities in releasing certain up-country prisoners. After the British attack on Charles Town during the latter part of June had been repulsed, the Government thought that generosity on its part would have a good effect, so Richard Pearis, Robert Cunningham and "the rest of the back country prisoners who were in confinement" were released. But the troops of Colonel Williamson were greatly incensed at this action and for several days could not be prevailed upon to enter the conflict. However, as the savages were beginning to retreat after the Battle of Round Mountain, Colonel Thomas appeared with a small force and gave chase. The Indians moved from the North Carolina border across the northwestern portion of Spartanburg County toward the plantation of Richard Pearis. They were overtaken near Paris mountain by a small detachment from Colonel Thomas' force, and a skirmish took place. The Indians continued their retreat, but being hard pressed, killed a number of their prisoners, who were hampering their progress. Among these was Mrs. Hite. But other prisoners were either released or permitted to escape. Of this number were the two daughters of Captain Ford, the Tory who had been killed during the raid.

When the Pearis plantation was reached, the Indians did not find the expected reinforcements, and continued their retreat. But for several days prior thereto, the Pearis home had been closely watched by spies sent out by Colonel Williamson, and these emissaries having reported unusual activity about the place, Colonel Williamson concluded that Pearis was up to his old tricks again and sent couriers to Thomas, ordering him to give the Pearis home a call as he passed it. So on July 16th Colonel Thomas took possession of the property of Richard Pearis, burned his home, mill, and trading station, confiscated all his cattle and horses for the use of his army, and carried away his wife, two daughters and one son. Captain Pearis was away at the time and thereby saved himself a second imprisonment. It is said that the family of Pearis was subjected to much abuse and punishment by their captors. According to some accounts, they were marched on foot 25 miles a day with little food and no covering for their heads against the heat of a summer sun, and were then confined for three days with practically no food, and afterwards sent off in an open wagon to a point near Augusta, 100 miles away, where they were left among strangers to shift for themselves, without money or provisions.

After a few days' delay, awaiting reinforcements and supplies, Colonel Thomas set out for the Cherokee country with a fixed determination to revenge the bloody desolation which the savages had left behind them. Among his troops were many of the frontiersmen who had suffered sorely at the hands of the Indian, and who were in a mood to fight as they had never done before. Everywhere the Indians fled before them, leaving their homes and growing crops to be destroyed. By August 13th, the destruction of all the lower settlements was complete. The Patriot army was now reinforced, and on September 13th a force of 2,000 men started its march over the mountains toward the middle settlement towns, which were reached on September 23rd. Here, as in the lower settlements, the destruction was soon complete, and early in October, the army, having fully performed its mission, was disbanded.

The successful termination of the Cherokee war of 1776 ended forever the danger of Indian massacres in the Carolina up-country. For perhaps 100 years, white men had resided there, but not until after 1755 had there existed any ill feeling between the two races. Although the Cherokees were a strong and warlike people, who dealt ruthlessly with their red neighbors, Carolina had always had in them friends of great value both in war and peace. But with the treaty of Governor Glen in 1755, by which the Indians were swindled out of the major portion of their lands in South Carolina, were sown the seeds of discord, which grew into open conflict under the blundering actions of Governor Lyttleton in 1759. And thereafter there was never the same trusting friendliness between the two peoples. The

Indians felt that the Carolinians had defrauded them of their lands, and then without cause made war upon them to gain an acknowledgment that the lands had been voluntarily ceded. By the treaty of 1763, outward peace was restored, but always there rankled in the savage breast the thought that his honor had been outraged; and seeing that the Indians were forever restive, the frontiersmen lived in daily fear of an outbreak. And in the midst of bitter civil conflict, when brother fought against brother, there came the bloody denouement in which these sturdy pioneers repaid a hundred fold for the wrongs which had been inflicted upon the Cherokees by a government in which they had never been given a voice. But having fully paid, they were now free.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE YEARS OF BANDITRY

Following the defeat of the Cherokees in 1776, that people and the Carolinians entered into a treaty of peace, which was formally signed on May 20, 1777. By the terms of this treaty all the remaining Indian lands in South Carolina, except a small portion of what is now the northwestern part of Oconee County, were ceded to South Carolina. The preamble to this interesting and valuable document, taken from the original itself, which is on file in the office of the Historical Commission at Columbia, reads:

> "The King of Great Britain in the prosecution of his unjust design to enslave America, regardless of the means, through his ministers, officers and superintendents, by false representations has deceived the Cherokee Nation and persuaded them to massacre indiscriminately, according to their custom in war, the men, women and children inhabitants on the Western frontier of South Carolina and other states at the time last summer when his forces invaded that state from the sea, and then having abandoned his Cherokee allies whom he had deceived, urged and persuaded into the war to just resentment of the people, thus at the same time unexpectedly attacked on the sea coast and opposite frontier. It has pleased the Master of Breath so to direct the progress of the war and the (word illegible) of the contracting parties, that at the conclusion of last summer they were disposed to extend mercy and do justice, and the Cherokee Nation having during the course of last winter, sent Deputies to Charles Town to implore pardon and thereupon it being determined to bury the hatchet and re-establish peace, the contracting parties", etc.

This instrument was signed at Due West, then called Devits, or DeWitts Corner, which was then the site of a well-known trading post, located on the south line of the Indian boundary where crossed by the Cherokee path leading to fort Charlotte.

For a number of years after the Cherokee peace, South Carolina was too busy prosecuting the war against her British and Tory enemies to take any action toward opening up the new acquisition for settlement. A few families took up residence there, but this was without warrant of law, and upon conclusion of the Revolution they were dispossessed. From 1777 till 1784, when legislative action to open up the new acquisition for settlers was taken, it was recognized as being a portion of the Ninety-Six District, and that political subdivision exercised a theoretical jurisdiction over it. Actually, however, there was no law here, but "the law of might." Roving thieves and cut-throats made it their favorite haunt, from which they sallied forth at pleasure to rob and plunder, under the guise of either Whig or Tory, as the occasion warranted.

With the seizing of his property by Colonel Thomas, Richard Pearis never again was a resident of Greenville County. Whatever might have been his intentions when he was set at liberty following the British failure at Charles Town, the treatment accorded his family made him an active supporter of the King's cause for the remainder of the war. In company with David Fanning and other Tories, he

secretly raised a troop of 400 men, recruited largely from the old Cherokee country and its adjoining frontiers, but before he could join the British in Florida, as he had intended, his plans became known and he fled on foot to the west coast of Florida. From that time till the fall of Charles Town in 1780, Pearis was extremely active in behalf of the British, but remained away from his old home, and for the most of the time outside the boundaries of South Carolina. The year 1778 found him captain of the Light Horse Troop in Colonel Stuart's Corps of West Florida Loyal Refugees. For several months thereafter he operated about the mouth of the Mississippi and around Mobile, capturing Maushac on the Mississippi during the time. Later he helped reinforce St. Augustine against Howe's expedition, and was with Prevost in his invasion of Georgia. When Savannah was besieged by French and Americans, Pearis was among those defending it. He was also present at the siege and capture of Charles Town.

With the fall of Charles Town, the entire province of South Carolina was overrun by the British and their Tory allies. Sir Henry Clinton offered favorable terms of surrender and many of the leading Whigs, thinking that further resistance was useless, accepted them and laid down their arms. At this juncture, Pearis returned to the up-country with a commission as lieutenant colonel of South Carolina Provincials, with authority to go into the Ninety-Six District "to raise and embody the friends of Great Britain, disarm all rebels between the Savannah and Broad rivers, and destroy their forts." During this period, General Andrew Pickens, then in command of the Patriot troops of the entire up-country, surrendered to Pearis. With this undertaking completed, however, Richard Pearis, the first white man of historical note to reside for any length of time in present-day Greenville County, quitted the South Carolina frontiers forever. He joined his family, then residing at Augusta, where he remained till his capture in the fall of that place before the onslaught of General Pickens, near the close of the war. When taken, Pearis was set upon by a number of enraged Whigs from his old back-country home, who would no doubt have killed him except for the timely intervention of General Pickens himself. With the close of the war, Pearis, with his family, moved to Abaca in the Bahamas, where, it is said, he died in the year 1804 in great poverty. One of his daughters married a son of Colonel Robert Cunningham.

While Pearis was in the up-country "disarming all rebels" Colonel Clarke of Georgia, who had been operating extensively in the piedmont section of the two Carolinas in the cause of Liberty, decided to return home and disband his army. But after reaching Georgia, Colonel Jones, who held joint command with Colonel Clarke, opposed withdrawing from the conflict and proposed that if the men would follow him he would lead them through the mountains of upper South Carolina and into North Carolina where the Patriots were rallying. Thirty-five men volunteered to go with him, and this little band set out through the woods toward their destination, gathering recruits wherever they could be found. Their journey led them across the upper part of what is now Greenville County, and as they were emerging from the mountains to the northwest of present Gowensville, they learned that a body of Tories were encamped a few miles away. Pretending to be friends of Britain, they secured the services of a Tory to lead them to the enemy. Arriving there about 11 o'clock in the night, they opened fire upon the unsuspecting Tories and after killing one and wounding three they accepted the willing surrender of all those who had not been able to break through the lines and escape. This conflict is thought to have taken place at Gowen's fort, located a mile or two northeast of Gowensville.

During the months of suspense and bitter travail following the fall of Charles Town, and preceding the Battle of Kings Mountain, which is recognized as the turning point of the Revolution, the Whigs of upper Carolina were continually harassed by those two arch fiends, "Bloody Bill" Cunningham and "Bloody Bill" Bates. Cunningham was a resident of what is now Greenwood County, and Bates lived in the upper part of present Greenville County. Among the frontiersmen Bates was referred to as "the Plundering Scout" because of his thieving proclivities, while Cunningham was known as "the Bloody Scout" on account of his brutal murders. But Bates did not hesitate to kill when that would assist in his robberies, nor did Cunningham leave anything of value behind him. Both, soon after their activities began, acquired the name of "Bloody Bill."

At the outbreak of the war, William L. Cunningham, unlike his cousins, Robert and Patrick, chose the Patriot cause. He enlisted in Captain John Caldwell's company, which was composed of the most respectable young men of the upper country. But after taking part in numerous engagements, including the expedition against the Cherokees in 1776, he became offended for causes now unknown, left his company, then stationed on James's or John's Island, and returned home to become one of the most despised Tories known to South Carolina. Often during these latter years many of his atrocities are attributed to either Robert or Patrick, but to do so is to vilely defame the characters of these men, who, although opposing the province in the war, were sincere in their convictions and honorable in their conduct.

After "breaking" with the Whigs, Cunningham gathered to his side a small band of marauding cut-throats, who swept through the back country of South Carolina, leaving death and destruction in their wake. The present county of Spartanburg was visited, where it is thought he was joined by "the Plundering Scout" (Bates) with his band of outlaws from the Glassy and Hogback mountains. In the Nazareth Church section Captain Steadman, who lay sick at the home of Charles Moore, two young men stopping at the Moore home, and young John Caldwell were killed. On Lawson's Fork, Colonel John Wood and his brother James were dispatched in cold blood. Colonel Edward Hampton, who it will be recalled, had gone to the Cherokee nation as a good-will emissary in 1776, while passing through the section on his way to the home of his father-in-law, Baylis Earle, was called from his bed at the home of a friend and shot down. Another victim of the bloody pair was Major John Caldwell, the old commander of Cunningham, who was slain in his own yard while standing unarmed by the side of his wife. William Anderson, ancestor of Dr. J. L. Anderson of Greenville City, was another killed.

The widow of Colonel John Wood, killed by Cunningham, later married Colonel John Earle, whose descendants by his first wife reside in Greenville County in great numbers, and became the ancestress of the Prince and Bomar families so widely known in Spartanburg County. Colonel Edward Hampton was a son of Anthony Hampton, killed by the Indians in 1776 at his home near Greer, and brother of

FAMILY HISTORY LIBRARY

History

of

GREENVILLE COUNTY SOUTH CAROLINA

NARRATIVE AND BIOGRAPHICAL

By
JAMES M. RICHARDSON

F 277
G6 R52
(1930)

A. H. CAWSTON—PUBLISHER
ATLANTA, GEORGIA
1930

CHAPTER IV.

THE FIRST CHEROKEE WAR

The effect of the Cherokee treaty of 1755, followed by the defeat of General Braddock in Virginia, was to bring an influx of new settlers upon the frontiers of South Carolina, as has been previously discussed. But unfortunately, due to the blundering tactics of Governor Lyttleton of South Carolina, these newcomers were soon faced with the same dangers from which they had fled—hostile Indians upon their frontiers. Early in the conflict, the Cherokees joined forces with Great Britain and her American colonies, against the French and their Indian allies. And after the British reverses in Virginia, the Cherokees dispatched a number of warriors there to reinforce their hard-pressed allies. In 1758, Fort Duquesne fell before a combined attack of the English, Virginians and Indians, the Indians being led, it is said, by Captain Richard Pearis, afterward a resident of present day Greenville County; and with the removal of this great French stronghold, the southern colonies began to breathe freely again. The Cherokees, seeing that they were no longer needed, set out upon their return to Carolina, but on their homeward journey they incurred the wrath of a few Virginia settlers who fired upon them. Being greatly enraged, the warriors hurried to their Carolina homes and reported the ill treatment which had been accorded them. The young men of the Nation were for immediate and indiscriminate war upon the whites, but the leaders endeavored to restrain them from committing any overt acts till a conference with the governor at Charles Town could be arranged. However, a number of the young Indians, without the sanction of their head-men, raided the frontier settlements of present Spartanburg, Laurens and Abbeville Counties, killing a number of the inhabitants.

When it became known in the Cherokee nation that the wishes of the head-men had been disregarded, there was great alarm among the Indian people, and a deputation of 32 of the leading chiefs, led by Occonostota, was immediately started to Charles Town, where it was hoped a settlement of the difficulties could be effected. The Cherokees had always been on terms of the closest friendship with the Carolinians, and they greatly desired that this friendly relationship continue. But unfortunately, James Glen, who fully understood the Indians, was no longer governor; instead William Henry Lyttleton, a hot-head, who had his own ideas of how to handle the situation, now held that position. So after traveling for more than 200 miles upon their mission of peace, the Indian envoys were not even permitted to lay their petition before the governor. Instead, they were bluntly told that the governor did not care to hear them, and that he was even then about to march upon their people with an army. The Indians were assured, however, that they would be permitted to return to their own country since they had come on a friendly mission; but they were advised that the safest way for the return would be with the troops.

Within a few days after the coming of the chieftains, fully confident that the governor would receive them in the same spirit of friendship which had prompted their mission, these chosen leaders of a proud people, found themselves in the humiliating position of returning to their country, virtual prisoners in the hands of avowed enemies. Till the Congarees (Columbia) was reached they were permitted to march with the army, but upon leaving this encampment they were all made prisoners, and carried back to Keowee under heavy guard. Such treatment was inconceivable to the Indian mind, except it come at the hand of an enemy. In friendship, and on a mission of peace, their chiefs had journeyed to the seat of the white man's government, and they were brought back in chains and lodged in prison. Could such conduct be condoned? Never in the eyes of the proud Cherokee race! An unpardonable injury had been done them, and nothing short of bloodshed could propitiate that wrong.

Governor Lyttleton was as ignorant of the methods of Indian warfare as he was of the savage's ethics of life. The expedition had been hurriedly undertaken, and his troops were ill supplied with food, clothing and ammunition to withstand an Indian attack in that remote region. Many of the soldiers, realizing the incompetency of their leadership, soon began to show their discontent, and the governor, fearing mutiny, hurried messengers to Atta Kulla Kulla, the leading chief of all the Cherokees, requesting his immediate presence at Fort Prince George. Upon the arrival of this old chief, Governor Lyttleton, making as great a show of strength as possible, told him that he had brought his army into the Indian country to make war upon the red men if 24 of their number (this being the number of whites killed in the recent raid) were not immediately delivered up to be dealt with as might seem best. Atta Kulla Kulla proposed that three of the imprisoned chiefs, including Occonostota, be liberated to assist him in finding 24 of the young men who had taken part in the massacre. The suggestion was taken, and three of the Indian prisoners were released. But on the following day, after two of the guilty young men had been brought in, Atta Kulla Kulla set out upon his journey home. He had not proceeded far, however, when he was overtaken by a messenger from the governor requesting his return. Accordingly, the old warrior retraced his steps and again presented himself at the camp of Governor Lyttleton, where he frankly stated that additional time must be given if any more of the raiders were to be captured. The governor having already realized his mistake, and knowing that his army could not be held together longer, proposed a treaty by which 22 of the chiefs, then held prisoners, should be retained as hostages till an equal number of Indians were delivered in compliance with the original demand. This was acceded to by Atta Kulla Kulla, and such an agreement was reduced to writing and formally signed by Governor Lyttleton for the colony, and six Indian chiefs in behalf of the Cherokees. This done, the army was withdrawn.

Although the treaty was signed by the Cherokees, they never seemed to hold themselves bound by its terms, and no effort was made to deliver up any portion of the 22 Indians demanded. Occonostota continued to smart because of the treatment accorded him and his friends who had gone to Charles Town, and set himself to the task of releasing the hostages still confined in Fort Prince George. After gathering his warriors, he delivered an assault upon the fort, but little impression could be made. Seeing that he could not hope to accomplish his purposes in this manner, he used deception to draw Captain Cotymore from the fort, and no sooner was he outside its protecting walls than he was shot down by Indians previously placed in ambush for that purpose. As a consequence of this Indian treachery, orders were given in the fort to put the hostages in irons, but they resisted, and the garrison fell upon them and butchered them all in a most horrible manner.

The Cherokee issue had been unwisely handled from its inception, and this last act was a fatal blunder. There was hardly an Indian in the Nation who had not lost a relative in the massacre of the hostages, and now a cry for the blood of their enemies "to propitiate the spirits of their dead brothers" went up over the entire Cherokee country. With the hatchet, scalping knife and torch in hand, the savages rushed down upon the frontier settlements, leaving death and destruction in their wake. Men, women and children fell innocent sacrifices everywhere to the inefficient rule of Governor Lyttleton. Some escaped the tomahawk by fleeing to the woods only to die there of hunger, while others were taken prisoners to be subjected to inexpressible hardships and tortures. The frontiersmen, being unable to defend themselves, hurried messenger after messenger to Charles Town imploring aid, while the savages each day added new victims to their harvest of blood. But an epidemic of smallpox was sweeping over the coast country and no help could be furnished, and these unhappy people were left to contend with the savage scourge as best they could. Small forts and block-houses were hastily constructed along the entire Cherokee frontier, and into these crude fortifications the sorely beset settlers crowded with their movable property, where they remained in a state of defense, till the fury of their enemies exhausted itself in the systematic destruction of their unprotected homes, provisions and fields. At this time, the present Greenville County, still being Indian territory, bristled with these places of defense all along her eastern and southern boundaries, where are now found Spartanburg and Laurens Counties.

After a time, Virginia and North Carolina came to the rescue of the South Carolinians by sending down seven troops of rangers which were joined in a short time by Colonel Montgomery with a small force of British regulars. Montgomery, assuming command, marched into the Cherokee country where he inflicted heavy losses on the Indians. But he was recalled to the northern provinces within a short time, and again the Carolina frontier was left exposed to the savage attacks. A provincial regiment was then raised and put under command of Colonel Middleton. Among the officers of this regiment, who later gained prominence in South Carolina military and political history, were Henry Laurens, William Moultrie, Francis Marion, Isaac Huger and Andrew Pickens. This force united with a regiment of British regulars under Colonel Grant, who had been sent to Carolina when it seemed that the Indian trouble there was becoming so serious as to endanger the British cause in America. The command of the united forces was entrusted to Colonel Grant, who, now at the head of 2,600 men, pushed rapidly into the wilderness of the Cherokee country, utterly destroying the homes, granaries and growing crops of the Indians, who fled before the approaching army into the mountains, where they often attacked from ambush, but without inflicting sufficient losses upon the advancing forces to seriously impede their progress. This expedition was known as the Grant Indian war; and it brought the Cherokees into complete submission, thus ending the first conflict of arms between the Cherokees and South Carolina.

Note.—The agreement between Governor Lyttleton and the Cherokees with reference to holding the hostage chiefs, and the treaty which terminated the Grant campaign were both reduced to writing, and are on file in the office of the Historical Commission at Columbia. It is with regret that copies are not incorporated here, but space will not permit.

Williamson and Major Mayson had stationed their small forces. On the 21st of

CHAPTER V.

PRE-REVOLUTIONARY SETTLERS ON GREENVILLE COUNTY LANDS

The Cherokee Indian trouble having already been satisfactorily settled, the treaty of Paris, concluded in 1763, left the South Carolina frontier free to pursue a life of industry for the first time since it began to receive the Virginia, Pennsylvania, and New York settlers. Long years of war and pillage had greatly retarded its development, but a new life was now opening for the up-country. A vast extent of virgin territory, claimed by Carolina under the treaty of Governor Glen, and confirmed in her by the Cherokees after Grant's Indian war, offered many advantages to those people residing further north. Here, where ideal weather conditions prevailed the whole year through, and rich lands could be purchased for a song, the residents of western Virginia, Pennsylvania and New York saw opportunities innumerable, and soon started a steady stream of emigration into Piedmont South Carolina.

It was not till 1777 that present-day Greenville County was acquired from the Indians, but it is evident that a number of white people took up their abode here during the period after the French and Indian war, when so many pioneers were establishing themselves upon adjoining lands. Never had Greenville County as of today, been used by the Indians for the location of their permanent towns, practically all of these being in present Pickens and Oconee Counties, hence there seemed to be little objection to white men living there. Under treaties with Great Britain, the Cherokees were not permitted to sell their lands to individuals, but there is evidence that they disregarded this provision of their agreement and sold extensively to at least one man (Richard Pearis) and perhaps others, while they permitted many to become "squatters" in their country.

The best known of all pre-Revolutionary settlers in Greenville County was, of course, Richard Pearis (Páris), who took up his residence on the site of present Greenville City, between the years 1766 and 1768. Pearis was an Irishman of some education and pronounced ability, who settled in Frederick County, Virginia, prior to 1750. He later established himself on Long Island of the Holston river as an Indian trader, and was at one time associated with Nathaniel (afterward General) Gist. Governor Dinwiddie of Virginia, recognizing his ability, commissioned him a lieutenant of Virginia Provincials in 1755 and soon afterward he became a captain in command of a company of Cherokees and Catawbas in an expedition under Major Lewis against the Shawnee towns west of the Ohio. He served gallantly throughout the French and Indian war and is said to have been the first man to enter Fort Duquesne, being captain of a band of Cherokee warriors (probably from South Carolina). In commendation of his services in the war, he was publicly thanked and given the post of agent for Southern Indians with headquarters at Fort Pitt. But after filling this position for a short time, he decided to move to South Carolina and take up his residence among the Cherokees, since his wife was a Cherokee woman. Some authorities, however, say that he was ordered south where he might be "more centrically located to gather the Cherokees in the event of an Indian outbreak." But later events in his life tend to show that his real motive in going into the Indian country was to gain their confidence through his wife and then rob them of their lands.

Pearis established his trading post and erected a corn mill near the present location of Camperdown mill, at what was then called "Great Plains", and was soon engaged in a lucrative business with the Indians. His holdings of land were extended year by year in every direction, till at the outbreak of the Revolutionary war, he is said to have claimed title to ten miles square. But he never, at any time, held legal title to any lands, for as has already been said, the Indians by their treaties had agreed to sell no lands to individuals, and he could therefore have acquired only a sort of permissive use of his holdings. Just how he probably acquired these broad acres is revealed in a letter written to the Cherokee people by John Stuart, superintendent of Indian affairs, in 1775, which reads in part: "I am very sorry of the little regard paid to my advice, and your own interest, respecting your land which you compliment away to every white man who asks for it. You have been constantly told and admonished by me, not to treat or bargain for your land with any person but me. . . . You are constantly listening to Richard Pearis, who cheats you of your lands." From Pearis comes the name of "Paris Mountain", which beautiful and pleasant summer resort of Greenvillians today was included within his holdings. Later, in the days of the Revolution, Richard Pearis was a prominent Tory, and his activities as such will be discussed later.

About the time Richard Pearis took up his residence at Great Plains, a Colonel Hite, with his family, moved down from Virginia and established himself on the Enoree river near where that stream is now crossed by the old Spartanburg road. There are records extant showing that he was in possession of at least 1,300 acres. Tradition says that Captain Pearis and Colonel Hite were friends while still in Virginia, and that this friendship continued for many years after the two had settled in South Carolina. A son of Colonel Hite, it is said, was engaged to be married to Pearis' daughter, which romance was ended by the death of young Hite at the hands of the Indians during the early days of the Revolution. The Hite family adhered to the cause of the Whigs in the war of the Revolution, and the Colonel, his wife and at least one of his sons (the one engaged to the daughter of Pearis) were killed in a bloody Indian raid during the summer of 1776.

Among the very early settlers in what is now Greenville County, was Nathaniel Austin, who came down from Virginia about 1761 or 1762 and settled on Gilders creek, a few miles northeast of the town of Simpsonville. He was an Englishman, having emigrated from that country to Virginia only a few years before coming to South Carolina. It is said that he held a commission from King George III as high constable. J. Thomas Austin, a great-grandson of the original settler, it will be recalled by the older residents, was prominent in public affairs of the county for many years during the latter part of the last century, being a member of the celebrated "Wallace House." Family tradition has it that a daughter of Nathaniel Austin was killed by Indians some years prior to the Revolution, and that several years later a brother of the murdered girl succeeded in slaying one of the Indians who had been concerned in her death. However, the killing of this young lady probably took place in 1776, during the raid in which several members of the Hite family lost their lives, as there is no record of any Indian massacres in this section between the time the Austin family came to South Carolina and that date. Nathaniel Austin and all of his children were ardent supporters of the Patriot cause in the Revolution.

There is evidence that a family by the name of Gilder resided near the home of the Austins; and it is said that one of the Gilder girls was a witness to the slaying of Miss Austin, a friend and neighbor, with whom she was out walking when the Indians swept down upon the little settlement. It is no doubt from this family that Gilder creek derives its name.

In the northeastern part of the county several families are thought to have resided prior to the Revolution. Among these were the Gowen, Howard, Fisher and Dill families. Major Buck Gowen and Captain Howard, members of two of these families, won distinction during the Revolution as daring leaders of small forces operating in semi-guerilla style against the Tories of upper Spartanburg and Greenville Counties. Near the present Gowensville settlement (named in honor of Major Buck Gowen) Gowen's fort was located in Greenville County. Further south and not far from Greer, was Wood's fort, which was also in Greenville County. Both of these fortifications are known to have existed during the Revolution, and some authorities fix their construction date as of the Indian massacres during the French and Indian war. If these forts existed at that early date, no doubt there were several families residing near them.

Near Piedmont, on Grove creek, it is thought that Alexander Cameron, Indian agent, and much despised Tory of later days, maintained "cowpens", although he did not live there. The Cameron place was granted to Henry Pendleton, a Carolinian of prominence, from whom Pendleton District and the town of Pendleton derived their names, in 1784, following the acquisition of the county from the Cherokees. And in this immediate vicinity, there were doubtless a number of settlers, for the "Golden Grove" seems to have been a choice location when the county was later opened to regular settlements.

At this late day, in the absence of any records, it is impossible to ascertain the names of many of the pre-Revolutionary settlers, but evidence which comes down through descriptions and plats from early land grants warrants the statement that some white men were to be found in practically every section of the county. Roads led in almost every direction, and some of these were evidently of the "public" variety. There was one leading from Pearis' plantation to Ninety-Six and Augusta, and another along the approximate route of the present Old Spartanburg road through Colonel Hite's plantation "to the Settlements" in present Spartanburg County.

Living near these early Greenville County settlers, in what is now Spartanburg County, were a number of people whose later lives were so closely identified with Greenville County and its development that brief reference to them here would not be out of place. Residing two or three miles northeast of the town of Greer was a family whose name in after years became famous the South over. This was none other than Anthony Hampton, great-grandfather of Governor Wade Hampton of "red shirt" days. Anthony Hampton and several members of his family were killed in the Indian massacre of 1776. Another was Judge Baylis Earle of the Landrum section of Spartanburg. The descendants of Judge Baylis Earle and his brother, Colonel John Earle, who resided near him, but just over the state line in North Carolina, have been prominent in the political, social, business and professional life of Greenville County from its organization down to the present. Another resident of Spartanburg County of this period, was Colonel John Thomas, who later led the expedition against the Cherokees which terminated in a treaty under which Greenville County was ceded to Carolina. Just north of Duncan, in the Nazareth church settlement, lived a considerable community of Scotch-Irish people who had come down from Pennsylvania some time before the French and Indian war. Among these were the Pedens, Alexanders, Mortons, Morrows and Nesbitts, who, after the Revolution, moved to lower Greenville County and established Fairview Presbyterian church in 1786.

As the country grew in population, it became evident to the frontiersmen that a stable government must be established if prosperity and happiness were to be enjoyed by the people. The war just concluded had thrown upon these regions a host of idlers, who sought to live by their wits. No courts had yet been established in the back country, and no law enforcement officers were stationed nearer than Charles Town, with which communication was anything but rapid. Because of this state, these idle people, seeing that it would be an easy matter to live upon the industry of their neighbors, soon banded themselves together to prey upon the community. Horse stealing and cattle "rustling" became fine arts; and murder and rapine were daily occurrences. But petition after petition directed to the Governor and Assembly by the law-abiding people were ignored till, by the year 1767, that portion of the colony lying between the Saluda and Broad found itself in a deplorable state.

The law-abiding people of the up-country, knowing that something must be done to curb such outlawry if they were to continue living there, decided to take the law into their own hands. A semi-military organization was formed, and it set about ridding the country of the marauding bands infesting it. This self-constituted "law and order league" was known as the Regulators. But however commendable might have been the purpose of the Regulators, many inexcusable acts of rowdyism and oppression were committed in the name of the organization; and opposition to its activities soon began to be heard from many who had no more sympathy for lawlessness than did the most rabid Regulator. Feeling ran high and the entire back country soon found itself divided into two armed camps. The authorities in Charles Town became alarmed and sought to quell the disturbance by proceeding against the Regulators. In pursuance of this policy, one Scoville (or Scofield) was sent into the district lying between the Saluda and Broad with instructions to break up that organization. But he proved to be a man of low character, and in executing his commission, he adopted very harsh and extreme measures with numbers of the better classes among the people, involving multitudes in great distress. Those who opposed the Regulators were soon termed Schophalites, and so intense was the

for the Cherokee Nation, and im-

Richardson could reach the frontier, they marched upon Ninety-Six, where Major Williamson and Major Mayson had stationed their small forces. On the 21st of

feeling engendered between the two followings that every resident of the frontiers eventually found himself classed as a member of one or the other faction. Richard Pearis was an outspoken adherent of the Schophalite cause, whether from honest convictions that the Regulators were too freely resorting to "Lynch law", or because he secretly sympathized with and supported the lawless element is not known; but his conduct during the Revolution leads one to suspect the latter as his real motive.

Scoville was soon withdrawn, but the bitterness engendered among the people by his activities lingered for many years, and became a strong contributing factor in the internecine warfare which was so savagely prosecuted in upper South Carolina during all the years of the Revolution. But the determined attitude of the Regulators seems to have impressed the authorities with the justice of their cause, for no sooner was Scoville out of the country than remedial legislation was undertaken. The machinery of government moved slowly, but in 1769 a bill was passed establishing courts at six locations outside Charles Town. One of these was at Ninety-Six. These new courts were given very limited jurisdiction, but the up-country felt that it was now being recognized by the government and this had a pacific influence on the inhabitants there. Conditions immediately began to improve, and by 1770 comparative quiet had been restored.

CHAPTER VI.

THE REVOLUTION BEGINS—BATTLE OF GREAT CANE BRAKE

JUST as the frontiersmen were beginning to compose themselves in the thought that they could now settle back into a life of reasonable tranquility, the bitterness engendered by the issue between the Regulators and Scophelites having somewhat abated, a new cause of disturbance began to loom large upon the horizon. For many months occasional visitors to Charles Town had returned to the up country with news of conflicts between the mother country and various ones of the American colonies over the right of Great Britain to tax them, but little was thought of the matter here on the frontiers. These hard working people had never taken an interest in politics—in fact, the coast country had not permitted them to exercise any of the privileges of citizenship—and they reasoned now that this was no concern of theirs. This state of apathy on the part of such a large proportion of its people was viewed with alarm by the Council of Public Safety, which had now taken the reins of government from the hands of the British governor, and it was decided to dispatch a commission from the seat of government at Charles Town, "to go into the interior parts of this colony at the public expense, there to explain to the people at large, the nature of the unhappy public dispute between Great Britain and the American colonies to quiet their minds, and to enforce the necessity of a general union in order to preserve themselves and their children from slavery."

The commission sent out consisted of William H. Drayton, formerly a Judge of the King's Court, and the Rev. William Tennant, a Presbyterian minister, both of whom were noted for their diplomacy and persuasive manner. These gentlemen left Charles Town early in June, 1775, and proceeded immediately to the Congarees (now Columbia), where they stopped for a few days to confer with representative men from the up country, who had come down at their request. After these informal conferences they moved northward, holding public meetings wherever the people could be assembled together. But the inhabitants were found to be, not only indifferent to the cause of the colony against Great Britain, but in great fear of trouble with the Indians. Already Alexander Cameron was in the Cherokee country inciting the savages to hostilities against the frontiers, and a sharp conflict had actually taken place between a small detachment of Patriots under Colonel William Thomson and a larger number of Indians led by Cameron.

The commissioners now saw that if any cooperation at all was to be had from the frontiersmen, the ever-present menace of an Indian attack must be removed. So negotiations were undertaken with Richard Pearis in an effort to have him bring down some of the Indian head-men for a conference. It was with some trepidition, and contrary to instruction from Charles Town, that Pearis was chosen for this purpose, as his loyalty to the Patriot cause was even then doubted. But he was a man of great influence among the Indians, and having demonstrated his value as a friend to Virginia in the late war with France, Mr. Drayton decided that no effort should

be spared to secure his aid. He thought this show of confidence might be the means of linking him firmly with the friends of Independence.

As a consequence of these negotiations, Pearis appeared at the Congarees on September 25th, 1775, with several chiefs from the Indian Nation. Here they were met by Mr. Drayton. The Indians expressed considerable indignation, and seemed greatly concerned that the colonists had stopped all movements of ammunition to the traders in their country. They had long since put aside the bow and arrow for the use of firearms, and now, not being able to secure ammunition, they had no means of obtaining food, since they still depended upon the fruits of the chase for a livelihood. But Mr. Drayton explained to them, in a talk suited to the occasion, the nature of the dispute between Great Britain and America, and why it had become necessary to discontinue the trade in ammunition. His explanation was satisfactory, and the Indians promised "to hold fast to the chain of peace." Believing that the purpose of the meeting had been accomplished, and that no further danger of an Indian attack existed, Mr. Drayton assured the chiefs of his government's friendship and promised that powder and lead would be sent them at once.

The pacific attitude of the Indians, when made known to the frontiersmen, caused a number of the up country leaders to align themselves with the colonists. Soon it began to appear that the old Scophalite faction was friendly to the King, and this had much weight in carrying the Regulator adherents to the other side. However, Colonel Thomas Fletchall, commander of a regimental district in the up country, announced that he would remain loyal to Britain, and this action left the Patriots between the Saluda and Broad without organization or leadership. But they set to work as best they could to perfect an organization, and in a short time had chosen leaders and were rapidly enrolling the anti-British inhabitants. John Thomas, later a resident of Greenville County, was chosen colonel of the Spartan regiment, an organization which did valiant service in the war to follow. However, a communication from him to Mr. Drayton about this time clearly shows conditions on the frontier still were in a bad state of disorganization.

A portion of the letter from Colonal Thomas is as follows:

Spartan Regiment,
Sept. 11, 1775.

"To the Honorable W. H. Drayton, Esq.:

"*May It Please Your Honor;*—I this moment received your Honor's favor of the 10th instant, and very fortunately the command of this district was just assembled at my house in order to address the Council of Safety almost on the very purport of your Honor's letter, as we had all the reason in the world (and still have), to believe from good information, that the malignants are forming the most hellish schemes to frustrate the measures of the Continental Congress, and to use all those who are willing to stand by those measures in the most cruel manner. Your Honor will be fully convinced of the truth of this by perusing the papers transmitted herewith, to which I refer your Honor.

JOHN THOMAS."

Pursuant to the promise made by Mr. Drayton, the Council of Safety, on October 4th, 1775, voted a supply of ammunition for the Cherokee Nation, and im-

mediately dispatched one thousand pounds of powder and two thousand pounds of lead by ammunition train into the up country. A few days before this, Major Williamson had secured the arrest of Robert Cunningham, of present Laurens County, because of purported "seditious statements" and sent him under arrest to Charles Town. Patrick Cunningham, hoping to effect the release of his brother, Robert, organized a body of his friends and started in pursuit of those conveying him to prison, but was unable to overtake them. However, he met the ammunition train coming up from Charles Town, and feeling much aggrieved because of the manner in which his brother had been treated, he took possession of the ammunition and conveyed it back to the vicinity of Ninety-Six. When this information reached the Council of Safety there was great alarm, for the Indians had been promised the ammunition, and their disappointment in its failure to be delivered, might cause them to fall upon the frontier settlements; so steps were immediately taken to forestall such an event. Mr. Drayton, thinking Pearis still loyal to the province, wrote him a letter requesting him to inform the Indians of what had occurred, and to assure them that the ammunition would soon be recovered and forwarded to them. Colonel Richard Richardson was ordered to proceed with his army from the Congarees, where it was encamped, into the up-country, not only to recapture the ammunition, but to arrest those who had taken part in its seizure.

Major Andrew Williamson, then in command of the few up-country settlers bold enough to take up arms for the Patriot cause, realizing the serious nature of the Cunningham incident, without awaiting orders from headquarters, sent out a detachment of militia from his camp at Hard Labor creek (in what is now Laurens County) in an effort to cut off and capture the Cunningham band as it returned. Cunningham eluded his pursuers, however, and returned safely to his home. But while the Council of Safety at Charles Town and Major Williamson in the up-country were putting forth every possible effort to allay the insurgency and pacify the Indians by recovering and delivering to them the powder and lead taken by Cunningham, Richard Pearis was exerting himself to poison the minds of the frontiersmen against the Patriot cause. Up to this time he seems to have been assuring each side of his friendship, only for the purpose of gaining time to learn which was the stronger and more likely to succeed in the coming conflict. Now it seemed to him that he was safe in choosing. Great Britain must win, and casting his lot with her would mean much to Pearis. As was well known to those who had dealt with him, he had no regard for the truth when its perversion would serve his purpose, so he now resorted to the most infamous lies conceivable to inflame the minds of the people. He even went so far as to sign and circulate an affidavit to the effect that the ammunition being sent to the Indians was intended to be used by them to kill all those of the border settlers who were friendly to the Crown. And since Pearis had been with the Indian chiefs upon the occasion of their visit to the Congarees, his affidavit carried all the earmarks of truth.

Urged on by the malicious treachery of Pearis, the Tories, now greatly augmented by those who believed his assertions to be true, acted quickly. Before Colonel Richardson could reach the frontier, they marched upon Ninety-Six, where Major Williamson and Major Mayson had stationed their small forces. On the 21st of

Among those receiving early grants from the state were George Hite and Jacob O'Bannon Hite, who together acquired 3,000 acres located on Grove creek. To no other persons was so large an acreage conveyed; and the liberality of the state to these two was no doubt occasioned by the grievous losses which they had sustained in the death of their father, mother, brother and sisters at the hands of the savages. And it was probably in this manner, too, that they were compensated for the lands occupied by their father on Enoree river. In 1799 all of these lands were sold to Alexander Pitt Buchanan. The grantors at that time resided in Berkley County, Virginia. Tradition has it that all of the Hite family, remaining after the Indian massacre, returned to their home in Virginia. Very likely this is true.

To James Bradley went "a tract of land on the Bounty of the State, containing 200 acres on Golden Grove, a branch of Saluda river." Doctor William Smith Stevens was granted "a tract of land on the Bounty of the State, containing 300 acres on Saluda river." Another tract of land "on the Bounty of the State" went to Thomas Prince, Gentleman, being mentioned as "200 acres of land allowed by law to a Lieutenant in the independent service of the Palmetto State, on waters of Enoree river." A grant of "500 acres on Reedy river about two miles above Rich'd Paris's old place on said river" goes to Baylis Earle. Incorporated in the instrument of conveyance is a recital reading, "Pursuant to a warrant from John Thomas, Esq., Commissioner of Location, and agreeable to a Resolution and Ordinance which passed both Branches of the Legislature of this State." All of the plats attached to the Location Certificates for these lands are marked "Bounty Lands."

Among others receiving grants of land in Greenville County during the year 1784, were John Earle, John Winn, Sr., John Milling, Joseph Hughs, Henry Woolf, Thomas Farrow, William Giles, William Goodlet, Captain William Smith, James McElheney, John Gowin, George Martin, James Winn, John Winn, David Milling, Robert Gilliland, Alexander Johnson, Michal Persal, Alexander McElheney, Thomas Jenkins, John Goodwin, John Clark, Kilpatrick, John Henderson, Joseph Atkinson, Samuel Earle, William Davis, Alexander Ray, Thomas Rowland, Henry Metcher, William Brandon, Joseph Whitner, John Timmons, John Davis, John Langston, Joseph Reynolds, Abraham Case, Ferdin'd Hopkins, Rachel Gaugh, John Lindsey, Joseph McLaughlen, Henry Wells, Robert Goodlett, John McQueen, Uriah Conner, Joseph McJunkin, William Anderson, John Davis and James Jorden.

During this period of rapid growth, Greenville County did not differ greatly from all other "boom" communities in respect to law observance and law enforcement. From the time of its acquisition from the Cherokees in 1777 till 1786, when it was formally organized into a county, the territory now composing Greenville was theoretically under the civil jurisdiction of the Ninety-Six District. But at its best, the up-country had never been given its due in respect to law enforcement and the protection usually afforded by the courts. It will be remembered that for some years prior to the Revolutionary war, the back country settlers had clamored for courts and law enforcement officers so vigorously as to precipitate the conflict between the Regulators and the Scophelites, which terminated in the establishment of courts of inferior jurisdiction in the up-country. One of these was at Ninety-Six, but its lack of power and the general inefficiency of its officials rendered it absolutely unable

to cope with conditions which now existed in Greenville County. Feeling between Whigs and Tories was still bitter; grievances from the war were yet to be settled, and often this culminated in personal conflicts. Sneak thieves and highwaymen roved at will about the country-side, preying upon honest citizens. But conditions were alleviated to some extent by the actions of self-chosen and generally recognized leaders (usually ex-army officers) who took unto themselves the authority of meting out justice unto the most flagrant law-breakers. The manner in which this was done is well illustrated by the methods of Colonel Benjamin Cleveland, the Kings Mountain hero, as told by Johnson in his *Traditions*. Says Johnson:

> "This gentleman (Colonel Cleveland) at the termination of hostilities, retired with his family to this frontier settlement in Greenville, and being accompanied by a number of hardy camp associates, established among them a patriarchal government, until the courts of justice could be extended over that part of the State. Colonel Cleveland was, of course, at the head of the government, and executed the duties of his office with much judgment and discretion. On one occasion, when he was absent from home, some of his neighbors brought a horse-thief to his residence for adjudication. They waited awhile for his return, but as the day advanced they began to apprehend that their prisoner might escape, or they have much more trouble with him. Mrs. Cleveland was at home, occupied in her domestic vocations, and at the time smoking her pipe. The men asked her for instructions what they should do with their prisoner. She inquired in turn the particulars of the offense, and of the evidence against him, and on being assured that it was a clear unquestionable case of horse-stealing, she asked what the colonel would order to be done? They as promptly answered he should be hanged'. 'Well then', said the old lady, 'you must hang him', and he was accordingly hung at the gate."

Johnson is incorrect in saying that Colonel Cleveland resided in Greenville and that this act of summary justice transpired there (he lived in present Oconee), but it fairly illustrates the condition of affairs in all the newly settled country till near the end of the century.

Although great numbers of the early settlers of Greenville County were devout Christians, several months seems to have elapsed before any churches were organized in the county. This delay was no doubt occasioned by the unsettled condition of the country. But during the years 1785 and 1786 a number of families from the Nazareth Church section of Spartanburg County moved in and settled a few miles above the Laurens County line. These people were Scotch-Irish, who had come over from County Antrim, Ireland, just before the Revolution, and settled among friends and relatives about Nazareth. Being devout people and having left Ireland principally on account of religious persecutions, these additions to the new county, almost immediately upon their arrival, set about organizing a church; and in 1786, their efforts succeeded in gaining admission into Presbytery for their church—Fairview Presbyterian Church. Of those constituting the membership of this first church organization in Greenville County, much can be learned by reading the account given by Howe in his *History of the Presbyterian Church in South Carolina*. In part he says:

> "Fairview Church is situated in the district of Greenville, on waters of Reedy river, which is a branch of the Saluda. It is two hundred miles from

> Charleston, nineteen miles from Greenville court-house, and three miles east from Fork Shoals. It was formed in the year 1786. Five families—those namely, of John Peden, James Alexander, Samuel Peden, David Peden, and James Nesbit—migrated from the bounds of Nazareth and settled in this neighborhood. In that year they formed their first association, and on April 10th, 1787, were taken under the care of presbytery. One of their earliest acts had been to erect a house for divine worship. This year 1787, their numbers were increased by the addition of three other families—those of John Alexander, David Morton and James Alexander, Senior, the father of John and James Alexander, all of Nazareth. . . . The Pedens above named were the offspring of John Peden and Peggy McDill, who emigrated from the county of Antrim, in Ireland, in 1773. They had seven sons and three daughters. These last intermarried, one with an Alexander, another with William Gaston; the third was twice married, first to a Morton, and upon his death, to one of the name of Morrow. . . . In the course of a few years, all their children (that is, John and Peggy Peden) gathered around Fairview Church, where they settled, with the exception of Thomas, who lived and died in the bounds of Nazareth. Their large families composed no small portion of the church and congregation."

No history of Greenville County would be complete without mention being made of Colonel John Thomas and his wife, who were among the early residents. Colonel Thomas was born in Wales, but early in life emigrated to Pennsylvania, where he resided till 1755, when he moved to South Carolina and settled in what is now Chester County. In 1740 he married Miss Jane Black, sister of the Reverend John Black. The outbreak of the Revolution found him in Spartanburg County, residing on Fair Forest creek.

Early in the struggle for Independence, Colonel Thomas resigned his positions as a Militia Captain and Magistrate under the Crown, and alligned himself with the Patriot forces. He was elected colonel of the Spartan regiment, and rendered valiant service till the fall of Charleston, taking a prominent part in the Cherokee campaign of 1776. Soon after the fall of Charleston, he was taken prisoner and remained in confinement at Ninety-Six and Charleston till the close of the war. His son, John Thomas, Jr., succeeded him as colonel of the Spartan regiment.

While Colonel Thomas was confined at Ninety-Six, his wife visited him, and while there overheard one of two women in conversation say: "On tomorrow night the Loyalists intend to surprise the Rebels at Cedar Springs." Cedar Springs was near her home and a number of her children were posted there, so Mrs. Thomas was greatly disturbed by that chance information. It was more than 50 miles to the scene of the proposed attack, and the intervening country, then over-run by Tories, presented many difficulties; but Mrs. Thomas was not to be deterred in the face of obstacles. She set out to warn the Whigs at Cedar Springs, and after undergoing many hardships reached the camp-site in advance of the enemy. Preparations for defense were made, and when the Tories swept down upon the encampment, expecting to find all there asleep, they were met by such spirited opposition as to suffer defeat with heavy losses. An interesting sketch of Mrs. Thomas is carried by Mrs. Ellet in her "Women of the Revolution."

After peace had been restored Colonel Thomas secured a grant of several hundred acres of land in the Locus section of Greenville County, where he moved with his family to remain a valuable and respected citizen till his death in 1805. He was the first person to hold the office of Commissioner of Location with jurisdiction over Greenville County.

Another of the women mentioned by Mrs. Ellet in her great work is Dicey Langston. This brave woman lived in upper Greenville County for a number of years following the Revolution, and now lies buried near Locus. Recently her grave was located by the late Adam C. Welborn, and suitably marked by the Daughters of the American Revolution.

Chapter X.

PLEASANTBURG — EARLY TOWN OF GREENVILLE

Several years before the village of Pleasantburg came into existence, and no doubt before there was a single house upon its future location, there existed somewhat of a community about the present Tanglewood school section. There, near the present intersection of the White Horse road and state highway No. 2 (newly paved road to Easley), was the general store of A. McBeth & Company, which is known to have been doing a flourishing business as early as 1794. Near the McBeth establishment lived a number of planters and summer residents who had early selected that vicinity because it commanded such an excellent view of the mountains to the north, and was at the same time considered more healthful than other nearby locations on account of its elevation.

In 1788 Thomas Brandon conveyed the 400 acres granted to him in 1784 unto Lemuel J. Alston, who already resided in the county, and was the owner of much land adjoining and near that purchased from Brandon. It will be recalled that this property included the "Richard Pearis mill site" which was later to become the village of Pleasantburg, now Greenville. Alston was a man of wealth and great political influence, and no doubt for this reason the commissioners who had been appointed to select a site for the location of a court house in Greenville County chose the eastern side of Reedy river near the Pearis mill site. And here started the first "real estate development project" in the county, when in 1797 was laid out the town of Pleasantburg by Alston, upon the lands which he had purchased from Colonel Brandon.

The first plat of Pleasantburg included roughly, all that portion of the present city of Greenville to the east of the river, two city blocks wide, and extending to what is now Washington Street. Through the center of this plot ran a wide street at very nearly the present location of Main Street, with three other streets (present Broad Street, Court Street and McBee Avenue) crossing it at right angles. Lots were cut to the number of 50, with 20 of them facing the principal street. The present Blue Building and Dean Building cover the greater portion of lot No. 1; lot No. 15 is almost entirely taken up by the post office property; the Masonic Temple is on a part of lot No. 12; lot No. 7 is covered by the Poinsett Hotel Building and one or two other structures north of it; the Palmetto Building and Carpenter Bros. drug store are upon lot No. 6; the City Hall stands on number 44; No. 47 supports the seventeen-story Woodside Building. Where the court house and Chamber of Commerce Building now stand were parts of a square made up of the open courts in front of the Blue Building, Palmetto Building, Poinsett Hotel Building and old Law Range, together with the portions of the street now covered by these two buildings. The court house, which was of log construction, was placed in the middle of the square, while the goal (jail), also of logs, was located a block to the south of the court house in the middle of the street near the present intersection of Court and Fall Streets.

The sale of lots in the new village of Pleasantburg was slow. Although the county had filled up rapidly and now had many thousands of inhabitants, there was little demand for "town property." The inhabitants were primarily an agricultural people who "lived at home", therefore there was little business to be had for merchants and artisans, so few had need of lands not suitable for farming.

The first sale in the village seems to have been made on April 22, 1797, when one acre, consisting of lots Nos. 11 and 12, was conveyed to Isaac Wickliff for $100.00. These two lots now comprise the Masonic Temple property, the Donaldson property on which is the row of old wood buildings known formerly as the "Law Range", and the vacant lots on Court Street to the rear of the Masonic Temple and the Donaldson property.

Next comes a sale of "6 lots at Greenville C. H. Village of Pleasantburg, one-half acre each, Nos. 1, 2, 3, 16, 17 and 18", on September 5, 1798, unto John McBeth for $600.00. This conveyance comprises the entire block now bounded by Main Street on the north, Court Street on the east, Fall Street on the south and Broad Street on the west.

During the year 1799 lot No. 36 was conveyed to Thomas Alexander; and lots Nos. 37, 39, 40, 47, 48 and 22 were sold to John W. Wood.

In 1800 Francis Wickliff acquired lots Nos. 14 and 15; John B. Blackman was conveyed lots 13, 5, and 10; and John McBeth became the owner of almost half the block on which now stands the First National Bank Building, by purchase of lots Nos. 33, 34, and 35 for $187.00.

Elias Earle purchased lot No. 6 for $500.00 in 1801.

In 1804 John Taylor became the owner of lot No. 4 for $40.00.

John Archer purchased "lot No. 46 in Greenville village, where my blacksmith shop now stands," in 1807.

The little village was now 10 years old but there seems to have developed no real estate activity, as just half the 50 lots into which it had been divided were sold, and of this number four had been resold by the Sheriff under execution against their owners. Values had not enhanced, and there had been few re-sales except under the "forced" method. Shops were few and of inferior construction, while only four or five residences had been erected in the entire village, and these were of logs. But near the present High School Building, which was then outside the village, stood the beautiful home of Lemuel J. Alston, which was said to be the most elaborate residence in the entire up-country, and leading from it to the village was a wide avenue (now West McBee) lined on either side by trees. Alston was the owner of more than 10,000 acres of land which he very successfully cultivated with slaves. About him and his magnificent home, where well-stocked cellars could always be found, revolved the social life of early Greenville and its surrounding plantations.

A very good picture of the impression made upon a stranger by the village during its babyhood may be had by reading an extract from the diary of Edward Hooker, a native of Connecticut, who paid Greenville a visit in 1806. He says:

"Approaching the village of Greenville, we pass in view of Chancellor Thomson's (Thompson) seat—quite retired in the woods, about two miles from the Court House. Arrived at Col. Alston's about 12. His seat is without exception the most beautiful that I have seen in South Carolina. The mansion is on a commanding eminence which he calls *Prospect Hill.* Fronts the village of Greenville from which it is distant just six hundred yards; and to which there is a spacious and beautiful avenue leading, formed by two rows of handsome sycamore trees planted twenty four feet apart—the avenue being 15 rods wide. In like manner another handsome avenue formed by cutting a passage through the woods leads from the north front of the house to the mountain road, about a quarter of a mile in length. The cultivated grounds lie partly on the borders of the great avenue leading to the village and partly on the borders of Reedy river, south and west of the house. . . . The Court House is a decent two story building. The jail is three stories, large and handsome. The situation and aspect of the village is quite pretty and rural; the streets covered with green grass and handsome trees growing here and there . . . but there is a want of good houses—the buildings being mostly of logs. About six dwelling houses, two or three shops and some other little buildings. The place is thought by many to be as healthy as any part of the United States. Not a seat of much business. The courts sit but twice a year and often finish this session in two or three days. Only one attorney, and law business dull. One or two physicians in or near the village; but their practice is mainly at the Golden Grove, a fertile but unhealthy settlement ten miles below. One Clergyman within six or seven miles who preaches at the Court House once in three or four weeks."

The year 1805 marked the entry of Captain Jeremiah Cleveland into the business life of the little town, where he and his descendants were to play such a prominent part even down to the present time. He then purchased lot No. 36, under execution, from the Sheriff for $50.00, and soon thereafter erected upon it a small shop in which the firm of Erwin, Patton & Cleveland launched itself into the general mercantile business. From this modest beginning Captain Cleveland expanded his businesses till they were to amass him a fortune of several hundred thousand dollars, while Greenville was still a village.

All who know anything at all of the early history of Greenville have heard the name of Vardry McBee, ancestor of so many, who with himself, have contributed greatly to the upbuilding of Greenville, both city and county. In 1815 he purchased the entire holdings of Lemuel J. Alston, consisting of 11,028 acres in and around the village of Greenville. Mr. McBee then resided at Lincolnton, North Carolina, and did not move to Greenville till 1835, but almost immediately after his Greenville purchase he set on foot many enterprises which were soon to give a zest of life to the languishing community. In fact, the advent of Vardry McBee into Greenville marked its real beginning.

From the beginning of permanent settlements in 1784, Greenville County had been recognized as a desirable summer resort, and many residents of Charleston were soon spending a few months of each year here. Some of these purchased plantations, while others became "paying guests" with their friends. But there seems to have been no effort put forward to commercialize the health-giving quality of the climate till 1815, when Edmund Waddell rented the Alston residence from Vardry McBee, and opened it into a hotel, or summer resort. Waddell was of the type who make ideal hosts, and this quality, combined with the excellent accommodations which the Alston mansion afforded, soon filled Greenville with the aristocracy of the coast. To care for the increasing numbers, two or three other hotels, and a number of boarding houses, were opened. Prior to 1824, when the Mansion House was built, Captain David Long operated a resort hotel on the corner of Main and Washington Streets, where Gapens Cigar store is now located, while diagonally across Main Street, where stands the Beattie Building, Blackman Ligon was proprietor of another.

But it was not till the year 1824 that Greenville began in earnest to entertain these summer visitors, who by this time had become one of the principal sources of income for the village. Colonel William Toney, probably the wealthiest citizen of the village, purchased lots Nos. 7 and 8 from Thomas Crayton in 1822 at the unprecedented price of $5,000.00 with the expressed purpose of building thereon a hotel which would "excel any house in the upper part of the state in appearance and accommodation for the traveling public"; and in 1824 the Mansion House was completed. Immediately it became popular and was soon famous, not only for its commodious and artistic design and appointments, and the excellent quality of the food and drink served from its tables, but more especially for the aristocracy and wealth of the guests who frequented it. And for 30 years or more the Mansion House was the axis around which revolved the gay, but cultured, society which thronged the streets of this little piedmont village nestling under the shadow of Paris mountain.

Very little was done toward educating the youth of Greenville for many years after it became a village. In the homes of the more wealthy, private tutors were employed to instill the rudiments, and an occasional young man was sent away to one of the northern colleges, but no effort seems to have been made till 1817 or 1818 to establish anything in the nature of a public school. But so much association with the culture and refinement which poured into the community during the summer turned the thoughts of the villagers to education; and about 1818 a few of the leaders among them undertook to secure, by private subscription, enough money to build two academies, one for the boys and another for the girls. After much difficulty, enough money was in hand to insure the ultimate success of the undertaking, and in 1819 there were established the Greenville Male and Female Academies, which flourished for many years. In 1820 the trustees of the schools acquired a tract of land containing 30 acres "adjoining the village, for the purpose of establishing the Greenville Male and Female Academies." This property included the present grounds of the Greenville Woman's College on College Street. Soon after securing these lands the erection of suitable buildings was commenced, and in 1821 these were occupied by the academies.

Undoubtedly of interest to many now living in the city of Greenville is the old subscription list on which were recorded the names and amounts of many subscribers. Among the names appearing there are many still familiar to Greenvillians; and should it be necessary to circulate such a subscription list in Greenville today, it would very likely carry many of the names appearing on that of more than a century ago. The list in part is as follows: William Toney, $500.00; Jeremiah

Cleveland, $500.00; Thomas G. Walker, $500.00; Francis H. McLeod, $500.00; A. R. Parkins, $250.00; John H. Harrison, $100.00; A. Carruth, $100.00; Samuel Townes, $150.00; B. J. Earle, $100.00; B. Dunham, $100.00; John Blassingame, $200.00; A. Sloan for the estate of J. Mauldin, $100.00; Thomas Ballonby, $100.00; John McClanahan, $100.00; Richard Thurston, $25.00; Robert A. Maxwell, $50.00; Tandy Walker, $50.00; A. Vickers, $10.00; John H. Joyce, $50.00; Robert D. Moon, $20.00; William Hubbard, $25.00; Street Thurston, $20.00; Zion Goodlett, $10.00; John H. Goodlett, $10.00; Josiah Kilgore, $50.00; David Westfield, $25.00; Philip C. Lester, $10.00; Elijah Pike, $3.00; Richard Harrison, $50.00; John Brown, $20.00; John T. Ligon, $10.00; Peter Cauble, $5.00; Richard Williams, Sr., $100.00; James McDaniel, $100.00; Garland Walker, $30.00; William Young, $100.00; John Stokes, $50.00; Tully Bolling, $100.00; John Gowen, $100.00; Micajah Berry, $50.00; George Seaborn, $50.00; Jeremiah Stokes, $50.00; Levi Stokes, $25.00; George W. Earle, $200.00; Warren R. Davis, $30.00; Thomas B. Williams, $50.00; Bannister Stone, $10.00; William Crynes, $50.00.

The first church of which any record can be found to be established in Greenville was an Episcopal mission, known as St. James Mission. This was in 1821, but no House of Worship was constructed till some years later, the congregation in the meantime holding its meetings in private homes. This organization was brought about "by a few zealous Episcopalians whose families were spending their summers in the upper country". Out of this mission grew present Christ Church. The "Greenville Baptist Church" was organized about the year 1821 with a membership of one male and nine females. From this modest beginning has grown the "First Baptist" which is by far the largest church in Greenville County today. The Greenville Baptist was at first a sort of mission established by the Brushy Creek Church, which was perhaps the oldest Baptist church in the county.

In 1823 the old wood structure used since 1797 as a court house gave way for a brick building, erected on the lot now occupied by the Chamber of Commerce Building. This new court house was designed by Joel R. Poinsett, then living in the present Tanglewood section. He was a man of great refinement and culture, who had traveled extensively in Europe, South America, and Central America, and after returning to his home in Charleston paid Greenville a summer visit and found here "as fine a climate as can be found in the old world." Under President Fillmore, Poinsett was Secretary of War, and at another time he was Minister to Mexico. The beautiful Poinsettia was introduced into this state from Mexico by him. Poinsett Bridge in the Callaham mountain section was designed and built by him. Greenville's court house, designed by him, was marvelously beautiful, not alone at the time of its completion, but till its destruction exactly a hundred years later. To those now living in Greenville, this old structure was known as the "Record Building."

Robert S. Mills, designer of the Washington monument, in his *Statistics of South Carolina*, published in 1824, says of the village:

"The village is regularly laid out in squares, and rapidly improving. It is the resort of much company in the summer, and several respectable and wealthy families have located themselves here on account of the salubrity of the climate. These have induced a degree of improvement, which promises to make Greenville one of the

most considerable villages in the state. It has been preferred as a residence to Pendleton, perhaps on account of its not being affected so immediately by the cold damps of the mountains. . . . The public buildings are: a handsome brick court house (lately erected), a jail, a Baptist meeting house, an Episcopal church, and two neat buildings for the Male and Female Academy. . . . The private homes are neat; some large and handsome. Two of the former governors of the state have summer retreats here—Governors Alston and Middleton. . . . The number of houses is about seventy, the population is about five hundred. The returns of the commissioners of free schools for the last year show $1,039.00 expended, and 166 children educated."

From time to time in the past, controversy has arisen as to when the name of Greenville was changed from that of Pleasantburg. Some have fixed it as late as 1831, when the village was incorporated as the town of Greenville, while others contend for a date as early as 1815, when Vardry McBee became owner of the major portion of the village. However, a study of the public records, combined with the historical data available, leads to the belief that the name "Greenville" was used from the very beginning, and that a very few years only, had elapsed before "Pleasantburg" was dropped entirely. In 1798, when the second conveyance in the village was made, the location of the property was fixed as being "at Greenville, C. H., Village of Pleasantburg", and thereafter very few, if any, conveyances refer to Pleasantburg. Edward Hooker in the account of his visit in 1806 uses the name "Greenville", and never once refers to a Pleasantburg; and the "Statistics" of Mills published in 1824 uses only the name "Greenville." Very likely Alston called his subdivision "Pleasantburg", but since it was the site of the Greenville County Court House, the residents referred to it as "Greenville Court House" instead, and quite soon the original name was entirely gone.

CHAPTER XI.

EARLY POLITICAL LIFE

For the first 25 or 30 years of the county's life the names of three men stand out more conspicuously than any others in her political affairs. These are Samuel Earle, Elias Earle, and Lemuel J. Alston.

Samuel Earle was one of the first settlers in the new county, having secured a grant of "400 acres on both sides of Reedy river, northwest of the ancient boundary, including the improvements formerly claimed by Robert Paris". Whether or not these were lands formerly held by Richard Pearis, and the description in the Earle deed erroneously referred to him as "Robert", is unknown. There is no record of any Robert Paris ever having resided in Greenville, but the spelling of the name is here "Paris" while Richard always used the spelling "Pearis". Could it be possible that there was a Robert Paris, and that Paris mountain derives its name from him and not Richard Pearis, as is so generally thought? Possibly, but not at all probable. Samuel Earle was the son of Judge Baylis Earle, who settled in the northern part of Spartanburg County in 1773, having emigrated from either Westmoreland or Frederick County, Virginia, where Samuel was born to himself and his wife, Mary Prince, daughter of John Prince of Prince's fort fame, on November 28, 1760.

Although under 17 years of age at the time, Samuel Earle entered the forces of the Patriots on May 20, 1777, under the direct command of General (then Major) Andrew Pickens, and continued active till the close of the war, at which time he held a commission as captain. After the war, as Deputy Provost Marshal, he is said to have served the first writ ever made returnable to old Cambridge, or Ninety-Six. He was elected from Greenville County to the State Convention which framed the first State Constitution, and was also a member of the State Convention which adopted the Constitution of the United States. In 1795 he became a member of Congress from the Congressional District of which Greenville was a part, being the first Congressman from that district after the adoption of the Federal Constitution, and succeeding General Andrew Pickens, who up to that time had been the representative under the old "Articles of Confederation."

Of him Governor B. F. Perry writes:

"Mr. Earle was a man of high and pure character, and I don't think his honor and integrity were ever questioned throughout his long life. . . . No one in the upper country knew so well as he did the Revolutionary history of the state, and the early settlement of the back country, as it was termed. . . . He knew all the prominent men of those times, and did not hesitate to sketch their characters as they appeared to him. . . . He spoke well of General Robert Cunningham. . . . He said, though Tories, Cunningham and his two brothers, John and Patrick, were gentlemen of honor and integrity. They had unfortunately taken the wrong side, as so many honest and intelligent men did."

Speaking further of Mr. Earle and his political career, Governor Perry says:

"He was once a candidate for the State Senate in Greenville before he moved to Pendleton, and was beaten by his kinsman, Colonel Elias Earle, who afterwards represented the District in Congress for a great number of years. Colonel Elias Earle was a great and most successful electioneer. He treated bountifully, which Mr. Samuel Earle refused to do. There was but one place of voting then in the whole district (county), and that was at the Court House. Colonel Elias Earle came riding into the village, with several hundred of his voters, on horseback. When Mr. Samuel Earle saw this strong array of partisans, and heard them huzzaing for the Colonel, he cried, 'Huzza, for the half-pint tickets'."

Colonel Elias Earle, half brother of Judge Baylis Earle, and therefore half uncle of the Honorable Samuel Earle, was born in Virginia in 1762 and moved to Greenville County, South Carolina, in 1787 where he settled on the Rutherford road, about two miles from the village of Greenville, at "the Poplars". He early identified himself with the political affairs of the new county, and for 25 years or more was a "power". His nephew, Samuel Earle, he defeated for the State Senate from Greenville County early in his career by "the too free use of liquor", it was charged, and then after a four-year term became a candidate for Congress from the district then composed of Greenville, Pendleton (Anderson, Pickens and Oconee), Laurens, Abbeville, and Spartanburg. He was successful in his Congressional venture and thereafter held that position—first from 1805 to 1807, then from 1811 to 1815, and later from 1817 to 1821. In his 1806 race to succeed himself, he was opposed by Lemuel J. Alston, who defeated him, but four years later he defeated Mr. Alston and returned to Washington.

While still in Virginia, Colonel Earle married Frances Wilton Robinson. They became the parents of seven children, one of whom, Elizabeth, married George W. Earle, a nephew of Colonel Elias, and son of Colonel John Earle, on whose property near the Spartanburg County line, but in North Carolina, was located Earle's fort during the Revolution. This son-in-law was for many years Clerk of Court of Greenville County and was the grandfather of United States Senator Joseph H. Earle and Dr. T. T. Earle. Dr. T. T. Earle was the father of State Senator Wilton H. Earle and Dr. C. B. Earle, both present-day Greenville citizens of prominence. A son, Dr. Robinson Earle, became the grandfather of United States Senator John L. M. Irby of Laurens County. Dr. Robinson Earle was killed in an encounter with his nephew-by-marriage, William L. Yancy, afterward a Confederate States Senator from Alabama, and often called "the Father of Secession".

Already something has been said of Colonel Lemuel J. Alston, the other member of the trio. He came to Greenville early in its history, and soon became a man of influence. It was he, as has been stated, who founded the present city of Greenville, and from his magnificent home overlooking the tiny village, he presided over its destinies in lordly fashion for the first 18 years of its life. In 1806 he was a successful candidate for Congress against Colonel Elias Earle, who then held that office, but four years later he was defeated by Colonel Earle, which is said to have proved such a humiliation that he immediately offered his Greenville lands for sale. Four years later he found a purchaser in Vardry McBee, and soon thereafter left the state.

November, 1775, the Whig and Tory forces came in contact with each other in an open field a few miles north of Ninety-Six. The combat was short, with small damage to either side, but here was shed the first blood of the Revolution on South Carolina soil. Neither side seemed anxious to force the issue, so on November 22nd a mutually satisfactory pact was signed. But of more than passing interest here is the fact that the witnesses to this agreement were Richard Pearis and Andrew Pickens. These two were to meet five years later, perhaps in Greenville County but more likely in Anderson, when Pickens, then a general in command of all the upper divisions of the state, surrendered to Pearis, and then again near the close of the war when the life of Pearis was saved by Pickens at Augusta.

But Colonel Richardson, marching rapidly towards Ninety-Six, gathering reinforcements as he moved, was in no frame of mind to deal leniently with the enemy, so after conferring with Colonel William Thomson, who joined him on November 28th, he decided that he would not respect the terms of the Ninety-Six agreement, but on the other hand would take Pearis and other leading Tories into custody. And it was only a few days till Pearis, "the first citizen of Greenville", found himself a prisoner of war, for on December 16th Colonel Richardson wrote Henry Laurens, President of the Council of Safety, as follows: "I herewith send you the persons of Colonel Thomas Fletchall, Captain Richard Pearis, Jacob Fry, and Captain George Shuburg—these being all adjudged by the officers and people here to be offenders of such a nature that from the active part they have taken, it would be dangerous for me to let either of them go."

With the capture of their principal leaders, most of those remaining hostile to the Patriot cause quietly disbanded and returned to their homes; but there still remained a band of the leading aggressors encamped on Reedy river, four miles within the Indian Nation at "Great Cane Brake," under the leadership of Colonel Patrick Cunningham. It was reported to Colonel Richardson that young Pearis, son of Captain Pearis, and a member of Cunningham's band, had gone to the Indian towns in an effort to secure re-inforcements, so he concluded that "this last hot-bed of Toryism in the district" should be broken up before the recently disbanded Tories thereabouts should have an opportunity to reorganize. He therefore moved his forces up to Hollingsworth's mill, about 25 miles south of "Great Cane Brake", and ordered Colonel Thomson to march against the enemy. Colonel Thomson called for volunteers to join him in this undertaking, which promised to furnish the first real fighting of the entire campaign. Colonels Polk and Lyles and Major Williamson offered their services, and these officers, with 1,300 men composing both infantry and cavalry companies, were chosen.

The detachment under Colonel Thomson set out from Hollingsworth's mill during the early evening of December 21st, and after marching all night came upon the camp of the enemy near daylight of December 22nd. The Tories were taken completely by surprise, as the force of Colonel Thomson had succeeded in almost surrounding their camp before being detected. Seeing that resistance would be useless, they took to flight in a most precipitate manner, abandoning baggage, arms, and ammunition as they fled. Five or six of the Tories were killed, and 125 or 130 captured. Colonel Cunningham escaped, it is said, by mounting the first available horse and riding away bare-back during the confusion. None of Thomson's men were killed, and only one was wounded, this being a young son of Colonel Polk, who was shot through the shoulder. Among those of the Tories captured was the son of Captain Richard Pearis, who a few days before had been reported as being among the Indians seeking aid. However, if he had been to the Indian towns on such a mission he probably did not meet with success, for no Indians were among those captured.

The campaign of Colonel Richardson, known to history as the Snow Campaign on account of a heavy fall of snow which began in the up-country on December 25th and contined for several days, was brought to a successful conclusion with the battle of "Great Cane Brake." And on January 2nd, 1776, after he had returned to his base at the Congarees, Colonel Richardson wrote the Council of Public Safety: "The people are now more convinced than ever of their being wrong. The lenient measures have had a good effect, the spirit and power is gone from them. And I am sure (if not interrupted by designing men) that the country which I had the power to lay waste (and which the people expected) will be happy, and peace and tranquility take the place of ruin and discord. On the rivers, had I burnt, plundered, and destroyed, ten thousand women and children must have been left to perish, a thought shocking to humanity."

The historians disagree as to the location of this concluding battle of the Snow Campaign. Some place it far down Reedy river near the point where it empties into the Saluda, while McCrady shows it on his Revolutionary map as being only three or four miles below the present city of Greenville. But Dr. H. T. Cook, in his *Rambles in the Pee Dee Basin,* places it about 16 miles southeast of Greenville City. A careful consideration of the known facts, gathered from various sources, leads to the conclusion that Dr. Cook is correct, and that the battle of "Great Cane Brake" was fought on what is now Greenville County soil. The early accounts locate it on Reedy river, four miles within the Indian country, and it is known that the Indian boundary line crossed Reedy river near Fork Shoals. At page 1, in Location book "A" in the office of the R.M.C. for Greenville County, appears the record of a grant to General Richard Winn of a tract of land on Reedy river, containing 640 acres and known as "the Great Cane Brake." General Winn acquired the lands in 1784, and he conveyed them to James Harrison by a deed which refers to the plantation as "Great Cane Brake." It will be noted that these descriptions are specific and not general; hence the property conveyed and the description given of it in the deeds must have had some signification to the grantors and grantees. At that time, of course, the site of the battle ground was well known. The Winn lands are located on Reedy river about 15 miles south of the city of Greenville, and some four miles north of Fork Shoals, and consist of lands yet belonging to descendants of James Harrison, being at this time a part of the estate of the late S. E. Harrison.

General Richard Winn, who was a man of prominence in South Carolina, took part in the battle of "Great Cane Brake" as a lieutenant. When the war was over and he held high rank in the military life of the state, perhaps it was the knowledge that at "Great Cane Brake" he fought his first battle which impelled him to become the owner of the battle-field. But his attachment for the site of his boyhood prowess

could not have been overly strong, for in just two years after becoming its owner, he sold it to James Harrison "for one black horse." Tradition has it in the community where this engagement took place that after the battle, a number of Tories were hanged; and some of the older residents, whose ancestors have lived there for a century and a half, will today point out one of the trees which family tradition says was used as a scaffold.

Note.—Historians are not agreed as to the date of the conflict between Colonel Thomson and the Indians near Keowee. Some put it as late as the summer of 1776, but Colonel Thomson, writing from his camp "Two miles below Keowee" on August 4, 1775, gives an account of the engagement. However, the Cherokees seem not to have taken offence because of this difficulty, as they continued to negotiate with Mr. Drayton. If this be considered a military engagement, it was here, and not at Ninety-Six, that the first blood of the war was shed. (See page 125 of Gibbs' "Documentary History of the American Revolution from 1764 to 1776.")

CHAPTER VII.

INDIAN MASSACRE OF 1776

AFTER the flare-up of 1775 had subsided, a majority of the frontier settlers were doubtless friendly to the Patriot cause, but their proximity to the Indian country kept them from taking an active part in the war. They knew that Alexander Cameron, deputy superintendent of Indian affairs under the Crown, had taken up his residence among the Cherokees and was exerting every effort to secure the assistance of the Indians in behalf of the British. And they also knew that the success of his plans would bring the Indians down upon them in all the fury of a savage massacre; and should this happen, they desired to be free from military obligations which might call them away from their frontier homes.

During the early summer of 1776, the frontiersmen began to feel that all was not well in the Cherokee country. Rumors to the effect that the Indians had chosen the side of the King and were making preparations for a raid upon the settlements drifted in. And knowing that something must be done at once if the Indians were to be induced to remain neutral, the settlers in present Greenville and Spartanburg Counties thought it well to send emissaries into the towns of the Cherokee country to urge those deluded people to continue the friendship which had existed between them and the whites since the close of the French and Indian war. Among those to go were Captain Edward Hampton and his brother, Preston, who resided a few miles east of the Indian boundary, four or five miles northeast of the present town of Greer. These two young men had often been into the Indian country on trading and hunting expeditions, and had many friends there, so it was thought that they might be able to win back the savages. Another to go into the Cherokee country was a son of Colonel Hite, who lived within present Greenville County near where the Old Spartanburg road crosses Enoree river. By some chroniclers, this young gentleman is referred to as Jacob O'Bannon Hite, but he could not have been Jacob O'Bannon, as will be shown later. But regardless of name, this noble Patriot was a young man of character and culture. At the time, he was a student of the law, about to apply for admission to the bar in Charles Town. It is also said that he was engaged to be married to a daughter of Richard Pearis.

When the two Hampton brothers arrived among the Cherokees, they found that they were too late. Cameron and other British sympathizers had thoroughly poisoned the minds of the red men against their former friends, and now they were in an ugly mood. Everywhere the war dance was in progress and hurried preparations were being made for a raid upon the frontiers. The Hamptons were made prisoners and their horses, guns, and other supplies seized; but by some means (possibly with the assistance of friendly Indians) they made their escape, and hurrying back to their homes on foot, reporting their sad experiences to the people there. Young Hite, traveling into the Cherokee country a few days later than did the Hampton brothers, met a large band of warriors headed toward the white settlements. By

these he was killed and scalped, thus becoming the first victim of the most bloody massacre ever suffered by the Carolinians at the hands of the Cherokees. The place of his death was on the Estotoe river in present Pickens County, in a narrow pass between two mountains. After killing the young man, the Indians proceeded to the residence of Richard Pearis, where the daughter of Pearis, recognizing "the raven locks of her lover" in the bloody scalp displayed by the savages, knew only too well what were their intentions. In an effort to save the family of her lover from the sad fate which had already befallen him, she set out on foot to warn the Hite family of its impending danger. But whether this dusky maid of the forests reached her destination and had her warning disregarded, or was overtaken by the Indians and brought back before she had delivered her message, is unknown. At any rate, the Hite family was visited by the Indians and paid a fearful toll.

When information reached the frontier that the Indians had taken up the tomahawk, there was great alarm among those adhering to the Patriot cause. Quickly they set about strengthening the crude forts and block houses which had been constructed along the Indian boundary during the troublous days of the French and Indian war, and into these rough fortifications many of them fled, taking as much as possible of their portable property with them. Still there were others who remained at their homes—some because no fort was within reach, and others because they thought the Indians would pass them by on account of past friendships. But it was only among those who had espoused the cause of the province that a feeling of impending danger existed, for secret messengers had previously advised the Tories that they would be safe from attack, if their loyalty to the King were shown by the erection of peeled poles, wrapped around with white cloth, before their homes. This emblem, or badge of loyalty to the King, was referred to as "the passover" and was to be a sign to the Indians to leave that household undisturbed. Sad to relate, many were the passovers erected among the frontiersmen.

Since the commencement of the war, Cameron and his Tory friends had neglected no opportunity to poison the minds of the Indians against the Whigs, and in July, 1776, the savages marched to the attack. After killing young Hite, they proceeded to the Pearis plantation where they were joined by a number of Tories. Then they moved on to the home of the sorely distressed Hite family, where Colonel Hite and a number of his children were killed, and his wife taken captive. From here a number of the savages moved southward, into what is now Laurens County, killing Miss Austin of the Gilder creek section on their way; but the major portion of the red invaders turned toward the north and into the territory which is now Spartanburg County. The Indians going toward the south probably joined a larger body which had gone out from the Indian towns down through present Anderson, Abbeville, and Greenwood Counties. Having effected a union, these Indians joined forces with a body of Tories which was moving to the attack of Lindley's fort, located near the mouth of Rabun creek in the present county of Laurens. Here a large number of the residents of that section had taken refuge, hoping the better to defend themselves against the enemy. Upon reaching the fort, however, the savages and their Tory allies, painted as Indians, were repulsed, since a portion of the regiment of Colonel Williams had moved there and was awaiting their coming.

The body of Indians turning northward from the Hite home next visited the Hampton plantation. Here Mr. Hampton, his wife, his son, Preston, who had recently returned from his mission to the Cherokee country, and a grandson (infant child of James Harrison), were killed and their home burned. Another grandson, John Bynum, was captured and carried away into the Indian country, where he was held prisoner for several months. The Hampton family here suffering so heavily at the hands of the savages, was the same which produced the immortal Wade. His grandfather, also named Wade, was at the time with the army of North Carolina. James Harrison, father of the slain child, later moved to the "Great Cane Brake" in Greenville County and became the head of that large and illustrious family, living today throughout all the upper counties of the state. In later years, B. F. Perry of Greenville was to engage in a duel with a descendant of the captured grandson, John Bynum.

Now the savages, having taken up the tomahawk in earnest, were not to be stayed in their bloody course. Wherever the whites could be found they were murdered in cold blood, the "passover" itself being small protection. Captain Ford, a well-known Tory, was killed as he sat in his yard under the peeled pole which he had raised for the protection of himself and family, and two of his daughters were taken captive. Among others killed were Mr. John Miller and a Mr. Orr. These two, together with a Mr. Leach, were returning from Poole's Iron Works (near the present city of Spartanburg) to their homes in the Gowensville section of today, when, as they crossed a crude bridge over Middle Tyger river, several Indians sprang from their place of hiding under the bridge and struck them down. Mr. Leach escaped with his life by feigning death. The Hannon family, residing near the present town of Landrum, was visited, and Mr. Hannon, several of his older children, and a baby were killed. Another victim was a Mr. Bishop then residing near present Shiloh church in Spartanburg County. He was killed and three of his children carried away. Later these children were recovered by a brother-in-law, Mr. Davy Lewis, ancestor of the Wingo families of the Gowensville section of Greenville County. In fact, so many were the atrocities committed and so savage was the Indian in his attack as he swept from one to another of the frontier settlements, that abject terror seized the inhabitants. Those who had not been killed or captured fled the country or found protection in the border forts, leaving their homes to be plundered and burned, and their growing crops destroyed.

And while matters were in this sad state, a Captain Howard, who resided within the Indian country, a few miles northwest of the present Gowensville settlement, was able to organize a small company of men from among the number, who like himself, had taken refuge in the old Block House. This old fort is still standing, having been converted into a residence, and may be seen in traveling north from Landrum to Tryon along the old road connecting these two towns. It is said that the Greenville-Spartanburg County line, as well as the North Carolina-South Carolina line, pass through it. Among those taking part in this expedition was Captain (later Colonel) John Earle, the illustrious ancestor of so many present-day Greenville County citizens. Equipping themselves as best they could from the meager resources at hand, this little band of resolute men, led by a sturdy moun-

taineer whose descendants still reside in upper Greenville County in great numbers, marched out from the Block House against the Indians then encamped in a mountain gap four or five miles away in North Carolina, under Chief Big Warrior. In their march, they were guided by a friendly Indian, Schuyuka, who led them through a hitherto unknown gap, which enabled them to approach the enemy from the rear. Big Warrior and his men had noticed the activity of the whites and were expecting an attack, but they thought it would come directly up the pass in which they were located—hence the assault from the rear took them completely by surprise.

Captain Howard and his men attacked the Indians fiercely, killing and wounding many of them, but they were greatly outnumbered, and might have been defeated except for the suddenness of the onslaught and the rapidity of their withdrawal. The Indians, however, were in no mood to withstand an organized attack after their orgy of bloodshed and pillage. They had brought their women and children with them and knew that their march back must be slow; and the spirit shown by Captain Howard and his men did not bode well for them, should any great number of Whigs assemble before they were safely on their way home. So they buried their dead there on the mountain side and began a hasty march back toward Pearis' plantation, where they no doubt expected to receive ammunition and Tory reinforcements. This skirmish, unknown to history, but well authenticated in tradition as "the Battle of Round Mountain", gave the frontier settlers their first respite from the most savage Indian massacre they had ever experienced.

The Battle of Round Mountain was fought a short distance east of the present town of Tryon, North Carolina. One of the mountain peaks guarding the pass in which the Indians were encamped is known as "Big Warrior" in honor of their chief. The pass through which Schuyuka led the Patriot soldiers is now "Howard's Gap", named for the brave Captain Howard. The present Spartanburg-Hendersonville highway leads through this gap, and for many years has been known as the Howard Gap road. Tradition says the friendly Indian was later captured by his red brothers and made to suffer a horrible death. It was sought by many to name the county seat of Polk County, North Carolina, Schuyuka, in his honor, but for some reason this was not done. Yet today, beautiful Schuyuka mountain stretches along the border of North Carolina, looking down upon the scene of battle.

At this time Colonel Andrew Williamson was in command of all organized Patriot forces between the Saluda and Broad, and when it became known to him that the Indians were raiding the frontiers, he ordered Colonel Thomas to move against them. However, there was some delay in getting the troops in motion, probably occasioned by the action of the Charles Town authorities in releasing certain up-country prisoners. After the British attack on Charles Town during the latter part of June had been repulsed, the Government thought that generosity on its part would have a good effect, so Richard Pearis, Robert Cunningham and "the rest of the back country prisoners who were in confinement" were released. But the troops of Colonel Williamson were greatly incensed at this action and for several days could not be prevailed upon to enter the conflict. However, as the savages were beginning to retreat after the Battle of Round Mountain, Colonel Thomas appeared with a small force and gave chase. The Indians moved from the North Carolina border across the northwestern portion of Spartanburg County toward the plantation of Richard Pearis. They were overtaken near Paris mountain by a small detachment from Colonel Thomas' force, and a skirmish took place. The Indians continued their retreat, but being hard pressed, killed a number of their prisoners, who were hampering their progress. Among these was Mrs. Hite. But other prisoners were either released or permitted to escape. Of this number were the two daughters of Captain Ford, the Tory who had been killed during the raid.

When the Pearis plantation was reached, the Indians did not find the expected reinforcements, and continued their retreat. But for several days prior thereto, the Pearis home had been closely watched by spies sent out by Colonel Williamson, and these emissaries having reported unusual activity about the place, Colonel Williamson concluded that Pearis was up to his old tricks again and sent couriers to Thomas, ordering him to give the Pearis home a call as he passed it. So on July 16th Colonel Thomas took possession of the property of Richard Pearis, burned his home, mill, and trading station, confiscated all his cattle and horses for the use of his army, and carried away his wife, two daughters and one son. Captain Pearis was away at the time and thereby saved himself a second imprisonment. It is said that the family of Pearis was subjected to much abuse and punishment by their captors. According to some accounts, they were marched on foot 25 miles a day with little food and no covering for their heads against the heat of a summer sun, and were then confined for three days with practically no food, and afterwards sent off in an open wagon to a point near Augusta, 100 miles away, where they were left among strangers to shift for themselves, without money or provisions.

After a few days' delay, awaiting reinforcements and supplies, Colonel Thomas set out for the Cherokee country with a fixed determination to revenge the bloody desolation which the savages had left behind them. Among his troops were many of the frontiersmen who had suffered sorely at the hands of the Indian, and who were in a mood to fight as they had never done before. Everywhere the Indians fled before them, leaving their homes and growing crops to be destroyed. By August 13th, the destruction of all the lower settlements was complete. The Patriot army was now reinforced, and on September 13th a force of 2,000 men started its march over the mountains toward the middle settlement towns, which were reached on September 23rd. Here, as in the lower settlements, the destruction was soon complete, and early in October, the army, having fully performed its mission, was disbanded.

The successful termination of the Cherokee war of 1776 ended forever the danger of Indian massacres in the Carolina up-country. For perhaps 100 years, white men had resided there, but not until after 1755 had there existed any ill feeling between the two races. Although the Cherokees were a strong and warlike people, who dealt ruthlessly with their red neighbors, Carolina had always had in them friends of great value both in war and peace. But with the treaty of Governor Glen in 1755, by which the Indians were swindled out of the major portion of their lands in South Carolina, were sown the seeds of discord, which grew into open conflict under the blundering actions of Governor Lyttleton in 1759. And thereafter there was never the same trusting friendliness between the two peoples. The

Indians felt that the Carolinians had defrauded them of their lands, and then without cause made war upon them to gain an acknowledgment that the lands had been voluntarily ceded. By the treaty of 1763, outward peace was restored, but always there rankled in the savage breast the thought that his honor had been outraged; and seeing that the Indians were forever restive, the frontiersmen lived in daily fear of an outbreak. And in the midst of bitter civil conflict, when brother fought against brother, there came the bloody denouement in which these sturdy pioneers repaid a hundred fold for the wrongs which had been inflicted upon the Cherokees by a government in which they had never been given a voice. But having fully paid, they were now free.

Chapter VIII.

THE YEARS OF BANDITRY

Following the defeat of the Cherokees in 1776, that people and the Carolinians entered into a treaty of peace, which was formally signed on May 20, 1777. By the terms of this treaty all the remaining Indian lands in South Carolina, except a small portion of what is now the northwestern part of Oconee County, were ceded to South Carolina. The preamble to this interesting and valuable document, taken from the original itself, which is on file in the office of the Historical Commission at Columbia, reads:

> "The King of Great Britain in the prosecution of his unjust design to enslave America, regardless of the means, through his ministers, officers and superintendents, by false representations has deceived the Cherokee Nation and persuaded them to massacre indiscriminately, according to their custom in war, the men, women and children inhabitants on the Western frontier of South Carolina and other states at the time last summer when his forces invaded that state from the sea, and then having abandoned his Cherokee allies whom he had deceived, urged and persuaded into the war to just resentment of the people, thus at the same time unexpectedly attacked on the sea coast and opposite frontier. It has pleased the Master of Breath so to direct the progress of the war and the (word illegible) of the contracting parties, that at the conclusion of last summer they were disposed to extend mercy and do justice, and the Cherokee Nation having during the course of last winter, sent Deputies to Charles Town to implore pardon and thereupon it being determined to bury the hatchet and re-establish peace, the contracting parties", etc.

This instrument was signed at Due West, then called Devits, or DeWitts Corner, which was then the site of a well-known trading post, located on the south line of the Indian boundary where crossed by the Cherokee path leading to fort Charlotte.

For a number of years after the Cherokee peace, South Carolina was too busy prosecuting the war against her British and Tory enemies to take any action toward opening up the new acquisition for settlement. A few families took up residence there, but this was without warrant of law, and upon conclusion of the Revolution they were dispossessed. From 1777 till 1784, when legislative action to open up the new acquisition for settlers was taken, it was recognized as being a portion of the Ninety-Six District, and that political subdivision exercised a theoretical jurisdiction over it. Actually, however, there was no law here, but "the law of might." Roving thieves and cut-throats made it their favorite haunt, from which they sallied forth at pleasure to rob and plunder, under the guise of either Whig or Tory, as the occasion warranted.

With the seizing of his property by Colonel Thomas, Richard Pearis never again was a resident of Greenville County. Whatever might have been his intentions when he was set at liberty following the British failure at Charles Town, the treatment accorded his family made him an active supporter of the King's cause for the remainder of the war. In company with David Fanning and other Tories, he

secretly raised a troop of 400 men, recruited largely from the old Cherokee country and its adjoining frontiers, but before he could join the British in Florida, as he had intended, his plans became known and he fled on foot to the west coast of Florida. From that time till the fall of Charles Town in 1780, Pearis was extremely active in behalf of the British, but remained away from his old home, and for the most of the time outside the boundaries of South Carolina. The year 1778 found him captain of the Light Horse Troop in Colonel Stuart's Corps of West Florida Loyal Refugees. For several months thereafter he operated about the mouth of the Mississippi and around Mobile, capturing Maushac on the Mississippi during the time. Later he helped reinforce St. Augustine against Howe's expedition, and was with Prevost in his invasion of Georgia. When Savannah was besieged by French and Americans, Pearis was among those defending it. He was also present at the siege and capture of Charles Town.

With the fall of Charles Town, the entire province of South Carolina was overrun by the British and their Tory allies. Sir Henry Clinton offered favorable terms of surrender and many of the leading Whigs, thinking that further resistance was useless, accepted them and laid down their arms. At this juncture, Pearis returned to the up-country with a commission as lieutenant colonel of South Carolina Provincials, with authority to go into the Ninety-Six District "to raise and embody the friends of Great Britain, disarm all rebels between the Savannah and Broad rivers, and destroy their forts." During this period, General Andrew Pickens, then in command of the Patriot troops of the entire up-country, surrendered to Pearis. With this undertaking completed, however, Richard Pearis, the first white man of historical note to reside for any length of time in present-day Greenville County, quitted the South Carolina frontiers forever. He joined his family, then residing at Augusta, where he remained till his capture in the fall of that place before the onslaught of General Pickens, near the close of the war. When taken, Pearis was set upon by a number of enraged Whigs from his old back-country home, who would no doubt have killed him except for the timely intervention of General Pickens himself. With the close of the war, Pearis, with his family, moved to Abaca in the Bahamas, where, it is said, he died in the year 1804 in great poverty. One of his daughters married a son of Colonel Robert Cunningham.

While Pearis was in the up-country "disarming all rebels" Colonel Clarke of Georgia, who had been operating extensively in the piedmont section of the two Carolinas in the cause of Liberty, decided to return home and disband his army. But after reaching Georgia, Colonel Jones, who held joint command with Colonel Clarke, opposed withdrawing from the conflict and proposed that if the men would follow him he would lead them through the mountains of upper South Carolina and into North Carolina where the Patriots were rallying. Thirty-five men volunteered to go with him, and this little band set out through the woods toward their destination, gathering recruits wherever they could be found. Their journey led them across the upper part of what is now Greenville County, and as they were emerging from the mountains to the northwest of present Gowensville, they learned that a body of Tories were encamped a few miles away. Pretending to be friends of Britain, they secured the services of a Tory to lead them to the enemy. Arriving there about 11 o'clock in the night, they opened fire upon the unsuspecting Tories and after killing one and wounding three they accepted the willing surrender of all those who had not been able to break through the lines and escape. This conflict is thought to have taken place at Gowen's fort, located a mile or two northeast of Gowensville.

During the months of suspense and bitter travail following the fall of Charles Town, and preceding the Battle of Kings Mountain, which is recognized as the turning point of the Revolution, the Whigs of upper Carolina were continually harassed by those two arch fiends, "Bloody Bill" Cunningham and "Bloody Bill" Bates. Cunningham was a resident of what is now Greenwood County, and Bates lived in the upper part of present Greenville County. Among the frontiersmen Bates was referred to as "the Plundering Scout" because of his thieving proclivities, while Cunningham was known as "the Bloody Scout" on account of his brutal murders. But Bates did not hesitate to kill when that would assist in his robberies, nor did Cunningham leave anything of value behind him. Both, soon after their activities began, acquired the name of "Bloody Bill."

At the outbreak of the war, William L. Cunningham, unlike his cousins, Robert and Patrick, chose the Patriot cause. He enlisted in Captain John Caldwell's company, which was composed of the most respectable young men of the upper country. But after taking part in numerous engagements, including the expedition against the Cherokees in 1776, he became offended for causes now unknown, left his company, then stationed on James's or John's Island, and returned home to become one of the most despised Tories known to South Carolina. Often during these latter years many of his atrocities are attributed to either Robert or Patrick, but to do so is to vilely defame the characters of these men, who, although opposing the province in the war, were sincere in their convictions and honorable in their conduct.

After "breaking" with the Whigs, Cunningham gathered to his side a small band of marauding cut-throats, who swept through the back country of South Carolina, leaving death and destruction in their wake. The present county of Spartanburg was visited, where it is thought he was joined by "the Plundering Scout" (Bates) with his band of outlaws from the Glassy and Hogback mountains. In the Nazareth Church section Captain Steadman, who lay sick at the home of Charles Moore, two young men stopping at the Moore home, and young John Caldwell were killed. On Lawson's Fork, Colonel John Wood and his brother James were dispatched in cold blood. Colonel Edward Hampton, who it will be recalled, had gone to the Cherokee nation as a good-will emissary in 1776, while passing through the section on his way to the home of his father-in-law, Baylis Earle, was called from his bed at the home of a friend and shot down. Another victim of the bloody pair was Major John Caldwell, the old commander of Cunningham, who was slain in his own yard while standing unarmed by the side of his wife. William Anderson, ancestor of Dr. J. L. Anderson of Greenville City, was another killed.

The widow of Colonel John Wood, killed by Cunningham, later married Colonel John Earle, whose descendants by his first wife reside in Greenville County in great numbers, and became the ancestress of the Prince and Bomar families so widely known in Spartanburg County. Colonel Edward Hampton was a son of Anthony Hampton, killed by the Indians in 1776 at his home near Greer, and brother of

General Wade Hampton, who was the great grandfather of Governor Wade Hampton. Major John Caldwell was an uncle of John C. Calhoun. Of James Wood, killed along with his brother John, Landrum says: "Some fifty years after the burial of James Wood, his nephew, Dr. John Young of Spartanburg, caused his remains to be disinterred and carried to Greenville, South Carolina, for burial."

On one occasion Bates led a party of his followers against Wood's fort, located in what is now Greenville County, between Greer and Gowensville, where a number of the settlers of that section had gathered. Being poorly armed and ill supplied with ammunition, the occupants of the fort soon concluded that they could not successfully withstand the opposing forces, and opened negotiations for a surrender. Bates readily promised them protection, but no sooner had they marched out of the fort then they were set upon and brutally massacred. None escaped except Mrs. Thompson, wife of Abner Thompson, who, although seriously wounded and scalped, recovered and lived in Greenville County for more than fifty years after her harrowing experience.

After the fall of Wood's fort, Major Buck Gowen, from whom Gowensville derives its name, gathered a small force and gave chase to Bates as he fled back to his mountain stronghold. Beyond the head waters of the Tyger, supposedly in what is now Greenville County, he was overtaken and suffered the loss of practically all of his followers, but Bates himself escaped. After this defeat, however, he seems not to have been able to raise sufficient men to seriously molest the settlements.

During the activities of Bates he killed old Mr. Motley on Motlow's creek in Spartanburg County. At the same time he captured a son of Mr. Motley, but the young man succeeded in making his escape. After the war Bates was arrested for horse-stealing and confined in the Greenville jail to await trial. Young Motley, then living in upper Greenville County, learning that the murderer of his father was within his reach, gathered a few of his friends and led them to the Greenville jail where they seized Bates and with little ceremony shot him to death. His burial place is thought to be upon the lot where is now located the Post Office Building.

With the Whig successes at Kings Mountain and Cowpens, the up-country people took new heart. After all, there still might be a chance to win out in the struggle. And with the coming of new hope, a determined effort to drive out Cunningham and Bates was put forth, with the result that Cunningham was soon forced into the British lines about Charles Town, and Bates was driven into the deep recesses of the mountains. At last the Carolina frontiers were able to breathe freely; and with the coming of this feeling of semi-security, the inhabitants threw themselves wholeheartedly into the conflict, and the whole of South Carolina was soon free of enemy forces.

Note.—In this chapter, as well as all those preceding it, the principal city of the province has been referred to as "Charles Town", but hereafter the name "Charleston" will be used. Till about 1719 it was always "Charles Town", but from then till 1783 or 1784 it was officially "Charlestown", but still more often called by the older name. After the Revolution it became Charleston, and has so remained ever since.

CHAPTER IX.

FORMATION OF THE COUNTY AND EARLY LAND OWNERS

With the successful termination of the Revolution in 1783, immediate steps were taken to incorporate the "Cherokee acquisition of 1777" into the new State of South Carolina. For the time being it was all placed under the jurisdiction of Ninety-Six District; but realizing that the districts of the state were much too large to give a stable government, the General Assembly on March 16, 1783, passed: *"An Ordinance for Appointing Commissioners in Each of the Circuit Court Districts, for Dividing the Same into Counties.* On March 12, 1785, the General Assembly ratified an Act which directed the laying off of "Six counties for the district now called Ninety-Six". While on March 22, 1786, was enacted the law establishing Greenville County proper. It reads:

> *An Ordinance for Establishing a County and County Courts in the New Ceded Lands on the North Side of Saluda River:*
>
> WHEREAS, the inhabitants of the new ceded lands on the north side of Saluda river below the Indian line, have experienced many inconveniences by being annexed to some of the counties heretofore established;
>
> BE IT ORDAINED by the Honorable, the Senate and House of Representatives, now met and sitting in General Assembly, and by the authority of the same, That a county shall be established in the new ceded lands, by the name of Greenville, and shall be bounded by Saluda river and the South fork thereof, the old Indian boundary, and the North Carolina line, and shall be entitled to County Courts, to be held on the third Monday in February, May, August and November; which courts shall hold, exercise and enjoy the several powers and jurisdictions which are by law vested in the said county courts heretofore established.

South Carolina had no money with which to pay her soldiers during the Revolution, and promised many of them payment in slaves, which were to be confiscated from the Tories. But upon the conclusion of the war, the redemption of these pledges, in this manner, was found to be impracticable, and in lieu thereof, lands in the new acquisition were offered at ten dollars per hundred acres, payable in debts due from the state. On May 21, 1784, what became Greenville County by act of the General Assembly in 1786 was officially opened for settlers, with a Land Office at Pendleton in charge of Colonel John Thomas as Commissioner of Location, and within two years practically all of the desirable lands in the county had been taken up, largely by Revolutionary heroes.

The first tract of land "set off" in Greenville County was unto James Hamilton, a record of which may be found in Location book "A" at page 5, in the office of the Register of Mesne Conveyance for Greenville County. A description of these lands is as follows: "A tract of land containing 640 acres, situate, lying and being above the Old Indian Boundary on Reedy river and known by the name of Pearis' Shoals." Attached to the record of this "Location" is an interesting statement which reads,

"the survey being made between the hours of nine and twelve o'clock in the forenoon after opening the Location Office and previous to any other survey made thereon." This first location in Greenville, except for the fact that on the same day a tract of 640 acres was surveyed off to Colonel Thomas Brandon which is clearly traceable to the present "Textile Center of the South", might be thought to include the present city of Greenville. Why should James Hamilton have had first choice of all lands in Greenville County, and just what acreage did he select? These questions start a train of interesting thoughts, but the public records do not show any disposition of these lands and they cannot therefore be traced down to their present owners.

On the day Greenville County was opened for settlement (May 21, 1784) Colonel Thomas Brandon of Union County became the owner of the site of Greenville City: his acquisition consisted of "four hundred acres on both sides of Reedy river of Saluda, including Richard Pearis' plantation." Colonel Brandon was an active supporter of the Patriot cause during the Revolution, taking part in many of the up-country battles. He was a resident of Union County, and so far as is known, never lived in Greenville County. In 1788 he sold his Greenville lands to Lemuel J. Alston.

Another man of unusual prominence in the Revolution to acquire lands in Greenville County was General Richard Winn, who obtained "640 acres on Reedy river and known by the name of the 'Great Cane Brake'." At the conclusion of the war, Richard Winn was a colonel, but the General Assembly, recognizing his great services for the cause of his state, bestowed upon him the title of Brigadier-General. He resided in Fairfield County and filled a number of civil offices in the state, and was a member of Congress for several terms. In 1786 he sold his Greenville County land to James Harrison for "one black horse", never having resided here.

Henry Pendleton, a noted jurist of the state, and for whom Pendleton District was named, on May 21, 1784, acquired "640 acres on the Golden Grove and known by the name of Cameron's Cowpens." Judge O'Neall, in his *Bench and Bar*, says that Judge Pendleton resided in Greenville County "on or near Golden Grove creek", while Dr. H. T. Cook in his *Rambles in the Pee Dee Basin*, makes the statement that he died here. But the court records in Charleston show that Judge Henry Pendleton died there in 1788, where his estate was later administered. It is likely that the Judge owned a summer home in Greenville County, and resided here during a portion of each year as did so many of the Charleston people during that period.

Another Jurist of note to own lands in Greenville County was Aedanus Burke, who on May 25, 1784, acquired "640 acres on a small branch of Golden Grove creek, waters of Saluda river, bounded by lands laid out to Henry Pendleton, William Wood and others." Judge Burke was an Irishman, educated at St. Omer's for a priest, but he came to America at the outbreak of the Revolution from the West Indies, where he had previously gone, and volunteered to fight for liberty. During the war he attained the rank of major, but it was as a lawyer and judge that he became prominent in the affairs of South Carolina. Judge Burke, however, was not content to administer the laws, but would also have a hand in framing them. Prior to 1790 he was several times a member of Congress while still retaining the office of Judge. He could not be persuaded to forego this multiple office-holding, and in 1789 a law

was enacted which prohibited a judge, on pain of the forfeiture of his office, from leaving the state without the consent of the governor. At one time Judge Burke acted as second for Aaron Burr in a duel. Judge Burke bitterly opposed the Society of the Cincinnati, an organization of Revolutionary soldiers, which for a time threatened to destroy a republican form of government in America, and furnished the material for the celebrated pamphlet prepared by Mirabeau, the Frenchman, in collaboration with Franklin, attacking that Society. He opposed the ratification of the Federal Constitution; nevertheless he was elected the first United States Senator from South Carolina. So far as is known, he never resided in Greenville County.

James Harrison acquired "600 acres on both sides of Reedy river of Saluda about two miles above the old Indian boundary" on June 15, 1784. It was he whose child was murdered by the Indians at the time of the "Hampton massacre." He had married a daughter of Anthony Hampton, sister of the elder General Wade, and with his brothers-in-law took a very prominent part in the Revolution. It is said that a child was born to his wife while the family traveled in a covered wagon from the old home in Spartanburg County to this new one on Reedy river. This land adjoined the "Great Cane Brake" which he purchased from General Winn in 1786.

On May 25, 1784, Isaac Morgan received a grant for "a tract of land containing 640 acres situate, lying, and being above the old Indian boundary on Enoree river and known by the name of Hite's old vacant land on every side." And on the same day Henry Benson had set off to him "a tract of land containing 640 acres situate and being above the old Indian boundary on both sides of Enoree river and known by the name of Hite's Canebrake." Attached to the Morgan record is a plat of the land showing a road extending across it from east to west. The road crosses Enoree river and its eastern end carries the notation, "to the settlement", while on the western portion of the road appear the words, "To Parris's." These conveyances cover the plantation where Colonel Hite resided before the Revolution and up to 1776, when he was killed by the Indians.

John Conner obtained title to 400 acres on Shoaly creek, a branch of Pacolet river "including John Armstrong's improvements and Boiling Springs Meeting House." Of interest here is the fact that "a meeting house" was upon the land when granted. This is evidence that there were many people living in the territory of Greenville County long before it was officially opened for settlement. Further proof is found in the fact that this, and many other grants convey lands "including improvements."

Controversy has arisen among those seeking to establish the location of the old forts along the old Indian boundary as to whether Wood's fort was east or west of this line. Some claim it was to the east and therefore in Spartanburg County, while others locate it in Greenville County. A few even deny that there was a fort of that name. But reference to the record of a grant unto Elisha Thompson shows that he acquired "100 acres on both sides of the Indian boundary on a branch of Tyger river, including 'Wood's Old Fort'." The plat accompanying the record shows the fort to be in Greenville County. One often finds reference to a "Thompson's fort", but this is no doubt "Wood's fort", which after its acquisition by Thompson was so called.

CONCLUSION

NO SOONER was the existence of another continent brought to the knowledge of Europe by the discovery of Columbus than all the maritime powers of the Old World eagerly rushed forth to seize a portion of it for themselves. Soon that part of North America embracing the present states of North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, northern Florida and extending westward to the Pacific ocean was claimed by England, France and Spain. But near two centuries passed before any permanent settlement was made in what is now South Carolina.

In 1670 a few emigrants from England, under the leadership of William Sayle, came over in two small vessels and settled near Port Royal. Soon they became dissatisfied with this location and moved to the western bank of the Ashley river and there laid the foundation of Old Charles Town. However, it was found that this site could not be reached by large vessels, and in 1780 it was abandoned and the settlement was moved again, this time to the present location of Charleston.

Within a few years after this first permanent settlement was made on the coast traders moved back into the hill and mountain country and, living among the Indians, did a thriving business exchanging rum and trinkets for the skins and furs of the red men. The Indians were early furnished with guns and when they had become accustomed to their use the fur trade rapidly became one of the principal industries of Carolina. The traders, living among the Indians, gathered the furs and transported them to Charles Town.

Following the traders into the up-country were cattle men, who used the great prairie lands of the piedmont section of the state to raise cattle and horses. When ready for market these were also transported to Charles Town and became quite an item in the export business of the colony.

But regardless of the fact that traders and cattle men lived in what is now referred to as Piedmont South Carolina there were no settlements of white men there, which could be referred to as permanent, till well after the first quarter of the eighteenth century. The Cherokee Indians occupied all that portion of the state to the west of the Broad river, but being at all times friendly, the Carolina traders and cattle men came and went there as they saw fit. However, if any serious attempts had been made to cultivate the soil or to congregate in extensive settlements the Indians would no doubt have objected, as they did at a later date.

In 1755 a treaty between Carolina and the Cherokees was entered into, and by its terms the Indians ceded to the colony all their lands in South Carolina except present Greenville, Anderson, Pickens and Oconee Counties. Immediately settlers began to enter the new acquisition, principally from the more northern colonies.

Following the French and Indian war, the piedmont section of South Carolina rapidly grew in population. Some trouble was experienced there on account of lawlessness, but on the whole the frontiersmen made rapid progress till the outbreak of the Revolution. Although what is now Greenville County was still a portion of the Cherokee Nation, many settlers moved in. Notable among these was Richard Pearis and Colonel Hite.

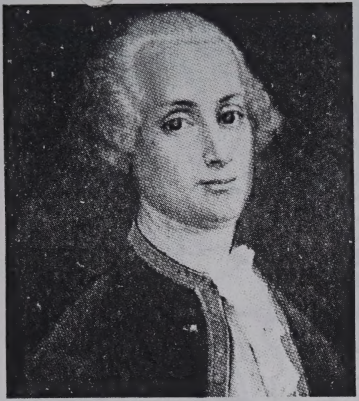
With the coming of the Revolution the Cherokees rose up in arms against the frontiersmen and war with them followed. This was concluded by the treaty of 1777 which ceded present Greenville County to South Carolina. But the war with Great Britain then being in progress, no effort was made for some years to "open up" the newly acquired Indian lands. With the Revolution concluded, however, the county of Greenville was formed by legislative enactment, and much of the land there granted to soldiers of the late war in payment of debts due them by the state.

For fifteen or twenty years after its formation, Greenville County grew rapidly, but near the end of the eighteenth century heavy migrations to the west commenced. In the face of this westward movement the white population of the county remained near stationary for fifty years or more. During this period the principal industry of the county was agriculture, with the town of Greenville drawing a substantial income from summer tourists. Few notable public improvements were undertaken before the War Between the States; however, the citizenship of the county took an active part in the bitter factional politics of the day, being strongly opposed to both Nullification and Secession.

The five-year period from 1850 to 1855 brought to the county the Greenville and Columbia Railroad, Furman University and the Greenville Female College. These acquisitions gave new life to the county and its growth would no doubt have been rapid from then onward except for the coming of the War Between the States. Although the county had opposed secession, when that step was taken the citizens of Greenville County were as one man in supporting the state.

With the coming of reconstruction days following the war, Greenville County played a conspicuous part, furnishing the Provisional Governor. Since her population was predominently white, Greenville was able to keep her public affairs out of the hands of negroes and carpet-baggers for the most part, but she suffered greatly during the radical regime nevertheless. But the coming of the Richmond and Danville Air Line Railway (now Southern Main Line) in 1872 stimulated business to such an extent that the ten-year period from 1870 to 1880 saw the most rapid growth in the population of the town of Greenville of any other decade of her life.

About 1895 an era of cotton mill building set in and continued with the passing of years till Greenville County had become a manufacturing county rather than one of agriculture. The advent of manufacturing on a large scale brought with it wealth and population, and soon Greenville took high rank among the counties of the state. The city of Greenville, in and about which the larger of the textile plants are located, by 1920 had become the third largest city in the state, and for ten years or more has been considered the second wealthiest city of the state. The county has for many years paid more taxes in the aggregate, for state purposes, than any other. Its automobile registrations, gasoline tax contributions, and income tax payments, far exceed those of any other county in the state.



This copy of an 18th-century miniature of James Glen, governor of South Carolina from 1743 to 1756, is owned by Glen Drayton Grimke of Charleston.

lina hats," probably made from deerskin. The versatility of this product can be sensed from an advertisement in the "South Carolina Gazette" in 1738: "This is to give Notice, that Mary Robinson Widow of Th Robinson deceased, still carries on his Trade in the same House, viz Mr. Laurens's House Number (3) near the New-Market, she has ready made Buck and Doe skin Breeches, either natural or black, purple and Cloth Colours, likewise white Leather, a choice of fine Wool. She also dresses Deer Skins with or without the Hairs, dyes, washes and mends Buck-skin Breeches."

The trade was as important to the Indians as to the English—but with less happy results. When the white man had appeared on the scene, the tribes had been self-sufficient, but they gradually became more and more dependent on him and copied him—especially in the use of clothing, firearms and liquor. As these came to seem indispensable, the Indian lost his freedom since he was utterly dependent on the white trader for these items. When guns needed replacement, when ammunition was exhausted, when clothes were worn out, only the English trader could solve the problem. And although the Indians were not angelic before the Europeans' arrival, their morals declined as they came increasingly "into contact with vicious traders, outcasts, escaped criminals, and runaway Negro slaves. Rum was the Indian's special curse, for unlike most whites, the Indian drank until he had become stupefied."

After his initial failure with the tribesmen, in 1750 Glen adopted a new broad Indian policy, writing George Clinton that he hoped for "a general Comprehensive Plan of uniting altogether all the Indians upon the Continent," and by being "all Friends with the English they may be in perfect friendship with one another." This reflected Glen's growing respect for the Indians and also his growing humanitarian regard for their welfare. Henceforth he was to argue that the white man must buy the Indians' land before settling upon it. In 1760, after his governorship and when the province was at war with the Cherokees, he opposed the war because he thought the mother country should be civilizing the Indians, not fighting them. He pointedly asked: "We call them Savages, have we been at any pains to civilize them?"

English-Cherokee relations varied spasmodically. After Sir Alexander Cuming's diplomacy (1730), calm prevailed for a few years. The natives were also weakened by great misfortunes: About 1738, half of the Cherokee population died in one year from smallpox (said to have been contracted from Charles Town slaves). The Cherokees interpreted this as divine punishment for the immorality of young people and hence prescribed a cure through religious rites. (Doubly miserable, they considered smallpox scars a disfigurement, some even being driven to suicide by such scars.)

Also leading to a population decline among the Cherokees were intermittent wars among themselves, much to the fear and concern of the colonial government. For two bloody years (1751 to 1752), the Creeks and Cherokees had warred with each other, during which time there had also been bloodshed, occasional embargoes and friction with the English. Glen often was caught in the middle, trying to restrain vindictive hawks in the Assembly while seeking a better basis for peace and stability with the Indians. After some murderous duplicity by the Creeks, Gov. Glen finally threatened that large group in the West with a complete trade embargo—a threat which was meaningful because of the increasing native dependence on traders.

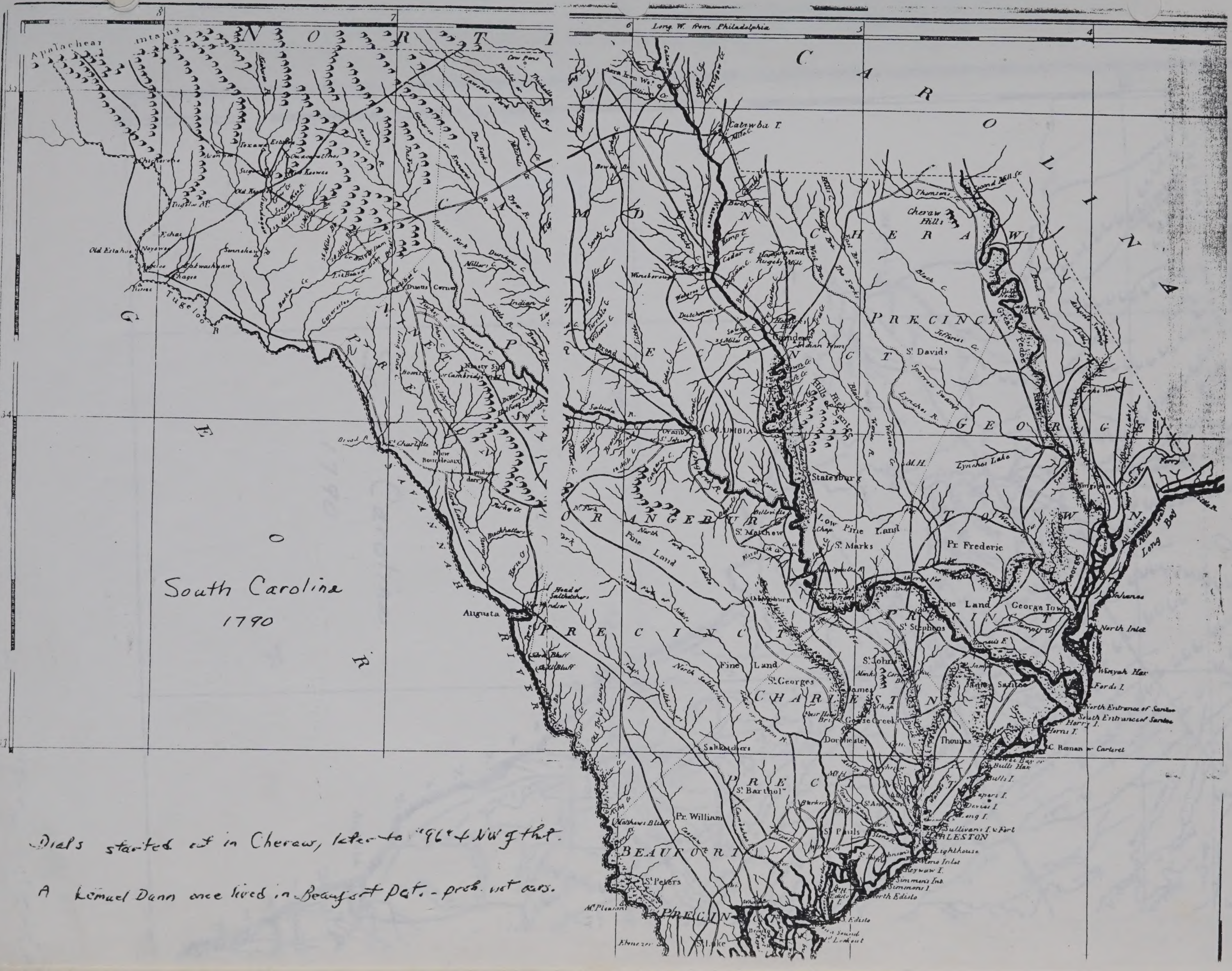
Meanwhile, the Cherokees showed irritation with English Carolinians and began shifting to establish trade ties with the English Virginians. In their game of power politics, they subtly hinted that they might do even more of this, a turn of events which prompted Gov. Glen to write in fury to the Virginia governor, Robert Dinwiddie, observing that South Carolina-Cherokee friendship was essential to all English in the Southeast if French invasion were to be held off, and warning the Virginia leader "not to intermeddle with our Indians."

The long-flickering Cherokee-Creek clashes were finally ended in 1753 with Gov. Glen playing the role of diplomatic intermediary. Important in this process was the July 1753 conference: one of those scenes of pageantry which delighted the governor, with a large number of Cherokee dignitaries gathered in the Council chamber at Charles Town. (The building was new, and stood at the corner of modern Broad and Meeting streets.)

In dealing with the Cherokees, Glen was far from being in complete control of the situation and failed to get them all "back on the reservation." He was facing increasing difficulties because of factions within the Cherokee group—between the more powerful and independent-minded Chota leaders from the Overhills (from modern Tennessee, around the Indian town of Chota) and the less powerful but more pro-English Keowee faction from the Lower Towns (western South Carolina).

Old Hop, or Connecorte ("First ✓
Beloved Man of the Cherokees, Uku of Chota, Emperor of the Cherokee

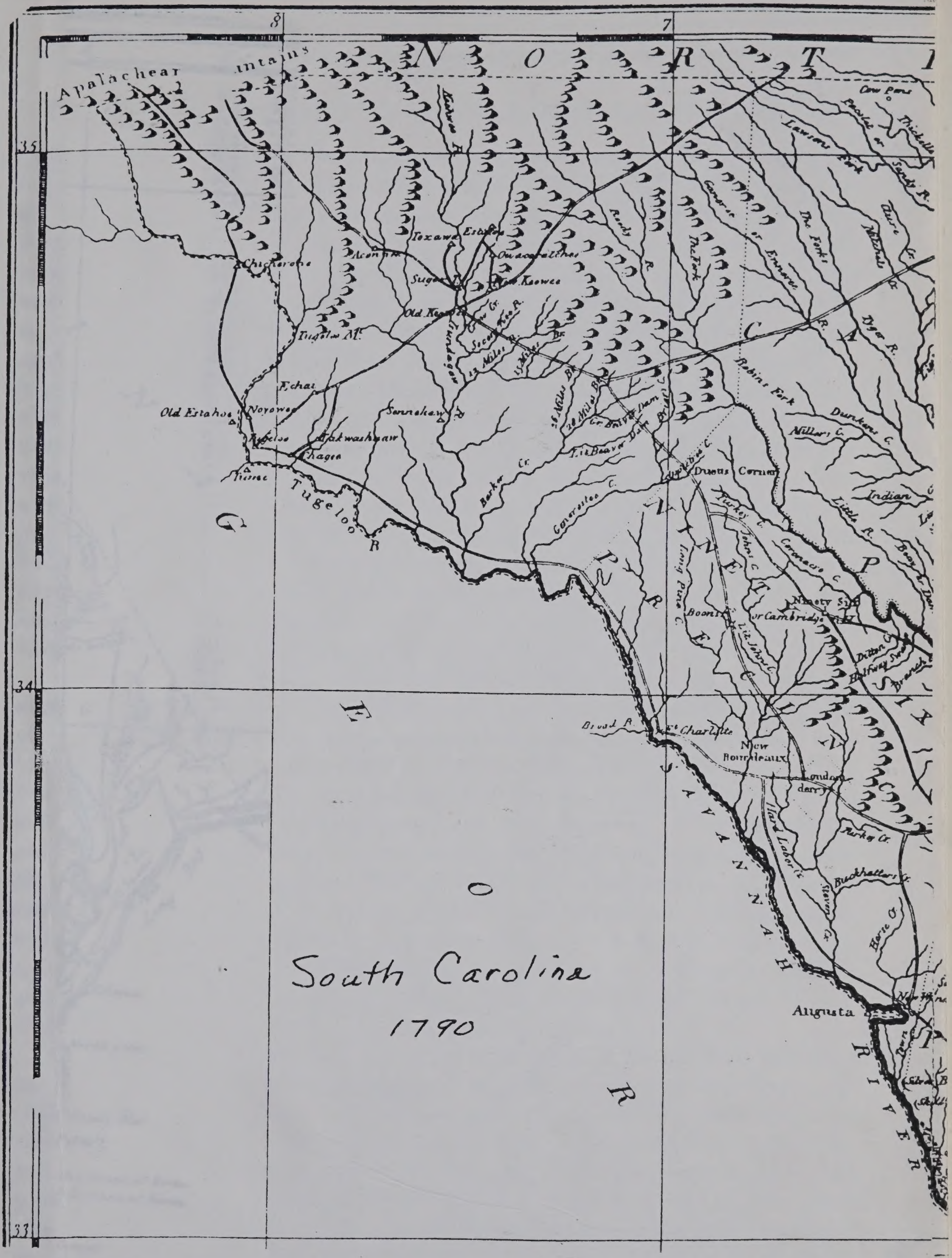
(friend of Richard Pearis)


South Carolina
1790

Long. W. from Philadelphia
NORTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
Appalachean Mountains
Cheraw Hills
CHERAW PRECINCT
CAMDEN PRECINCT
GEORGE TOWN PRECINCT
ORANGEBURG PRECINCT
CHARLESTON PRECINCT
BEAUFORT PRECINCT
NINETY SIX PRECINCT
Savannah River
Augusta
Columbia
Camden
Statesburg
Charleston
George Town
Ninety Six
Catawba T.
St. Davids
Pr. Frederic
St. Marks
St. Matthew
St. Stephens
St. Johns
St. Georges
St. James
St. Pauls
St. Barthol.
Pr. William
St. Peters
Dorchester
Winyah Bar
North Inlet
Long Bay
Tugeloo R.
Saluda R.
Broad R.
Lynches Lake
Great Pedee R.
Santee

Dials started out in Cheraw, later to "96" & NW of that.

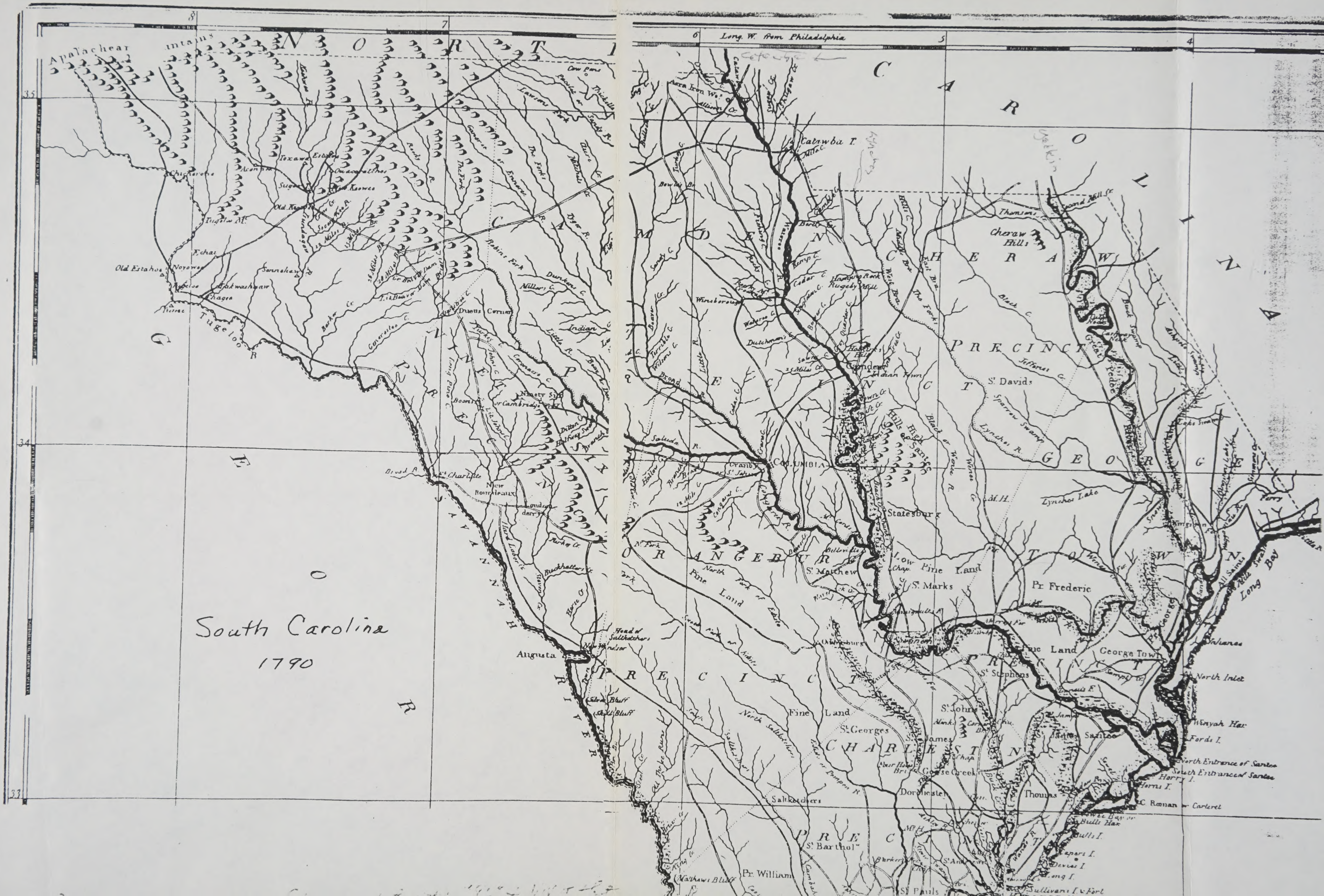
A Lemuel Dann once lived in Beaufort Pct. - prob. not ours.



South Carolina

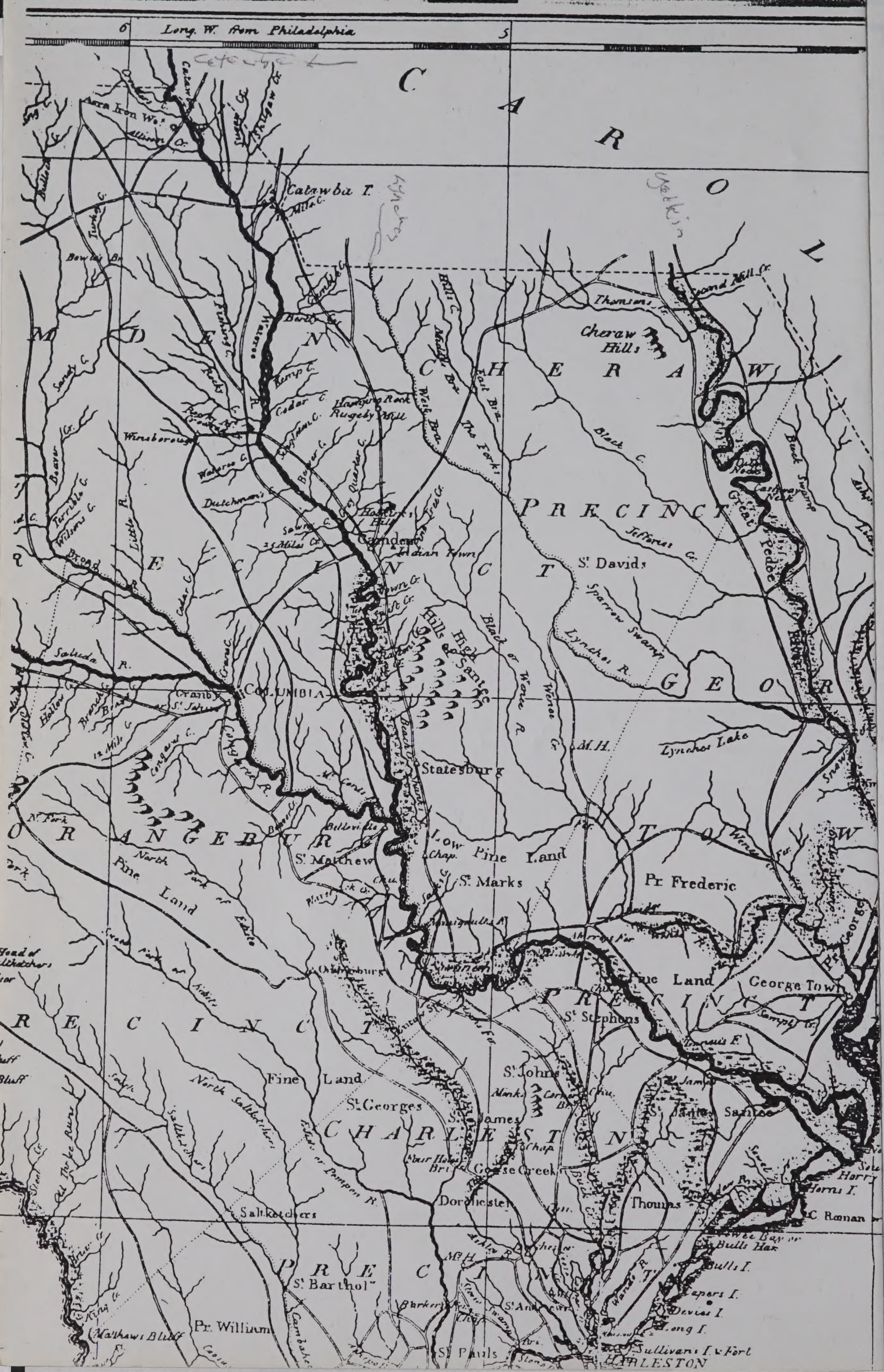
1790

8
7
35
34
33
Apalachean Mountains
NORTH
CAROLINA
GEORGIA
PART OF
SAVANNAH RIVER
Cow Pens
Lawsons Fork
Texawa
Estatoe
Owacaratchee
Acconnee
Sugar Town
New Keowee
Old Keowee
Chickerone
Tugelow Mt.
Echai
Old Estahoe
Noyowee
Tugeloo
Takwashnaw
Chagea
Tussee
Tugeloo R.
Sennekaw R.
Twelve Miles R.
Eighteen Miles Br.
Twenty Miles Br.
Gr. Beaver Dam Br.
Lit. Beaver Dam Br.
Barker Cr.
Generostee C.
Reedy R.
The Fork
Enoree R.
The Forks
Tyger R.
Robins Fork
Millers C.
Duncans C.
Indian Cr.
Little R.
Dusus Corner
Turkey C.
Johns C.
Long Pine C.
Coronacco C.
Ninety Six or Cambridge
Boones C.
Lit. John C.
Ditton C.
Halfway Swamp Branch
Broad R.
Ft. Charlotte
New Bourdeaux
Londonderry
Hard Labor C.
Turkey Cr.
Buckhalters Cr.
Stevens Cr.
Horse Cr.
Augusta
New Windsor



South Carolina
1790

Long. W. from Philadelphia
8
7
6
5
4
35
34
33
NORTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
Apalachean Mountains
Chickarohe
Tugelo Mt.
Old Keowee
New Keowee
Sugar Town
Texawa
Oucacoratchee
Echai
Old Estahoe
Noyowee
Keowee
Estatoe
Tugeloo R
Seneca R.
Sennehaw
Little Estatoe
Chagee
Tugeloo
Seneca
Little Keowee
Little R.
Reedy R.
Saluda R.
Ninety Six
or Cambridge
Dutch Corner
New Bourdeaux
Londonderry
St. Charlotte
Broad R.
Long Cane C.
Savannah River
Augusta
New Windsor
Head of Saltketchers
Silver Bluff
Shell Bluff
Catawba T.
Cheraw Hills
Cheraw Precinct
Camden
Camden Precinct
Indian Town
Rugeley's Mill
Hanging Rock
Winsborough
Columbia
Granby
Statesburg
Hills of Santee
Wateree R.
Catawba R.
Lynches R.
Lynches Lake
Black R.
St. Davids
Pedee R.
Great Pedee
Little Pedee
Georgetown Precinct
George Town
Kingston
All Saints
Long Bay
Pr. Frederic
Pine Land
Low Pine Land
St. Marks
St. Matthew
St. Stephens
St. Johns
St. James
St. Georges
Orangeburg Precinct
Orangeburg
North Fork of Edisto
Charleston Precinct
Dorchester
Goose Creek
Santee R.
North Inlet
Winyah Har.
Fords I.
North Entrance of Santee
South Entrance of Santee
Herris I.
C. Romain or Carteret
Bulls Bay
Bulls Har.
Bulls I.
Capers I.
Dewees I.
Long I.
Sullivans I. & Fort
St. Pauls
St. Bartholomew
Pr. William
Matthews Bluff
Saltketchers
North Saltketchers
Prec.


6
Long. W. from Philadelphia
5
Catawba
C A R O L
Yadkin
Lynches
Aera Iron Wo.
Allison Cr.
Sugar Cr.
Catawba T.
Bowles Br.
Cherokee Cr.
Turkey C.
Thomsons Cr.
Cherokee Hills
C H E R A W
Waterce
Rocky Cr.
Hanging Rock
Rugeley's Mill
Winsborough
Beaver Cr.
Terrible C.
Wilsons C.
Little R.
Dutchman's C.
Sawney C.
25 Miles Cr.
Camden
Hobkirk's Hill
Indian Town
Black C.
P R E C I N C T
Great Pedee
Jefferies Cr.
St. Davids
Sparrow Swamp
Lynches R.
Broad R.
Cedar C.
Saluda R.
COLUMBIA
Granby
Congaree R.
High Hills of Santee
G E O R G E T O W N
Lynches Lake
Black R.
Wateree R.
M.H.
Statesburg
Low Pine Land
Pr. Frederic
St. Marks
Billsville
St. Matthew
O R A N G E B U R G
North Fork of Edisto
Pine Land
Orangeburg
Santee
Pine Land
George Town
St. Stephens
R E C I N C T
North Saltketchers
Fine Land
St. Georges
St. Johns
St. James
Santee
C H A R L E S T O N
Goose Creek
Dorchester
Thomas
Saltketchers
Cape Romain
Bulls Har.
Bulls I.
Capers I.
Davies I.
Long I.
Sullivans I. & Fort
CHARLESTON
St. Barthol.
Pr. William
Mathews Bluff
St. Pauls
Old Three Runs
King Cr.
Edisto or Pon Pon R.
Combahee
Ashley R.
St. Andrews
Wando R.
Horry I.

Chapter VI.

THE REVOLUTION BEGINS—BATTLE OF GREAT CANE BRAKE

Just as the frontiersmen were beginning to compose themselves in the thought that they could now settle back into a life of reasonable tranquility, the bitterness engendered by the issue between the Regulators and Scophelites having somewhat abated, a new cause of disturbance began to loom large upon the horizon. For many months occasional visitors to Charles Town had returned to the up country with news of conflicts between the mother country and various ones of the American colonies over the right of Great Britain to tax them, but little was thought of the matter here on the frontiers. These hard working people had never taken an interest in politics—in fact, the coast country had not permitted them to exercise any of the privileges of citizenship—and they reasoned now that this was no concern of theirs. This state of apathy on the part of such a large proportion of its people was viewed with alarm by the Council of Public Safety, which had now taken the reins of government from the hands of the British governor, and it was decided to dispatch a commission from the seat of government at Charles Town, "to go into the interior parts of this colony at the public expense, there to explain to the people at large, the nature of the unhappy public dispute between Great Britain and the American colonies to quiet their minds, and to enforce the necessity of a general union in order to preserve themselves and their children from slavery."

The commission sent out consisted of William H. Drayton, formerly a Judge of the King's Court, and the Rev. William Tennant, a Presbyterian minister, both of whom were noted for their diplomacy and persuasive manner. These gentlemen left Charles Town early in June, 1775, and proceeded immediately to the Congarees (now Columbia), where they stopped for a few days to confer with representative men from the up country, who had come down at their request. After these informal conferences they moved northward, holding public meetings wherever the people could be assembled together. But the inhabitants were found to be, not only indifferent to the cause of the colony against Great Britain, but in great fear of trouble with the Indians. Already Alexander Cameron was in the Cherokee country inciting the savages to hostilities against the frontiers, and a sharp conflict had actually taken place between a small detachment of Patriots under Colonel William Thomson and a larger number of Indians led by Cameron.

The commissioners now saw that if any cooperation at all was to be had from the frontiersmen, the ever-present menace of an Indian attack must be removed. So negotiations were undertaken with Richard Pearis in an effort to have him bring down some of the Indian head-men for a conference. It was with some trepedition, and contrary to instruction from Charles Town, that Pearis was chosen for this purpose, as his loyalty to the Patriot cause was even then doubted. But he was a man of great influence among the Indians, and having demonstrated his value as a friend to Virginia in the late war with France, Mr. Drayton decided that no effort should be spared to secure his aid. He thought this show of confidence might be the means of linking him firmly with the friends of Independence.

As a consequence of these negotiations, Pearis appeared at the Congarees on September 25th, 1775, with several chiefs from the Indian Nation. Here they were met by Mr. Drayton. The Indians expressed considerable indignation, and seemed greatly concerned that the colonists had stopped all movements of ammunition to the traders in their country. They had long since put aside the bow and arrow for the use of firearms, and now, not being able to secure ammunition, they had no means of obtaining food, since they still depended upon the fruits of the chase for a livelihood. But Mr. Drayton explained to them, in a talk suited to the occasion, the nature of the dispute between Great Britain and America, and why it had become necessary to discontinue the trade in ammunition. His explanation was satisfactory, and the Indians promised "to hold fast to the chain of peace." Believing that the purpose of the meeting had been accomplished, and that no further danger of an Indian attack existed, Mr. Drayton assured the chiefs of his government's friendship and promised that powder and lead would be sent them at once.

The pacific attitude of the Indians, when made known to the frontiersmen, caused a number of the up country leaders to align themselves with the colonists. Soon it began to appear that the old Scophalite faction was friendly to the King, and this had much weight in carrying the Regulator adherents to the other side. However, Colonel Thomas Fletchall, commander of a regimental district in the up country, announced that he would remain loyal to Britain, and this action left the Patriots between the Saluda and Broad without organization or leadership. But they set to work as best they could to perfect an organization, and in a short time had chosen leaders and were rapidly enrolling the anti-British inhabitants. John Thomas, later a resident of Greenville County, was chosen colonel of the Spartan regiment, an organization which did valiant service in the war to follow. However, a communication from him to Mr. Drayton about this time clearly shows conditions on the frontier still were in a bad state of disorganization.

A portion of the letter from Colonal Thomas is as follows:

Spartan Regiment,
Sept. 11, 1775.

"To the Honorable W. H. Drayton, Esq.:

"*May It Please Your Honor:*—I this moment received your Honor's favor of the 10th instant, and very fortunately the command of this district was just assembled at my house in order to address the Council of Safety almost on the very purport of your Honor's letter, as we had all the reason in the world (and still have), to believe from good information, that the malignants are forming the most hellish schemes to frustrate the measures of the Continental Congress, and to use all those who are willing to stand by those measures in the most cruel manner. Your Honor will be fully convinced of the truth of this by perusing the papers transmitted herewith, to which I refer your Honor. JOHN THOMAS."

Pursuant to the promise made by Mr. Drayton, the Council of Safety, on October 4th, 1775, voted a supply of ammunition for the Cherokee Nation, and immediately dispatched one thousand pounds of powder and two thousand pounds of lead by ammunition train into the up country. A few days before this, Major Williamson had secured the arrest of Robert Cunningham, of present Laurens County, because of purported "seditious statements" and sent him under arrest to Charles Town. Patrick Cunningham, hoping to effect the release of his brother, Robert, organized a body of his friends and started in pursuit of those conveying him to prison, but was unable to overtake them. However, he met the ammunition train coming up from Charles Town, and feeling much aggrieved because of the manner in which his brother had been treated, he took possession of the ammunition and conveyed it back to the vicinity of Ninety-Six. When this information reached the Council of Safety there was great alarm, for the Indians had been promised the ammunition, and their disappointment in its failure to be delivered, might cause them to fall upon the frontier settlements; so steps were immediately taken to forestall such an event. Mr. Drayton, thinking Pearis still loyal to the province, wrote him a letter requesting him to inform the Indians of what had occurred, and to assure them that the ammunition would soon be recovered and forwarded to them. Colonel Richard Richardson was ordered to proceed with his army from the Congarees, where it was encamped, into the up-country, not only to recapture the ammunition, but to arrest those who had taken part in its seizure.

Major Andrew Williamson, then in command of the few up-country settlers bold enough to take up arms for the Patriot cause, realizing the serious nature of the Cunningham incident, without awaiting orders from headquarters, sent out a detachment of militia from his camp at Hard Labor creek (in what is now Laurens County) in an effort to cut off and capture the Cunningham band as it returned. Cunningham eluded his pursuers, however, and returned safely to his home. But while the Council of Safety at Charles Town and Major Williamson in the up-country were putting forth every possible effort to allay the insurgency and pacify the Indians by recovering and delivering to them the powder and lead taken by Cunningham, Richard Pearis was exerting himself to poison the minds of the frontiersmen against the Patriot cause. Up to this time he seems to have been assuring each side of his friendship, only for the purpose of gaining time to learn which was the stronger and more likely to succeed in the coming conflict. Now it seemed to him that he was safe in choosing. Great Britain must win, and casting his lot with her would mean much to Pearis. As was well known to those who had dealt with him, he had no regard for the truth when its perversion would serve his purpose, so he now resorted to the most infamous lies conceivable to inflame the minds of the people. He even went so far as to sign and circulate an affidavit to the effect that the ammunition being sent to the Indians was intended to be used by them to kill all those of the border settlers who were friendly to the Crown. And since Pearis had been with the Indian chiefs upon the occasion of their visit to the Congarees, his affidavit carried all the earmarks of truth.

Urged on by the malicious treachery of Pearis, the Tories, now greatly augmented by those who believed his assertions to be true, acted quickly. Before Colonel Richardson could reach the frontier, they marched upon Ninety-Six, where Major Williamson and Major Mayson had stationed their small forces. On the 21st of

November, 1775, the Whig and Tory forces came in contact with each other in an open field a few miles north of Ninety-Six. The combat was short, with small damage to either side, but here was shed the first blood of the Revolution on South Carolina soil. Neither side seemed anxious to force the issue, so on November 22nd a mutually satisfactory pact was signed. But of more than passing interest here is the fact that the witnesses to this agreement were Richard Pearis and Andrew Pickens. These two were to meet five years later, perhaps in Greenville County but more likely in Anderson, when Pickens, then a general in command of all the upper divisions of the state, surrendered to Pearis, and then again near the close of the war when the life of Pearis was saved by Pickens at Augusta.

But Colonel Richardson, marching rapidly towards Ninety-Six, gathering reinforcements as he moved, was in no frame of mind to deal leniently with the enemy, so after conferring with Colonel William Thomson, who joined him on November 28th, he decided that he would not respect the terms of the Ninety-Six agreement, but on the other hand would take Pearis and other leading Tories into custody. And it was only a few days till Pearis, "the first citizen of Greenville", found himself a prisoner of war, for on December 16th Colonel Richardson wrote Henry Laurens, President of the Council of Safety, as follows: "I herewith send you the persons of Colonel Thomas Fletchall, Captain Richard Pearis, Jacob Fry, and Captain George Shuburg—these being all adjudged by the officers and people here to be offenders of such a nature that from the active part they have taken, it would be dangerous for me to let either of them go."

With the capture of their principal leaders, most of those remaining hostile to the Patriot cause quietly disbanded and returned to their homes; but there still remained a band of the leading aggressors encamped on Reedy river, four miles within the Indian Nation at "Great Cane Brake," under the leadership of Colonel Patrick Cunningham. It was reported to Colonel Richardson that young Pearis, son of Captain Pearis, and a member of Cunningham's band, had gone to the Indian towns in an effort to secure re-inforcements, so he concluded that "this last hot-bed of Toryism in the district" should be broken up before the recently disbanded Tories thereabouts should have an opportunity to reorganize. He therefore moved his forces up to Hollingsworth's mill, about 25 miles south of "Great Cane Brake", and ordered Colonel Thomson to march against the enemy. Colonel Thomson called for volunteers to join him in this undertaking, which promised to furnish the first real fighting of the entire campaign. Colonels Polk and Lyles and Major Williamson offered their services, and these officers, with 1,300 men composing both infantry and cavalry companies, were chosen.

The detachment under Colonel Thomson set out from Hollingsworth's mill during the early evening of December 21st, and after marching all night came upon the camp of the enemy near daylight of December 22nd. The Tories were taken completely by surprise, as the force of Colonel Thomson had succeeded in almost surrounding their camp before being detected. Seeing that resistance would be useless, they took to flight in a most precipitate manner, abandoning baggage, arms, and ammunition as they fled. Five or six of the Tories were killed, and 125 or 130 captured. Colonel Cunningham escaped, it is said, by mounting the first available horse and riding away bare-back during the confusion. None of Thomson's men were killed, and only one was wounded, this being a young son of Colonel Polk, who was shot through the shoulder. Among those of the Tories captured was the son of Captain Richard Pearis, who a few days before had been reported as being among the Indians seeking aid. However, if he had been to the Indian towns on such a mission he probably did not meet with success, for no Indians were among those captured.

The campaign of Colonel Richardson, known to history as the Snow Campaign on account of a heavy fall of snow which began in the up-country on December 25th and contined for several days, was brought to a successful conclusion with the battle of "Great Cane Brake." And on January 2nd, 1776, after he had returned to his base at the Congarees, Colonel Richardson wrote the Council of Public Safety: "The people are now more convinced than ever of their being wrong. The lenient measures have had a good effect, the spirit and power is gone from them. And I am sure (if not interrupted by designing men) that the country which I had the power to lay waste (and which the people expected) will be happy, and peace and tranquility take the place of ruin and discord. On the rivers, had I burnt, plundered, and destroyed, ten thousand women and children must have been left to perish, a thought shocking to humanity."

The historians disagree as to the location of this concluding battle of the Snow Campaign. Some place it far down Reedy river near the point where it empties into the Saluda, while McCrady shows it on his Revolutionary map as being only three or four miles below the present city of Greenville. But Dr. H. T. Cook, in his *Rambles in the Pee Dee Basin*, places it about 16 miles southeast of Greenville City. A careful consideration of the known facts, gathered from various sources, leads to the conclusion that Dr. Cook is correct, and that the battle of "Great Cane Brake" was fought on what is now Greenville County soil. The early accounts locate it on Reedy river, four miles within the Indian country, and it is known that the Indian boundary line crossed Reedy river near Fork Shoals. At page 1, in Location book "A" in the office of the R.M.C. for Greenville County, appears the record of a grant to General Richard Winn of a tract of land on Reedy river, containing 640 acres and known as "the Great Cane Brake." General Winn acquired the lands in 1784, and he conveyed them to James Harrison by a deed which refers to the plantation as "Great Cane Brake." It will be noted that these descriptions are specific and not general; hence the property conveyed and the description given of it in the deeds must have had some signification to the grantors and grantees. At that time, of course, the site of the battle ground was well known. The Winn lands are located on Reedy river about 15 miles south of the city of Greenville, and some four miles north of Fork Shoals, and consist of lands yet belonging to descendants of James Harrison, being at this time a part of the estate of the late S. E. Harrison.

General Richard Winn, who was a man of prominence in South Carolina, took part in the battle of "Great Cane Brake" as a lieutenant. When the war was over and he held high rank in the military life of the state, perhaps it was the knowledge that at "Great Cane Brake" he fought his first battle which impelled him to become the owner of the battle-field. But his attachment for the site of his boyhood prowess

could not have been overly strong, for in just two years after becoming its owner, he sold it to James Harrison "for one black horse." Tradition has it in the community where this engagement took place that after the battle, a number of Tories were hanged; and some of the older residents, whose ancestors have lived there for a century and a half, will today point out one of the trees which family tradition says was used as a scaffold.

Note.—Historians are not agreed as to the date of the conflict between Colonel Thomson and the Indians near Keowee. Some put it as late as the summer of 1776, but Colonel Thomson, writing from his camp "Two miles below Keowee" on August 4, 1775, gives an account of the engagement. However, the Cherokees seem not to have taken offence because of this difficulty, as they continued to negotiate with Mr. Drayton. If this be considered a military engagement, it was here, and not at Ninety-Six, that the first blood of the war was shed. (See page 125 of Gibbs' "Documentary History of the American Revolution from 1764 to 1776.")

The body of Indians turning northward from the Hite home next visited the Hampton plantation. Here Mr. Hampton, his wife, his son, Preston, who had recently returned from his mission to the Cherokee country, and a grandson (infant child of James Harrison), were killed and their home burned. Another grandson, John Bynum, was captured and carried away into the Indian country, where he was held prisoner for several months. The Hampton family here suffering so heavily at the hands of the savages, was the same which produced the immortal Wade. His grandfather, also named Wade, was at the time with the army of North Carolina. James Harrison, father of the slain child, later moved to the "Great Cane Brake" in Greenville County and became the head of that large and illustrious family, living today throughout all the upper counties of the state. In later years, B. F. Perry of Greenville was to engage in a duel with a descendant of the captured grandson, John Bynum.

Now the savages, having taken up the tomahawk in earnest, were not to be stayed in their bloody course. Wherever the whites could be found they were murdered in cold blood, the "passover" itself being small protection. Captain Ford, a well-known Tory, was killed as he sat in his yard under the peeled pole which he had raised for the protection of himself and family, and two of his daughters were taken captive. Among others killed were Mr. John Miller and a Mr. Orr. These two, together with a Mr. Leach, were returning from Poole's Iron Works (near the present city of Spartanburg) to their homes in the Gowensville section of today, when, as they crossed a crude bridge over Middle Tyger river, several Indians sprang from their place of hiding under the bridge and struck them down. Mr. Leach escaped with his life by feigning death. The Hannon family, residing near the present town of Landrum, was visited, and Mr. Hannon, several of his older children, and a baby were killed. Another victim was a Mr. Bishop then residing near present Shiloh church in Spartanburg County. He was killed and three of his children carried away. Later these children were recovered by a brother-in-law, Mr. Davy Lewis, ancestor of the Wingo families of the Gowensville section of Greenville County. In fact, so many were the atrocities committed and so savage was the Indian in his attack as he swept from one to another of the frontier settlements, that abject terror seized the inhabitants. Those who had not been killed or captured fled the country or found protection in the border forts, leaving their homes to be plundered and burned, and their growing crops destroyed.

And while matters were in this sad state, a Captain Howard, who resided within the Indian country, a few miles northwest of the present Gowensville settlement, was able to organize a small company of men from among the number, who like himself, had taken refuge in the old Block House. This old fort is still standing, having been converted into a residence, and may be seen in traveling north from Landrum to Tryon along the old road connecting these two towns. It is said that the Greenville-Spartanburg County line, as well as the North Carolina-South Carolina line, pass through it. Among those taking part in this expedition was Captain (later Colonel) John Earle, the illustrious ancestor of so many present-day Greenville County citizens. Equipping themselves as best they could from the meager resources at hand, this little band of resolute men, led by a sturdy moun-

taineer whose descendants still reside in upper Greenville County in great numbers, marched out from the Block House against the Indians then encamped in a mountain gap four or five miles away in North Carolina, under Chief Big Warrior. In their march, they were guided by a friendly Indian, Schuyuka, who led them through a hitherto unknown gap, which enabled them to approach the enemy from the rear. Big Warrior and his men had noticed the activity of the whites and were expecting an attack, but they thought it would come directly up the pass in which they were located—hence the assault from the rear took them completely by surprise.

Captain Howard and his men attacked the Indians fiercely, killing and wounding many of them, but they were greatly outnumbered, and might have been defeated except for the suddenness of the onslaught and the rapidity of their withdrawal. The Indians, however, were in no mood to withstand an organized attack after their orgy of bloodshed and pillage. They had brought their women and children with them and knew that their march back must be slow; and the spirit shown by Captain Howard and his men did not bode well for them, should any great number of Whigs assemble before they were safely on their way home. So they buried their dead there on the mountain side and began a hasty march back toward Pearis' plantation, where they no doubt expected to receive ammunition and Tory reinforcements. This skirmish, unknown to history, but well authenticated in tradition as "the Battle of Round Mountain", gave the frontier settlers their first respite from the most savage Indian massacre they had ever experienced.

The Battle of Round Mountain was fought a short distance east of the present town of Tryon, North Carolina. One of the mountain peaks guarding the pass in which the Indians were encamped is known as "Big Warrior" in honor of their chief. The pass through which Schuyuka led the Patriot soldiers is now "Howard's Gap", named for the brave Captain Howard. The present Spartanburg-Hendersonville highway leads through this gap, and for many years has been known as the Howard Gap road. Tradition says the friendly Indian was later captured by his red brothers and made to suffer a horrible death. It was sought by many to name the county seat of Polk County, North Carolina, Schuyuka, in his honor, but for some reason this was not done. Yet today, beautiful Schuyuka mountain stretches along the border of North Carolina, looking down upon the scene of battle.

At this time Colonel Andrew Williamson was in command of all organized Patriot forces between the Saluda and Broad, and when it became known to him that the Indians were raiding the frontiers, he ordered Colonel Thomas to move against them. However, there was some delay in getting the troops in motion, probably occasioned by the action of the Charles Town authorities in releasing certain up-country prisoners. After the British attack on Charles Town during the latter part of June had been repulsed, the Government thought that generosity on its part would have a good effect, so Richard Pearis, Robert Cunningham and "the rest of the back country prisoners who were in confinement" were released. But the troops of Colonel Williamson were greatly incensed at this action and for several days could not be prevailed upon to enter the conflict. However, as the savages were beginning to retreat after the Battle of Round Mountain, Colonel Thomas appeared with a small force and gave chase. The Indians moved from the North Carolina border across the northwestern portion of Spartanburg County toward the plantation of Richard Pearis. They were overtaken near Paris mountain by a small detachment from Colonel Thomas' force, and a skirmish took place. The Indians continued their retreat, but being hard pressed, killed a number of their prisoners, who were hampering their progress. Among these was Mrs. Hite. But other prisoners were either released or permitted to escape. Of this number were the two daughters of Captain Ford, the Tory who had been killed during the raid.

When the Pearis plantation was reached, the Indians did not find the expected reinforcements, and continued their retreat. But for several days prior thereto, the Pearis home had been closely watched by spies sent out by Colonel Williamson, and these emissaries having reported unusual activity about the place, Colonel Williamson concluded that Pearis was up to his old tricks again and sent couriers to Thomas, ordering him to give the Pearis home a call as he passed it. So on July 16th Colonel Thomas took possession of the property of Richard Pearis, burned his home, mill, and trading station, confiscated all his cattle and horses for the use of his army, and carried away his wife, two daughters and one son. Captain Pearis was away at the time and thereby saved himself a second imprisonment. It is said that the family of Pearis was subjected to much abuse and punishment by their captors. According to some accounts, they were marched on foot 25 miles a day with little food and no covering for their heads against the heat of a summer sun, and were then confined for three days with practically no food, and afterwards sent off in an open wagon to a point near Augusta, 100 miles away, where they were left among strangers to shift for themselves, without money or provisions.

After a few days' delay, awaiting reinforcements and supplies, Colonel Thomas set out for the Cherokee country with a fixed determination to revenge the bloody desolation which the savages had left behind them. Among his troops were many of the frontiersmen who had suffered sorely at the hands of the Indian, and who were in a mood to fight as they had never done before. Everywhere the Indians fled before them, leaving their homes and growing crops to be destroyed. By August 13th, the destruction of all the lower settlements was complete. The Patriot army was now reinforced, and on September 13th a force of 2,000 men started its march over the mountains toward the middle settlement towns, which were reached on September 23rd. Here, as in the lower settlements, the destruction was soon complete, and early in October, the army, having fully performed its mission, was disbanded.

The successful termination of the Cherokee war of 1776 ended forever the danger of Indian massacres in the Carolina up-country. For perhaps 100 years, white men had resided there, but not until after 1755 had there existed any ill feeling between the two races. Although the Cherokees were a strong and warlike people, who dealt ruthlessly with their red neighbors, Carolina had always had in them friends of great value both in war and peace. But with the treaty of Governor Glen in 1755, by which the Indians were swindled out of the major portion of their lands in South Carolina, were sown the seeds of discord, which grew into open conflict under the blundering actions of Governor Lyttleton in 1759. And thereafter there was never the same trusting friendliness between the two peoples. The

Indians felt that the Carolinians had defrauded them of their lands, and then without cause made war upon them to gain an acknowledgment that the lands had been voluntarily ceded. By the treaty of 1763, outward peace was restored, but always there rankled in the savage breast the thought that his honor had been outraged; and seeing that the Indians were forever restive, the frontiersmen lived in daily fear of an outbreak. And in the midst of bitter civil conflict, when brother fought against brother, there came the bloody denouement in which these sturdy pioneers repaid a hundred fold for the wrongs which had been inflicted upon the Cherokees by a government in which they had never been given a voice. But having fully paid, they were now free.

11 o'clock in the night, they opened fire upon the unsuspecting Tories and after killing one and wounding three they accepted the willing surrender of all those who had not been able to break through the lines and escape. This conflict is thought to have taken place at Gowen's fort, located a mile or two northeast of Gowensville.

During the months of suspense and bitter travail following the fall of Charles Town, and preceding the Battle of Kings Mountain, which is recognized as the turning point of the Revolution, the Whigs of upper Carolina were continually harassed by those two arch fiends, "Bloody Bill" Cunningham and "Bloody Bill" Bates. Cunningham was a resident of what is now Greenwood County, and Bates lived in the upper part of present Greenville County. Among the frontiersmen Bates was referred to as "the Plundering Scout" because of his thieving proclivities, while Cunningham was known as "the Bloody Scout" on account of his brutal murders. But Bates did not hesitate to kill when that would assist in his robberies nor did Cunningham leave anything of value behind him. Both, soon after their activities began, acquired the name of "Bloody Bill."

At the outbreak of the war, William L. Cunningham, unlike his cousins, Robert and Patrick, chose the Patriot cause. He enlisted in Captain John Caldwell's company, which was composed of the most respectable young men of the upper country. But after taking part in numerous engagements, including the expedition against the Cherokees in 1776, he became offended for causes now unknown, left his company, then stationed on James's or John's Island, and returned home to become one of the most despised Tories known to South Carolina. Often during these latter years many of his atrocities are attributed to either Robert or Patrick, but to do so is to vilely defame the characters of these men, who, although opposing the province in the war, were sincere in their convictions and honorable in their conduct.

After "breaking" with the Whigs, Cunningham gathered to his side a small band of marauding cut-throats, who swept through the back country of South Carolina, leaving death and destruction in their wake. The present county of Spartanburg was visited, where it is thought he was joined by "the Plundering Scout" (Bates) with his band of outlaws from the Glassy and Hogback mountains. In the Nazareth Church section Captain Steadman, who lay sick at the home of Charles Moore, two young men stopping at the Moore home, and young John Caldwell were killed. On Lawson's Fork, Colonel John Wood and his brother James were dispatched in cold blood. Colonel Edward Hampton, who it will be recalled, had gone to the Cherokee nation as a good-will emissary in 1776, while passing through the section on his way to the home of his father-in-law, Baylis Earle, was called from his bed at the home of a friend and shot down. Another victim of the bloody pair was Majo John Caldwell, the old commander of Cunningham, who was slain in his own yard while standing unarmed by the side of his wife. William Anderson, ancestor o Dr. J. L. Anderson of Greenville City, was another killed.

The widow of Colonel John Wood, killed by Cunningham, later married Colone John Earle, whose descendants by his first wife reside in Greenville County i great numbers, and became the ancestress of the Prince and Bomar families so widel known in Spartanburg County. Colonel Edward Hampton was a son of Anthon Hampton, killed by the Indians in 1776 at his home near Greer, and brother c

General Wade Hampton, who was the great grandfather of Governor Wade Hampton. Major John Caldwell was an uncle of John C. Calhoun. Of James Wood, killed along with his brother John, Landrum says: "Some fifty years after the burial of James Wood, his nephew, Dr. John Young of Spartanburg, caused his remains to be disinterred and carried to Greenville, South Carolina, for burial."

On one occasion Bates led a party of his followers against Wood's fort, located in what is now Greenville County, between Greer and Gowensville, where a number of the settlers of that section had gathered. Being poorly armed and ill supplied with ammunition, the occupants of the fort soon concluded that they could not successfully withstand the opposing forces, and opened negotiations for a surrender. Bates readily promised them protection, but no sooner had they marched out of the fort then they were set upon and brutally massacred. None escaped except Mrs. Thompson, wife of Abner Thompson, who, although seriously wounded and scalped, recovered and lived in Greenville County for more than fifty years after her harrowing experience.

After the fall of Wood's fort, Major Buck Gowen, from whom Gowensville derives its name, gathered a small force and gave chase to Bates as he fled back to his mountain stronghold. Beyond the head waters of the Tyger, supposedly in what is now Greenville County, he was overtaken and suffered the loss of practically all of his followers, but Bates himself escaped. After this defeat, however, he seems not to have been able to raise sufficient men to seriously molest the settlements.

During the activities of Bates he killed old Mr. Motley on Motlow's creek in Spartanburg County. At the same time he captured a son of Mr. Motley, but the young man succeeded in making his escape. After the war Bates was arrested for horse-stealing and confined in the Greenville jail to await trial. Young Motley, then living in upper Greenville County, learning that the murderer of his father was within his reach, gathered a few of his friends and led them to the Greenville jail where they seized Bates and with little ceremony shot him to death. His burial place is thought to be upon the lot where is now located the Post Office Building.

With the Whig successes at Kings Mountain and Cowpens, the up-country people took new heart. After all, there still might be a chance to win out in the struggle. And with the coming of new hope, a determined effort to drive out Cunningham and Bates was put forth, with the result that Cunningham was soon forced into the British lines about Charles Town, and Bates was driven into the deep recesses of the mountains. At last the Carolina frontiers were able to breathe freely; and with the coming of this feeling of semi-security, the inhabitants threw themselves wholeheartedly into the conflict, and the whole of South Carolina was soon free of enemy forces.

Note.—In this chapter, as well as all those preceding it, the principal city of the province has been referred to as "Charles Town", but hereafter the name "Charleston" will be used. Till about 1719 it was always "Charles Town", but from then till 1783 or 1784 it was officially "Charlestown", but still more often called by the older name. After the Revolution it became Charleston, and has so remained ever since.

Chapter IX.

FORMATION OF THE COUNTY AND EARLY LAND OWNERS

With the successful termination of the Revolution in 1783, immediate steps were taken to incorporate the "Cherokee acquisition of 1777" into the new State of South Carolina. For the time being it was all placed under the jurisdiction of Ninety-Six District; but realizing that the districts of the state were much too large to give a stable government, the General Assembly on March 16, 1783, passed: *"An Ordinance for Appointing Commissioners in Each of the Circuit Court Districts, for Dividing the Same into Counties.* On March 12, 1785, the General Assembly ratified an Act which directed the laying off of "Six counties for the district now called Ninety-Six". While on March 22, 1786, was enacted the law establishing Greenville County proper. It reads:

> *An Ordinance for Establishing a County and County Courts in the New Ceded Lands on the North Side of Saluda River:*
>
> Whereas, the inhabitants of the new ceded lands on the north side of Saluda river below the Indian line, have experienced many inconveniences by being annexed to some of the counties heretofore established;
>
> Be it ordained by the Honorable, the Senate and House of Representatives, now met and sitting in General Assembly, and by the authority of the same, That a county shall be established in the new ceded lands, by the name of Greenville, and shall be bounded by Saluda river and the South fork thereof, the old Indian boundary, and the North Carolina line, and shall be entitled to County Courts, to be held on the third Monday in February, May, August and November; which courts shall hold, exercise and enjoy the several powers and jurisdictions which are by law vested in the said county courts heretofore established.

South Carolina had no money with which to pay her soldiers during the Revolution, and promised many of them payment in slaves, which were to be confiscated from the Tories. But upon the conclusion of the war, the redemption of these pledges, in this manner, was found to be impracticable, and in lieu thereof, lands in the new acquisition were offered at ten dollars per hundred acres, payable in debts due from the state. On May 21, 1784, what became Greenville County by act of the General Assembly in 1786 was officially opened for settlers, with a Land Office at Pendleton in charge of Colonel John Thomas as Commissioner of Location, and within two years practically all of the desirable lands in the county had been taken up, largely by Revolutionary heroes.

The first tract of land "set off" in Greenville County was unto James Hamilton, a record of which may be found in Location book "A" at page 5, in the office of the Register of Mesne Conveyance for Greenville County. A description of these lands is as follows: "A tract of land containing 640 acres, situate, lying and being above the Old Indian Boundary on Reedy river and known by the name of Pearis' Shoals." Attached to the record of this "Location" is an interesting statement which reads, "the survey being made between the hours of nine and twelve o'clock in the forenoon after opening the Location Office and previous to any other survey made thereon." This first location in Greenville, except for the fact that on the same day a tract of 640 acres was surveyed off to Colonel Thomas Brandon which is clearly traceable to the present "Textile Center of the South", might be thought to include the present city of Greenville. Why should James Hamilton have had first choice of all lands in Greenville County, and just what acreage did he select? These questions start a train of interesting thoughts, but the public records do not show any disposition of these lands and they cannot therefore be traced down to their present owners.

On the day Greenville County was opened for settlement (May 21, 1784) Colonel Thomas Brandon of Union County became the owner of the site of Greenville City; his acquisition consisted of "four hundred acres on both sides of Reedy river of Saluda, including Richard Pearis' plantation." Colonel Brandon was an active supporter of the Patriot cause during the Revolution, taking part in many of the up-country battles. He was a resident of Union County, and so far as is known, never lived in Greenville County. In 1788 he sold his Greenville lands to Lemuel J. Alston.

Another man of unusual prominence in the Revolution to acquire lands in Greenville County was General Richard Winn, who obtained "640 acres on Reedy river and known by the name of the 'Great Cane Brake'." At the conclusion of the war, Richard Winn was a colonel, but the General Assembly, recognizing his great services for the cause of his state, bestowed upon him the title of Brigadier-General. He resided in Fairfield County and filled a number of civil offices in the state, and was a member of Congress for several terms. In 1786 he sold his Greenville County land to James Harrison for "one black horse", never having resided here.

Henry Pendleton, a noted jurist of the state, and for whom Pendleton District was named, on May 21, 1784, acquired "640 acres on the Golden Grove and known by the name of Cameron's Cowpens." Judge O'Neall, in his *Bench and Bar*, says that Judge Pendleton resided in Greenville County "on or near Golden Grove creek", while Dr. H. T. Cook in his *Rambles in the Pee Dee Basin*, makes the statement that he died here. But the court records in Charleston show that Judge Henry Pendleton died there in 1788, where his estate was later administered. It is likely that the Judge owned a summer home in Greenville County, and resided here during a portion of each year as did so many of the Charleston people during that period.

Another Jurist of note to own lands in Greenville County was Aedanus Burke, who on May 25, 1784, acquired "640 acres on a small branch of Golden Grove creek, waters of Saluda river, bounded by lands laid out to Henry Pendleton, William Wood and others." Judge Burke was an Irishman, educated at St. Omer's for a priest, but he came to America at the outbreak of the Revolution from the West Indies, where he had previously gone, and volunteered to fight for liberty. During the war he attained the rank of major, but it was as a lawyer and judge that he became prominent in the affairs of South Carolina. Judge Burke, however, was not content to administer the laws, but would also have a hand in framing them. Prior to 1790 he was several times a member of Congress while still retaining the office of Judge. He could not be persuaded to forego this multiple office-holding, and in 1789 a law was enacted which prohibited a judge, on pain of the forfeiture of his office, from leaving the state without the consent of the governor. At one time Judge Burke acted as second for Aaron Burr in a duel. Judge Burke bitterly opposed the Society of the Cincinnati, an organization of Revolutionary soldiers, which for a time threatened to destroy a republican form of government in America, and furnished the material for the celebrated pamphlet prepared by Mirabeau, the Frenchman, in collaboration with Franklin, attacking that Society. He opposed the ratification of the Federal Constitution; nevertheless he was elected the first United States Senator from South Carolina. So far as is known, he never resided in Greenville County.

James Harrison acquired "600 acres on both sides of Reedy river of Saluda about two miles above the old Indian boundary" on June 15, 1784. It was he whose child was murdered by the Indians at the time of the "Hampton massacre." He had married a daughter of Anthony Hampton, sister of the elder General Wade, and with his brothers-in-law took a very prominent part in the Revolution. It is said that a child was born to his wife while the family traveled in a covered wagon from the old home in Spartanburg County to this new one on Reedy river. This land adjoined the "Great Cane Brake" which he purchased from General Winn in 1786.

On May 25, 1784, Isaac Morgan received a grant for "a tract of land containing 640 acres situate, lying, and being above the old Indian boundary on Enoree river and known by the name of Hite's old vacant land on every side." And on the same day Henry Benson had set off to him "a tract of land containing 640 acres situate and being above the old Indian boundary on both sides of Enoree river and known by the name of Hite's Canebrake." Attached to the Morgan record is a plat of the land showing a road extending across it from east to west. The road crosses Enoree river and its eastern end carries the notation, "to the settlement", while on the western portion of the road appear the words, "To Parris's." These conveyances cover the plantation where Colonel Hite resided before the Revolution and up to 1776, when he was killed by the Indians.

John Conner obtained title to 400 acres on Shoaly creek, a branch of Pacolet river "including John Armstrong's improvements and Boiling Springs Meeting House.". Of interest here is the fact that "a meeting house" was upon the land when granted. This is evidence that there were many people living in the territory of Greenville County long before it was officially opened for settlement. Further proof is found in the fact that this, and many other grants convey lands "including improvements."

Controversy has arisen among those seeking to establish the location of the old forts along the old Indian boundary as to whether Wood's fort was east or west of this line. Some claim it was to the east and therefore in Spartanburg County, while others locate it in Greenville County. A few even deny that there was a fort of that name. But reference to the record of a grant unto Elisha Thompson shows that he acquired "100 acres on both sides of the Indian boundary on a branch of Tyger river, including 'Wood's Old Fort'." The plat accompanying the record shows the fort to be in Greenville County. One often finds reference to a "Thompson's fort", but this is no doubt "Wood's fort", which after its acquisition by Thompson was so called.

Among those receiving early grants from the state were George Hite and Jacob O'Bannon Hite, who together acquired 3,000 acres located on Grove creek. To no other persons was so large an acreage conveyed; and the liberality of the state to these two was no doubt occasioned by the grievous losses which they had sustained in the death of their father, mother, brother and sisters at the hands of the savages. And it was probably in this manner, too, that they were compensated for the lands occupied by their father on Enoree river. In 1799 all of these lands were sold to Alexander Pitt Buchanan. The grantors at that time resided in Berkley County, Virginia. Tradition has it that all of the Hite family, remaining after the Indian massacre, returned to their home in Virginia. Very likely this is true.

To James Bradley went "a tract of land on the Bounty of the State, containing 200 acres on Golden Grove, a branch of Saluda river." Doctor William Smith Stevens was granted "a tract of land on the Bounty of the State, containing 300 acres on Saluda river." Another tract of land "on the Bounty of the State" went to Thomas Prince, Gentleman, being mentioned as "200 acres of land allowed by law to a Lieutenant in the independent service of the Palmetto State, on waters of Enoree river." A grant of "500 acres on Reedy river about two miles above Rich'd Paris's old place on said river" goes to Baylis Earle. Incorporated in the instrument of conveyance is a recital reading, "Pursuant to a warrant from John Thomas, Esq., Commissioner of Location, and agreeable to a Resolution and Ordinance which passed both Branches of the Legislature of this State." All of the plats attached to the Location Certificates for these lands are marked "Bounty Lands."

Among others receiving grants of land in Greenville County during the year 1784, were John Earle, John Winn, Sr., John Milling, Joseph Hughs, Henry Woolf, Thomas Farrow, William Giles, William Goodlet, Captain William Smith, James McElheney, John Gowin, George Martin, James Winn, John Winn, David Milling, Robert Gilliland, Alexander Johnson, Michal Persal, Alexander McElheney, Thomas Jenkins, John Goodwin, John Clark, Kilpatrick, John Henderson, Joseph Atkinson, Samuel Earle, William Davis, Alexander Ray, Thomas Rowland, Henry Metcher, William Brandon, Joseph Whitner, John Timmons, John Davis, John Langston, Joseph Reynolds, Abraham Case, Ferdin'd Hopkins, Rachel Gaugh, John Lindsey, Joseph McLaughlen, Henry Wells, Robert Goodlett, John McQueen, Uriah Conner, Joseph McJunkin, William Anderson, John Davis and James Jorden.

During this period of rapid growth, Greenville County did not differ greatly from all other "boom" communities in respect to law observance and law enforcement. From the time of its acquisition from the Cherokees in 1777 till 1786, when it was formally organized into a county, the territory now composing Greenville was theoretically under the civil jurisdiction of the Ninety-Six District. But at its best, the up-country had never been given its due in respect to law enforcement and the protection usually afforded by the courts. It will be remembered that for some years prior to the Revolutionary war, the back country settlers had clamored for courts and law enforcement officers so vigorously as to precipitate the conflict between the Regulators and the Scophelites, which terminated in the establishment of courts of inferior jurisdiction in the up-country. One of these was at Ninety-Six, but its lack of power and the general inefficiency of its officials rendered it absolutely unable to cope with conditions which now existed in Greenville County. Feeling between Whigs and Tories was still bitter; grievances from the war were yet to be settled, and often this culminated in personal conflicts. Sneak thieves and highwaymen roved at will about the country-side, preying upon honest citizens. But conditions were alleviated to some extent by the actions of self-chosen and generally recognized leaders (usually ex-army officers) who took unto themselves the authority of meting out justice unto the most flagrant law-breakers. The manner in which this was done is well illustrated by the methods of Colonel Benjamin Cleveland, the Kings Mountain hero, as told by Johnson in his *Traditions*. Says Johnson:

> "This gentleman (Colonel Cleveland) at the termination of hostilities, retired with his family to this frontier settlement in Greenville, and being accompanied by a number of hardy camp associates, established among them a patriarchal government, until the courts of justice could be extended over that part of the State. Colonel Cleveland was, of course, at the head of the government, and executed the duties of his office with much judgment and discretion. On one occasion, when he was absent from home, some of his neighbors brought a horse-thief to his residence for adjudication. They waited awhile for his return, but as the day advanced they began to apprehend that their prisoner might escape, or they have much more trouble with him. Mrs. Cleveland was at home, occupied in her domestic vocations, and at the time smoking her pipe. The men asked her for instructions what they should do with their prisoner. She inquired in turn the particulars of the offense, and of the evidence against him, and on being assured that it was a clear unquestionable case of horse-stealing, she asked what the colonel would order to be done? They as promptly answered he should be hanged'. 'Well then', said the old lady, 'you must hang him', and he was accordingly hung at the gate."

Johnson is incorrect in saying that Colonel Cleveland resided in Greenville and that this act of summary justice transpired there (he lived in present Oconee), but it fairly illustrates the condition of affairs in all the newly settled country till near the end of the century.

Although great numbers of the early settlers of Greenville County were devout Christians, several months seems to have elapsed before any churches were organized in the county. This delay was no doubt occasioned by the unsettled condition of the country. But during the years 1785 and 1786 a number of families from the Nazareth Church section of Spartanburg County moved in and settled a few miles above the Laurens County line. These people were Scotch-Irish, who had come over from County Antrim, Ireland, just before the Revolution, and settled among friends and relatives about Nazareth. Being devout people and having left Ireland principally on account of religious persecutions, these additions to the new county, almost immediately upon their arrival, set about organizing a church; and in 1786, their efforts succeeded in gaining admission into Presbytery for their church—Fairview Presbyterian Church. Of those constituting the membership of this first church organization in Greenville County, much can be learned by reading the account given by Howe in his *History of the Presbyterian Church in South Carolina*. In part he says:

> "Fairview Church is situated in the district of Greenville, on waters of Reedy river, which is a branch of the Saluda. It is two hundred miles from

> Charleston, nineteen miles from Greenville court-house, and three miles east from Fork Shoals. It was formed in the year 1786. Five families—those namely, of John Peden, James Alexander, Samuel Peden, David Peden, an James Nesbit—migrated from the bounds of Nazareth and settled in this neighborhood. In that year they formed their first association, and on April 10th, 1787, were taken under the care of presbytery. One of their earliest acts had been to erect a house for divine worship. This year 1787, their numbers were increased by the addition of three other families—those of John Alexander, David Morton and James Alexander, Senior, the father of John and James Alexander, all of Nazareth. . . . The Pedens above named were the offspring of John Peden and Peggy McDill, who emigrated from the county of Antrim, in Ireland, in 1773. They had seven sons and three daughters. These last intermarried, one with an Alexander, another with William Gaston; the third was twice married, first to a Morton, and upon his death, to one of the name of Morrow. . . . In the course of a few years, all their children (that is, John and Peggy Peden) gathered around Fairview Church, where they settled, with the exception of Thomas, who lived and died in the bounds of Nazareth. Their large families composed no small portion of the church and congregation."

No history of Greenville County would be complete without mention being made of Colonel John Thomas and his wife, who were among the early residents. Colonel Thomas was born in Wales, but early in life emigrated to Pennsylvania, where he resided till 1755, when he moved to South Carolina and settled in what is now Chester County. In 1740 he married Miss Jane Black, sister of the Reverend John Black. The outbreak of the Revolution found him in Spartanburg County, residing on Fair Forest creek.

Early in the struggle for Independence, Colonel Thomas resigned his positio as a Militia Captain and Magistrate under the Crown, and alligned himself with th Patriot forces. He was elected colonel of the Spartan regiment, and rendered valiant service till the fall of Charleston, taking a prominent part in the Cherokee campaign of 1776. Soon after the fall of Charleston, he was taken prisoner and remained in confinement at Ninety-Six and Charleston till the close of the war. His son, John Thomas, Jr., succeeded him as colonel of the Spartan regiment.

While Colonel Thomas was confined at Ninety-Six, his wife visited him, and while there overheard one of two women in conversation say: "On tomorrow night the Loyalists intend to surprise the Rebels at Cedar Springs." Cedar Springs was near her home and a number of her children were posted there, so Mrs. Thomas was greatly disturbed by that chance information. It was more than 50 miles to the scene of the proposed attack, and the intervening country, then over-run by Tories, presented many difficulties; but Mrs. Thomas was not to be deterred in the face of obstacles. She set out to warn the Whigs at Cedar Springs, and after undergoing many hardships reached the camp-site in advance of the enemy. Preparations for defense were made, and when the Tories swept down upon the encampment, expecting to find all there asleep, they were met by such spirited opposition as to suffer defeat with heavy losses. An interesting sketch of Mrs. Thomas is carried by Mrs. Ellet in her "Women of the Revolution."

After peace had been restored Colonel Thomas secured a grant of several hundred acres of land in the Locus section of Greenville County, where he mov with his family to remain a valuable and respected citizen till his death in 1805. He was the first person to hold the office of Commissioner of Location with jurisdiction over Greenville County.

Another of the women mentioned by Mrs. Ellet in her great work is Dicey Langston. This brave woman lived in upper Greenville County for a number of years following the Revolution, and now lies buried near Locus. Recently her grave was located by the late Adam C. Welborn, and suitably marked by the Daughters of the American Revolution.

Chapter X.

PLEASANTBURG — EARLY TOWN OF GREENVILLE

Several years before the village of Pleasantburg came into existence, and no doubt before there was a single house upon its future location, there existed somewhat of a community about the present Tanglewood school section. There, near the present intersection of the White Horse road and state highway No. 2 (newly paved road to Easley), was the general store of A. McBeth & Company, which is known to have been doing a flourishing business as early as 1794. Near the McBeth establishment lived a number of planters and summer residents who had early selected that vicinity because it commanded such an excellent view of the mountains to the north, and was at the same time considered more healthful than other nearby locations on account of its elevation.

In 1788 Thomas Brandon conveyed the 400 acres granted to him in 1784 unto Lemuel J. Alston, who already resided in the county, and was the owner of much land adjoining and near that purchased from Brandon. It will be recalled that this property included the "Richard Pearis mill site" which was later to become the village of Pleasantburg, now Greenville. Alston was a man of wealth and great political influence, and no doubt for this reason the commissioners who had been appointed to select a site for the location of a court house in Greenville County chose the eastern side of Reedy river near the Pearis mill site. And here started the first "real estate development project" in the county, when in 1797 was laid out the town of Pleasantburg by Alston, upon the lands which he had purchased from Colonel Brandon.

The first plat of Pleasantburg included roughly, all that portion of the present city of Greenville to the east of the river, two city blocks wide, and extending to what is now Washington Street. Through the center of this plot ran a wide street at very nearly the present location of Main Street, with three other streets (present Broad Street, Court Street and McBee Avenue) crossing it at right angles. Lots were cut to the number of 50, with 20 of them facing the principal street. The present Blue Building and Dean Building cover the greater portion of lot No. 1; lot No. 15 is almost entirely taken up by the post office property; the Masonic Temple is on a part of lot No. 12; lot No. 7 is covered by the Poinsett Hotel Building and one or two other structures north of it; the Palmetto Building and Carpenter Bros. drug store are upon lot No. 6; the City Hall stands on number 44; No. 47 supports the seventeen-story Woodside Building. Where the court house and Chamber of Commerce Building now stand were parts of a square made up of the open courts in front of the Blue Building, Palmetto Building, Poinsett Hotel Building and old Law Range, together with the portions of the street now covered by these two buildings. The court house, which was of log construction, was placed in the middle of the square, while the goal (jail), also of logs, was located a block to the south of the court house in the middle of the street near the present intersection of Court and Fall Streets.

The sale of lots in the new village of Pleasantburg was slow. Although the county had filled up rapidly and now had many thousands of inhabitants, there was little demand for "town property." The inhabitants were primarily an agricultural people who "lived at home", therefore there was little business to be had for merchants and artisans, so few had need of lands not suitable for farming.

The first sale in the village seems to have been made on April 22, 1797, when one acre, consisting of lots Nos. 11 and 12, was conveyed to Isaac Wickliff for $100.00. These two lots now comprise the Masonic Temple property, the Donaldson property on which is the row of old wood buildings known formerly as the "Law Range", and the vacant lots on Court Street to the rear of the Masonic Temple and the Donaldson property.

Next comes a sale of "6 lots at Greenville C. H. Village of Pleasantburg, one-half acre each, Nos. 1, 2, 3, 16, 17 and 18", on September 5, 1798, unto John McBeth for $600.00. This conveyance comprises the entire block now bounded by Main Street on the north, Court Street on the east, Fall Street on the south and Broad Street on the west.

During the year 1799 lot No. 36 was conveyed to Thomas Alexander; and lots Nos. 37, 39, 40, 47, 48 and 22 were sold to John W. Wood.

In 1800 Francis Wickliff acquired lots Nos. 14 and 15; John B. Blackman was conveyed lots 13, 5, and 10; and John McBeth became the owner of almost half the block on which now stands the First National Bank Building, by purchase of lots Nos. 33, 34, and 35 for $187.00.

Elias Earle purchased lot No. 6 for $500.00 in 1801.

In 1804 John Taylor became the owner of lot No. 4 for $40.00.

John Archer purchased "lot No. 46 in Greenville village, where my blacksmith shop now stands," in 1807.

The little village was now 10 years old but there seems to have developed no real estate activity, as just half the 50 lots into which it had been divided were sold, and of this number four had been resold by the Sheriff under execution against their owners. Values had not enhanced, and there had been few re-sales except under the "forced" method. Shops were few and of inferior construction, while only four or five residences had been erected in the entire village, and these were of logs. But near the present High School Building, which was then outside the village, stood the beautiful home of Lemuel J. Alston, which was said to be the most elaborate residence in the entire up-country, and leading from it to the village was a wide avenue (now West McBee) lined on either side by trees. Alston was the owner of more than 10,000 acres of land which he very successfully cultivated with slaves. About him and his magnificent home, where well-stocked cellars could always be found, revolved the social life of early Greenville and its surrounding plantations.

A very good picture of the impression made upon a stranger by the village during its babyhood may be had by reading an extract from the diary of Edward Hooker, a native of Connecticut, who paid Greenville a visit in 1806. He says:

"Approaching the village of Greenville, we pass in view of Chancellor Thomson's (Thompson) seat—quite retired in the woods, about two miles from the Court House. Arrived at Col. Alston's about 12. His seat is without exception the most beautiful that I have seen in South Carolina. The mansion is on a commanding eminence which he calls *Prospect Hill.* Fronts the village of Greenville from which it is distant just six hundred yards; and to which there is a spacious and beautiful avenue leading, formed by two rows of handsome sycamore trees planted twenty four feet apart—the avenue being 15 rods wide. In like manner another handsome avenue formed by cutting a passage through the woods leads from the north front of the house to the mountain road, about a quarter of a mile in length. The cultivated grounds lie partly on the borders of the great avenue leading to the village and partly on the borders of Reedy river, south and west of the house. . . . The Court House is a decent two story building. The jail is three stories, large and handsome. The situation and aspect of the village is quite pretty and rural; the streets covered with green grass and handsome trees growing here and there . . . but there is a want of good houses—the buildings being mostly of logs. About six dwelling houses, two or three shops and some other little buildings. The place is thought by many to be as healthy as any part of the United States. Not a seat of much business. The courts sit but twice a year and often finish this session in two or three days. Only one attorney, and law business dull. One or two physicians in or near the village; but their practice is mainly at the Golden Grove, a fertile but unhealthy settlement ten miles below. One Clergyman within six or seven miles who preaches at the Court House once in three or four weeks."

The year 1805 marked the entry of Captain Jeremiah Cleveland into the business life of the little town, where he and his descendants were to play such a prominent part even down to the present time. He then purchased lot No. 36, under execution, from the Sheriff for $50.00, and soon thereafter erected upon it a small shop in which the firm of Erwin, Patton & Cleveland launched itself into the general mercantile business. From this modest beginning Captain Cleveland expanded his businesses till they were to amass him a fortune of several hundred thousand dollars, while Greenville was still a village.

All who know anything at all of the early history of Greenville have heard the name of Vardry McBee, ancestor of so many, who with himself, have contributed greatly to the upbuilding of Greenville, both city and county. In 1815 he purchased the entire holdings of Lemuel J. Alston, consisting of 11,028 acres in and around the village of Greenville. Mr. McBee then resided at Lincolnton, North Carolina, and did not move to Greenville till 1835, but almost immediately after his Greenville purchase he set on foot many enterprises which were soon to give a zest of life to the languishing community. In fact, the advent of Vardry McBee into Greenville marked its real beginning. ✓

From the beginning of permanent settlements in 1784, Greenville County had been recognized as a desirable summer resort, and many residents of Charleston were soon spending a few months of each year here. Some of these purchased plantations, while others became "paying guests" with their friends. But there seems to have been no effort put forward to commercialize the health-giving quality of the climate till 1815, when Edmund Waddell rented the Alston residence from Vardry McBee, and opened it into a hotel, or summer resort. Waddell was of the type who make ideal hosts, and this quality, combined with the excellent accommodations which the Alston mansion afforded, soon filled Greenville with the aristocracy of the coast. To care for the increasing numbers, two or three other hotels, and a number of boarding houses, were opened. Prior to 1824, when the Mansion House was built, Captain David Long operated a resort hotel on the corner of Main and Washington Streets, where Gapens Cigar store is now located, while diagonally across Main Street, where stands the Beattie Building, Blackman Ligon was proprietor of another.

But it was not till the year 1824 that Greenville began in earnest to entertain these summer visitors, who by this time had become one of the principal sources of income for the village. Colonel William Toney, probably the wealthiest citizen of the village, purchased lots Nos. 7 and 8 from Thomas Crayton in 1822 at the unprecedented price of $5,000.00 with the expressed purpose of building thereon a hotel which would "excel any house in the upper part of the state in appearance and accommodation for the traveling public"; and in 1824 the Mansion House was completed. Immediately it became popular and was soon famous, not only for its commodious and artistic design and appointments, and the excellent quality of the food and drink served from its tables, but more especially for the aristocracy and wealth of the guests who frequented it. And for 30 years or more the Mansion House was the axis around which revolved the gay, but cultured, society which thronged the streets of this little piedmont village nestling under the shadow of Paris mountain.

Very little was done toward educating the youth of Greenville for many years after it became a village. In the homes of the more wealthy, private tutors were employed to instill the rudiments, and an occasional young man was sent away to one of the northern colleges, but no effort seems to have been made till 1817 or 1818 to establish anything in the nature of a public school. But so much association with the culture and refinement which poured into the community during the summer turned the thoughts of the villagers to education; and about 1818 a few of the leaders among them undertook to secure, by private subscription, enough money to build two academies, one for the boys and another for the girls. After much difficulty, enough money was in hand to insure the ultimate success of the undertaking, and in 1819 there were established the Greenville Male and Female Academies, which flourished for many years. In 1820 the trustees of the schools acquired a tract of land containing 30 acres "adjoining the village, for the purpose of establishing the Greenville Male and Female Academies." This property included the present grounds of the Greenville Woman's College on College Street. Soon after securing these lands the erection of suitable buildings was commenced, and in 1821 these were occupied by the academies.

Undoubtedly of interest to many now living in the city of Greenville is the old subscription list on which were recorded the names and amounts of many subscribers. Among the names appearing there are many still familiar to Greenvillians; and should it be necessary to circulate such a subscription list in Greenville today, it would very likely carry many of the names appearing on that of more than a century ago. The list in part is as follows: William Toney, $500.00; Jeremiah

CHAPTER XI.

EARLY POLITICAL LIFE

For the first 25 or 30 years of the county's life the names of three men stand out more conspicuously than any others in her political affairs. These are Samuel Earle, Elias Earle, and Lemuel J. Alston.

Samuel Earle was one of the first settlers in the new county, having secured a grant of "400 acres on both sides of Reedy river, northwest of the ancient boundary, including the improvements formerly claimed by Robert Paris". Whether or not these were lands formerly held by Richard Pearis, and the description in the Earle deed erroneously referred to him as "Robert", is unknown. There is no record of any Robert Paris ever having resided in Greenville, but the spelling of the name is here "Paris" while Richard always used the spelling "Pearis". Could it be possible that there was a Robert Paris, and that Paris mountain derives its name from him and not Richard Pearis, as is so generally thought? Possibly, but not at all probable. Samuel Earle was the son of Judge Baylis Earle, who settled in the northern part of Spartanburg County in 1773, having emigrated from either Westmoreland or Frederick County, Virginia, where Samuel was born to himself and his wife, Mary Prince, daughter of John Prince of Prince's fort fame, on November 28, 1760.

Although under 17 years of age at the time, Samuel Earle entered the forces of the Patriots on May 20, 1777, under the direct command of General (then Major) Andrew Pickens, and continued active till the close of the war, at which time he held a commission as captain. After the war, as Deputy Provost Marshal, he is said to have served the first writ ever made returnable to old Cambridge, or Ninety-Six. He was elected from Greenville County to the State Convention which framed the first State Constitution, and was also a member of the State Convention which adopted the Constitution of the United States. In 1795 he became a member of Congress from the Congressional District of which Greenville was a part, being the first Congressman from that district after the adoption of the Federal Constitution, and succeeding General Andrew Pickens, who up to that time had been the representative under the old "Articles of Confederation."

Of him Governor B. F. Perry writes:

"Mr. Earle was a man of high and pure character, and I don't think his honor and integrity were ever questioned throughout his long life. . . . No one in the upper country knew so well as he did the Revolutionary history of the state, and the early settlement of the back country, as it was termed. . . . He knew all the prominent men of those times, and did not hesitate to sketch their characters as they appeared to him. . . . He spoke well of General Robert Cunningham. . . . He said, though Tories, Cunningham and his two brothers, John and Patrick, were gentlemen of honor and integrity. They had unfortunately taken the wrong side, as so many honest and intelligent men did."

CONCLUSION

NO SOONER was the existence of another continent brought to the knowledge of Europe by the discovery of Columbus than all the maritime powers of the Old World eagerly rushed forth to seize a portion of it for themselves. Soon that part of North America embracing the present states of North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, northern Florida and extending westward to the Pacific ocean was claimed by England. France and Spain. But near two centuries passed before any permanent settlement was made in what is now South Carolina.

In 1670 a few emigrants from England, under the leadership of William Sayle, came over in two small vessels and settled near Port Royal. Soon they became dissatisfied with this location and moved to the western bank of the Ashley river and there laid the foundation of Old Charles Town. However, it was found that this site could not be reached by large vessels, and in 1780 it was abandoned and the settlement was moved again, this time to the present location of Charleston.

Within a few years after this first permanent settlement was made on the coast traders moved back into the hill and mountain country and, living among the Indians, did a thriving business exchanging rum and trinkets for the skins and furs of the red men. The Indians were early furnished with guns and when they had become accustomed to their use the fur trade rapidly became one of the principal industries of Carolina. The traders, living among the Indians, gathered the furs and transported them to Charles Town.

Following the traders into the up-country were cattle men, who used the great prairie lands of the piedmont section of the state to raise cattle and horses. When ready for market these were also transported to Charles Town and became quite an item in the export business of the colony.

But regardless of the fact that traders and cattle men lived in what is now referred to as Piedmont South Carolina there were no settlements of white men there, which could be referred to as permanent, till well after the first quarter of the eighteenth century. The Cherokee Indians occupied all that portion of the state to the west of the Broad river, but being at all times friendly, the Carolina traders and cattle men came and went there as they saw fit. However, if any serious attempts had been made to cultivate the soil or to congregate in extensive settlements the Indians would no doubt have objected, as they did at a later date.

In 1755 a treaty between Carolina and the Cherokees was entered into, and by its terms the Indians ceded to the colony all their lands in South Carolina except present Greenville, Anderson, Pickens and Oconee Counties. Immediately settlers began to enter the new acquisition, principally from the more northern colonies.

Following the French and Indian war, the piedmont section of South Carolina rapidly grew in population. Some trouble was experienced there on account of lawlessness, but on the whole the frontiersmen made rapid progress till the outbreak of the Revolution. Although what is now Greenville County was still a portion of the Cherokee Nation, many settlers moved in. Notable among these was Richard Pearis and Colonel Hite.

With the coming of the Revolution the Cherokees rose up in arms against the frontiersmen and war with them followed. This was concluded by the treaty of 1777 which ceded present Greenville County to South Carolina. But the war with Great Britain then being in progress, no effort was made for some years to "open up" the newly acquired Indian lands. With the Revolution concluded, however, the county of Greenville was formed by legislative enactment, and much of the land there granted to soldiers of the late war in payment of debts due them by the state.

For fifteen or twenty years after its formation, Greenville County grew rapidly, but near the end of the eighteenth century heavy migrations to the west commenced. In the face of this westward movement the white population of the county remained near stationary for fifty years or more. During this period the principal industry of the county was agriculture, with the town of Greenville drawing a substantial income from summer tourists. Few notable public improvements were undertaken before the War Between the States; however, the citizenship of the county took an active part in the bitter factional politics of the day, being strongly opposed to both Nullification and Secession.

The five-year period from 1850 to 1855 brought to the county the Greenville and Columbia Railroad, Furman University and the Greenville Female College. These acquisitions gave new life to the county and its growth would no doubt have been rapid from then onward except for the coming of the War Between the States. Although the county had opposed secession, when that step was taken the citizens of Greenville County were as one man in supporting the state.

With the coming of reconstruction days following the war, Greenville County played a conspicuous part, furnishing the Provisional Governor. Since her population was predominently white, Greenville was able to keep her public affairs out of the hands of negroes and carpet-baggers for the most part, but she suffered greatly during the radical regime nevertheless. But the coming of the Richmond and Danville Air Line Railway (now Southern Main Line) in 1872 stimulated business to such an extent that the ten-year period from 1870 to 1880 saw the most rapid growth in the population of the town of Greenville of any other decade of her life.

About 1895 an era of cotton mill building set in and continued with the passing of years till Greenville County had become a manufacturing county rather than one of agriculture. The advent of manufacturing on a large scale brought with it wealth and population, and soon Greenville took high rank among the counties of the state. The city of Greenville, in and about which the larger of the textile plants are located, by 1920 had become the third largest city in the state, and for ten years or more has been considered the second wealthiest city of the state. The county has for many years paid more taxes in the aggregate, for state purposes, than any other. Its automobile registrations, gasoline tax contributions, and income tax payments, far exceed those of any other county in the state.

Speaking further of Mr. Earle and his political career, Governor Perry says:

"He was once a candidate for the State Senate in Greenville before he moved to Pendleton, and was beaten by his kinsman, Colonel Elias Earle, who afterwards represented the District in Congress for a great number of years. Colonel Elias Earle was a great and most successful electioneer. He treated bountifully, which Mr. Samuel Earle refused to do. There was but one place of voting then in the whole district (county), and that was at the Court House. Colonel Elias Earle came riding into the village, with several hundred of his voters, on horseback. When Mr. Samuel Earle saw this strong array of partisans, and heard them huzzaing for the Colonel, he cried, 'Huzza, for the half-pint tickets'."

Colonel Elias Earle, half brother of Judge Baylis Earle, and therefore half uncle of the Honorable Samuel Earle, was born in Virginia in 1762 and moved to Greenville County, South Carolina, in 1787 where he settled on the Rutherford road, about two miles from the village of Greenville, at "the Poplars". He early identified himself with the political affairs of the new county, and for 25 years or more was a "power". His nephew, Samuel Earle, he defeated for the State Senate from Greenville County early in his career by "the too free use of liquor", it was charged, and then after a four-year term became a candidate for Congress from the district then composed of Greenville, Pendleton (Anderson, Pickens and Oconee), Laurens, Abbeville, and Spartanburg. He was successful in his Congressional venture and thereafter held that position—first from 1805 to 1807, then from 1811 to 1815, and later from 1817 to 1821. In his 1806 race to succeed himself, he was opposed by Lemuel J. Alston, who defeated him, but four years later he defeated Mr. Alston and returned to Washington.

While still in Virginia, Colonel Earle married Frances Wilton Robinson. They became the parents of seven children, one of whom, Elizabeth, married George W. Earle, a nephew of Colonel Elias, and son of Colonel John Earle, on whose property near the Spartanburg County line, but in North Carolina, was located Earle's fort during the Revolution. This son-in-law was for many years Clerk of Court of Greenville County and was the grandfather of United States Senator Joseph H. Earle and Dr. T. T. Earle. Dr. T. T. Earle was the father of State Senator Wilton H. Earle and Dr. C. B. Earle, both present-day Greenville citizens of prominence. A son, Dr. Robinson Earle, became the grandfather of United States Senator John L. M. Irby of Laurens County. Dr. Robinson Earle was killed in an encounter with his nephew-by-marriage, William L. Yancy, afterward a Confederate States Senator from Alabama, and often called "the Father of Secession".

Already something has been said of Colonel Lemuel J. Alston, the other member of the trio. He came to Greenville early in its history, and soon became a man of influence. It was he, as has been stated, who founded the present city of Greenville, and from his magnificent home overlooking the tiny village, he presided over its destinies in lordly fashion for the first 18 years of its life. In 1806 he was a successful candidate for Congress against Colonel Elias Earle, who then held that office, but four years later he was defeated by Colonel Earle, which is said to have proved such a humiliation that he immediately offered his Greenville lands for sale. Four years later he found a purchaser in Vardry McBee, and soon thereafter left the state.